

Accessions

155.108

Shelf No.

G.3752. 4

Barton Library. Vol. 3



Thomas Pennant Barton.

Boston Public Library.

Received, May, 1873.

Not to be taken from the Library.

BOOKS OF

KING JAMES THE FIRST

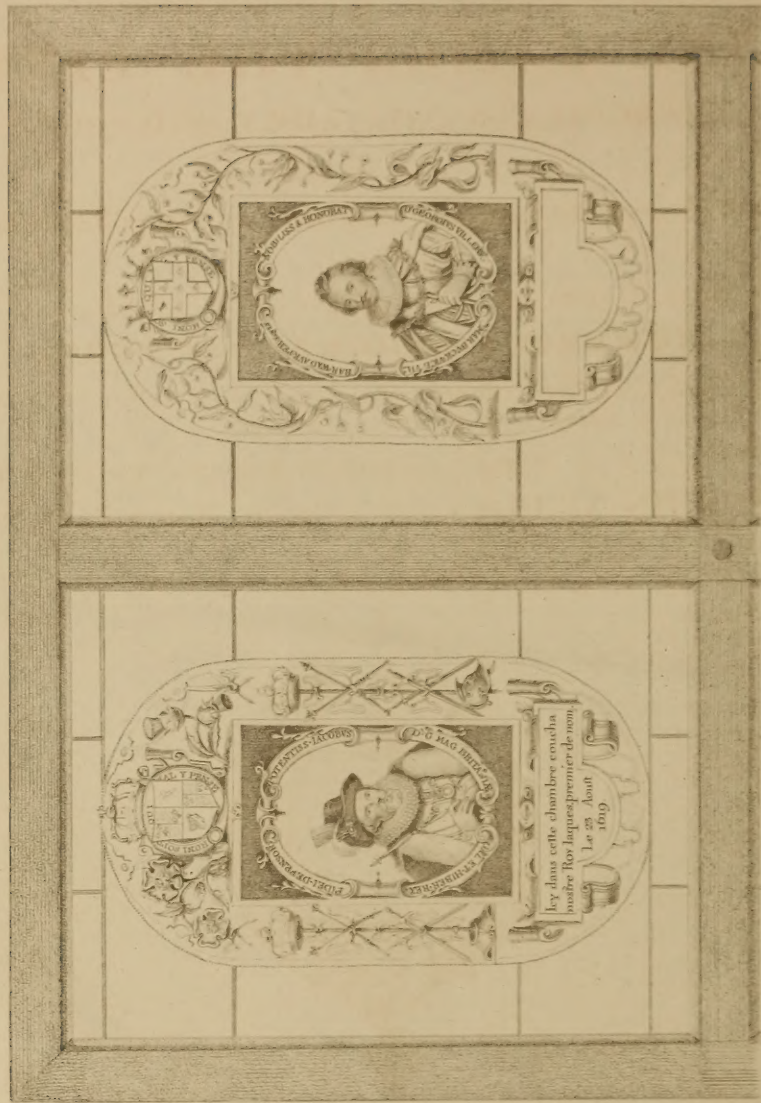
THE
PROGRESSES, &c.
OF
KING JAMES THE FIRST.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.
VOL. III.

CORRIGENDA IN THE THIRD VOLUME, PART I.

Page 19, line 6 of note, for Duchess read Countess.—P. 21, line 25, for Monthe read Mouthe.—P. 32, line 17, for pretty read petty. P. 34, line 6, for to come read come to.—P. 42, last line of note, for 1620, read 1621.—P. 57, line 7, read Profectò.—P. 60, line 7 of note ¹, read Servavi.—P. 69, line 23, read Plays.—P. 100, line 9, for 25 read 23.—P. 177, delete note ⁴, and read, He was not made K.G. till 1624.—P. 190, last line of note ¹, for seventh read ninth.—P. 215, last line of note ⁶, read 1615-16 (p. 135) and 1617-18 (p. 473).—P. 222, note 2, for 1622 read April 16, 1623.—P. 223, line 12, for Daring read Denny.—P. 230, fourth line of note ³, for 26 read 16.—P. 233, note, for 1618-19 read 1617-18.—P. 244, line 4 from bottom, for Courts read Court.—P. 254, notes ² and ⁴, for £40. read 40s.—P. 256, line 11, for seale read scale.—P. 267, note ⁷, Sir Roger Townshend was created a Baronet April

16, not 6.—P. 297, line 7, delete Sir, and see p. 553.—P. 335, delete note ¹, the conjecture it contains being erroneous; see p. 475.—P. 438, line 10, for £40. read 40s.—P. 457, note ², read Microcosmos.—P. 473, the † should be placed against Sir Wm. Cavendish, Sir Charles's son.—P. 474, line 1, after runne read except.—P. 488, delete note ¹, and refer to p. 887.—P. 497, line 3 of note ², read first wife.—P. 499, note ³, line 5, for be read being.—P. 519, line 14, read There, here, &c.—P. 530, lines 2 and 3, read 104 and 105; Sir George Morton's patent was dated March 1.—P. 547, line 19, for talk read table.—P. 560, line 2, for Cornwallis read Cavendish.—P. 562, last line of note ¹, for Tutbury read Tamworth.—Pp. 582-3, the four Baronets should be numbered 114—117.—P. 584, line 2, for 117th read 118th.—P. 588, in two last lines, read 120 and 121.



Drawn from the Window & Engraved by W. C. Sherlock.

Upper Compartment of a Window in the Chicken House, Hampstead.

originally at WROXTON, Oxfordshire

THE
PROCESSES,
PROCESSIONS, AND MAGNIFICENT FESTIVITIES,
OF
KING JAMES THE FIRST,
HIS ROYAL CONSORT, FAMILY, AND COURT,

COLLECTED FROM

Original Manuscripts, Scarce Pamphlets, Corporation Records, Parochial Registers, &c. &c.

COMPRISING

FORTY MASQUES AND ENTERTAINMENTS; TEN CIVIC PAGEANTS;

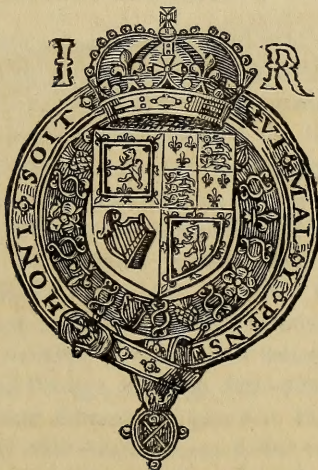
NUMEROUS ORIGINAL LETTERS;

AND ANNOTATED LISTS OF THE PEERS, BARONETS, AND KNIGHTS, WHO RECEIVED THOSE
HONOURS DURING THE REIGN OF KING JAMES.

Illustrated with Notes, Historical, Topographical, Biographical, and Bibliographical.

By JOHN NICHOLS, F.S.A. LOND. EDINB. & PERTH.

VOLUME III.



LONDON: PRINTED BY AND FOR J. B. NICHOLS,
PRINTER TO THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES,
25, PARLIAMENT STREET.

1828.

G3752

4

v.3

THE

PROCESSIONS AND MAGNIFICENT FESTIVITIES

OF THE

155.108

KING JAMES THE FIRST

May 1873

HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS THE DUKE OF YORK

BY JOHN NICHOLS F.R.S. & JOHN BROWN & PARTNERS

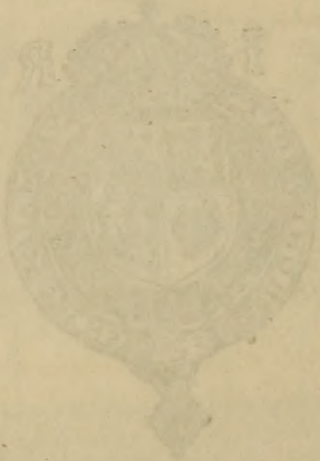
NUMEROUS ORIGINAL LETTERS

AND A LARGE QUANTITY OF OTHER PAMPHLETS

RELATIVE TO THE HISTORY OF THE

ROYAL HOUSE OF STUART

VOLUME III



PRINTED BY J. & W. NICHOLS
PRINTED TO THE ORDER OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE
1873

PROGRESSES, &c.
OF
KING JAMES THE FIRST.

1614.

ON the 31st of March 1614, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to his friend Sir Dudley Carleton :

" Sir Arthur Chichester, Deputy of Ireland ¹, arrived on Saturday last, being brought in with many coaches, and more than 200 horse. He had access to the King the next day, and was referred for further audience till better leisure. His stay may not be long here, for their Parliament draws on, being to begin in May ².

¹ Sir Arthur has been lately mentioned in vol. II. p. 723.—He was descended of an ancient family seated at Raleigh, co. Devon, which produced a Bishop of Exeter in the tenth and a Monkish Chronicler in the thirteenth centuries, and on the head of which a baronetcy was conferred in 1641. "He spent his youth," says Fuller in his Worthies, "first in the University, then in the Irish Wars; where, by his valour, he was effectually assistant, first to *plough* and *break up* that barbarous Nation by conquest, and then to *sow* it with seeds of civility, when by James made Lord Deputy of Ireland." He was first so appointed Feb. 3, 1604, by a new commission in 1606, and, having been created Baron of Belfast in 1612, again July 27, 1614. When recalled from Ireland in Nov. 1615, after what would at the present day be considered a very long reign, the King, "loath to leave his abilities unemployed, sent him Embassadour to the Emperour, and other German Princes." His services both in Ireland and abroad are recorded by Fuller with honest applause; and an ample memoir of him is printed in Archdall's Irish Peerage, vol. I. pp. 320—328. He died s. p. in 1624, when his title became extinct; but his brother Edward, (knighted at Theobalds, July 18, 1616,) succeeding to his estates, was immediately after created Baron Belfast and Viscount Chichester, and on his posterity have been conferred the titles of Earl of Donegal, 1647; Baron Fisherwick, in England, 1790; and Marquess of Donegal, 1791.

² He did not, however, return till July, when Mr. Chamberlain wrote to his friend, on the 14th : "The Deputy of Ireland is gone towards his charge, but not overcharged with money or other provisions."

Here are a great number of the Nobility and Gentry of that country at this present; and great care is taken that matters may be so accommodated beforehand, that there be no more *dispareri* at their next meeting.

"Our Parliament is to begin on Tuesday next, when the Archbishop of York¹ is to preach before the King and Peers at Westminster. Dr. Morton, Dean of Winchester², makes his *Concio ad Clerum* the next day, and Dr. Abbot³ is appointed Prolocutor.

"Upon Tuesday the 29th of this month, Sir Ralph Winwood, after so many traverses⁴, was sworn Principal Secretary (for by that title he was sworn), and Sir Thomas Lake⁵ of the Privy Council, with any place or other title. But if you knew *quantæ molis erat* to bring in one and hold out the other, you would think it *vix tanti*, but that when a man is half way over, he were as good go forward as turn back. And yet I assure you on my faith and conscience, I do not think it hath stood him in the value of one single groat more than what I wrote you at the Wedding⁶; though perhaps the world is otherwise persuaded⁷."

On the first of April, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Robert Darrell, of Kent; and Sir Henry Robinson.

On the seventh, Mr. Chamberlain again writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"On Tuesday the 5th of the present, the King, Prince, and Lords rode in their robes to the Parliament. There were many rich foot-cloths, specially those of the King and Prince; but the day proving very foul, it marred much of the shew. The Duke of Lenox carried the Marshall's Rod or Staff; the Earl of Shrewsbury the Cap of Maintenance; and the Earl of Derby the Sword. The Earl of Somerset supplied the place of Master of the Horse because the Earl of Worcester was or would be sick; so that he hath already the possession of that

¹ Dr. Tobias Matthew; see vol. I. pp. 64, 74.

² The learned Prelate and Controversialist, Thomas Morton, D. D. whose life has received due attention from various biographers, and of whom a copious Memoir is given in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. He was sworn one of the King's Chaplains in 1606; made Dean of Gloucester 1607; Winchester 1609; Bishop of Chester 1615; Lichfield and Coventry 1618; and Durham 1632.

³ Robert Abbot, Master of Baliol College, Oxford, made Bishop of Salisbury in 1615. He died March 2, 1618, aged 58.

⁴ See vol. II. pp. 515, 676.

⁵ See vol. II. pp. 264, 514, 515.

⁶ His carriage and horses; see vol. II. p. 734.—This, in those days of bribery and corruption, was a wonder indeed.

⁷ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

office, as it were by anticipation¹. The King made a long and excellent Speech, consisting of three principal parts; wherein he made very faire promises to continue to his subjects *bona animi, bona corporis, et bona fortunæ*, by maintaining Religion, preserving of peace, and seeking their prosperity by increasing of trades and traffick; and that he would not press them beyond their will. In conclusion, he wished they might not be strangers, but that they would recourse to him in all their business, at whose hands they should always find easy audience and gracious usage²; and so dismissed them to choose their Speaker, whom they are to present this afternoon, and the morrow he will speak to them again at the Banqueting-house.

"Randolph Crew³ was chosen Speaker without any contradiction, being nominated and recommended by Mr. Secretary, who made a fit Speech for that purpose, which I have heard was generally well allowed, and his assurance commended. Only the manner of the delivery was somewhat strange; being in a kind of academical tune. But he is to be excused, having such a disadvantage that the first he ever heard speak in that place was himself.—The Returns of the Knights from divers Shires prove every day more litigious⁴."

Again, on the 14th of April, Mr. Chamberlain writes to his friend:

"The Speaker was presented on Thursday, and made a very orderly and convenient Speech.

"On Saturday, in the afternoon, the King made a Speech⁵ to the whole Assembly in the Great Banqueting-chamber, wherein he laid out his wants, and descended as it were to entreating to be relieved, and that they would shew their good affection toward him in such sort, that this Parliament might be called 'The Parliament of Love.' In which kind to begin and train them in the way, he

¹ The Earl of Worcester did not resign the office of Master of the Horse at this time, Somerset's ambition being satisfied with the place of Lord High Chamberlain; see p. 8. He did in January 1615-16, when he received in stead the dormant office of Lord Privy Seal. On this subject see further in p. 13.

² A MS. copy of this Speech is in the Cotton MSS. Titus C. VII. intitled, "The Flowres of Grace; or the Speache of our Sovereign Lord King James, 5^o Aprilis 1614, at the Session of Parlement then begunne." A second is in the Lansdowne MSS. 487, where it occupies eleven sides of folio foolscap.—It is remarkable that this Speech is not registered in the Journals of either House.

³ See p. 5.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁵ This is also in the same volume of Lansdowne MSS. as the former, occupying six folio sides.

offered them certain graces and favours, not in the way of merchandizing (which course he will not allow, nor cannot abide to hear of), but of mere good will and *motu proprio* ¹."

On the 24th of April, being Easter-day, the King attended Divine Service in his Chapel at Whitehall, where Bishop Andrews, as he was accustomed, preached ².

On Sunday the first of May, the King heard, at the same place, a Sermon from the Rev. Norwich Spackman, M. A. ³

On the third, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King hath a great deal of patience [with the Parliament], and made his Speech to them the last week, requiring they would fall in hand with the main business of his wants. And indeed I would wish they would not stand too stiff, but take some moderate course to supply him by ordinary means, lest he be driven to ways of worse consequence, wherein he shall not want colour both from law and pulpit ⁴."

During May, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Timothy Thornehill, of Kent; and, on the 29th, at the Queen's Palace, Somerset House, Sir Edward Rodney.

On the 9th of June, Mr. Chamberlain thus writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"While the Parliament grew every day more fiery and violent in their Speeches, the King sent them a Letter on the third of this month, whereby he signified unto them, that for divers reasons and respects he meant to *dissolve the Parliament*, unless in the mean time they fell roundly in hand to consider and provide how to relieve his wants; neither would he expect or receive other answer from them than the speedy effecting of this business. This peremptory message wrought diversely with them, and made some of them put water into their

¹ Birch's MSS. 4173.

² His Discourse, on Phil. ii. 8—11, is in his "XCVI Sermons," the Ninth on the Resurrection.

³ Son of Thomas Spackman, M.D. of Worcester (of whom see Wood's Fasti, by Bliss, vol. I. col. 342). He was educated at Worcester School and Christ Church, Oxford, B. A. 1599, M. A. 1602, and was Proctor of that University in 1611. He was Chaplain to Dr. James Montague, Bishop of Bath and Wells; for some years Vicar of Mitcham, and for six years Rector of Merstham, both in Surrey. At the latter he died July 3 or 13, 1617, and was buried in the chancel. Wood (Fasti, by Bliss, vol. I. col. 296) has confounded the two livings, saying that he died and was buried in the chancel of Mitcham, but see his epitaph at Merstham in Manning's and Bray's Surrey, vol. II. p. 263. —His present Sermon, on Matt. ix. 13, was soon after published in 4to, and a copy is in Sion College Library.

⁴ Birch's MSS. 4173.

wine, seeing the time of their reign so near an end. But the greater part grew more averse, and would not descend to so sudden a resolution. Whereupon it was thought to stay the bills; and the next day being Saturday, the Speaker was sick, and so the House sat not; and by Monday it was known there was a Commission out to dissolve the Parliament. Upon Tuesday they sat again; and before they rose, Sir — Coningsby, the Gentleman Usher of the Upper House, was sent to notify unto them, that the Lords had a Commission, by virtue whereof they required their presence. When they came, the Commission directed to the two Archbishops, the Lord Chancellor, and all the Privy Council of that House, was read, whereby they had authority to dissolve the Parliament; and so they did. Whereby this Meeting or Assembly is to be held a blank Parliament, or rather parley, not having so much as the name of a Session, but, as the words went, *Parliamentum inchoatum*.

“Presently upon the Dissolution, Pursuivants were ready to warn divers to be the next day at the Council-table, from whence Christopher Neville, Sir Walter Chute; Hoskins, and Wentworth, were yesterday sent to the Tower; Sir John Savile confined to this town for a time; Sir Samuel and Sir Edwyn Sandys, Sir Dudley Digges, Sir Roger Owen, Thomas Crew, Hackwell, and some others that had part appointed them by the House in the matter of Imposition, were enjoined to bring their notes and papers to be burnt. *Sic transit Gloria Mundi*.

“The Lord Privy Seal [the Earl of Northampton] that hath languished a long time, and lain at Greenwich above this month, came home yesterday all along town, with more than 40 horse; which was much noted for the manner and the time¹.”

On the 8th of June, Sir Randolph Crew², the Speaker of the late House of Commons, was knighted at Whitehall.

¹ Birch's MSS. 4173.

² Of Sir Ranulph Crewe, (as he himself spelt his name,) an interesting memoir is given by Mr. Ormerod, in his History of Cheshire, vol. III. p. 167. He was descended from the antient family of Crewe, in that county, but whose estates had been carried from the name by an heiress in the reign of Edward I. By his success in his profession of the law, Sir Ranulph was enabled to re-establish his family in the seat of their ancestors; and he built the present noble mansion there, now the residence of his descendant in the fifth generation, John, created Lord Crewe in 1806. Sir Ranulph was made a Serjeant-at-law, July 1, 1614, and appointed Chief Justice of the King's Bench, Jan. 26, 1624-5. From this office he was dismissed two years afterwards, in consequence of his honourable dislike for the “pre-legal courses” of the King in raising supplies. He survived more than twenty years, always fed with

On the 12th of June, being Whitsunday, Bishop Andrews preached before the King at Greenwich, on Psal. lxxviii. 18¹.

On the 13th, the King knighted, at the same place, Sir John Merick², and Sir William Crosse.

On the 18th, Mr. Lorkin writes thus to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"The last week my Lord of Northampton came from Greenwich to London, gallantly attended with no less than 60 Gentlemen on horseback. And here last Thursday se'nnight he died. He hath given £.4000 a year to my Lord of Arundel, his house at Greenwich to my Lady of Suffolk (as the report goeth), large legacies to every one of his servants (whereof three are made his executors), and a liberal alms to the poor, which is all I hear of this particular³."

hope of being restored to his place, living, as Fuller says, "out of office, not out of honour, and much praised for his hospitality," which he was enabled to exercise, having, before his dismissal, passed what may be termed a long public life, enjoying a large income. He died Jan. 13, 1645-6, aged 87. — The Barons Crewe, of Steane, co. Northampton, were descended from Sir Thomas, a brother of Sir Ranulph, whose son was so created in 1661. That title became extinct in 1721 with Nathaniel, Bishop of Durham, and third Baron.

¹ This Discourse is printed in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Seventh on the Sending of the Holy Ghost.

² This was the Ambassador to Russia, who was now knighted previous to his departure thither. An Ambassador from that country had arrived on the preceding 26th of October, and returned this Spring, "having in all respects beene very honourably entertained, and his presents of furs which he gave to the King, Queene, and Prince, very graciously accepted." See Howes' Chronicle. Some memoirs of Sir John Merick and his family, drawn up by S. R. Meyrick, LL. D. were published in the Gent. Mag. for 1824, part ii. By a pedigree of the family there printed, p. 495, it appears he was the son of William Merick of Gloucester, son of Thomas Merick of Monmouth. Sir John and his brother Richard were merchants, resident in Leadenhall-street, and trading to Russia. He was first sent Ambassador to that country in 1601, and his "Particular Relation of his Entertainment" on that Embassy was printed in Gent. Mag. *ibid.* p. 226, from a MS. in the Cotton Collection. He now went a second time; and, having established a friendly intercourse between the two countries, returned loaded with presents in 1617; see under November that year. He was sent a third time in 1620, and in 1623, had the honour of bringing about, by his energetic measures, the first Treaty of amity and commerce between England and Russia; it is printed in Rymer's *Fœdera*. He died a widower and s. p. in 1638, leaving many charitable benefactions in his will.

³ See further on his Will in Brydges's *Peers of King James*, p. 249. Mr. Lorkin wrote to Sir T. Puckering, July 2: "I omitted in my last to mention that my Lord of Northampton, a little before his death, declared himself of his old religion, which he further confirmed, though somewhat more obscurely, in his last Testament." However unpleasant it may be to enlarge on the character of this

On the 30th of June, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton :

" On Wednesday in Whitsun week the Lord Privy Seal departed this life ; the same day se'nnight that he came through London, as it were, in triumph, with only Sir Charles Cornwallis ¹ in his coach.

" At the breaking up of the Parliament, their Lordships agreed among themselves to give their best piece of plate, or the value of it in present of money, as a speedy Benevolence to supply the King's wants. The Archbishop of Canterbury began with a basin and ewer, and redeemed it with £.140. The Bishop of Winchester as much ; Ely £.120 ; *et sic de ceteris*. The Noblemen followed the example ; the Lord Chamberlain and Lord Somerset gave each £.200 ; the Earl of Salisbury £.200 ; the rest less ; but no man more. Mr. Secretary gave £.100 ; and all Officers toward the Law or Receipt, according to their mind ; Sir Henry Fanshaw £.50 ; Sir Christopher Hatton as much ; the Lord Coke £.200 ; but the rest of the Judges came but slowly after ; for I know where some presented but £.20, which was refused. The money is paid into the Jewel-house. Letters shall be sent to all the Shires, to see how they will follow the example. I heard London made an offer of 5000 marks, which was not accepted ; and upon Sunday Mr. Secretary brought a Letter from the King to the Lord Mayor and City, to borrow £.100,000, but I hear not yet what resolution they have taken ².

" Sir Julius Cæsar keeps a Funeral this day for his Lady at Merchant Taylors'

odious hypocrite, it is but historical justice to mention that, " just before his death he had brought a suit of defamation in the Star-chamber against a person for calling him a Papist ; in which, notwithstanding the truth of the stigma, he would have been successful had not Archbishop Abbot produced a letter under the Earl's own hand to Cardinal Bellarmine, in which he said, that ' howsoever the condition of the times compelled him, and his Majesty urged him to turn Protestant, yet nevertheless his heart stood with the Papists, and that he would be ready to further them in any attempt ! ' The author of ' The first Five Years of King James ' attributes his death to the shock of this reproof—but he who could be guilty of murder, was not likely to be so easily shocked."—Brydges' Peers of King James, p. 246.

¹ The Knight who had been a servant of Prince Henry, and who wrote his Life ; see vol. II. p. 289.

² In Mr. Chamberlain's Letter to Mrs. Alice Carleton, June 30, he says : " The City hath made excuse for the loan of £.100,000, and offered £.10,000 of Free-gift. It is expected that men of ability should give two whole Subsidies at least, though many give much more ; which makes some murmuring against the Bishops, who, being the ringleaders and seeking all the thanks, do for the most part of them not give one quarter of their Subsidy."

Hall; and Sir Henry Savile and his Lady [Lady Cæsar's daughter] are in town, invited thither as mourners ¹.

“The King removed yesterday to Richmond ².”

A Letter from Mr. Chamberlain to Mrs. Alice Carleton, bears the same date as the preceding :

“Sir Arthur Ingram's Lady is brought to bed of a son, which was Christened this day se'nnight at Stratford Bow, where the Earl of Suffolk, the Earl of Somerset, and the Countess of Nottingham, were gossips; and the King in person came into the garden to eat cherries, and part of the banquet.

“On Tuesday Sir Arthur³ was chosen Sheriff of London; but hath procured the [King's Letters to be discharged. They have chosen two or three more, both before and since, and none of them hold. Some say it is because they will not be matched with Peter Proby⁴, who from being some time Secretary Walsingham's barber, was lately chosen Alderman, and contrary to expectations took it upon him; which troubles them all, for he is a shrewd nimble-witted fellow ⁵.”

On the 10th of July “the King came to Whitehall, and went away the next day after dinner, though it were Sunday; but, before his going, he made the Earl of Suffolk Lord Treasurer, and the Earl of Somerset, his son-in-law, Lord

¹ Of Sir Julius Cæsar see vol. I. p. 155. The deceased was the second of his three wives, Alice, widow of John Dent, of London, merchant. She had no issue by Sir Julius, but by her former husband two daughters, the eldest of whom was married to Sir Henry Savile, of Methley, Yorkshire, Bart. (of whom see vol. I. p. 212); and the latter first to the celebrated Sir Francis Vere, and secondly to Sir Patrick Murray, K. B. afterwards Earl of Tullebardine (of whom see vol. I. p. 223).—She died as long before the present date as the 23d of May, and her corpse was thus kept unburied upwards of five weeks. This, and the “Funeral” at a public Hall, as mentioned above, are remarkable examples of old customs. Just a month intervened between the death and funeral of Prince Henry, but that solemnity was probably hastened as much as possible. The body of Lady Cæsar, as appears by the funeral certificate, was not interred till the 30th of June, the day her “Funeral” was kept at Merchant Taylors' Hall; and was then buried “with great pomp,” in Great St. Helen's, Bishopsgate, whither her husband's afterwards followed it, and where his singular monument still exists. See the Life of Sir Julius, p. 20.

² Birch's MSS. 4173.

³ Of the wealthy Citizen Sir Arthur Ingram, see vol. II. pp. 288, 671.

⁴ This person did serve Sheriff this year, and his associate was Martin Lumley, Esq. He was Lord Mayor in 1622, and then knighted, June 8, at Greenwich.—Mr. Lumley was Lord Mayor in 1623, and also knighted in his Mayoralty, at Greenwich, May 23.

⁵ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

Chamberlain¹.—So wrote Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton on the 14th of July, and on the 21st Mr. Lorkin thus described to Sir Thomas Puckering the manner in which these offices were conferred :

“ His Majesty delivered them both their staves, which act he further accompanied with a declaration of the cause why he had deferred to take that resolution so long ; and then with an honorable testimony of either’s worth and merit. As touching the first, he shewed that, having suffered much in his estate under the former Treasurers, his desire was to try, whether by translating the execution of that charge upon many, he might not find some relief ; which course, notwithstanding, failing to answer expectation, and proving besides grievous to the subject, who would not be dispatched with such expedition as before, he now thought fit to change again by resuming the wonted custom of this Kingdom in putting the employment into one man’s hands. Into whose commendation he entering, to make it appear with greater advantage, he set him in opposition to the late Lord Treasurer [the Earl of Salisbury] deceased ; who, in lieu of supplying his wants, was wont to entertain him with epigrams, fine discourses, and learned epistles, and other such like tricks and devices (which yet, he saw, would pay no debts), and that therefore now (the better to obviate such learning) he had made choice of a plain honest Gentleman, who, if he committed a fault, had not rhetoric enough to excuse it².

¹ Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² That various evil rumours respecting the character of the Earl of Salisbury were current on his decease has been shown in vol. II. p. 445 ; and that James had been frequently cajoled and deceived by this wily Statesman, there cannot be a doubt. He probably treated his Majesty and all with whom he was brought in contact, as Dr. Birch says he did the Foreign Ministers, “ penetrating their secrets, and evading, with uncommon dexterity, such points as they pressed, when it was not convenient to give too explicit an answer.” In the same elaborate character of the Earl it is remarked, that the King during his life had “ a much greater awe of, than love for him ;” so we may fairly conclude that after his death, when the Royal heart was occupied by more favourite Courtiers, it bore little affection to his memory. Still we must agree that the King’s dislike was now expressed more broadly than was warrantable.—It is remarkable that, though Suffolk’s honesty is here placed in opposition to Salisbury’s duplicity, the reproaches on the latter, allowing them any truth, rose only, like the evening mist, on the setting of the Sun ; whilst Suffolk, having enjoyed the Treasurership about four years, was openly impugned in 1618, and sentenced to pay a fine of £30,000. Justice, however, compels us to remember, that Suffolk’s temporary fall was in great measure occasioned by his being encumbered with a mercenary spouse, and that it might be partly attributable to his family connection with Somerset.—It is melancholy to think how few of the great men of this æra could resist bribery ; but our surprize is diminished when we contemplate the corruption of an age in which few

"And afterwards proceeding to speak somewhat of the Chamberlainship, remonstrated that, forasmuch as it was a place of great nearness to his person, he had therefore made choice of him thereto, whom of all men living he most cherished, my Lord of Somerset. To whom, addressing himself with the most amiable compellation that might be, he used these words, 'Lo! here, friend Somerset,' offering him therewith his staff; which the other, prostrating himself upon his knee, received with some few but effectual words of acknowledgement¹."

In his Letter of the 14th of July, Mr. Chamberlain also says:

"Yesterday being the last day of the Term, the new Lord Treasurer went to Westminster Hall, accompanied with the greatest number of Nobility and Gentlemen of fashion that hath been seen upon like occasion². After the reading of his Patent in the Exchequer, the Lord Chancellor made a short Speech, that began with, "Principis est virtus maxima nosce suos;"

and so proceeding with commendations of the King and this choice, and putting the Lord in mind, that he succeeded two of his noble progenitors, Dukes of Norfolk, in that office, who had left memorable names behind them for their provident care and integrity, wishing and advising him to follow their steps; and concluded that he should not look after the examples of later times, for there were *quædam exempla, quæ nocent, non docent*³.

"The King begins his Progress on Monday next, to Audley End on Tuesday, and so forward into Bedfordshire, Northampton, Rutland, Leicestershire, Nottingham, and so to the Forest of Shirwood⁴."

Of the various Stages of this Progress we have the following Table⁵:

"THE GESTS OF HIS MAJESTY'S PROGRESS.				Nights.
July 1614.				
Monday 18.	From Theoballs to Rice, Mr. Franke	-	-	1
Tuesday 19.	From Rice to Audley End	-	-	2
Thursday 21.	From Audley End to Royston	-	-	1

offices or honours were not sold, and where, as so frequently appears in these Volumes, the most humiliating devices were formed for raising the Royal supplies. ¹ Birch's MSS. No. 4176.

² Howes says, "to the number of three hundreth thirtie and six, being all well mounted."

³ Lord Ellesmere had taken his *cue* from the Royal mouth; see p. 9.

⁴ Birch's MSS. 4173.

⁵ Communicated, with the Warrant that follows, from the records of the Corporation of Leicester, by Mr. J. Stockdale Hardy; see vol. II. p. 450.

				Nights.
Friday 22.	From Royston to Hawnes	-	-	3
Monday 25.	From Hawnes to Bletsoe	-	-	2
Wednesday 27.	From Bletsoe to Aishbie	-	-	2
Friday 29.	From Aishbie to Kerbie	-	-	3
Monday, August 1.	From Kerbie to Abthorpe	-	-	3
Thursday 4.	From Abthorpe to Burley	-	-	2
Saturday 6.	From Burley to Beaver	-	-	3
Tuesday 9.	From Beaver to Newark	-	-	1
Wednesday 10.	From Newark to Rufford	-	-	5
Monday 15.	From Rufford to Newstead	-	-	2
Wednesday 17.	From Newstead to Nottingham	-	-	1
Thursday 18.	From Nottingham to Leicester	-	-	1
Friday 19.	From Leicester to Dingley	-	-	1
Saturday 20.	From Dingley to Holmebye	-	-	2
Monday 22.	From Holmebye to Grafton	-	-	3
Thursday 25.	From Grafton to Woodstock	-	-	4
Monday 29.	From Woodstock to Rycott	-	-	1
Tuesday 30.	From Rycott to Bisham	-	-	1

Received the 27th day of June 1614. (Signed) T. SUFFOLKE."

The following Warrant was issued at the same time to the Ushers of the King's Chamber:

"These are to charge and command you, forthwith upon the receipt hereof, to make your undelayed repair unto the Houses set down in a paper hereunto annexed, containing the Gestes of his Majesty's Progresse, to viewe them and to acquaint the Ownors of them that are interested in them with his Majesty's purpose to come thither; and whether the Townes and Villadges neire them be free from the Plague or other dangerous diseases, that may prove dangerous to his Majestie and his Trayne; and, after the performance of this service, to retorne to me to the Courte, to the end I may bee enformed by you in what estate you find the countrye, how conveynyentlie his Majestie may be lodged at the Houses mentioned, howe far distaunce each Howse is from the other, what villages are neire them for the lodgyng of his Majestie's Trayne, and if any Howses mentioned in the Gestes be not sufficient to lodge his Majestie, I woulde have you to

mention the next Howses to them, to the ende his Majestie may be better served. Whereof fayle you not, as you will answere the contrary at your peril.

"Whitehall, this 20th of June 1614. (Signed) T. SUFFOLKE.

"To Rice Roberts and Jeffrey Keene, Ushers of his Majesty's Chamber.

"This Warrant received [at Leicester] the 27th of June 1614."

Accordingly, on the 18th of July, the King proceeded to "Rice," or more properly the Rye, in the parish of Hatfield Broadoak, Essex, the seat of Richard Francke, Esq.¹ and there knighted Sir James Scordeck, a Belgian.

On the following day, the King removed to Audley End², where he staid two nights. The Corporation of Saffron Walden met the King, and incurred the following expences³ on the occasion:

	£.	s.	d.
"For new gilding the great mace, against the King's coming	-	1	3 0
Payd for changing the ould Towne-cupp	-	7	17 6
Bought four ounces of Saffron	-	0	15 6
Bought a pound of Saffron	-	3	3 4
To my Lord's [the Earl of Suffolk's] butler, when we went to meet the King	-	0	5 0
Given to the King's Servants	-	1	0 0
Given to the King's Harbingers	-	0	10 0
Given to the King's Trumpeters and Serjeant	-	1	5 0

¹ The antient denomination of "Rice" was properly Rise Marses, (the latter word being a corruption of Marci, the name of the Norman landowner); "it is now," says Morant, "generally called the Rye; and the mansion-house is about a mile West-north-west from the Church. Richard Francke, Esq. who was Sheriff of Essex in 1602, held the maner of Rise Marses, of Sir Francis Barrington, Knt. and Bart. as of his maner of Hatfield." Mr. Francke died Oct. 27, 1627, when he was succeeded by his son Sir Leventhorp Francke, so named from his mother Dorothy, daughter and coheir of John Leventhorp, esq. of Albury, Herts, (and knighted at Whitehall, March 7, 1608-9; see vol. II. p. 246). The family was connected with Germans, and might probably be of German extraction, since we find that Sir Leventhorp married a daughter of Sir Thomas Cottele, who when knighted at Greenwich, July 2, 1609 (see vol. II. p. 260), was called "Teutonicus." Sir Leventhorp sold the estate.—I do not find that the King ever again visited "Rice," and, indeed, the place was so unknown even at the time, that both in Philipot's Knights of King James and in my MS. list, Sir James Scordeck is said to have been knighted at "Richmond."

² See vol. II. p. 746.

³ This account is communicated by the present Lord Braybrook from the Corporation Account Book. See two similar accounts communicated from the same quarter by the same accomplished Nobleman, in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. I. p. 280; vol. II. p. 114.

	£.	s.	d.
Given to the King's Ffootmen	-	1	2 0
Given to the King's Ushers of his Majestie's-chamber	-	0	10 0
Given to the King's Marshall	-	0	6 8

At Audley End, July 19, the King knighted Sir Paul Bayning¹, of London.

On the 21st, he removed, for one night, to his own Hunting Seat at Royston; and on the same day Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King came to town as he appointed, and went away again on Sunday after supper to Theobalds, without altering anything in the Privy Seal or Mastership of the Horse², as was expected; but it was deferred to be done at Audley End as yesterday.

"I took my leave of Mr. Secretary yesternight, till his return from the Progress, being this night to meet the King at Royston. Sir Thomas Lake [the Latin Secretary] goes the Progress likewise, the reason whereof I cannot attain³."

On the 22d, the King pursued his Progress to Hawnes⁴, where it had been intended that he should stay three nights, but which he left in the evening of the 23d, having received, "about 8 a'clock in the morning, certaine intelligence of his Brother the King of Denmark's private and unexpected arrival at London." Of this, "the King of Denmark his second comming to England," the Chronicler Howes gives the following account:

¹ Either the Baronet noticed in vol. II. p. 429; or more probably his son Paul, who succeeded his father as second Viscount in 1629, and died himself in 1638, when all his titles became extinct.—His sister was created Viscountess Bayning for life in 1674, and died in 1698; but from her descended Charles Townsend, created Baron Bayning in 1797, and whose son is now the second Baron.]

² The former office was vacant by the death of the Earl of Northampton; and the latter the Earl of Worcester was ready to resign, on the Privy Seal being conferred on him. This was done, but not till Jan. 2, 1615-16, when, says Camden, "the Earl of Worcester was made Keeper of the Privy Seal, he giving up the place of Master of the Horse into the King's hands the day before." In the mean time the title of Lord Privy Seal appears to have lain dormant. Mr. Lorkin writes to Sir T. Puckering in his letter of July 21 (partly printed in p. 9), that it "shall be extinct; yet the power thereof remains in my Lord of Somerset's hands, who executes."—Had not the Earl of Suffolk's promotion to the office of Lord Treasurer left the place of Lord Chamberlain open for the Earl of Somerset, it appears to have been expected (see p. 2) that that aggrandizing minion would have now ousted the Earl of Worcester from his office. When Worcester actually resigned the Mastership of the Horse in 1615-16, Somerset had fallen, and it was two days afterwards conferred on the new Favourite Villiers.

³ Birch's MSS. 4173.

⁴ Where the King and Queen were together in July 1605. Sir Robert Newdigate, who at that time was their host, had died in the year preceding the present date; and who now enjoyed the mansion appears uncertain. See vol. I. p. 520.

" This moneth of July, the King of Denmark with three ships arived at Yarmouth, being royally attended with his Lord Chauncelor and Lord Admirall of Denmark, with divers other his officers and servants, and above twentie of his Guard. The King came from Yarmouth by land in very private maner, accompanied onely with the Lord Chauncelor and the Lord Admirall. He rode through Ipswich, and lay one night at Burnt-wood¹, not being knowne to any what he was, no not so much as to his guides that came with him and furnished him with horse in this journey; and upon Friday the 22d of July about noone he tooke coach at Aldgate, and, being yet unknowne, rode through London unto Somerset House, where the Queen then kept her Court, who was not a little joyfull to see her Royall Brother, whose sodaine and unexpected comming was chiefly to see her.

" The King of Great Britaine at this time was at Hauns in Bedfordshire, going in Progresse towards Rufford in Rutlandshire [Nottinghamshire], and having upon Saturday the 23d of July, about eight a'clock in the morning, had certaine intelligence of his Brother's sudden and unexpected arivall at London, returned backe to London the same day at evening. By the way he was encountered with a very fierce storme of haile and raine, the violence whereof was such, that as they were comming downe a hill, it forced the King's coach-horse and the rest of the horse in their company to turne their heads from the storme.

" The next day, being Sunday, both the Kings, the Queene, and Prince Charles, were at Somerset House, and there Doctor King, the Lord Bishop of London², preached before them.

" All the next weeke following, the King of Denmark entertained the time in hunting, hawking, running at ring, bear-baiting, and fierworkes; and was also entertained with Plaies by night."

On the 29th of July, Mr. Lorkin wrote thus to Sir Thomas Puckering:

" I shall be able to relate you somewhat more fully the manner of the King of Denmark's coming, together with all the conceits and opinions of men touching the cause thereof. As touching the first, it was in this sort. When he left home, he pretended an interview between himself, the Dukes of Saxe, Brunswick, and Hulst, at a certain town situate upon the confines of Germany, whither he

¹ Brentwood, in the parish of Southweald, six miles from Romford, was formerly a good market-town which rivalled Chelmsford, and the assizes were held there; but it was decayed in Morant's time: The Crown Inn, still so called, might be the place of King Christian's repose, as, when Salmon wrote about 1740, it was reputed to have borne that sign for 300 years. ² See vol. II. p. 587.

must necessarily use the benefit of the sea for the transporting himself. Having, therefore, the better to colour his design, commanded all his Train to go before, and to attend his arrival at such a place, he with three of his Council and half a dozen other Gentlemen, with as many Trumpeters and as many of his Guards, embarked themselves in pretence for Germany, but with an intention for England. None of them that were embarked with him were privy to his purpose, save the three of his Council and the three Masters of the Ships, which was the number of the ships came along with him.

“ He landed here at Yarmouth, and thence took post-horses here to London, where dining at an ordinary inn near Aldgate, he hired a *hackney-coach*, and presently addressed his course to the Queen's Court, and entered the Presence before any person had the least thought of him. There Cardel the dancer gave the first occasion of discovering him, by saying, that that Gentleman was the likest the King of Denmark that ever he saw any in his life; which a Frenchman, one of her Majesty's servants, hearing, and viewing his countenance well, whom he had seen the last time of his being here, grew confident that it was he; and presently ran to carry the news thereof to the Queen, who then sat at dinner privately in her gallery at Somerset House. The Queen at first scorned him for his labour, so vain it appeared, and thought it some fantastic *capriccio* of a French brain. But the King following close after, and begging silence with the becking of his hands as he entered, came behind her, and embraced her ere she was aware, and saluting her with a kiss, taught her the verity of that which before she believed to be a falsehood. Presently she took off the best jewel she wore then about her, and gave it the Frenchman for his tidings; dispatched a post to his Majesty, who was well onward on his Progress; and then intended the care of his Entertainment.

“ The stealth of the journey, and other circumstances of his arrival, gave subjects of fear at the first, that it was some great distress at home; which point being since cleared, it is as strongly conceited, that it is for some notable design abroad, and specially with relation to Germany. But some of the wise sort, that it is to accommodate some particular differences here; whereof I think fit to give you only this touch, which I wish may rest likewise with yourself¹.

“ His entertainment here hath been hunting, bear-baiting, running at the ring,

¹ See more of these tattling conjectures in Mr. Chamberlain's letter of August 4, and Mr. Lor-kin's of August 6; pp. 17, 18.

and fencing. Upon Monday next, the King conveys him to Rochester, and so to Gravesend, where he takes shipping the day following with an intention of returning speedily ¹."

"Upon Satterday the 30th of July," continues Howes, "the King of Denmark beheld feates of armes performed by the most skilfull fencers about London; who played at sundry weapons according to the manner of fight.

"The next day, being Sunday, both the Kings were at Whitehall, and Doctor Mountaine, Deane of Westminster ², preached before them in Latine. And that day the King of Denmark was roially feasted in the beutifull Banqueting House, where both the Kings dined together in great state. From thence they returned to Somerset House, where that night in the garden, by the King of Denmark's device and charge, and by his owne men, there were performed most excellent and ingenious fierworkes.

"The next day, being Munday the first of August, the two Kings and Prince Charles [with the Lord Admirall and many other Lords], tooke barge earlie in the morning, and went first to Wollwich," where, says our old friend Mr. Pette, they "went on board the *Mer Honeur*, then lying in the dry dock, and almost finished, which ship liked them wondrous well ³." From Woolwich the Royal Party proceeded to Gravesend, where, continues Howes, they "dined at the signe of the Shippe. After dinner King James and Prince Charles accompanied the King of Denmark aboard unto his owne ship, where having stayd about two howers, and performed all Kingly complements, the King of England tooke barge, and returned to Blackwall, and there tooke coach, and rode that night to Theobalds, and so went forward againe of his Progresse.

"And the next day the King of Denmark and Prince Charles rode to Rochester, and went aboard the great new ship called the Prince ⁴." To this vessel, which was riding at her moorings off Chatham, the Lord Admiral of England accompanied them, and Sir Robert Mansel and Mr. Pette himself were in attendance. "The ship," says that worthy autobiographer, "was completely rigged, and all her sails at her yards, and richly adorned with ensigns and pendants all of silk, which gave a very great contentment to the King of Denmark; — yet it was a

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

² See vol. II. p. 725.

³ It appears from an after page in Pette's Life, that this ship and the *Defiance* were launched on the 6th of March following, without any particular ceremonies. Prince Henry, who had taken such delight in the Navy, was now no more!

⁴ See vol. II. p. 365, 370, 419.

very foul rainy day.”—“ They returned to Gravesend to dinner ; and after dinner the Prince accompanied his Uncle aboarde his owne ship, there stayed a while, and having taken their leaves either of other, Prince Charles returned that night to London. The next day Christianus King of Denmarke, with his three brave shippes and Kingly Trayne, set sayle for Denmark, where they all arrived safely. And though he stayd in England but a few dayes, yet his Princely kindness and bountie was Royall unto all persons, according to their degrees, that did him any service or attendance ; namely, unto some hee gave faire chaynes of golde, to others jewells, rings, or bruches, besides his liberall reward in money, &c.”¹

On the fourth of August, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“ The King of Denmark went hence on Monday the first of August, the tide falling out so, that our King, having brought him to Gravesend, came back to Blackwall, and there taking his coach, went to Theobalds that night, the next day to Huntingdon², and so to Sir Anthony Mildmay’s [at Aphthorp], where he overtook his dogs, that went the ordinary Progress.

“ It is thought that the King of Denmark could have been content to have staid longer, but that he was hastened away. He had every day several entertainments, as hunting, running at the ring, bear-baiting, fencing, fire-works, and such like, and was very bountiful at his departure to the Queen’s servants. There is no other cause of his coming yet discovered than extraordinary kindness, though there be many discourses not improbable. Some whisper that if the Earl of Northampton had lived he would have complained of some hard and irreverent usage and speeches of his toward the Queen his Sister. Others that he moved the King to undertake Brandenburg’s quarrel for Cleve with 10,000 men, who if the King would deliver well armed and apparelled in those parts, he [of Denmark] would be their General in person, and see them paid till the King were better able to reimburse him. But this short stay here, and many entertainments, afforded no time for any serious consultations. Neither can I learn that his Council and ours had any meetings but only at meals.

“ He dined at Whitehall the Monday after his coming, being St. James’s-day. The Friday night after, the King invited him thither to a drinking-feast in his private-chamber, where some dozen or fifteen healths passed to and fro ; and on

¹ Howes’ Chronicle.

² Of the King’s visits to Huntingdon we have no particulars, but see vol. I. pp. 100, 589.

Sunday they dined both there in state in the great Banqueting-room. And these were all the times he was there, saving going in and out. At parting the King gave him a present of golden plate to the value of £.4000, and £.1500 in plate and chains to his followers. The Ambassadors were all with him; but the Venetian takes great exception, that the Archduke's had audience before him, which was only because he first demanded it. Yet he will not be so answered, but would have our King make some public declaration, and decide the controversy in his favour. About this and such other frivolous business he importunes Mr. Secretary extremely, and will not be answered, neither could he be in quiet for him, while he was here, but was with him at every turn. Now he is gone the Progress, and is as much troubled with his colleague Sir Thomas Lake, who interlopes into his business very much, whereupon some words and threatenings have passed between them, the rather for that he went about under-hand to have half his diet, as Secretary for the Latin tongue. And the matter was taken into consideration, and moved to the King at Audley End, but it went not so forward, for if it had, *actum erat*, and he would not have endured it. But he stands in good terms with the King, specially while he is near him, and I think the other will be more wary how he encroach upon him hereafter¹."

On the 6th of August, Mr. Lorkin again wrote to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"I had almost let slip the most principal point of all others, which is to let you know what the most judicious sort conceit now the cause of the King of Denmark's coming,—to treat with his Majesty about a Match, which is now in parley between his son and the younger daughter of Spain. This is certain—that, after the leave taken between the two Kings, the Spanish Ambassador was four hours privately with him in his ship, and honoured at his departure with 150 great shot. *Sed hæc in aurem!*"²

The King having, as Mr. Chamberlain says, by way of Theobalds and Huntingdon, met his dogs at Apthorp on the third of August, he is said to have there met also, for the first time³, one he afterwards used to term (using what appeared

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Ibid. 4176.

³ This tradition is certainly strengthened, if not confirmed, by the knowledge that, until my present researches, no record of the King's being at Apthorp in 1614 was known to exist.—Its authority, moreover, is no less trust worthy than the Baronage of Dugdale. The birth of George Villiers, though not noble, was most respectable. It was reported by those who envied his greatness that he was meanly descended, but his family had been seated at Brokesby in Leicestershire from the time

to the Royal huntsman the most endearing appellation) his "kind dogge Steenie,"—the celebrated George Villiers.

of Henry III. and, according to a pedigree confirmed by the Heralds in 1670 (and printed in the History of Leicestershire, vol. III. p. 197), was descended from Aymer de Villiers, sewer to Philip the First of France, slain by four soldiers of William the Conqueror of England, in 1076. The Favourite was the fourth son of Sir George Villiers (knighted, it is said, but I find not when); his mother was Sir George's second wife, Mary, daughter of Anthony Beaumont, Esq. of Cole Orton, afterwards created Duchess of Buckingham. Of his elder brethren the Duke was afterwards the means of making the first a Baronet; the second (whose son was Viscount Grandison), President of Munster; the third Viscount Purbeck; his younger brother Earl of Anglesey; and his brother-in-law Sir William Fielding, Earl of Denbigh. The education of the future Favourite was, from his tenth to his thirteenth year, at the school of Billesdon in the neighbourhood of his parents, where, says his first biographer Sir Henry Wotton, "he was taught the principles of music, and other light literature." He was afterwards instructed at home in dancing, fencing, and all the qualifications of a Courtier, "in which character," remarks Mr. Lodge in his "Portraits of Illustrious Personages of Great Britain), "it seems to have been rather the wish than the expectation of his parents that he might be sometime placed;" and then passed three years in France, from which he returned exact to perfection in every accomplishment which could be bestowed by an education from which all that we are used to call Learning seems to have been utterly excluded. He loitered away, continues Mr. Lodge, yet another year in his mother's house in the country, before any plan could be devised for his future life, when meeting with one of the daughters of Sir Roger Aston, (all four of whom are elegantly represented, and their actual marriages detailed on Sir Roger's monument engraved in Lysons's Environs, vol. V. p. 22,) they conceived a mutual affection, and he followed her to London. "The Gentlewoman loved him so well," says Weldon, "as, could all his friends have made, for her great fortune, but a hundred marks jointure, she had married him presently, in despite of all her friends, and no question would have had him without any jointure at all." It is said, however, probably more truly, that he was dissuaded from the match by Sir James Graham, a Gentleman of the Privy-chamber, who "encouraged him," as Wotton tells us, "to woo fortune in the Court." This courtship and visit to London are, it must be owned, enveloped in some doubt and obscurity; whilst that George Villiers was now *first introduced to the King's notice at Apthorp* seems to be clearly established. The King, as in case of Car, was attracted by admiration of his handsome exterior, it being one of our Monarch's most remarkable foibles, that he was delighted, almost to fascination, by a fine figure and countenance, and a graceful carriage. The King, says Sir Henry Wotton, finding that Sir John Graham was his familiar friend, "gave him private directions how and by what means, to bring him into favour." Villiers soon after was sworn servant to the King, and preferred to the office of Cup-bearer. Having arrived at this point, the historians of this Favourite's rise have generally gone on to say, on the authority of Coke's Detection, that his fortune was not actually made until he had been again exhibited before the King at Cambridge in March 1614-15; but that he was at once adopted as "the new Favourite" is now first proved by Mr. Chamberlain's letter in p. 25. Here I shall for the present leave the subject; only adding that the rise of Villiers was certainly accelerated by the efforts of Archbishop Abbot and the Queen, who, being justly offended by the arrogance of

From Apthorp the King proceeded to Burley on the Hill¹, probably on the fourth of August, as appointed in the Gests. On the fifth, the Anniversary of the Gowry Conspiracy, Bishop Andrews was at hand, and preached a Sermon on the occasion. His text was from Psalm lxxxix, 20—23².

From Burley on the Hill the King proceeded to Belvoir Castle, Newark, Rufford, Newstead³, and Nottingham, probably exactly as arranged in the Gests. We find he arrived at the latter place on the 17th, as had been proposed. The following are minutes of the preparations made for him:

“Monday, 8th August. Conference this day is had about the King’s entertainment; and Sir Henry Pierrepont⁴ hath promised to provide for some short Speech, and Mr. Rockett is required to go to Newark to-morrow to observe the manner of his Majesty’s entertainment there.

“Thursday, 11th August. It is agreed by the Company here present, (the Mayor, Recorder, six Aldermen, and twenty-three others there named,) that the Mayor, Aldermen, and all the Cloathing shall attend his Majesty in their scarlet gowns.”

The only memorandum of the King’s actual Visit is on the cover of the Book:

“Wednesday, 17th August. His Majesty comes to Nottingham, and stays one night only, and lodgeth at Thurland Hall⁵.”

Somerset and his undue influence over the King, adopted the resolution of, at is has been termed, “driving out one nail by another.” See under the 23d of April 1615, when the new Favourite was knighted.

¹ At Burley on the Hill the King was entertained in his first journey into England; see vol. I. pp. 93, 121. It was then the seat of Sir John (afterwards Lord) Harington. His son had succeeded to his title and estates in 1613, but died in the present year. Burley on the Hill was afterwards purchased of the heirs by the Favourite Villiers. The King was there again August 3 to 6, 1616, probably in 1619, Aug. 4, 1621, and August 3, 1624.

² This discourse, “preached before the King’s Majestie at Burleigh near Okeham,” is in the Bishop’s “XCVI Sermons,” the Fourth on the Gowry Conspiracy. The Bishop on the same day two years afterwards delivered another Sermon on the same subject at “Burleigh neere Okeham.”

³ All these places have been noticed in vol. II. pp. 457—460, in describing the Royal Progress in the summer of 1612.

⁴ Sir Henry Pierrepont, father of the first Earl of Kingston, and of whom see vol. I. p. 88, lived at Nottingham in a house at the top of St. Mary’s Hill, which in Thoroton’s time was the residence of the Marquess of Dorchester. He died March 19, 1615, aged 69. His monument in the Church of Holme Pierrepont with a recumbent effigy of himself in armour, and small figures of his children, is engraved in Thoroton’s History, p. 91.

⁵ Of which see vol. II. p. 462.

Of the expences incurred by the Corporation we have the following account :

"The Chamberlains have promised to deliver to Mr. Mayor towards the fees of his Majesty's Officers, £.20 ; the Schoolwardens, £.6. 13s. 4d. ; and the Bridge-masters were required to pay Mr. Stables, £.12, for the interest of his money, and £.3. for the Parliament wages ; and they paid accordingly.

"August 11. This day is appointed the attendance for his Majesty's Entertainment ; and it is agreed to be thus : forty of the Cloathing in scarlet, forty in black gowns¹, and forty in cloaks with halberts ; and they to be strictly charged to be ready in their best apparell, and to be at the Spice-chambers by ten of the clock in the morning.

"A Committee of six desired to view the highways and passages about the Town, and to command all blocks and other noisome places to be removed."

On the "Feast of the Assumption of the Blessed Virgin Mary, before this company Mr. Freeman, Mayor, made his Account for the charges spent about his Majesty's Entertainment here, who lodged here one night, viz. the 17th of August last.

	£.	s.	d.
"Received by him of the new Chamberlains	-	-	20 0 0
Received by him towards the said Charge of the Schoolwardens	-	6	13 4
Sum received	-	£.26	13 4

"Whereof paid and given allowances:	To the Yeoman Usher's	£.	s.	d.
To Mr. Morse, the Clark of	Grooms and Pages	-	2	0 0
the Market, for the Verge	To the Porters	-	1	0 0
To him more, for his favor	To the Footmen	-	2	0 0
towards our tradesmen	To the Trumpeters	-	2	0 0
Bestowed on him and his	The Yeoman of the Monthe	0	10	0
Company in wine and su-	Yeoman that attends the ***	0	6	8
gar at his first coming	To the Sewers	-	1	0 0
Given to his men in reward	To the Serjeant at Arms	-	2	0 0
To the Gentleman Usher's	To the Cochemen	-	1	0 0
Daily Wayters	Four of the King's Messengers	0	10	0
To his men in reward	The King's Marshall's Officers	0	13	4
To the Gentleman Usher's	Black Gard, the Kitchenners	0	5	0
other Wayters	To the Gentlemen Herbingers	1	0	0

¹ There was, and is, the same distinction at Leicester ; see vol. II. p. 464.

	£.	s.	d.	house, upon the King's	£.	s.	d.
To the Yeomen Herbingers	1	0	0	Servants	-	-	0 18 0
Surveyors of the Highways	1	0	0	Allowed to Mr. Mayor to-			
To the Grooms of the Stable	0	10	0	wards his table-keeping	-	5 6 8	
For wine and sugar spent, at				Paid	-	£.27 19 3	
the meals in Mr. Mayor's				Received	-	£.26 13 4	
So that the sum laid out exceeded that which he hath received					-	£.1 5 11	
which he must receive of the Chamberlain ¹ ."							

"Thursdaie the 18th day of August 1614. Our most gracious Sovereigne Lorde the Kinge came in his Progresse this nighte to Leicester, to the Earl of Huntingdon his Honor's howse², and there laie. Mr. Maior [Thomas Manbye] and his Bretherne, and the Forty-eight, attended the King at the saide Earle's howse, and there received his Highnes. Mr. John Wyncoll³ made a Speech in Lattin unto his Majestie att the Court-gates, where the King, sat in his coche, heard the same verie pleasinglie; and his Highnes did very much comende the same Speeche, and gave Mr. Wyncoll his hand to kisse. And from the court-gates Mr. Maior carried the Mace before the King into the Presence-chamber⁴."

The Ringers of St. Martin's, Leicester, were on this occasion paid 13*d*.

The 14th of September following, Mr. Alderman Robert Heyricke⁵, wrote thus from Leicester to his brother Sir William, the King's Jeweller and Goldsmith:

"At the King's being here, Mr. Dackombe⁶ cam not to Leicester, although I had made the best provision for him that I colld, and wolld by my good will have placed him in the high forme; but, seeing it wolld not be, I was forced to place my Lord Walden in one, and Sir Omfrey May⁷ in another. I was very desyr-ous to have had Mr. Hew May⁸ also; but I colld not. I provyded a good break-fast the next mornyng; but I colld get nethar of them. The King went not into the Forrest, nor did not see his new lande; but, so soon as he had broke his feet, away to Dingley that night. Your loving brother, ROBERT HEYRICKE⁹."

From Leicester the King proceeded to Dingley, Holdenby, Grafton, and

¹ Communicated from the Hall or Year Book of the Corporation, by Mr. Enfield, the Town Clerk; see vol. II. p. 462. ² See vol. II. p. *457. ³ Ibid. p. *458.

⁴ Communicated from Corporation Records by Mr. J. Stockdale Hardy. ⁵ See vol. II. p. 463.

⁶ Knighted June 3, 1616, when made Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster; see vol. III. p. 170.

⁷ This Knight, before noticed in vol. II. p. 517, was the successor of Mr. Dackombe as Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster. He was brother-in-law to Sir William Herrick; see vol. I. p. 504.

⁸ Brother to Sir Humfrey and Groom of the King's Privy-chamber. ⁹ Hist. of Leic. II. 627.

Woodstock¹, probably as arranged in the Gests. During his stay at the latter place, he knighted Sir Henry Lee, Baronet²; and on Sunday the 28th of August heard a Sermon, on Jer. i. 10, from William Goodwin, D. D. the Dean of Christ Church³.

"The King in his Progress taking Oxon in his way from Woodstock the 29th of August," says Anthony à Wood in his Annals under this year, "went up to the Public Library, with the Bedells before him, and in his company were several of the Nobility, Council, and Knights with him, among which were the Earls of Pembroke and Somerset, and Sir Ralph Winwood, Secretary. After he had perused the Album of Benefactors to the Structure of the New Schools (whose zeal for the public he much praised), he commanded that the Commentary of Dr. William Fulke, of Cambridge, written on the New Testament, should be brought to him; which being so done, deprehendit (ex cap. x. ad Romanos et sec. 15 annot.) calumnias et imposturas quorundam Pontificiorum de ordine et vocatione Ministrorum; et ita, censurâ latâ de hoc tenebrione⁴, ex hâc Bibliothecâ recessit."

On the eastern side of the Quadrangle of the Schools, or in Wood's words, "between the Geometry and Metaphysic, and Astronomy and Logic Schools, is the chief entrance from Cat-street into this new fabric; having over it an eminent and stately Tower, on the outside of which, next to the area or quadrangle, is beheld the rise of five stories of pillars, equal to every story of the Tower, viz. of Tuscan, Doric, Ionic, Corinthian, and Composite work. Between the upper story of pillars saving one is the effigies of King James the First, cut very curiously in stone, sitting in a throne and giving with his right hand a book to

¹ Of these mansions and their owners see vol. II. p. *460.

² See vol. II. p. 429.

³ "In 1590," says Wood, "I find this person Sub-almoner to Queen Elizabeth, well beneficed in Yorkshire, and Prebendary of York. Also in 1605 I find him collated to the Chancellorship of York, as also to another Prebend in that Church, and a rectory in the said Diocese." He became Dean of Christ's Church 1611; Archdeacon of Middlesex 1616; resigned in 1617 the Church of All Saints, Thames-street; and also held the rectory of Stanton St. John, Wilts, on the presentation of Lord Chancellor Ellesmere. He died on Trinity Sunday, June 11, 1620, aged 65, and was buried at the charge of the Chapter in one of the North aisles joining to the choir of the Cathedral of Christ Church. See Wood's Fasti (by Bliss), vol. I. col. 297.—His present Sermon was printed at Oxford, 1614, 4to; and a copy exists in the Bodleian Library.

⁴ The Annotator on the New Testament whose most celebrated Work the King so openly abused, was a learned Divine who flourished in the reign of Elizabeth, and who had died as long before as 1589. His doctrines were puritanical, but he obtained good preferment, and he died Master of Pembroke Hall, Cambridge. The work in question, a Comment on the Rheims Testament, was first published in 1580. See the Memoir of Dr. Fulke in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

the picture or emblem [another statue] of Fame, with this inscription on the cover: *HÆC HABEO QUÆ SCRIPSI*. With his left hand he reacheth out another book to our Mother the University of Oxford, represented in effigie, kneeling to the King, with this inscription on the cover also: *HÆC HABEO QUÆ DEDI*. On the verge of the canopy over the throne and the King's head, which is also most admirably cut in stone, is his motto, *BEATI PACIFICI*. Over that also are the emblems [statues] of Justice, Peace, and Plenty, and underneath all, this inscription in golden letters:

REGNANTE D. JACOBO REGUM DOCTISSIMO,
MUNIFICENTISSIMO, OPTIMO, HÆ MUSIS
EXSTRUCTÆ MOLES, CONGESTA BIBLIOTHECA,
ET QUÆCUNQUE ADHUC DEERANT AD SPLENDOREM
ACADEMIÆ, FELICITER TENTATA,
CÆPTA, ABSOLUTA. SOLI DEO GLORIA.

"All which pictures and emblems were at first with great cost and splendor double gilt; but when King James came from Woodstock to see this quadrangular pile, he commanded them (being so glorious and splendid that none, especially when the sun shined, could behold them,) to be whited over and adorned with ordinary colours, which hath since so continued¹."

That his Majesty finished his tour by visiting Rycot and Bisham², as appointed by the Gest, there is no cause to doubt.

On the 2d of October, he knighted, at Theobalds, Sir John Franklin.

On the 12th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Mr. Isaac Wake, then Secretary to Sir Dudley Carleton, at Venice³:

"The King and Prince are at Royston; whither Mr. Secretary went in the beginning of this week, and makes account to go again in six or eight days⁴."

Lord Mayor's-day, the 29th of October, was this year celebrated by the old Draper, Anthony Munday⁵, in "Triumphs of Old Drapery, or the rich Clothing of England; at the charge of the Right Worshipfull the Company of Drapers, at the Installation of Sir Thomas Hayes⁶. By A. Munday," 4to.⁷

¹ They still remain on the gateway; views of which have, of course, been frequently engraved; but it is particularly well represented in Chalmers's History of Oxford.—It may be here observed that there is another "effigies" of James I. at Oxford;—on Carfax conduit, which was built in 1610.

² See Progress of 1612, vol. II. p. *462.

³ See vol. I. p. 546.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁵ See vol. II. p. 681, 697.

⁶ See vol. I. p. 234.

⁷ The title of this London Pageant is thus given in the Biographia Dramatica; but I have in vain endeavoured to trace a copy.

On the fourth of November, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir D. Carleton:

"Mr. Secretary hath made a purchase of late of about £.800 a year; so that he hath now better than £.1000 land in Buckinghamshire¹. He goes the next week toward Newmarket to the King; who upon Saturday last had a dangerous fall with his horse in hunting; yet without any great hurt more than a bruise in the side and arm from the weight of his horse, that lay upon him. Butler² was sent for from Cambridge, who would have let him blood, and purged him the next day; but because he rested reasonably well that night, he would not be persuaded to it, but only useth outward means. The Council wrote to condole the mischance, and congratulate the escape; with a reverent advertisement, that he would be more careful hereafter. The Queen wrote to have leave to come to see him; but it was thought needless.

"The fortune of Villiers, the new Favourite³, seems to be at a stand, or at least not to go very fast forward; for when it was expected he should be made of the Bed-chamber, one Carre, a bastard kinsman of the Lord Chamberlain, is stepped in, and admitted to the place. And yet most men do not believe that the world goes altogether so well on that side as it was wont⁴."

November 7, the King knighted at Whitehall, Sir Lawrence Hyde, Attorney to the Queen⁵.

On the 21st his Majesty was at Newmarket, and there conferred knighthood on Sir William Some; and Sir John Repington⁶, of Warwickshire.

On the first of December Mr. Chamberlain wrote again to Sir D. Carleton:

"Mr. Secretary went on Monday towards the King at Newmarket, in very foul weather, as it hath been almost continually all this winter hitherto⁷."

On the 13th, the Earl of Northumberland wrote word to the Earl of Cumberland, "there is a Maske⁸ towards for this Christmas⁹."

¹ Mr. Winwood's mansion was Ditton; see vol. II. p. 446.

² Of whom and his attendance on the King, see under Prince Henry's illness, vol. II. p. 476.

³ See p. 19.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁵ Of whom see vol. II. p. 644.

⁶ Sir John Repington, of an ancient family seated at Amington, was at this time Sheriff of Warwickshire; he died Jan. 23, 1625.

⁷ Birch's MSS. 4173.

⁸ Doubtless Ben Jonson's "Mercury vindicated from the Alchemists."

⁹ Whitaker's History of Craven, p. 288.

On the 15th of December, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir D. Carleton :
 " Mr. Secretary came from Newmarket this day sevensnight, and went yesterday to meet the King at his coming to Theobalds¹."

Again, on the 22d, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to his friend :

" The King came to town on Monday ; but finds so little pleasure in being here, that yesterday he went to Hampton Court for two or three days²."

His Majesty returned to keep Christmas-day, as was customary, at Whitehall. Bishop Andrews addressed him from the pulpit as usual³.

On the 31st, the King, still at Whitehall, there knighted Sir Edward Mosley⁴.

On the 5th of January, Mr. Chamberlain wrote again to Sir Dudley Carleton :

" They have Plays at Court every night, both holy-days and working-days, wherein they shew great patience, being for the most part such poor stuff that, instead of delight, they send the auditory away with discontent. Indeed our Poets' brains and inventions are grown very dry, insomuch that of five new Plays there is not one that pleases, and therefore they are driven to furbish over their old ; which stand them in best stead and bring them most profit⁵.

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Ibid.

³ The Discourse the Bishop delivered on this occasion, from " Esay, viii. 14," is in his " XCVI Sermons," the Ninth " of the Nativitie."

⁴ The younger son of Sir Nicholas Mosley, Lord Mayor of London in 1599 ; he was Attorney General of the Duchy of Lancaster, and died s. p.—His nephew Edward, of Rolleston, Staffordshire, was advanced to a Baronetcy in 1640, which became extinct with his son Edward, the second Baronet. Another baronetcy was conferred in 1720 on the descendants of Anthony, brother of the Lord Mayor, who had succeeded to Rolleston ; but this becoming extinct with the third Baronet in 1779, a third baronetcy was conferred in 1781 on the heir, whose son, Sir Francis-William, second Baronet of Ancoats, co. Lancaster, now enjoys this title.

⁵ Had one of the enthusiastic annotators of Shakspeare met with this sentence, he would not have failed to twist it to his own advantage, by remarking that the career of the Immortal Bard was now closed, or nearly so ; that other dramatists could not satisfy the public appetite, lately pampered by his unrivalled productions ; and that therefore *his* old Plays were obliged to be revived. And all this would have been very plausible ; yet the year 1614 is affixed by Johnson and Steevens to the *Midsummer's Night's Dream*, which play and the *Tempest* Warburton calls " the noblest efforts of that sublime and amazing imagination peculiar to Shakspeare !" It is a truth which requires no demonstration, that Shakspeare in his own time was little more thought of by the public than his fellow playwrights were ; and yet it is a remarkable proof that such was the case, that we never find him mentioned by the ever communicative Mr. Chamberlain. — Mr. Chamberlain's present complaint, however, as all will agree, certainly applies better to our own age.

"To-morrow night there is a Masque at Court; but the common voice and preparations promise so little, that it breeds no great expectation¹.

"We are still upon projects, and every day brings forth some new devise. There was lately speech of making fifty new Barons at £.6000 a piece; but it greatly failed; for though the world be as vain and ambitious as ever, yet money goes low, and I think they should scant have found five at that rate.

"Yesterday Alabaster, the double or treble turncoat², preached before the King at Whitehall, where there were many Clergymen that do not greatly applaud him, but say he made a curious fantasticall piece of work.

"Sir Walter Raleigh's book³ is called in by the King's commandment, for being too saucy in censuring Princes. I hear he takes it much to heart; for he thought he had won his spurs, and pleased the King extraordinarily⁴.

¹ Of "Mercury vindicated from the Alchemists" Mr. Chamberlain gives a different opinion in his next letter; see p. 38.

² The celebrated William Alabaster, termed by Wood, "the rarest Poet and Grecian that any one age or nation produced!" His principal learned work was a *Lexicon Polyglotton, Hebraicum, Chaldaicum, Syriacum, &c.*; and his most celebrated poetical production was the Latin tragedy of *Roxana*. Mr. Chamberlain's epithet alludes to his having adopted the Roman Catholic religion, when he attended as Chaplain the Earl of Essex to Cadiz, and afterwards, perceiving his error, returned to the Church of England. He became D.D., Prebendary of St. Paul's, and Rector of Therfield, Herts. "Mr. Alabaster," says Dr. Donne, in a letter, "hath got of the King the Dean's best living, worth above £.300, which the Dean had good hope to have held a while." See further in Chalmers's *Biographical Dictionary*, and Wood's *Fasti* (by Bliss), vol. I. p. 259.

³ The first volume of the "History of the World," just published in folio.

⁴ Raleigh was indeed always most harshly used by King James. "Some have fancied that the merits of Sir Walter's History of the World procured his releasement from the Tower; but there seems little foundation for that opinion, since King James is known to have expressed some dislike of it." So says the *Biographical Dictionary*, but, if Mr. Chamberlain was not misinformed, the King did more than express his dislike. "As to a report respecting the second volume of this History, which, it is said, he burned because the first had sold so slowly that it had ruined his bookseller, it is scarcely worth notice; for it appears that there was a second edition of it printed by the same bookseller, within three years after the first." This is a matter of opinion; for though the story about burning the second volume rests, I believe, on no better authority than Aubrey, still the disappointment Mr. Chamberlain says Sir Walter received, was fully sufficient to provoke his high spirit to an act as violent. "According to his own evidence," continues the biographer, "he had certainly planned a second and a third volume; but was persuaded to lay them aside by the death of Prince Henry, to whose use they were dedicated." The "evidence" to which the biographer here alludes, has been quoted in Sir Walter's own words in vol. II. p. 488; no inference, however, can be drawn from it, that, when the Author penned the last page of the History of the World, he had relin-

"Sir Edward Hoby presented the King on New-year's-day with his book against one Flood, a Papist, that had answered his writings, and used him rudely¹, and therefore intitles his book, 'A Currycomb for a Coxcomb².'"

Of the Plays which Mr. Chamberlain treated so contemptuously in the preceding Letter, we have good reason to presume that Ben Jonson's Bartholomew Fair was one. That excellent Comedy, in which the Puritans are so successfully ridiculed, was certainly about this time exhibited before the King, when the Poet composed the following neat Prologue and Epilogue for the occasion³:

THE PROLOGUE TO THE KING'S MAJESTY.

Your Majesty is welcome to a Fair;
Such place, such men, such language, and such ware

quished his designs of succeeding volumes. That the death of Prince Henry stopped the progress of the Work, is evidently disproved by the knowledge that Sir Walter continued his labours on the first volume and produced it two years after that occurrence; nor, therefore, is it likely that his Highness's decease induced Sir Walter to abandon the intended continuation;—it seems more probably to have been the want of encouragement. He wrote his History for the World it described, not for the Prince alone; he certainly does not in the sentence in question relinquish his task, but only laments that "that glorious Prince, to whom it was directed," (that is, intended to have been particularly dedicated,) had been taken out of this world.

¹ Of Sir Edward Hoby see vol. II. p. 365; and of his contest with the Jesuit Floyd, "commonly called Father Fludd," see Wood's *Athenæ* (by Bliss), vol. II. col. 195.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

³ Bartholomew Fair was first produced at the Hope Theatre, Bankside, by the Lady Elizabeth's Servants, Oct. 31, 1614. "This Play," Mr. Gifford remarks, "was always a favourite of the people; and from the success which attended it, the epiphonema 'O rare Ben Jonson!' (afterwards placed on his tombstone) is said to have been first given to its Author. Whether it 'pleased the King,' (as the Epilogue suggested), we have no means of ascertaining; James, indeed, disliked the Puritans, and must have been gratified with the well-drawn portraiture of them in *Zeal-of-the-land Busy*; but it is not altogether so certain that he would take delight in the strong ridicule thrown upon the controversies with them in the dispute between the Rabbi and puppet Dionysius. He had himself entered into more than one theological contest with them, and with a deplorable blindness in regard to their real object, always expected, poor man, in some auspicious moment, to reconcile them to the establishment in Church and State, by the force of his own reasoning." Be this as it may, his merry Grandson greatly delighted in it. Bartholomew Fair was revived, as might naturally be expected, immediately after the Restoration, and was frequently honoured with a Royal command by Charles, whom tradition represents as greatly delighted with the character of Cokes, the Esquire of Harrow, which was excellently played by Winterset, and afterwards by Nokes, the most celebrated comic performer in those days.

You must expect ; with these, the zealous noise
 Of your land's Faction, scandaliz'd at toys,
 As babies, hobby-horses, puppet plays,
 And such like rage,—whereof the petulant ways
 Yourself have known, and have been vext with long.
 These for your sport, without particular wrong,
 Or just complaint of any private man,
 (Who of himself or shall think well or can,)
 The Maker doth present ; and hopes to-night
 To give you, for a *fairing*,—true delight.

THE EPILOGUE.

Your Majesty hath seen the Play ; and you
 Can best allow it from your ear and view.
 You know the scope of Writers, and what store
 Of *leave* is given them, if they take not more,
 And turn it into *licence* ; you can tell
 If we have used that leave you gave us well ;
 Or whether we to rage or licence break,
 Or be prophane, or make prophane men speak.
 This is your power to judge, Great Sir, and not
 The envy of a few ;—which if we've got,
 We value less what their dislike can bring,
 If it so happy be t' have pleas'd the King.

On Twelfth-night was first exhibited Ben Jonson's Masque of "Mercury Vindicated from the Alchemists¹:"

¹ This "very ingenious and pleasant little piece," as Mr. Gifford terms it, was first published in the folio edition of Jonson's Works, 1616. Its Author, had a few years before its production most successfully satyriized the same Pseudo-philosophers in his Comedy of the Alchemist, produced in 1610.



MERCURY VINDICATED FROM THE ALCHEMISTS.

AT COURT,

BY GENTLEMEN THE KING'S SERVANTS,

JANUARY 6, AND JANUARY 8, 1614.

 Written by BEN JONSON.

Loud music. After which the Scene is discovered ; being a laboratory or Alchemist's work-house ; VULCAN looking to the registers, while a CYCLOP, tending the fire, to the cornets began to sing :

CYCLOP. *Soft, subtle Fire, thou soul of Art!
 Now do thy part
 On weaker Nature, that through age is lamed;
 Take but thy time, now she is old,
 And the Sun her friend grown cold,
 She will no more in strife with thee be named.
 Look, but how few confess her now,
 In cheek or brow!
 From every head, almost, how she is frightened!
 The very age abhors her so,
 That it learns to speak and go,
 As if by Art alone it could be righted.*

The Song ended, MERCURY appeared, thrusting out his head, and afterward his body, at the tunnel of the middle furnace ; which VULCAN espying, cried out to the CYCLOPS :

VULCAN. Stay, see! our Mercury is coming forth ; Art and all the elements assist! Call forth our philosophers. He will be gone ; he will evaporate. Dear Mercury! Help, he flies ; he is scaped. Precious golden Mercury, be fixt ; be not so volatile! Will none of the sons of Art appear?

In which time MERCURY having run once or twice about the room, takes breath, and speaks :

MERCURY. Now the place and goodness of it protect me! One tender-hearted creature or other, save Mercury, and free him. Ne'er an old Gentle-

woman in the house, that has a wrinkle about her to hide me in? I could run into a serving-woman's pocket now; her glove,—any little hole. Some merciful verdingale¹ among so many, be bounteous, and undertake me! I will stand close up anywhere to escape this polt-footed² Philosopher, old Smug here of Lemnos, and his smoaky family. Has he given me time to breathe! O the variety of torment that I have endured in the reign of the Cyclops, beyond the most exquisite wit of tyrants! The whole household of them are become Alchemists, since their trade of armour-making fail'd them, only to keep themselves in fire for this winter; for the mischief a secret that they know, above the consuming of coals and drawing of usquebagh! howsoever they may pretend, under the specious names of Geber, Arnold, Lully, Bombast of Hohenheim³, to commit miracles in Art, and treason against Nature; and, as if the title of Philosopher, that creature of glory, were to be fetched out of a furnace, abuse the curious and credulous nation of metal-men through the world, and make Mercury their instrument. I am their crude and their sublimate; their precipitate and their unctuous; their male and their female; sometimes their hermaphrodite; what they list to style me. It is I, that am corroded, and exalted, and sublimed, and reduced; and fetch'd over and filtered; and wash'd and wiped; what between their salts and their sulphurs; their oils and their tartars; their brines and their vinegars; you might take me out now a soused Mercury, now a salted Mercury, now a smoaked and dried Mercury, now a powdered and pickled Mercury; never herring, oyster, or cucumber past so many vexations. My whole life with them hath been an exercise of torture; one, two, three, four, and five times an hour have they made me dance the philosophical circle, like an ape through a hoop, or a dog in a wheel. I am their turnspit indeed; they eat and smell no roast-meat but in my name. I am their bill of credit still, that passes for their vic-

¹ This article in dress, notwithstanding the Proclamation mentioned in vol. II. p. 590, had not diminished in size. N.

² Splay, or rather club-footed. In the *Poetaster*, Jonson calls this poor "old Smug of Lemnos" a polt-footed stinkard; so that Howel had reason, in one of his letters, to put "his Father Ben" in mind that the *burning* of his study was a mere act of retaliation on the part of Vulcan. "Desiring you," he concludes, "to look better hereafter to your charcoal-fire and chimney, which I am glad to be one that preserved from burning (this being the second time that Vulcan hath threaten'd you, it may be because you have spoken ill of his wife, and had been too busie with his horns); I rest, your son and contiguous neighbour, J. H. Westminster, June 27, 1629." G.

³ Paracelsus. G.

tuals and house-room. It is through me they have got this corner of the Court to cozen in, where they shark for a hungry diet below stairs, and cheat upon your under-officers, promising mountains for their meat, and all upon Mercury's security. A poor Page of the Larder they have made obstinately believe he shall be Physician for the Household next summer; they will give him a quintessence, shall serve him to cure kibes or the mormal o' the shin, take away the pustules in the nose,—and Mercury is engaged for it. A Child of the Scullery steals all their coals for them too, and he is bid sleep secure, he shall find a corner of the Philosopher's stone for't under his bolster, one day, and have the proverb inverted¹. Against which, one day I am to deliver into the Buttery so many firkins of *aurum potable*, as it delivers out bombards of bouge to them, between this and that. For the Pantry, they are at a certainty with me, and keep a tally, an ingot, a loaf, or a wedge of some five pounds weight, which is nothing of nothing, a trifle. And so the Black-guard are pleased with any lease of life, (for some 999,) especially those of the Boiling-house; they are to have Medea's kettle hung up, that they may souse into it when they will, and come out renewed like so many striped snakes at their pleasure². But these are pretty engagements, and, as I said, below the stairs; marry above here, perpetuity of beauty, (do you hear, Ladies?) health, riches, honour; a matter of immortality is nothing. They will calcine you a grave matron, as it might be a Mother o' the Maids³, and spring up a young virgin, out of her ashes, as fresh as a Phoenix; lay you an old Courtier on the coals like a sausage, or a bloat herring, and after they have broiled him enough, blow a soul into him with a pair of bellows, till he start up into his galliard, that was made when Monsieur was here⁴! They profess familiarly to melt down all the old sinners of the suburbs once in a half year, into fresh gamesters again; get all the crack'd maidenheads and cast them into new ingots; half the wenches of the town are alchemy. See, they begin to muster again, and draw their forces out against me; the Genius of the place defend me! You that are both the Sol and Jupiter of this sphere, Mercury invokes your Majesty against the sooty tribe here; for in your favour only I grow recovered and warm.

¹ i. e. *Thesaurus pro carbone*; the proverb is, *Carbo pro thesauro*. G.

² There is much satirical humour in these wild stipulations of the menials of the Court; but expectations, full as extravagant, were fostered by the dupes of this ridiculous pursuit, in all ranks of life. G.

³ The Maids of Honour; see vol. I. p. 318. N.

⁴ The Monsieur, Francis Duke of Anjou, came as a Suitor to Queen Elizabeth in 1581. See her Majesty's "Progresses," vol. II. p. 343. N.

At which time VULCAN entering with a troop of threadbare Alchemists, prepares them to the FIRST ANTIMASQUE¹.

VULCAN. Begin your charm, sound music, circle him in, and take him; if he will not obey, bind him.

They all danced about MERCURY with variety of changes, whilst he defends himself with his Caduceus, and after the Dance, speaks:

¹ As this word occurs here for the first time in any of Ben Jonson's Masques, Mr. Gifford took this opportunity to take some notice of it. "Whalley," he says, "has printed it through the greater part of his sixth volume Antemasque, as if he supposed it to signify something introductory to the main Masque; he afterwards changed his opinion and his orthography, and wrote it Antimasque, which 'he inclined to think was a smother pronounciation of *antick masque*.' My predecessor," continues Mr. G. "is still wrong. An Antimasque, or, as Jonson elsewhere calls it, 'a foil, or false Masque,' is something directly opposed to the principal Masque. If this was lofty and serious, that was light and ridiculous."—Mr. Whalley's derivations, however, have each authority in the preceding pages. Chapman in the Masque of the Middle Temple and Lincoln's Inn (vol. II. pp. 578, 582) writes the word "Antemaske," introducing two Dancés under the name, the former of which was "*anticke* and delightful;" the authors of the Masque of Flowers (ibid. p. 736) have also two "*Anticke*-maskes, the Anticke-maske of the Song, and Anticke-maske of the Dance." Beaumont, in his Masque of the Inner Temple and Gray's Inn, also introduces two, but how he wrote the word I have not ascertained, not having seen the original edition. "The Antimasque," Mr. Gifford continues, "admitted of the wildest extravagancies, and it is only by Jonson that attempts are sometimes made to connect it, in any degree, with the main story. He was fully sensible of its absurdity, and has spoken of it in another place; but the spectators, as the Cook says in *Neptune's Triumphs*, 'hearkened after these things,' and, indeed James himself, who laughed as boisterously as his merry Grandson, was well pleased with their introduction. He 'loved Masques,' Wilson observes, 'and such disguises in these maskeradoes [Anti-masques] as were witty and sudden; the more ridiculous the more pleasant.' Life of James, p. 104.—It should be added, that the Antimasques were, for the most part, performed by actors hired from the theatres. They partook of the nature of the old Exodia, and like them afforded a little breathing-time for those who came forward in the regular pieces." To these remarks of Mr. Gifford we may add, that this portion of the Entertainment appears to have been an invention of the Reign of James I. No Masque contains a device of the kind * before Chapman's above-mentioned, which was produced in 1612-13. That he was actually the inventor appears doubtful, from Beaumont's Masque, composed at the very same time, also containing "Anticke-maskes." Be that as it may, in delighting the King the invention met with the greatest success; at the representation of Beaumont's Masque, "it pleased his Majesty to call for the Second Anti-masque again at the end, as he did likewise for the First Anti-masque, but one of the Statues by that time was undressed;" and when the Masque of Flowers was ended, "it pleased his Majestie to call for the

* Two "Antimaskes of Mountebanks" occur in the Second Part of the *Gesta Grayorum*, in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. III. pp. 332 *et seq.*, but, since that volume was printed, I have ascertained the date of their performance to have been 1617. See hereafter, under that year.

MERCURY. It is in vain, Vulcan, to pitch your net in the sight of the fowl thus. I am no sleepy Mars, to be catch'd in your subtile toils¹. I know what your aims are, Sir; to tear the wings from my head and heels, lute me up in a glass with my own seals², while you might wrest the Caduceus out of my hand, to the adultery and spoil of Nature, and to make your accesses by it to her dishonor, more easy. Sir, would you believe it should be to come that height of impudence in mankind, that such a nest of fire-worms as these are, because their patron Mulciber heretofore made stools stir, and statues dance, a dog of brass to bark, and (which some will say was his worst act) a woman to speak, should therefore with their heats call'd *Balnei Cineres*, or horse-dung, profess to out-work the Sun in virtue, and contend to the great act of generation, nay almost creation? It is so, though; for in yonder vessels which you see in their laboratory, they have inclosed materials to produce men, beyond the deeds of Deucalion or Prometheus; of which, one, they say, had the Philosopher's stone, and threw it over his shoulder, the other the fire, and lost it. And what men are they, they are so busy about, think you? not common ordinary creatures, but of rarity and excellence, such as the times wanted, and the age had a special deal of need of; such as there was a necessity they should be artificial; for Nature could never have thought or dreamt of their composition. I can remember some of their titles to you, and the ingredients; do not look for Paracelsus' man³

Anticke-maske of Song and Daunce, which was againe presented." Jonson seems to have either disliked the Antimasque, or have unwillingly brought his mind to imitate his rival Writers. He could not, however, compose in opposition to the King's taste, and perhaps expressed desire. Jonson's dialogue and dance of Irish footmen in his last Masque (vol. II. p. 719) actually form an Antimasque, though not so called by its Author; in the present production he introduces the word for the first time; but of the twelve Masques which he composed after the present, six have one Antimasque and five two. The only exception is the "Masque of Christmas," produced in 1616-17; and that is wholly a ludicrous Antimasque-like performance. D'Avenant's *Cælum Britannicum*, a Masque performed at Whitehall, Feb. 18, 1633, contained no less than seven "Antimasks." N.

¹ Alluding to the *αεραχνα λειπτα*, by means of which Vulcan punished the stolen embraces of Mars and Venus. N.

² "Signed with Hermes' seal," as our Author says in his *Alchemist*. A vessel is said to be hermetically sealed, when it is closed in such a manner that the most subtile spirit cannot transpire. This is effected by heating the neck in the fire, and then twisting it. G.

³ The device of Paracelsus was to produce a man without the conjunction of the sexes; this opinion is also said to have been countenanced by Hippocrates. Sir Thomas Brown professes the same sentiments (*Religio Medici*, lib. 2. sect. 9.), in words which he has borrowed from Aulus Gellius: "ea voluptas, scilicet gustu et tactu, sicut sapientes viri censuerunt, omnium rerum foedissima est." WHALLEY.

among them, that he promised you out of white bread and Dele-wine¹,—for he never came to light. But of these, let me see, the first that occurs,—a Master of the Duel, a carrier of the differences. To him went spirit of ale a good quantity, with the amalgama of sugar and nutmegs, oil of oaths, sulphur of quarrel, strong waters, valour precipitate, vapoured o'er the helm with tobacco and the rosin of Mars, with a drachm of the business, for that's the word of tincture,—the *business*. Let me alone with the business. I will carry the business. I do understand the business. I do find an affront in the business. Then another is a Fencer in the Mathematics, or the town's cunning-man, a creature of Art too; a supposed secretary to the stars; but, indeed, a kind of lying intelligencer from those parts. His materials, if I be not deceived, were juice of almanacs, extraction of ephemerides, scales of the globe, filings of figures, dust of the twelve houses, conserve of questions, salt of confederacy, a pound of adventure, a grain of skill, and a drop of truth. I saw vegetals too, as well as minerals, put into one glass there, as adder's-tongue, tittlebane, nitre of clients, tartar of false conveyance, *aurum palbabile*, with a huge deal of talk, to which they added tincture of conscience, with the faces of honesty; but for what this was, I could not learn; only I have over-heard one of the artists say, out o' the corruption of a lawyer was the best generation of a broker in suits; whether this were he or no, I know not.

VULCAN. Thou art a scorner, Mercury, and out of the pride of thy protection here, makest it thy study to revile Art; but it will turn to thine own contumely soon. Call forth the creatures of the first class, and let them move to the harmony of our heat, till the slanderer have sealed up his own lips, to his own torment.

MERCURY. Let them come, let them come! I would not wish a greater punishment to thy impudence.

Enter the SECOND ANTIMASQUE, of imperfect creatures, with helms of limbecks on their heads; whose Dance ended, MERCURY proceeded:

MERCURY. Art thou not ashamed, Vulcan, to offer, in defence of thy Fire

¹ A species of Rhenish wine. It is frequently mentioned by our old dramatists, and generally in company with Bachrach, a thin Hock. Thus Shirley:

——— “ Whirl in coaches
To the Dutch magazine of sauce, the Steelyard,
Where *Deal* and Backragge, and what strange wines else,
Still flow.” Lady of Pleasure. G.

and Art, against the excellence of the Sun and Nature, creatures more imperfect than the very flies and insects that are her trespasses and scapes? Vanish, with thy insolence, thou and thy impostors, and all mention of you melt before the Majesty of this light, whose Mercury henceforth I profess to be, and never again the Philosophers'. Vanish, I say, that all who may have but their senses, may see and judge the difference between thy ridiculous monsters and his [the Sun's] absolute features.

At which the whole scene changed to a glorious bower, wherein NATURE was placed, with PROMETHEUS at her feet, and the Twelve Masquers standing about them. After they had been a while viewed, PROMETHEUS descended, and NATURE after him, singing :

NATURE. *How young and fresh am I to-night,
To see't kept day by so much light.
And Twelve my sons stand in their Maker's sight ?
Help, wise Prometheus, something must be done,
To shew they are the creatures of the Sun ;
That each to other
Is a brother,
And Nature here no step-dame, but a mother.*

Chorus. *Come forth, come forth, prove all the numbers then,
That make perfection up, and may absolve you—men.*

NATURE. *But shew thy winding ways and arts,
Thy risings and thy timely starts,
Of stealing fire from Ladies' eyes and hearts.
Those softer circles are the young man's heaven,
And there more orbs and planets are than seven,
To know whose motion
Were a notion
As worthy of youth's study, as devotion.*

Chorus. *Come forth, come forth, prove all the time will gain,
For Nature bids the best, and never bade in vain.*

Here the first Dance ; after which this Song :

PROMETHEUS. *How many 'mongst these Ladies here,
Wish now they such a mother were !*

NATURE. *Not one, I fear,
And read it in their laughs ;
There's more, I guess, would wish to be my daughters.*

PROMETHEUS. *You think they would not be so old,
For so much glory.*

NATURE. *I think that thought so told
Is no false piece of story.
'Tis yet with them but beauty's noon,
They would not grandames be too soon.*

PROMETHEUS. *Is that your sex's humour?
'Tis then since Niobe was chang'd, that they have left that tumour.*

Chorus. *Move, move again, in forms as heretofore.*

NATURE. *'Tis form allures.
Then move, the Ladies here are store.*

PROMETHEUS. *Nature is Motion's mother, as she's yours.*

Chorus. *The spring whence order flows, that all directs,
And knits the causes with the effects.*

*Here they dance the main Dance; then with the Ladies; and then their
last Dance. After which, PROMETHEUS calls to them in this Song:*

PROMETHEUS. *What! have you done
So soon?
And can from such beauty part?
You'll do a wonder more than I.
I woman with her ills did fly;
But you their good, and them deny.*

Chorus. *Sure each hath left his heart
In pawn to come again, or else he durst not start.*

NATURE. *They are loth to go,
I know,
Or sure they are no sons of mine.
There is no banquet, boys, like this,
If you hope better, you will miss;
Stay here, and take each one a kiss.*

Chorus. *Which if you can refine,
The taste knows no such cates, nor yet the palate wine.
No cause of tarrying shun,
They are not worth his light that go backward from the Sun!
With which it ended.*

The preceding Masque having been repeated on the 8th of January, Mr. Chamberlain, a few days after, wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The only matter I can advertise, since I wrote the last week, is the success of the Masque on Twelfth-night, which was so well liked and applauded, that the King had it represented again the Sunday night after in the very same manner, though neither in device nor shew was there anything extraordinary, but only excellent dancing, the choice being made of the best, both English and Scots.

"The King removes hence this day toward Royston and Newmarket, where he means to tarry till Shrovetide, and not to come again at Candlemass, as he was wont to do¹."

On the 16th of January, the Rev. Robert Wilkinson preached, before Prince Charles, a Sermon before noticed².

On the 19th, Sir Dudley Norton was knighted at Newmarket, "whither he went to take his leave at his going over into Ireland³;" on the 30th, Sir John Savage received the same honour.

On the 1st of February, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Mrs. Alice Carleton:

"Mr. Secretary went on Monday toward the King at Newmarket, in as hard and cold weather as came this year; much frost and snow⁴," &c.

On the 3d, the King knighted Sir Robert Anstrowcher.

On the 9th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"Mr. Secretary came here yesternight from Newmarket in a day, which was a sore journey, as the ways are, being at least 54 miles; but he had coaches laid for him in three places.

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² See vol. II. pp. 103, 473.

³ Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, Jan. 26.

⁴ Birch's MSS. 4173.—Of the hard winter this year, Howes, in his Abridgement of Stow's Chronicle, 8vo edit. 1618, gives the following account: "The 17th of January it began to freeze in ordinary manner, and the 23d of January it began to snow, and continued freezing and snowing many days; and upon Sunday the twelfth of February it began to snow most extremely, and continued until the fourteenth of February at noon, and then it abated; and from that time, for many days after, it continued freezing and snowing, much or little, until the sixth or seventh of March, by means whereof much cattle perished, as calves and lambs, deer and conies, &c. by reason the earth lay covered with deep snow, to the great hurt of all manner of cattle, and many were forced to use new devices to fodder. This snow brought *extreme danger to all travellers*. After this snow thawed, there followed inundations great and violent, which did great spoils and damages."

"The Lady Cheke¹ (Mr. Osborne's sister of the Exchequer) would needs be let blood the last week for a little heat or itching in her arm; but by mishap the Queen's Surgeon pricked her too deep, and cut an artery which fell to rankle, and in a few days grew to a gangrene, whereof she died on Saturday; and was buried last night with above 30 coaches, and much torch-light attending her, which is of late come much into fashion, as it should seem to avoid trouble and charge. But I rather think it was brought up by Papists, which serve their turn by it many ways. She left no children, nor ever had any, so that it is thought her husband Sir Thomas will not be long unprovided of a new Lady², for that his land for want of heirs male is to return to the Crown; and some Scot or other hath begged the reversion.

"Your neighbour Bruckshaw hath lain this month or five weeks in the Marshalsea, with six or seven of his companion brewers, for that they will not yield to have their drink taken to serve the King without money; for the King's Brewer cannot get a grant of £.16,000 that is owing him for beer; so that he hath neither money nor credit to hold out any longer. This Term they attempted by law to remove themselves, and to try their cause; but they could not be relieved; for that there came a mandate from the King, whereby it is become a matter of State, and out of the compass of the Law³."

On the 15th of February, the King was at Theobalds, where he knighted Sir Robert Dillon⁴.

On the 23d, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King came to town the 15th, and goes away again this day or to-mor-

¹ Wife of Sir Thomas Cheke, (knighted May 11, 1603; see vol. I. p. 118,) grandson of Sir John Cheke, the Tutor of King Edward VI. She was daughter of Peter Osborne, Esq.

² Sir Thomas Cheke afterwards married Essex, daughter of Lord Rich, Earl of Warwick, by whom he had several children.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁴ The eldest son of Sir James Dillon (said to be knighted by King James, but when does not appear,) who, for his faithful services, and because his son, this Sir Robert, had relinquished the errors of his ancestors, and, being guided by a better judgment, conformed himself to the Protestant religion, was in 1619 created Baron Dillon of Kilkenny West, and in 1622 advanced to the title of Earl of Roscommon. Sir Robert was a man of courage and ability, and served his King and Country with singular affection and bravery. He was made a Privy Counsellor of Ireland in 1627; was a Member of the Irish House of Commons; was in 1638 Keeper of the Great Seal of Ireland in the Lord Chancellor's absence; and in 1639 for a few months one of the Lords Justices. He succeeded his father as second Earl in 1641, and dying in the following year, was succeeded by his son James. See more fully of him in Archdall's Irish Peerage, 1789, vol. IV. pp. 161—164.

row, toward Royston. The journey to Cambridge draws near, and the Lord Treasurer [Suffolk]¹ with the Lord Chamberlain [Somerset] go thitherward so

¹ The Earl of Suffolk had been recently, on the death of the Earl of Northampton, chosen Chancellor of the University of Cambridge. He was so elected July 8, 1614; and on the 20th of August Mr. Lorkin thus wrote from London "to the Hon. Sir Thomas Puckering, Knt. and Bart. at Tours:

"There is an intention of erecting a new Public Library at Cambridge *, in imitation of that of Oxon (see p. 23). The Heads of the Houses are the *primi motores*, who are already about to buy the soil and provide the materials.—They promise themselves whatsoever furtherance my Lord Treasurer may give them, either by his authority or countenance, having lately made choice of him to be their Chancellor.

"Upon Tuesday last the body of the University went to Audley End to present him with his patent; twenty Doctors in their formalities and upon their foot-cloths, and fourscore other of a second and inferior rank. They were very honourably entertained, and richly feasted. After dinner the Vice-chancellor made a Speech in Latin, which was seconded by another from the University Orator. His Lordship answered them in English, the effect of his Speech being to assure them of his endeavour to maintain their privileges and the dignity of the University; and that, though he came short of his Uncle, his predecessor, in learning, yet he would make good that want by his affection and good will; and when he mentioned his Uncle, he added a speech to this purpose: 'Who,' said he, 'though he was reputed over-superstitious in some opinions, yet it was the more to be borne withal in a man of his learning.'—To shew how sensible the Earl is of this honour, he hath already moved his Majesty to grace the University with his Royal presence, who hath yielded his suit, and promiseth to make it a winter journey, which he limits between Christmas next and Shrovetide."

Fuller, in his "Worthies" under Essex, tells the same story with less accuracy, in his own humorous strain. "When," says he, "at the Earl's first coming to Cambridge, Master Francis Nethersole, Orator of the University, made a Latine Speech unto him, this Lord returned, "Though I understand not Latine, I know the sense of your Oration is to tell me that I am wellcome to you; which I believe verily, thank you for it heartily, and will serve you faithfully in any thing within my power." Doctor Harsnet, the Vice-chancellour, laying hold on the handle of so fair a proffer, requested him to be pleased to entertain the King at Cambridge, a favour which the University *could never compass from their former great and wealthy Chancellours*. 'I will do it,' saith the Lord, 'in the best manner I may, with the speediest conveniency.' Nor was he worse than his word; giving his Majesty not long after so magnificent a treatment in the University, as cost him *five thousand pounds and upwards*." From the preceding the public opinion appears to have been, that the Earl of Northampton was never very eager for the honour, and still less for the expense, of entertaining

* It was not brought to bear till many years after.—In Baker's Collections (Harl. MS. 7041) is a copy from the State Paper Office of "The certificate made to the Duke of Buckingham, touching the houses and ground between Caius College and the Regent Walk, whereon his Grace intended to raise a Public Library at Cambridge. This certificate was delivered to our late gracious Chancellor [the Duke] at Wallingford House, Jan. 29, 1627, and his Grace replied that as soon as some present businesses were dispatcht, he would speedily see this effected." The Duke's death put a stop to the design.

soon as the King is gone. The Countess of Suffolk, with her daughters and all their retinue, make account to be there, though the Queen be absent.

"The Spanish Ambassador hath been very gallant this Shrovetide, and had a Masque or two, or rather one twice over, of his own people, with divers Ladies and other company of his own calibre¹."

On the 26th of February, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir John Blagrave, and Sir John Garrard².

About this period Mr. Donne, then a celebrated Poet, and afterwards Dean of St. Paul's, is supposed, having recently taken Holy Orders and become Chaplain to his Majesty, to have preached at Whitehall before the King for the first time³.

the King as Chancellor of Cambridge. The Royal Visit had been an event *in prospectu* for years; but, even at the period of the King's Visit to Oxford in 1605, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Mr. Winwood: "The Lord Treasurer [the Earl of Dorset, who was Chancellor of Oxford,] kept open house a whole week at New College, and was every way so bountiful, that men doubt the Chancellor of Cambridge will scant follow his example when it comes to his turn." ¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Sir John Garrard (a pedigree of whose family is printed in Clutterbuck's Hertfordshire, I. 514), was grandson of Sir William, Lord Mayor of London in 1555; son of Sir John, Lord Mayor in 1601 (who was visited by the King at Wheathampsted in 1608, and of whom see vol. II. p. 201); and son-in-law of Sir Edward Barkham, Lord Mayor in 1621. He was created a Baronet Feb. 16, 1621; and was Sheriff of Hertfordshire in 1643, 1644, and part of 1645.

³ This occurrence is reported to have so far originated with the King, that it demands particular attention. Isaak Walton, in his Life of Dr. Donne, after mentioning how solicitous many of the Nobility and others powerful at Court had been for procuring him some employment; how great a value the King had put upon his company; and how his Majesty had instigated and patronized him in writing his Pseudo-Martyr; thus proceeds: "When the King had read and considered that book, he persuaded Mr. Donne to enter into the ministry; to which at that time he was, and appeared, very unwilling, apprehending it (such was his mistaken modesty) to be too weighty for his abilities; and though his Majesty had promised him a favour, and many persons of worth mediated with his Majesty for some secular employment for him (to which his education had adapted him), and particularly the Earl of Somerset, when in his greatest height of favour; who being then at Theobalds with the King, where one of the Clerks of the Council died at night, the Earl posted a messenger for Mr. Donne to come to him immediately, and, at Mr. Donne's coming, said: 'Mr. Donne, to testify of my affection, and my purpose to prefer you, stay in this garden till I go up to the King and bring you word that you are Clerk of the Council; doubt not my doing this, for I know the King loves you, and know the King will not deny me.'—But the King gave a positive denial to all requests, and, having a discerning spirit, replied: 'I know Mr. Donne is a learned Divine, and will prove a powerful Preacher; and my desire is to prefer him that way, and in that way I will deny you nothing for him.' After that time, as he professeth (in his Book of Devotions, Expost. 8.), the King descended to a persuasion, almost to a solicitation, of him to enter into sacred orders; which though

On the 2d of March, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to Sir D. Carleton :

"The King went not hence till Monday, being intreated from day to day to stay his journey, and in a manner compelled by multitude of business to tarry. He means to be at Cambridge on the 7th of this month; and though I am no way furnished, nor greatly willing, to appear in such assemblies, yet I have been so much persuaded by my Lord of Ely [Bishop Andrews] and Mr. Secretary, that, though I was loth to trouble either of them, yet I have half yielded to Sir Christopher Hatton¹, that doth promise all manner of commodities²."

he then denied not, yet he deferred it for almost three years. At which time he applied himself to an incessant study of textual divinity, and to the attainment of a greater perfection in the learned languages, Greek and Hebrew. * * * Presently after he entered into his holy profession, the King sent for him, and made him his Chaplain in Ordinary, and promised to take a particular care for his preferment. And though his long familiarity with scholars and persons of the greatest quality was such as might have given some men boldness enough to have preached to any eminent auditory, yet his modesty in this employment was such that he could not be persuaded to it, but went usually, accompanied with some one friend, to preach privately in some village not far from London; his first Sermon being preached at Paddington. This he did till his Majesty sent and appointed him *a day to preach to him at Whitehall*; and though much was expected from him, both by his Majesty and others, yet he was so happy (which few are) as to satisfy and exceed their expectations: preaching the Word so as showed his own heart was possessed with those very thoughts and joys that he laboured to distil into others; a Preacher in earnest, weeping sometimes for his auditory, sometimes with them; always preaching to himself like an angel from a cloud, but in none; carrying some, as St. Paul was, to heaven in holy raptures, and enticing others by a sacred art and courtship to amend their lives; here picturing a vice so as to make it ugly to those that practised it, and a virtue so as to make it be beloved even by those that loved it not; and all this with a most particular grace and an inexpressible addition of comeliness." To this patronage of the King there is an allusion in the Dedication of Dr. Donne's Sermons, addressed by his eldest son, John Donne, LL. D. to King Charles in 1640. It begins thus: "In this rumor of Warre, I am bold to present to your sacred Majestie the fruits of peace, *first planted by the hand of your most Royal Father*; then ripened by the same gracious influence; and since no lesse cherisht and protected by your Majestie's especiall favour," &c.—In Dr. Donne's epitaph in St Paul's he was likewise affirmed to have, "*instinctu et impulsu Spiritûs Sancti, monitu et hortatu Regis Jacobi, ordines sacros amplexus, anno sui Jesu 1614, et suæ ætatis 42.*"—Lastly, when, after the fall of his great patron Somerset, Dr. Donne was invidiously accused of insinuating in the pulpit that the King was inclined to Popery, after describing the explanation before the Council, Walton makes the King to say with much earnestness, "My Doctor is an honest man, and, my Lords, I was never better satisfied with an answer than he hath now made me; and I always rejoyce when I think that *by my means* he became a Divine."—Of Dr. Donne's being created D. D. at Oxford see p. 60; of his elevation to the Deanery of St. Paul's under Nov. 1620: and of his Sermons more than once hereafter.

¹ K. B. see vol. I. p. 710.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

On the same day his Majesty knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Edmond Wheeler, and Sir Charles Nowell.

Preparatory to the King's Visit to Cambridge, the following Orders were issued there by the Vice-chancellor and Caput:

"Imprimis. That uppon the day that his Majestie cometh, all Graduats and Schollers, and Students shalbe ready at the ringinge of the Schoole Bell and St. Marie's Bell to attende the Master or President of the Colledge, and to come in their habits, hoods, and capps, accordinge to their severall degrees, and all Schollers in their gownes and capps shall stand quietlye in such order and in such place as shalbe appointed them, untill his Majestie be passed into Trinitie Colledge, and not to stirr out of their places where they shalbe placed, untill the whole Trayne attendinge the Kinge bee passed by, and then every Mann to resort presently to his owne Colledge.

"2. That noe Graduate or any other Student, of what condicion or degree soever he be, presume dureinge the tyme of his Majestie's abode in this Towne, to goe out of his Colledge, but in his cappe, hoode, and gowne, fittinge his degree and condicion.

"3. That noe Graduate or Studente under the degree of Master of Arts presume to come to St. Marie's Church dureinge the tyme of the Disputacions there, unlesse he be a Nobleman's sonne, or the sonne and heire of a Knight, and those to take such place only as shall be appointed unto them.

"4. That all Regents and Non-regents come to St. Marie's Church in the tyme of Disputacions with hoods and capps; viz. Regents with white hoods, and Non-regents with civill¹ hoods, otherwise not to be taken for Members of this Universitye; and that none of them presume to come uppon the stage, but to goe and sitt within the lists; the Bachelors in Divinity uppon the highest formes, uppon the grownde in the body of the Church; the Non-regents next them; and the Regents uppon the formes there next behynde them; and not to stand or sitt *promiscuè* one amongst another.

"5. That noe person of what estate or degree soever he be, presume to cover his head in the presence of the Kinge, or of the Prince, either at Acts, Disputacions, or the Comedyes.

"6. That the Lecturers of the severall lectures in the Schooles doe duellie

¹ "Qu. if not sable? W C."

reade at their usuall houres, and that all Students have speciall warninge formally to resort to the said lectures.

“7. That warning be given by the severall Heads of Colledges, that the Questionists of everye Colledge doe duelye resort at one o’clocke in the after-noone unto the publique Schooles in gownes and habitts fittinge their degree, every one with his Sophister, and there to sitt soe longe and in such places as shalbe appointed them by the Proctors of the Universitie; and that the said Questioners and Sophisters have warninge to provide themselves of disputable and decent Questions; and that in their Answers and Disputacions they demeane themselves modestlye and without scurrilitye.

“8. That noe Graduats of this Universitie under the degree of Master of Arts, or Fellow-commoner, presume to come into the streets neare Trinitye Colledge in the tymes the Comedyes are actinge; or after the Stage-keapers be come forth; nor that any Scholler or Student, but those onely before excepted, by any meanes presume or attempte to come within the said Colledge or Hall to heare any of the said Comedyes.

“9. That noe Graduate, Regent, or Non-regent, or any other person whatsoever, of this Universitie, attempte to goe beyonde the stage at the Comedyes, but to take the places at the lower end of the Hall; the Bachelors in Divinity and Non-regents first; the Regents next in their seniorities; and the Fellow-commoners next behynde them, and not otherwyse.

“10. That noe Graduate, Scholler, or Student of this Universitie presume to resort to any Inn, Taverne, Alehowse, or *Tobacco-shop* at any tyme dureing the abode of his Majestie here; nor doe presume to *take tobacco in St. Marie’s Church* or in Trinity Colledge Hall, uppon payne of finall expellinge the Universitie.

“11. Item, consideringe the fearfull enormitye and excesse of apparell seene in all degrees, as namely, strange pekadivelas, vast bands, huge cuffs, shoe-roses, tufts, locks, and topps of hare [hair], unbeseeminge that modesty and carridge of Students in soe renowned an Universitye, it is straightlye charged, that noe Graduate or Student in this University presume to weare any other apparell or ornaments, especially at the tyme of his Majestie’s abode in the Towne, than such onely as the statutes and laudable customes of this Universitie do allowe, uppon payne of forfeiture of 6s. 8d. for every default; and if any presume, after this publique warninge, to offend in the premises, such his willfull offence shalbe

deemed a contempte, and the party so offending shall be punished, over and besides the foresaid mulct, a month's imprisonment accordinglee."

Two Pro-proctors from each College, three from Jesus, including Mr. Tabor, Registrar of the University, and one from Catharine Hall, were appointed for the following purposes, on this occasion :

" These are to authorise and require you, and every of you, carefully to see the Graduates and Students of the Universitie marshalled and sett in order uppon the day of his Majestie's cominge to this Universitie and departure out; *viz.* the S. T. B.s next after the Doctors; the Non-regents after them; the Regents after them; the Fellow-commoners after them; the B. A.s after them; and then the other Schollers and Students after them; and if any Graduate, under the degree of a Doctor, or other Student of this Universitie of what degree, estate, or condicion soever, refuse to keepe such place and standinge as you or any of you shall appointe him, or behave himselfe disorderly duringe the tyme of his Majestie's abode here, either in the streets, or at Disputacions, or Acts, or at the Comedyes, or shall offende against any of the articles above sett downe (*viz.* eleven) or otherwyse resiste your authoritye, and refuse to be ordered by you, to committe him or them soe offendinge to the Goall, there to remayne till he or they be thence delivered by us; and this we wyll require you, and everye of you, truely to execute and performe, *virtute juramenti Academicæ præstiti*. Given this sixte day of Marche, 1614¹.
SAM. CICESTREN., Procan."

¹ These Orders are copied from Cole's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) vol. XLII. p. 286; and he derived them from a book in the hand of Mr. Tabor, Registrar of the University in 1614. "The same articles," remarks Mr. Cole, "were enjoyed with some small variations and additions on other similar occasions. At the Entertainment of the Earl of Holland the Chancellor, in 1629, 1. A Proclamation was made through the Towne by the Yeoman Beadle for all persons to clean the streets, mend the pavement, &c. 2. An Order was placed upon the School-doors, prohibiting all townsmen, privileged persons, burgesses, and forynors, from coming into Trinitie College, or any other College when the Chancellor or Ambassador may goe. 3. An Injunction was issued to Constables to find proper watch and ward from five o'clock in the morning to nine at night.—At the Entertainment of King Charles and Queen Mary, in Lent 1630, the sixth article was thus expressed: Item, that *no tobacco be taken* in the Hall, nor any where else publicly, and that neither at their standinge in the streets, nor before the Comedye beginne, nor all the tyme there any rude or immodest exclamations be made; nor any humming, hawking, whistling, hissing, or laughing, be used, or any stamping or knocking, nor any other such uncivill or unschollarlike or boyish demeanor upon any occasion; nor that any clapping of hands be had untill the *Plaudite*, at the end of the Comedye, excepte his Majestie, the Queene, and others of the best qualitie here do apparently beginne the same."

The King and Prince Charles arrived at Cambridge on the seventh of March. They were met at the boundaries of the Town by the Corporation, and welcomed by the Recorder¹ with the following Speech²:

"Our most Royall Kinge and supreme Sovereigne, wee your loyall subjects and tenants, the Maior, Aldermen, Bailiffs, and Burgesses of Cambridge, in the con-fynes thereof most humbly with greate joy congratulate your Majestie's accesse, and do prostrate at your sacred feete ourselves, our homages, and services, together with this shadowe of your Kinglie scepter³, whereby we governe within the territories of this Towne, which we holde of your Majestie, as of your imperial diadem, and for which we yearlie pay to your Highnesse's Exchequer 300 crownes fee farme. Vouchsafe, we humbly beseech, your gracious aspecte to this Corporation, with commemoration of the antiquitie, denomination, and dignitie thereof.

"Touchinge the antiquitie and denomination, historians testifie it was builded

¹ Mr. Francis Brakyn, of whom see p. 50.

² Here taken from Cole's Collections, (Brit. Mus.) vol. XX. who copied it from "Mr. Martin's MS."—It may be proper to remark here *in limine*, that I have discovered no complete narrative of the King's Entertainment. Howes, in his Abridgement of Stowe, 8vo, 1618, cursorily mentions the King's Visit, and then adds: "What is more to be said touching his Majesty's being at Cambridge, I could never learn, notwithstanding my letters and mediation to the Vice-chancellor; therefore I cannot promise any more in my large book." Accordingly, in his folio edition of Stowe, 1631, nothing further appears. On the application of Mr. Hawkins, Mr. Borlase, Registrar of the University, made a search among the papers in his custody, with success as to the King's second Visit (see hereafter), but not as to the first. But that such a narrative is in existence may be presumed from what Mr. Baker says in volume XIV. of his Collections (Harl. MS. 7041). After speaking of the King's Visit to the University in 1621-2, he concludes: "Thus have I given you in brief the manner of King James's Entertainment at his sudden coming thither from Newmarket the day and year before mentioned. But as for his first coming to our University in March 1614, see the Black Book, wherein is set down at large the manner of his Majestie's Entertainment at Oxford." In the absence of this *Liber niger*, ("rara avis, nigroque simillima cygno!") I have formed a compilation by no means unsatisfactory from the detached particulars afforded by more accessible authorities.—It is to be remarked that though this is repeatedly called the King's first Visit to Cambridge, it is not likely but that he had paid the Town several private Visits (similar to the Oxford one recorded in p. 23, and others hereafter), particularly when the contiguity of his hunting-seat at Newmarket is considered. To such a Visit an item in the expences of St. John's College "sub anno 1613, Jac. 11," seems to allude: "For wood at the King's coming, £4." Baker's Collections, vol. XX. p. 254. Besides the King's subsequent Visits in state in May 1615, and March 1621-2, we find by Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. XVII. p. 648, that he was there Dec. 30, 1624.—See hereafter, under those dates.

³ Laying down the Mace.

before Christ's incarnation, with a castle, towers, and walls of defence, by Duke Cantaber, the sonne of the Kinge of Spayne, who was entertained in England by Kinge Gurguntius; and the Towne being situated and united with a bridge upon the river then called Canta, was denominated Cantabridge; and in tract of tyme the name of the river being altered to Granta, the Towne likewise to Granta-bridge; and after it was called Cam, and the Towne Cambridge, which yet remaineth and consisteth of thirteen parishes. This river is current throughe the hearte of the Shire, with navigation to the sea, and is the life of trafficke to this Towne and Countie; and no bridge is over the same but at Cambridge, and it is maintayned by fowerscore hides of land lyeing *sparsim* in this Shire, which are holden of your Majestie by pontage, appropriate to this bridge only.

"Concerning the dignitie thereof, Cambridge is recorded to be one of the eight-and-twenty most antient and most noble Citties in Brittain, and the pryme Cittie of the East Angles; and that Kinge was King of Cambridge, and after him Kinge Florentius; and Cambridge was the Kingdome of Guthelme. There have bin diverse Earles of Cambridge of the blood Royall, or allyed thereunto, namelie, John of Hannony, married to Philip sister to Edward the Third, and by him created Earle of Cambridge; and after him William sonne of the sister of Edward the Third; and after him Edmund Langley the fifte sonne of Edward the Third; and after him Richard Plantaganet, yonger sonne of Edmond Langley. Kinge Richard the Second held a Parliamt at Cambridge, where many excellent statutes were made.

"The Muses did branch from Athens to Cambridge, and were lovinglie lodged in the houses of Citizens untill Ostles and Halls were erected for them without endowments, and nowe the materials of the castle, towers, and walls are converted into Colleges, beautifieing this famous Universitie. It hath bin trulie saide, *Quid Musis cum Marte?* but never saide *Quid Musis cum Mercatore?* Also it hath bin saide of the Abbies, *Religio peperit divitias, et filia devoravit matrem*, which we hope shall never be truly applied to the University and this Towne.

"The last dignitie and not the leaste, but the greatest to us is, that this Towne was incorporated and endowed with many great franchises by charters of manie your Majestie's noble Progenitors and Antecessours, *Habendum in pace integrè et honorificè*. All which graunts your most excellent Majestie hath most graciouslie confirmed by Letters Patent, which we acknowledge with all humilitie

and heartie thankfulness. In token whereof we present this our widdowe's mite¹, as a pledge of our lives and goods, to be redie for defence of your Royall person, your realmes, and domynions.

"O pierles and most noble Prince², our morninge starre, your gracious second cominge to Cambridge doth multiply our hartie rejoycinge and assured hopes. We most humbly entreat your favourable acceptance of this our present³, which we tender as a caution or obligation of our dutifull, trewe, and loyall affection to your Highnes.

"And we most humblie praie the Kinge of kings to bless your Majestie and your Excellencie, with health, long life, and happie succession of our plentifull progenie to reigne over Great Brytaine during the world's contynuanee; whereunto we hope all leidge subjects will say, Amen.

"God save the King and Prince!"

On the 16th of March, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote from London to Sir Dudley Carleton, at Turin:

"My very good Lord; I am newly returned from Cambridge, whither I went some two days after I wrote you my last. The King made his entry there the 7th of this present, with as much solemnity and concourse of gallants and great men as the hard weather and extremely foul ways⁴ would permit. The Prince came along with him, but not the Queen, by reason, as it is said, that she was not invited⁵; which error is rather imputed to their Chancellor⁶ than to the Scholars, that understood not these courses. Another defect was, that there was no Ambassador, which no doubt was upon the same reason. But the absence of women may be better excused for default of language, there being few or none present but of the Howards or that alliance⁷, as the Countess of Arundel⁸, with her Sister the Lady Elizabeth Grey⁹; the Countess of Suffolk, with her daughters of Salisbury and Somerset; the Lady Walden and Henry Howard's wife; which were all that I remember. The Lord Treasurer⁶ kept there a great port

¹ Presenting the Cup.

² Addressing Prince Charles; of whose former Visit to Cambridge see vol. II. p. 607, and the Appendix to that Volume.

³ The two Cups together cost £.56; and their cases 10s. See the account of the Corporation Expences in p. 61.

⁴ See before, p. 38.

⁵ The Queen had accompanied the King to Oxford in 1605, and been much gratified by the Entertainment.

⁶ The Earl of Suffolk; see p. 40.

⁷ They being the family of the Chancellor.

⁸ See vol. II. pp. 5, 348.

⁹ Ibid. p. 348.

and magnificent table, with the expence of £.1000 a day, as it is said, but that seems too large an allowance¹; but sure his provisions were very great, besides plenty of presents, and may be in some sort estimated by his proportion of wine, whereof he spent twenty-six tun in five days. He lodged and kept his table at St. John's College; but his Lady and her Retinue at Magdalen College, whereof his Grandfather Audley was Founder². The King and Prince lay at Trinity College, where the Plays were represented; and the Hall so well ordered for room, that above 2000 persons were conveniently placed.

"The first night's entertainment was a Comedy³, made and acted by St. John's men, the chief part consisting of a counterfeit Sir Edward Radcliffe, a foolish Doctor of Physic⁴, which proved but a lean argument; and though it were larded with pretty shews at the beginning and end, and with somewhat too broad speech for such a presence, yet it was still dry.

"The second night, March 8, was a Comedy⁵ of Clare Hall, with the help

¹ See what Fuller says on this subject, in p. 40.

² The Earl's mother was Margaret, daughter and heir of Thomas Lord Audley of Walden, Lord Chancellor temp. Henry VIII. Magdalen College was originally founded in 1519 by Edward Stafford, third Duke of Buckingham, from whom it was called Buckingham Hall; but Lord Chancellor Audley having considerably augmented its endowment, "he was, by Act of Parliament of 23d of Henry VIII. made the Founder of the said College." He is seriously affirmed to have given it the name of Magdalen or rather Maudlin College, in allusion to his own name, which the latter word contained, with the addition only of one letter at the beginning and at the end, thus, M-AUDLEY-N.

³ This was Æmilia, a Latin Comedy, written by Mr. Cecill, of St. John's College. It has never been printed. The Author was Moderator of the Divinity Disputation before the King, on his second Visit to the University, May 13, 1615, on which occasion Mr. Cecill was taken seriously ill; see hereafter.

⁴ Sir Edward Radcliffe was of the highly respectable family seated at Hitchin, of which see a pedigree in Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. III. p. 23; and grandson of Ralph, a celebrated Schoolmaster in that town, of whom there is a memoir in Wood's Athenæ, by Bliss, vol. I. col. 215. He lived at Orwell in 1595; being M. D. of Cambridge, was incorporated of Oxford July 11, 1600 (see Fasti, vol. I. col. 287); and, on the present occasion, "bore the bell" in the Physic Act; see p. 57. He died in Sept. 1631, aged 78; and in his epitaph at Hitchin is called "sworne Servant and Physitian to King James" (see Clutterbuck, vol. III. p. 44).

⁵ This was the celebrated Latin Play of Ignoramus, the production of which so much irritated the lawyers and disturbed the Inns of Court, but so delighted the King, that he was induced to pay a second Visit to Cambridge this year to witness its repetition. Its author was George Ruggle, a native of Lavenham in Suffolk, and descended from an ancient Staffordshire family. After receiving the rudiments of his education at Lavenham Grammar School, he entered the University in 1589 as a Pensioner of St. John's College, being then in his fourteenth year; in 1593 he removed to a Scho-

of two or three good actors from other Houses, wherein David Drummond, in a hobby-horse¹, and Brakyn, the Recorder of the Town², under the

larship at Trinity; and, having proceeded M. A. in 1597, and taken holy orders, was elected a Fellow of Clare Hall in 1598. He was Taxer of the University in 1604; was admitted M. A. of Oxford when the King was there in 1605; resigned his Fellowship in 1620, and died about a year after. Mr. J. S. Hawkins, in his elaborate edition of *Ignoramus*, has, with few facts, but many conjectures, compiled a long narrative of his life, having most diligently investigated his ancestry, his literary acquirements, &c. &c. and printed his last will, with numerous illustrative notes. The Latin Comedy of *Loiala*, which the King came to Cambridge and witnessed, March 12, 1622-3, has been ascribed to Mr. Ruggle, but erroneously, it being certainly the production of Dr. Hacket; see hereafter, under that date. — *Ignoramus*, much as it agitated the world, was not printed at the time of its production; nor does it appear to have been the wish of the author that it ever should be. His own manuscript is entirely lost, and was, it is supposed, burnt in pursuance of directions in his will. The Play was first published in 1630, ten years after Mr. Ruggle's death, being copied, as is presumed, from a MS. taken from the mouths of the Actors; a second edition, says Mr. Hawkins, "appeared in the same year, a third in 1658, a fourth in 1659, another fourth, as it is styled by mistake, in 1668, a fifth in 1707, a sixth in 1731, and a seventh in 1737, exclusive of one published at Dublin in 1736, with the denomination of *editio septima*." The only edition since these is Mr. Hawkins's own, which appeared in 1787. The sale of so many editions at the beginning of the last century, was in great measure occasioned by the Comedy being at that period sometimes performed by the Westminster Scholars, as it was in the years 1712, 1713, 1730, and 1747.—In 1662 an English translation was published by Robert Codrington, M. A. of Magdalen College, Oxford, and in 1678 another, "mutilated in sundry instances, and fraudulently bearing the appearance of an original," under the title of "*The English Lawyer, a Comedy, acted at the Royal Theatre; written by Edward Ravenscroft, Gent.*"

¹ A hobby-horse named "*Davus Dromo, Musarum Caballus*," was introduced into the Prologue. The names *Davus Dromo*, though both found in Terence, applied most appropriately to one David Droman or Drummond, a servant in the King's Household, who played second fiddle to Archee Armstrong, the King's fool. David is thus mentioned by Sir Anthony Weldon in his description of the fooleries sometimes contrived for the King's amusement, which have been before noticed in vol. II. p. 38: "Sir George Goring was Master of the Game, sometimes presenting David Droman and Archee Armstrong, the King's Fool, on the back of the other fools, to tilt one at another till they fell together by the ears." That this amusing feat was performed about this time, and was publicly known, is proved by *Ignoramus*, in the Second Prologue (that which preceded the Play on its second representation), in which David is also introduced, thus addressing him: "*Hoh, video quod es major nebulo quàm stultus, sirrah; et tamen es magnus et superbus Stultus, nam ausus tu es etiam tiltare cum Regis Stulto.*" David's folly, however, obtained for him something more than notoriety; he has occurred as receiving £.100 in the very last list of Free Gifts; see vol. II. p. 759.

² Mr. Hawkins took much pains to trace the origin of *Ignoramus*. As to the main plot of the Comedy, indeed, he had no difficulty, that being clearly adopted from the *Trappolaria* of Giambattista Porta, an Italian dramatist, which was produced in 1596. Nearly half the characters, however, are original, and among these *Ignoramus* himself. The prototype of this was said to have been

name of Ignoramus, a Common Lawyer, bore great parts. The thing was full of mirth and variety, with many excellent actors (among whom the Lord Compton's son, though least ¹, yet was not worst), but more than half marred by extreme length ²."

Here I shall interrupt Mr. Chamberlain's epistle, to insert a list of those Actors who so successfully exhibited Ignoramus to his Majesty³, several of whom were afterwards of great eminence. The characters were thus sustained:

THEODORUS, mercator, senex,

MR. HUTCHINSON, Clare Hall.

Francis Brakyn, the Recorder of Cambridge; and the idea is supposed to have been suggested to the author by the following circumstances. In 1611 the University became engaged in a contest with the Corporation, on the question, which of the two, the Vice-chancellor of the University, or the Mayor of the Town, was entitled to precedence of the other. The incident which gave immediate rise to this dispute, which was at length terminated in 1612 by a decision of the Privy Council in favour of the Vice Chancellor, was that the Mayor, Thomas Smart, "in prætorio Guildhall, locum supremum, Procancellario debitum, preoccupavit, à quo inde *deturbatus est*." In the conduct of the dispute Mr. Brakyn had shown himself very active on behalf of the Mayor and Corporation; and thereby of course made himself very obnoxious to the University.—Francis Brakyn was a Barrister and Autumn Reader of Gray's Inn in 1596; he was appointed Recorder of Cambridge in James's reign, though in what year is not known; and resigned the office in 1624, on being elected M. P. for the Town. In the same year he was also elected Treasurer of Gray's Inn, where his arms were placed in one of the Hall windows, and are engraved in Dugdale's *Origines Juridicales*, p. 306.

¹ Spencer, Lord Compton's only son, who was not yet 13, being born in May 1601, personated the two characters of Surda and Vince in the Comedy, and that of Cursor in the Prologue (see pp. 53, 54). Lloyd, in his *Memoirs of the Loyal Sufferers for Charles I.* tells us, somewhat extravagantly, that this youth's "parts were so great, and his appetite to knowledge so large, that it was as much as four several Tutors, at home, at Cambridge, and in France and Italy, each taking his respective hour for the art and science he professed, could do to keep pace with his great proficiency." He was made a K. B. in 1616 at the Creation of Charles Prince of Wales, and was a favourite companion of the Prince, whom, as Master of his Wardrobe, he attended in Spain, where he had the honour of distributing his Highness's presents at Court. He also assisted as Master of the Robes at Charles's Coronation. His services in the Royal cause with all his sons, are events well known to history; as is his death at the battle of Hopton Heath, March 19, 1642-3. See the excellent Memoir of the Earl in Lodge's *Portraits of Illustrious Personages*.

² In Mr. Corbet's "Grave Poem," printed hereafter, it is said to have held six hours (see p. 70); on its second representation in May, it began at eight in the evening and lasted till one in the next morning.

³ The list was taken by Mr. Baker from a copy of Ignoramus once in the possession of Archbishop Sancroft, and now in Emanuel College Library, compared with other MSS. and the edition of 1658.

ANTONIUS, filius Theodori, juvenis,	MR. HOLLES ¹ , Christ College.
IGNORAMUS, Anglus, causidicus,	MR. PARKINSON ² , Clare Hall.
DULMAN, } clerici Ignorami,	{ MR. TOWERS ³ , Queen's College.
MUSÆUS, }	{ MR. PERIENT, Clare Hall.
PECUS, }	{ MR. PARKER ⁴ , Clare Hall.
TORCOL, Portugallus, leno,	MR. BARGRAVE ⁵ , Clare Hall.

¹ John, eldest son of Sir John Holles (of whom see vol. II. pp. 374, 449; and) whom he succeeded as second Earl of Clare in 1637. During the civil troubles he was remarkable only for his moderation; "he was a man of honour and courage," says Lord Clarendon, "and would have been an excellent person if his heart had not been too much set on keeping and improving his estate." He died Jan. 2, 1665, and was succeeded by his son Gilbert. See Banks's *Extinct Peerage*, vol. III. p. 189.

² Thomas Parkinson, M. A. was a Fellow of Clare Hall in 1619, and served Proctor to the University in 1621. He died before the expiration of his office, and was buried in St. Edward's, Cambridge, Feb. 12, 1621-2. He occurs in the will of Mr. Ruggle as one of his "worthy friends of Clare Hall" to whom he left "a ring of gold, of the value of forty shillings."

³ John Towers, M. A. was a native of Norfolk; had been elected a Fellow of Queen's College in 1607; and incorporated of Oxford, July 9, 1611. He was afterwards Chaplain to William Compton, Earl of Northampton, and presented by that Nobleman to the rectory of Castle Ashby in Northamptonshire. He was admitted D.D. *per literas regias* in 1624; was made Dean of Peterborough in 1630; and Bishop of that See in 1638. He was one of the twelve loyal Prelates imprisoned by the Parliament in 1641, and after his release was with the King at Oxford till the surrender of that garrison. He then retired to Peterborough, where, says Wood, "dying in an obscure condition, Jan. 10, 1648, he was buried the day following in the Cathedral Church." See further in the *Fasti Oxon.* (by Bliss,) vol. I. col. 344. Dr. Fuller says of Bishop Towers, that "he was a *good actor* when young, and a great sufferour when he was old, dying rich onely in children and patience." His son William, a loyal divine and Prebendary of Peterborough, has a memoir in the *Athenæ Oxonienses*, (by Bliss,) vol. II. col. 736.

⁴ This person Mr. Hawkins thought might not improbably be the same as Mr. William Parker, of Sproughton near Ipswich, one of the "loving friends" to whom Mr. Ruggle in his will gave "forty shillings a-piece to buy them rings."

⁵ Isaac Bargrave, says Granger, "was a man of good natural parts, which were much strengthened by study, converse, and travel." He was a native of Bridge in Kent, and had been incorporated at Oxford on the same day as Bishop Towers. He was Chaplain to Sir Henry Wotton when Ambassador at Venice, and was there honoured by the friendship of Father Paul. He was afterwards Rector of Chatham, Kent; Chaplain to Prince Charles; Rector of St. Margaret, Westminster; First Canon of Canterbury, and Dean in 1625. On one occasion, whilst Rector of St. Margaret, he is said to have incurred the displeasure of King James, by too violent a Sermon against popery, corruption, and evil Counsellors. He continued Chaplain to Charles when King, and, from his loyalty, and the enmity of Col. Sandys, died a prisoner in the Fleet in 1642, aged 55. See Granger, and Wood's *Fasti*.

ROSABELLA, virgo,	MR. MORGAN ¹ , Queen's College.
SURDA, nana, ancilla,	MR. COMPTON ² , Queen's College.
TRICO, Theodori servus,	MR. LAKE ³ , Clare Hall.
BANNACAR, Theodori servus, Maurus,	DOMINUS LOVE ⁴ , Clare Hall.

¹ Ball, in his "Life of Dr. Preston," Second Master of Emanuel College, Cambridge, inserted in "The Lives of two-and-twenty English Divines, by Samuel Clark, Pastor of Bennet Fink, London," (for so he styles himself in the titles to all or most of his works,) fo. Lond. 1660, relates, p. 103, that the persons to whose care the providing Actors was entrusted, being of opinion that Mr. Morgan, whose person was handsome, would well become a woman's dress, sent to Dr. Preston his tutor, who, by the way, was a rigid Puritan, for his assistance in preparing him for this part, which the Doctor declined, not conceiving, as he said, that his friends intended Mr. Morgan for a player. Mr. Morgan's guardians, however, on being applied to, not seeing, as may be presumed, any reasonable ground for his refusal, gave their consent to his playing the part, which he accordingly did. HAWKINS.

² See p. 51. — The part of Surda in this Comedy, as we are informed by the same Samuel Clark, in another work of his, entitled, "The Lives of sundry eminent Persons in this latter Age," fo. Lond. 1685, p. 156, was at first intended to have been performed by Samuel Fairclough, another Puritan, and sub-tutor to Mr. Compton who actually played the part. Fairclough, it seems, was chosen for this part on account of his low stature, but objected to acting it, (or indeed any other, for so far did he carry his refusal,) because it required him to be dressed in woman's apparel, which, though not worn to deceive in the worst sense, he thought had an appearance of evil in it, and was therefore, according to the Apostle's rule, to be avoided. In consequence of this opinion, he went to the Vice-chancellor, and desired to be excused from playing any part at all in the Comedy, giving as his reason for this request, that he judged it unlawful for a man to wear women's apparel even in a Comedy. The Vice-chancellor at first endeavoured to laugh him out of this reason; but finding him firm in it, he desisted, and Mr. Compton voluntarily offering, besides his own part of Vince, to perform that of Surda, the same was given to him. HAWKINS.

³ This person, who also personated "Davus Dromo" in the Prologue, is, in the list of Actors compiled by Mr. Baker, erroneously called "afterwards Secretary of State;" but the Secretary, if of Clare Hall, had been *knighted* in 1603 (see vol. I. p. 156), and had long been entirely engrossed by public business; see II. 264. The mistake may have arisen from Arthur, the Secretary's son, being a Cambridge scholar at this time. (Fasti Ox. I. 374).—The performer in *Ignoramus* was William Lake, M. A. Fellow of Clare Hall in 1619, and another of Mr. Ruggle's "worthy friends of Clare Hall" to whom he left a ring of forty shillings value.—"One Lake" was the Author of a Cantabrigian lampoon on the King's Entertainment at Oxford in 1605 (see vol. I. p. 531).

⁴ Richard Love was a native of Cambridge, and became Fellow of Clare Hall. He was, by Royal mandate, admitted Master of Corpus Christi College in 1633; in the following year chosen Vice-chancellor; and was afterwards Lady Margaret's Professor of Divinity. He was a man of good natural, as well as acquired, abilities, and so excellent an orator that at the Restoration he was chosen as a substitute to the Vice-chancellor, to address King Charles on his road to London in the name of the University. The King soon after gave him the Deanery of Ely, but he enjoyed it a few months only, dying in January 1660-1. See a particular Memoir in Masters's History of Corpus Christi College;—a portrait of him is preserved in that House, from which there is an etching by M. Tyson.

CUPES, bibliopola, parasitus,	MR. MASON ¹ , Pembroke Hall.
POLLA, Cupis uxor,	DOMINUS CHESHAM, Clare Hall.
COLA, monachus,	MR. WAKE ² , Gonville and Caius College.
DOROTHEA, uxor Theodori, matrona,	MR. NORFOLK, Queen's College.
VINCE, assecla Dorotheæ, puer,	MR. COMPTON, Queen's College.
NELL, Angla, Dorotheæ ancilla,	MR. TURNER, Clare Hall.
RICHARDUS, Theodori servus,	MR. GRAME ³ , Clare Hall.
PYROPUS, vestiarius,	MR. WAKE, Gonville and Caius College.
FIDICEN, or TIBICEN,	MR. RINNARDE, Clare Hall.
NAUTA GALLICUS,	MR. THOROGOOD, Clare Hall.
NAUTA ANGLICUS,	MR. MASON, Pembroke Hall.
CAUPO,	MR. THOROGOOD, Clare Hall.

The parts in the Prologue were thus distributed:

CURSOR, MR. COMPTON. EQUISO, MR. MASON.

MUSARUM CABALLUS, *viz.* DAVUS DROMO, MR. LAKE.

On the third night, March 9, as Mr. Chamberlain continues, was exhibited "an English Comedy called 'Albumazar,' of Trinity College's action and invention⁴; but there was no great matter in it, more than one good clown's part.

¹ Edmund Mason, who also personated the Nauta Anglicus, and Equiso in the Prologue, was Tutor to Prince Charles. We find by Mr. Baker's Collections (Harl. MS. 7029) that he was a native of Nottingham, had been elected Fellow of Pembroke College in 1598; Junior Treasurer 1604; Senior 1605; Bursar 1610; was presented to the Vicarage of Waresley in Huntingdonshire, in 1613, but resigned in 1614; was Proctor of the University in the latter year. He became D. D. in 1628; Dean of Salisbury in 1629; and dying at his house in Petty France, March 24, 1634, was buried in Westminster Abbey. See Wood's Fasti, by Bliss, vol. I. col. 472.

² Thomas Wake, M.A. who also performed the character of Pyropus, was a Fellow of his College, and another of the "loving friends" to whom a ring is given in the will of Ruggle.

³ Rowland Grame, B. A. occurs in 1619 as being in possession of one of three Fellowships founded by Thomas Cecil, Earl of Exeter, and Dorothy his wife. HAWKINS.

⁴ Its Author was Mr. Tomkis, of whom nothing more is known, but that he was entered a Scholar of Trinity College in 1594, and took the degree of B. A. in 1598. His Comedy was published in 4to, 1615, under the title of "ALBUMAZAR, a Comedy presented before the King's Majestie, the ninth of March 1614, by the Gentlemen of Trinitie College. London: Printed by Nicholas Okes for Walter Burre, and are to be sold at his shop in St. Paul's Church-yard, 1615," pp. 72. A copy may be seen both in the British Museum and the Bodleian Library. A second edition (of which there is a copy in the British Museum,) was published in 1634; and the Play is re-printed in Dodsley's Collection, vol. IX. As with Ignoramus, the original of Albumazar was a Comedy of Giambattista Porta,—his *Astrologo*, printed at Venice in 1606. It is very singular that, of four

"The last night [the 10th of March] was a Latin Pastoral of the same House, excellently written and as well acted; which gave great contentment as well to the King as to all the rest¹.

"Now this being the state of their Plays², their Acts and Disputations fell out much after the same manner; for the Divinity Act was performed reasonably Plays acted on this occasion, two should have been adopted from the Italian, and from the same Author.

¹ This Pastoral was soon after published, entitled, "*MELANTHE, Fabula Pastoralis, acta cùm Jacobus Magnæ Brit. Franc. et Hiberniæ Rex, Cantabrigiam suam nuper inviserat, ibidemque Musarum atque ejus animi gratiâ dies quinque commoraretur. Egerunt Alumni Coll. san. et individue Trinitatis Cantabrigiæ. Excudebat Cantrellus Legge, Mart. 27, 1615.*" 4to, pp. 56. Of this Pastoral there is a copy in the British Museum, presented by George III. Dr. Pegge in 1756 had a copy, which formerly had belonged to Matthew Hutton, and in which "the names of the Masters of Arts and Batchelors concerned in acting the Play, are written against the respective *Dramatis Personæ*." (See a letter of the Doctor under the signature of P. Gemsege in *Gent. Mag.* vol. XXVI. p. 224.) Of the Author of *Melanthe* we know nothing more than that he was Mr. Brookes, of Trinity College, and "mox Doctour;" and that he had previously written a Latin Pastoral, called *Scyros*, performed before Prince Charles and the Elector Palatine, March 30, 1612. See the Appendix to volume II.

² From a list of the Plays composed for this occasion, communicated by Dr. Pegge, from a MS. in the library of Sir Edward Dering, to the *Gent. Mag. ubi supra*, we learn that there was still another Play "provided if the King should have tarried another night;" and acted before the University in King's College, after his Majesty's departure, on Monday the 13th. This was "the *Piscatory*, an English Comedy," by Phineas Fletcher. It was published in 1631, under the title of "*Sicelides, a Piscatory*, as it hath beene acted in King's Colledge in Cambridge," 4to, pp. 82. From Wood stating, (in a hesitating manner, it must be owned,) that one Robert Chamberlaine was the Author of "*Sicelides, a Pastoral*," a little controversy had arisen whether *Sicelides* was the same as the *Piscatory* of Fletcher, but this is set at rest by Dr. Bliss (*Athenæ*, vol. II. col. 676), who remarks that "so many passages in this *Piscatory* are found in *The Purple Island* and *Poetical Miscellanies*, that there cannot be a doubt of their having been all written by the same hand." Copies of *Sicelides* are in the British Museum and Bodleian libraries.—Phineas was son of Giles Fletcher, D. C. L. Ambassador from Queen Elizabeth to Muscovy; and nephew to Dr. Richard Fletcher, Bishop of London, the Father of John, the celebrated Dramatic Poet. Phineas was educated at Eton; entered King's College, Cambridge, in 1600; proceeded B. A. 1604, and M. A. 1608. He was afterwards Rector of Hilgay in Norfolk, where he died in 1649. His works (not all enumerated in Wood) were, *Locustæ, vel Pietas Jesuitica*, 1627; *The Locusts or Apollyonists*, 1627; *Comment on the First Psalm*, 1632; *Joy in Tribulation*, 1632; *De Literatis antiquæ Britanniæ, Regibus presertim, qui doctrinâ claruerunt, quique Collegia Cantabrigiæ fundèrunt*, 1633; *Sylva Poetica*, 1633; *The Purple Island, a Poem*, 1633; and a posthumous volume entitled, *A Father's Testament*, written for the benefit of his particular Relations, 1670. It has been said that his literary fame is not equal to his merit; and his poetry has been much admired;—see the *Biographia Dramatica*.

well, but not answerable to the expectation ; the Law and Physic Acts stark naught ; but the Philosophy Act made amends, and indeed was very excellent, inso-much that the same day the Bishop of Ely [Dr. Andrews] sent the Moderator, the Answerer, the Varier or Prevaricator, and one of the Repliers, that were all of his House [Pembroke], twenty angels apiece."

Of these Acts the following scattered particulars have been collected, chiefly by the industry of Mr. Hawkins :

Of the Divinity Act we find the following memorandum¹ : " Mens. Mart. 7, 1614-15, D're Davenant², cum tribus questionibus. Nulla est temporalis Papæ potestas supra Reges, in ordine ad bonum spirituale. Infallibilis fidei determinatio non est annexa Cathedræ Papali. Cæca obedientia est illicita." We learn from the latter part of Mr. Chamberlain's letter, that Bp. Harsnet³, the Vice-chancellor, was Moderator, and Fuller, also, gives us the following anecdote. Speaking of Dr. John Richardson⁴ in his "Worthies" under Cambridgeshire, he says:

¹ In Baker's MS. collections, vol. XI, p. 33.

² John Davenant, D.D. of an Essex family, and native of Watling-street, London, had been chosen a Fellow of Queen's College 1597, Lady Margaret's Professor of Divinity 1608-9, when only 36; and President of his College in 1614. He was one of the four divines sent to the Synod of Dort in 1618; in 1621 was advanced to the Bishopric of Salisbury; and died in April 1641. See an ample Memoir of him, his works, and family, in Cassan's *Lives of the Bishops of Salisbury*, 8vo, 1824, part ii. pp. 111—131.

³ Samuel Harsnet, D. D. was, says Fuller in his *Worthies*, "born at Colchester; bred first Scholar, then Fellow, then Master, of Pembroke Hall in Cambridge; a man of great learning, strong parts, and stout spirit." His first preferment was the vicarage of Chigwell in 1597; he was afterwards Archdeacon of Colchester; Prebendary of Mapesbury in St. Paul's; twice Vice-chancellor of his University; Bishop of Chichester 1609; of Norwich 1619, when he resigned the rectory of Stisted in Essex; and Archbishop of York in 1628. This and the accompanying dignity of Privy Councillor, Fuller says, were procured for him by Thomas Earl of Arundel, "who much favoured him, and committed his younger son to his education." Notwithstanding, however, all his greatness, Chigwell, the place of his first preferment, had secured his affections. He there founded a Free-school in 1626, and purchased a mansion, "where his descendant, Mrs. Fisher, died in 1808." He was there also buried, "by his own desire, at the foot of Thomazine, his wife;" and his fine brass is well engraved, both in Morant's and Ogborne's *Histories of Essex*. If Mrs. Ogborne is correct in mentioning "his wife" and "his descendant," Fuller is mistaken in saying he died unmarried. His death happened May 25, 1635. See other particulars, and of his works, in Fuller and Ogborne.

⁴ John Richardson, D. D. a native of Linton in Cambridgeshire, was first a Fellow of Emanuel College, then Master of Peterhouse, and afterwards of Trinity College. He was also Regius Professor of Divinity, and Vice-chancellor in 1617. He was a most excellent linguist, and employed as one of the Translators of the Bible. Fuller says he died in 1621; Wood "about the beginning of

“Such who represent him a dull and heavy man in his parts may be confuted with this instance. An extraordinary Act in Divinity was kept at Cambridge before King James, wherein Doctor John Davenant was Answerer, and Dr. Richardson amongst others the Opposers. The question was maintained in the negative concerning the Excommunicating of Kings. Dr. Richardson vigorously pressed the practise of St. Ambrose excommunicating the Emperor Theodosius; insomuch that the King in some passion returned: ‘*Prefecto fuit hoc Ambrosio insolentissimè factum!*’ To whom Dr. Richardson rejoined: ‘*Responsum verè Regium, et Alexandro dignum! Hoc non est argumenta dissolvere, sed disseccare;*’ and so, sitting down, desisted from any further dispute.”

Of the Law Act we only know that it was moderated by Dr. Henry Moutlow, first Gresham Professor of Civil Law ¹.

In the Physic Act, as Bishop Corbet’s song hereafter printed tells us,

“Sir Edward Radcliffe ² bore the bell,
Who was, by the King’s own appointment,
To speak of spells and magic ointment.”

Of the Philosophy Act a long account is to be found in Ball’s “Life of Dr. Preston,” from which it appears, that Mr. Wren, of Pembroke Hall (afterwards Bishop of Ely), ³ was Answerer or Respondent in it; Dr. Preston, of Queen’s

1625, and was buried in Trinity College Chapel.” There were two others of the same names living at the same time; one was Dean of Rochester, the other Bishop of Ardagh; all three are distinguished in Wood’s Fasti (by Bliss), vol. I. col. 336.

¹ This appears from Mr. Baker’s collections, vol. XIX. where the name thus occurs in a list of the Fellows of King’s College: “1571. Hen. Moutlow, twice Proctor of the University, in 1589 and 1593; a Burgess of Parliament; many years Orator; First Reader of the Law Lecture at Gresham College in London; LL. D.; Moderator of the Law Act before King James at Cambridge in 1614; died 1634, aged 80 years; and buried at St. Mary’s.”

² See before, p. 49.

³ Matthew, son of Francis Wren, Merchant of London, was admitted in 1601 a Student of Pembroke Hall; became Greek Scholar and Fellow there; Chaplain to Bp. Andrews; President of his College 1616; Prebendary of Winchester 1623; Rector of Bingham, Notts, 1624; Chaplain to Prince Charles on his voyage to Spain; D.D.; Master of Peterhouse 1628; Clerk of the Closet 1633; Prebendary of Westminster 1634; Bishop of Hereford the same year; Norwich 1635; Dean of the King’s Chapel; Bishop of Ely 1638. Beside these numerous preferments his minor offices are minutely assembled in Wood’s Athenæ, by Bliss, vol. II. cols. 885, 886. He was for fifteen years imprisoned in the Tower by the Long Parliament, but was restored to his Bishopric at the Restora-

College, first Opponent¹; and Dr. Reade, of Pembroke Hall, Moderator²; and the question in it was, whether dogs could make syllogisms, a question very well suited to the King's love for hunting, and perhaps suggested, either by a passage from Chrysippus, in Sir Walter Raleigh's Sceptic (in which the position is affirmed), or by Montaigne's "Apology for Raimond de Sebonde," where he takes occasion to mention this passage in Chrysippus. Dr. Wren, says Fuller, in his "Worthies," under London, kept this Philosophy Act with no less praise to himself than pleasure to the King; where, if men should forget, even dogs would remember his seasonable distinction, what the King's hounds could perform above others, by vertue of their prerogative!"

"Now," continues Mr. Chamberlain, "for Orations and Concios ad Clerum, I heard not many, but those I did were extraordinary, and the better for that they were short. The University Orator, Nethersole³, though he be a proper man tion, and died at Ely House in Holborn, April 24, 1667, aged 81. For more ample particulars see Wood, Fuller, Bentham, Granger, and, above all, Wren's Parentalia.—Among the Herrick Papers printed in vol. III. of my History of Leicestershire, are several letters of Christopher, brother of Bishop Matthew Wren, and himself afterwards Dean of Windsor, &c. He was at this time of St. John's College, Oxford, and there tutor to the eldest son of Sir William Herrick, the King's Goldsmith (of whom see vol. I. pp. 504, 596). In a letter, written for permission to take his pupil "to see Cambridge att this solemne entertainment of the Kinge's Majestie," he declares his intention of being there himself, "to heare my brother performe his Acte which hee is putt uppon."

¹ John Preston, D. D. whose Life by Ball has been before mentioned, was a native of Heyford in Northamptonshire, was admitted of King's College in 1604, and Fellow of Queen's in 1609, where, says Fuller in his Worthies, "he was the greatest Pupil-monger in England in man's memory, having sixteen Fellow-commoners (most heirs to fair estates), admitted in one year. His skill in Philosophy rendered him the general respect of the University." He became Master of "pure Emanuel," and as Wood says, "the patriarch of the Presbyterian party." Both Wood and Fuller term him "a perfect politician." He "never had wife nor care of souls, and leaving a plentifull, no invidious estate, died July 20, 1628."

² "Alexander Reade, B. A." says Mr. Hawkins, "was chosen Fellow of Pembroke Hall, Nov. 5, 1605; and was afterwards Minister of Yeatley in Hampshire, and died about 1628." Bishop Corbet (see p. 72) says he "was no fool, who far from Cambridge kept a school." A Minister of exactly the same name, was ejected from the Rectory of Fifield, Essex, April 11, 1642. See Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy, part ii. p. 342.

³ Francis Nethersole, born at Nethersole House, Kent, was elected Fellow of Trinity College in 1608, and Public Orator in 1611. He was knighted at Theobalds, Sept. 19, 1619, and sent Ambassador to the Princes of the Union, and became Secretary to the Queen of Bohemia. "It is hard to say," says Fuller in his Worthies, "whether he was more remarkable for his doings or sufferings

and think well of himself, yet he is taxed for calling the Prince *Jacobissime Carole*; and some will needs add, that he called him *Jacobule* too; which neither pleased the King nor any body else. But sure the King was exceedingly pleased many times both at the Plays and Disputations (for I had the hap to be for most part within hearing); and often at his meals he would express as much. He visited all the Colleges save two or three, and commends them beyond Oxford; yet I am not so partial, but therein I must crave pardon not to be of his opinion. Though I endured a great deal of penance by the way for this little pleasure, yet I would not have missed it, for that I see thereby the partiality of both sides; the Cambridge men pleasing and applauding themselves in all, and the Oxford men as fast condemning and detracting all that was done; wherein yet I commend Corbet's modesty whilst he was there, who, being seriously dealt withal by some friends to say what he thought, answered, that he had left his malice and judgement at home, and came thither only to commend¹.

"Paul Tompson, the gold-clipper, hath his pardon; and not only so, but is absolved *à pœnd et culpâ*; whereby he keeps his livings, and never came to trial; and I heard he had the face to appear in the Town whilst the King was there².

"I had almost forgotten, that almost all the Courtiers went forth Masters of in her behalf." With his wife Lucy, eldest daughter of Sir Henry Goodyere, of Polesworth, Warwickshire, he founded "a very fair school" at that place. He died in 1652.

¹ Whether he spoke seriously or not may be best determined after reading his "Grave Poem," printed in pp. 66—73.

² This person is more than once mentioned in the songs written on this occasion; he appears to have been very much the subject of public conversation at this time, and to have retained his notoriety for many years. He was a clergyman, and one of the Senior Fellows of Trinity College, having been so elected in 1585; and from all we find of him he appears to have been a man of abilities. Unfortunately he gained greater notoriety as an *auri tonsor*, as he is expressively distinguished in a list of Fellows of Trinity College, in Cole's MSS. vol. XLV. On account of his crime, he was for some months confined in Cambridge Castle, and there employed his time well in compiling an Account of the State of his College, which occupies three whole sheets, and is much praised for its neatness by the neat Mr. Cole, who has copied it in his Collections, vol. XLV. When released from confinement, if he kept his livings as Mr. Chamberlain says, he appears to have been obliged to resign his Fellowship. (Ibid. p. 233.) In the same Collection, vol. XX. pp. 206 *et seq.* are two letters of Tompson when confined in Cambridge Castle: one to Lord Chief Justice Coke, lamenting his error and petitioning for mercy, dated Nov. 7, 1614; another to Mr. Harrison, Vice-master of Trinity College; and also two quaint and pedantic Coriat-like letters to Tompson from Mr. Butler the celebrated Physician, who taxes him with levity and unseasonable wit in his unhappy situation, and signs "Your very lovinge frend grieved at your fall, and pittieinge your miserie."

Arts at the King's being there; but few or no Doctors, save only Younge, which was done by mandate, being son to Sir Peter, the King's Schoolmaster¹. The Vice-chancellor and University were exceedingly strict in that point, and refused many importunities of great men, among whom was Mr. Secretary, that made great mean for Mr. Westfield²; but it would not be. Neither the King's entreaty for John Donne would prevail. Yet they are threatened with a mandate, which if it come, it is like they will obey; but they are resolved to give him such a blow withal, that he were better without it³. Indeed the Bishop of Chichester, Vice-chancellor, hath been very stiff, and carried himself very peremptory that way; wherein he is not much to be blamed, being a matter of more

¹ Peter Young had been assistant to the celebrated Buchanan in the education of James. He was knighted at Whitehall, Feb. 19, 1604-5 (see vol. I. p. 494); and had been the means of persuading the King to visit Eton College in the preceding September (ibid. p. 457). A good portrait of him, published by Richardson in 1793, from an original picture in the possession of the Earl of Leicester, is thus inscribed: "Petrus Young, à Seton, Eq. Aur. invictiss. ac potent. Jacobo VI^o, Mag. Britan. etc. Regi a Consil. et Eleem. in reg. Scot.; neonon variis Legat. ad Reges et Princip. Clariss. an. Dni 1622, æt. 79. Servivi Regi meo ann. 53." Of his son Patrick, now made D.D. a very eminent Scholar and Keeper of the King's Library, there is a Memoir in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. He became Rector of Hayes in Middlesex and Llanine in Denbighshire, Prebendary and Treasurer of St. Paul's Cathedral, and died in 1652.

² If this was Thomas Westfield, afterwards Bishop of Bristol, (of whom see Wood's Fasti, by Bliss, vol. I. col. 345,) and I find no other of the name, the Vice-chancellor was indeed needlessly strict, for that Divine was a Student and Fellow of Jesus College in the University, had taken the degree of B. D. as long before as 1604, and actually was created D. D. in 1615.

³ This differs *toto calo* from Isaak Walton's account in his Life of Donne: "That summer, in the very same month in which he entered into sacred orders, and was made a King's Chaplain, [see p. 41] his Majesty then going his Progress, was entreated to receive an Entertainment in the University of Cambridge; and Mr. Donne attending his Majesty at this time, his Majesty was pleased to recommend him to the University to be made Doctor in Divinity. Dr. Harsnet (after Archbishop of York) was then Vice-chancellor, who knowing him to be the author of that learned book, 'The Pseudo Martyr,' required no other proof of his abilities, but proposed it to the University, who presently assented, and expressed a gladness that they had such an occasion to entitle him to be theirs." Walton's narration is evidently the incorrect one, probably corrupted in the retailing from one anecdotist to another. Mr. Chamberlain says in his next letter to Sir Dudley Carleton: "John Donne and one Cheke went out Doctors at Cambridge, with much ado, after our coming away, by the King's express mandate; though the Vice-chancellor and some other of the Heads called them openly *filios noctis et tenebriones*, that sought thus to come in at the window when there was a gate open. But the worst is that Donne hath gotten a reversion of the Deanery of Canterbury, if such grants could be lawful; whereby he hath purchased himself a great deal of envy,

consequence than at first was imagined¹. He did his part every way, as well in moderating the Divinity Act, as in taking great pains in all other things, and keeping exceeding great cheer²."

From Cole's MSS. we have the following list of the Expences of the Corporation, "at his Majestie's first coming to Cambridge, in the time of one Thomas Ffrench then Mayor, being Yeoman Purvior [to the King] for fresh Fish, a proud man who abused the Corporacion :"

	£.	s.	d.
" Imprimis, two cupps -	-	-	56 0 0
Item, two cases -	-	-	0 10 0
A present of Fish to the Lord Treasurer -	-	-	13 6 8
To the Gentlemen Ushers -	-	-	10 0 0
To the Sewers of the Chamber -	-	-	2 0 0
To the Sargeant at Armes -	-	-	4 0 0

that a man of his sort should seek, *per saltum*, to intercept such a place from so many more worthy and ancient divines." As to the Deanery of Canterbury Mr. Chamberlain may be affirmed to be in his turn incorrect; for, on the Deanery becoming vacant in the very next year, it was given to Dr. Charles Fotherby.

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Mr. Chamberlain, when he wrote this, does not appear to have been aware that degrees had actually been conferred on several undeserving individuals. Camden, in his Annals, records this fact as the most important feature of the King's Visit. All he says on the Visit is: "March 7. The King visited the University of Cambridge, where academical degrees were prostituted to illiterate persons." Wood mentions the occurrence in his Oxford Annals (see p. 64); Corbet alludes to it in his Song; and Mr. Baker, in an Account of St. John's College, which occupies the first volume of his collections, says that, "degrees were vilely prostituted to mean persons, such as apothecaries and barbers, and that in so scandalous a manner, that some of them were afterwards degraded by a grace of the House, though to soften the matter, it was pretended that some of these degrees were surreptitiously obtained." In vol. XXIII. of the same MSS. is the grace itself, with the names of the persons. It has an erroneous date of March 4, probably for 14. "Conceditur, Mar. 4, 1614. Cùm ex speciali gratiâ sereniss. Regis, nuper per literas suas Regias indultum fuerit, ut ii tantum in ordinem Magistrorum cooptarentur, qui digni et idonei Procan. et Capiti Senatûs viderentur, Placet vobis, ut ii omnes quorum nomina subscribuntur, et qui posthac ad notitiam Procancellarii pervenerint, qui absque notitiâ et approbatione dicti Procan. et Capitûs Senatûs ad gradum Magistrorum furtim obrepserint, contra tenorem Regiæ dispensationis, eorum admissio pro nullâ et irrita habeatur, et ita publicè his scriptis, valvis Scholarum affixis, publicetur et declaretur.

Draper, de Braintree, pharmac.

Boswell, Johan.

Medlop, de Walden, pharmac.

Faiercloth, Reginal.

Henr, Chapman, decimator.

Heath, Trinit.

Walterus Priest, tonsor.

Rayner, Joh'is."

						£.	s.	d.
To the Gentlemen Ushers Quarter Waiters	-	-	-	-	-	3	6	8
To the Yeomen Ushers, Groomes, and Pages	-	-	-	-	-	2	0	0
To the Trumpitters	-	-	-	-	-	3	4	0
To the Sargeant Trumpitter	-	-	-	-	-	1	0	0
To the Footemen	-	-	-	-	-	2	0	0
To the Porters	-	-	-	-	-	2	0	0
To the Waymaker	-	-	-	-	-	1	0	0
To the Coachman	-	-	-	-	-	1	0	0
To the Bottleman	-	-	-	-	-	0	10	0
To the Prince's Footemen	-	-	-	-	-	2	0	0
To the Messengers of the Chamber	-	-	-	-	-	2	0	0
To the Heralds att Armes	-	-	-	-	-	4	0	0
To the Yeoman of the Padd-horse	-	-	-	-	-	0	10	0
To the Yeoman Usher that brought the Sword	-	-	-	-	-	1	0	0
To the Groome of the Packe-saddle	-	-	-	-	-	0	10	0
To the King's Poett	-	-	-	-	-	0	10	0
To the Groomes of the Great-horse	-	-	-	-	-	2	0	0
To the Kitcheners	-	-	-	-	-	0	10	0
To the Sumpterman	-	-	-	-	-	0	10	0
To the Sergeant of the Close Carriage	-	-	-	-	-	0	10	0
To the Gentleman Harbenger	-	-	-	-	-	2	0	0
To the Yeoman Harbinger	-	-	-	-	-	1	0	0
To the Knight Marshall	-	-	-	-	-	3	6	8
To the Prince's Scullery	-	-	-	-	-	0	6	8
To the Prince's Coachman	-	-	-	-	-	0	10	0
To the Prince's Groomes	-	-	-	-	-	0	13	4
Gloves to the Noblemen	-	-	-	-	-	11	0	0
Spent in dyett at the Maior's	-	-	-	-	-	57	14	0
Hatts, feathers, stockings, garters, and making the apparell	-	-	-	-	-	1	17	0
Their wages ¹ for six days	-	-	-	-	-	0	6	8
The Marshalls for the Towne and their followers	-	-	-	-	-	2	7	0

¹ Whose the original does not say; but those attendants on the Civic pomp must be meant, for whose use the hats, &c. in the preceding item were provided. The sum, 6s. 8d. is probably also incorrect; since £.4 is wanting in the four last items to make the £.66. 5s. 8d. in the next page.

The Expences are then thus classed under three different heads:

	£.	s.	d.
"The presents to the King, Prince, and Lords - - -	80	16	8
The Fees to the Officers - - - - -	53	17	4
The charges of dyett att the Maior's and other expences - -	66	5	8
	<hr/>		
Summa totalis -	£.200	19	8
	<hr/>		

The University expences much exceeded those of the City. The following account is from the University Audit Book under the year 1616¹:

	£.	s.	d.
"My Lord of Chichester, then Vice-chancellor, received of the several Colleges for the King's Entertainment - - -	571	13	4
Whereof his Lordship disbursed in that service - - -	446	4	10
	<hr/>		
So remains - -	£.125	8	6
Item, received of Jesus College, the remainder of their rate -	15	0	0
	<hr/>		
In toto remanet	£.140	8	6

	£.	s.	d.
Whereof paid to Mr. Linsell ² , for Clare Hall Comedy [probably for the second performance in May] -	72	7	8
To the Bedel - - - - -	7	18	5
	<hr/>		
In toto paid	80	6	1
The receipt from Dr. Gwyn [the Bishop of Chichester's successor as Vice-chancellor] is - - - - -	60	2	5
Whereof paid to Trinity College - - - - -	21	0	0

At the top of the same page is this item: "Pro nocturno scrutinio extraord. ratione adventûs Regis, &c. 26s. 8d."

For the King's Entertainment at St. John's College, says Mr. Baker³, "£.500 is placed to account, besides the proportion to the public charge." He cites for

¹ Here copied from Baker's MSS. vol. XIX.

² Augustine Linsell, afterwards successively Bishop of Peterborough and Hereford; and Samuel Linsell, afterwards Rector of Stratford in Suffolk, a "kinsman" of the Bishop, and executor of his last will; were both Fellows of Clare Hall, and both among those "worthy friends" and fellow collegians to whom the Author of the "Clare Hall Comedy" bequeathed a ring of the value of 40s.

³ MSS. Coll. vol. I. p. 237.

his authority the "Comput. Fin." — the College account for the disposition of their fine-money; and in another place¹ he gives from the same record the following entries :

						£.	s.	d.
" Paid Mr. Vice-chancellor for Entertainment of his Majestie at								
his first coming	-	-	-	-	-	30	0	0
Paid for his Entertainment at his second coming	-	-	-	-	-	19	16	0
Paid of the fine-money for charges at his Majestie's coming,								
<i>per billam</i>	-	-	-	-	-	499	7	2

In the Churchwardens' Accounts of St. Mary's are these charges :

" For gravelling the Church-yard at the King's coming	-	-	0	17	2
To labourers for six days' work, when the King was at Cambridge			0	6	0
For whitening the porch, the belfry, and mending the Church-walks,					
when the King was here, &c.	-	-	-	-	0 13 4
For the Ringers when the King came	-	-	-	-	0 2 0

Anthony à Wood, in his *Annals of Oxford*, under 1614, after alluding to some pasquinades made by the Cantabrigians on the King's Visit to Oxford in 1605³, proceeds thus : " Now this year the King being minded to take a journey to Cambridge, and it being known time enough at Oxon, many Acadamecians went thither purposely to observe the Exercises and the manner of his Entertainment, and were not a little scandalized at the conferring of degrees in several faculties on unworthy and unlearned men. But so it was, that being not answerable to their expectation, many idle Songs were made of the passages there, one of which (being that which first came out) was translated into Latin by P. Heylin, then of Hart Hall⁴, but at the coming out of that Song made by Mr. Corbet, of

¹ Ibid. vol. XII. p. 153.

² Ibid. vol. XIX.

³ See vol. I. p. 531.

⁴ This eminent author and polemical divine was now only 14, having first breathed on Nov. 29, 1600. He had entered of Hart Hall in 1613, was chosen Demy of Magdalen in 1615, and Fellow in 1619. His Latin song produced on the present occasion I have not met with, but he appears to have been addicted to making sarcastic and " witty copies of verses," for Wood tells us in his *Annals*, that on the failure of Barten Holyday's Comedy performed before the King at Woodstock in 1621 (see under that year), he wrote one called " Whoop Holyday." Perhaps a spirit of rivalry had a share in producing this, since " he had, while at school, given a specimen of his genius for dramatic poetry, in a tragi-comedy on the wars and fate of Troy ; and at College

Christ Church, they died. These matters I note, because in this age nothing was more common than this way of expressing ingenuity by young men, and nothing more common than to interlard their discourse and writing with the sayings of old Poets and Orators. The former much disused after the Restauration of Charles the Second; the other then became ridiculous, as also the use thereof in preaching."

I shall next present to the Reader three of these Songs, and first the truly excellent one of Mr. (afterwards Bishop) Corbet¹, accompanied by a very inferior Cantabrigian Answer :

composed a tragedy entitled "Spurius," which was so approved by his Society that the President, Dr. Langton, ordered it so be acted in his apartments." See the copious memoir of Dr. Heylin in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

¹ Of whom see vol. I. p. 529.



A Grave Poem, as it was presented in Latin by certaine Divines before his Majestie in Cambridge, by way of Enterlude, stiled Liber novus de Adventu Regis ad Cantabrigiam. Faithfullie done into English, with some liberal advantage; made rather to be sung than read¹. To the tune of Bonny Nell.

By Mr. (afterwards Bishop) RICHARD CORBET.

It is not yet a fortnight since
Lutetia entertained our Prince,
And vented bath a studied toy
As long as was the siege of Troy,
And spent herself for full five days
In Speeches, Exercise, and Plays.
To trim the Town great care before
Was ta'en by th' Lord Vice-chancellor;
Both inorn and ev'n he cleansed the way,
The streets he gravell'd thrice a day;
One strike of March-dust for to see,
No proverb would give more than he².

A Cambridge Madrigal, in Answer to the Oxford Ballad; as it was sung before the King, instead of interlude music, in Ignoramus, the second time acted before his Majesty in Trinity College, Maii 13, 1615. Confuting the Oxford Ballad that was sung to the tune of Bonny Nell.

A ballad late was made, but God knows who's the penner,
Some say the rhyming Sculler³, and others say 'twas Fenner⁴;
But those that know the sleight do smell it by the choler,
And do maintain it was the brain of some young Oxford Scholar.
For first he rails at Cambridge, and thinks her to disgrace
By calling her Lutetia, and throws dirt in her face;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, for all the world must grant,
If Oxford be thy mother, then Cambridge is thine aunt.

¹ This excellent Song, free from all the quaintness and stiffness which usually characterize the poetry of the period, has never been in its way surpassed. The title is of course in burlesque; but Mr. Hawkins (Ignoramus, p. xliv) is entrapped by it into a supposition that it was actually a translation from a Latin Poem. This misapprehension involves too great a detraction from the merit due to Bishop Corbet, who was certainly its author, to pass unnoticed. The Answer, however, I am inclined to think was actually "sung before the King," as it professes to be. Both Poems were printed by Mr. Hawkins from a MS. in his own possession, but I have altered a word or two from MSS. Sloan. 1775. N.

² Alluding to the proverb, "A bushel of March dust is worth a King's ransom." Bailey, in his Dictionary, says a strike is a measure containing four bushels. HAWKINS.

³ Taylor the Water Poet.

⁴ See vol. II. pp. 329, 625.

Their Colleges were new be-painted;
 Their Founders eke were new be-sainted;
 Nothing escap'd, nor post, nor door,
 Nor gate, nor rail, nor bawd, nor whore;
 You could not know, oh strange mishap!
 Whether you saw the Town or map.

But th' pure House of Emanuel¹
 Would not be like proud Jesabel,
 Nor shew herself before the King
 An hypocrite, or painted thing;
 [And images she would have none,
 For fear of superstition. *or,*]
 But that the ways might all prove fair
 Conceived a tedious mile of prayer.

Upon the look'd-for seventh of March,
 Out went the Townsmen all in starch;
 Both band and beard into the field,
 Where one a Speech could hardly wield,
 For needs he would begin his style,
 The King being from him half a mile.
 They gave the King a piece of plate,
 Which they hoped never came too late;

Then goes he to the Town, and puts it all in starch,
 For other rhyme he could not find to fit the seventh of March;
 But leave it, Scholar, leave it, for you must vail the bonnet,
 And cast your cap² at Cambridge for making song and sonnet.

Then goes he to the Presence, and there he doth purloin,
 For looking in the plate he steals away the coin;

¹ Emanuel College was always accounted a puritanical House. Fuller in his History of Cambridge, p. 147, relates, that Sir Walter Mildmay, the Founder, being at Court in 1584, the year of its establishment, was addressed by Queen Elizabeth: "Sir Walter, I hear you have erected a puritan foundation;" to which he replied: "No, Madam, far be it from me to countenance any thing contrary to your established laws; but I have set an acorn, which, when it becomes an oak, God alone knows what will be the fruit thereof."—Corbet employs the same epithet to the College in his Poem entitled "The distracted Puritan:"

"In the House of pure Emanuel I had my education,
 Where my friends surmise I dazzled mine eyes with the light of revelation."

² What it is to vail bonnet is well understood. Mr. Ray, in his Proverbs, explains the proverb "They may cast their caps at him," in the following manner: "When two or more run together, and one gets ground, he that is cast, and despairs to overtake, commonly casts his hat after the foremost, and gives up the race, so that to cast their caps at one is to despair of overtaking him."

But cried, "O look in, great King,
For there is in it just nothing ;"
And so preferr'd, with time and gait,
A Speech as empty as the plate.

Now, as the King came near the Town,
Each one ran crying up and down,
"Alas, poor Oxford! thou'rt undone,
For now the King's past Trompington;
And rides upon his brave grey dapple,
Seeing the top of King's College Chapel."

Next rode his Lordship on a nag,
Whose coat was blue, whose ruff was shag;
And then began his Reverence
To speak most eloquent nonsense:
"See how," quoth he, "most mighty Prince,
For every joy my horse doth wince.

What cries the Town? what we?" said he,
"What cries the University?
What cry the boys? what every thing?
Behold, behold, yon comes the King!"
And every period he bedecks
With *En et ecce, venit Rex!*

"Oft have I warned," quoth he, "our dirt,
That no silk stockings should be hurt;
But we in vain strive to be fine,
Unless your Grace's sun doth shine;
And with the beams of your bright eye
You will be pleased our streets to dry!"

Now come we to the wonderment
Of Christendom and eke of Kent¹,

But leave it, Scholar, leave it, for 'tis a dangerous thing
To steal from Corporations in presence of the King.

Next that, my Lord Vice-chancellor he brings before the Prince,
And in the face of all the Court he makes his horse to wince;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, for sure the jest did fail,
Unless you clapp'd a nettle under his horse's tail.

¹ A proverb,—“neither in Kent nor Christendom;” that is, saith Dr. Fuller, “our English Christendom, of which Kent was first converted to the Christian faith; as much as to say, as Rome and all Italy, or the first cut and all the loaf besides; not by way of opposition, as if Kent were no part of Christendom, as some have understood it.” Mr. Ray in his Collection of Proverbs, adds: “I rather

The Trinity, which, to surpass,
Doth deck her Spokesman¹ by a glass,
Who clad in gay and silken weeds,
Thus opes his mouth; hark how he speeds :

" I wonder what your Grace doth here,
Who have expected been twelve year ;
And this your son fair Carolus,
That is so Jacobissimus.
Here 's none of all your Grace refuses ;—
You are most welcome to our Muses.

" Although we have no bells to jangle,
Yet can we shew a fair quadrangle,
Which, though it ne'er was graced with King,
Yet surely is a goodly thing².
My warning 's short, no more I 'll say,
Soon you shall see a gallant Play."

But nothing was so much admir'd
As were their Plays, so well attir'd ;
Nothing did win more praise of mine
Than did their Actors most divine³.
So did they drink their healths divinely,
So did they dance and skip so finely.

Their Play had sundry grave wise factors,
A perfect Diocess of Actors

Then aims he at our Orator, and at his Speech he snarls,
Because he forced a word, and call'd the Prince most Jacob Charles ;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, for he did it compose
That puts you down as much for tongue as you did him for nose.

Then flies he to our Comedies, and there he doth profess
He saw amongst our Actors a perfect Diocess ;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, 'tis no such witty fiction,
For since you left the Vicar out you spoil the jurisdiction.

think that it is to be understood by way of opposition, and that it had its original upon occasion of Kent being given by the ancient Britons to the Saxons, who were then Pagans ; so that Kent might well be opposed to all the rest of England in this respect, it being Pagan when all the rest was Christian."

¹ Sir Francis Nethersole, of whom before, p. 58.

² This quadrangle was that which is still known at Trinity College by the designation of Neville's Court. It is the innermost of the two from the principal entrance, and was built by Dr. Neville, Dean of Canterbury, who died May 2, 1615, after having been Master of the College about twenty years. It cost upwards of £.3000. HAWKINS.

³ That is, consisting of the Clergy.

Upon the stage; for I am sure that
There was both Bishop, Pastor, Curate;
Nor was their labour light or small,
The charge of some was *pastoral*.

Our Plays were certainly much worse,
For they had a brave hobby-horse;
Which did present unto his Grace
A wond'rous witty ambling pace;
But we were chiefly spoiled¹ by that
Which was six hours of God knows what².

His Lordship then was in a rage,
His Lordship lay upon the stage³,
His Lordship cried all would be marr'd;—
His Lordship lov'd a-life the Guard,

Next that he backs our hobby-horse, and, with a Scholar's grace,
Not able to endure the trot he brings him to a pace;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, for you will hardly do it,
Since all the riders in the Mews could hardly bring him to it.

Polonia land can tell, through which he went a race,
And bare a fardel at his back, but ne'er went other pace;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, he learnt it from his sire,
And if you put him from his trot he'll lay you in the mire.

Our horse hath cast his rider, and now he means to shame us,
And in the censure of our Play conspires with Ignoramus;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, that calls it "God knows what,"
Your head was making ballads when you should mark the plot.

His fantasy still working finds out another crotchet⁴,
For running to the Bishop he rides upon his rochet;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, and take it not in snuff,
For that he wears no pekadel by law may wear a ruff⁵.

Next that he goes to dinner, and, like a hardy guest,
When he had cramb'd his belly full he speaks against the Feast;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, for once you ate his roast,
It argues want of manners to speak against the host.

¹ i. e. excelled.

² Ignoramus is meant.

³ This is rather unintelligible; but is also noticed in the "Courtier's Censure;" see p. 72.

⁴ Here there appears to be a very singular mistake. The "crotchet" to which this verse answers is not found in the "Grave Poem;" but it evidently alludes to the tenth verse in the "Courtier's Censure" (see p. 72), which must have been running in the head of the Cambridge Poet, and have been confounded in his too tenacious memory with the effusions of Corbet.

⁵ This Mr. Hawkins conceived to allude to the last clause in the Orders published by the Vice-chancellor previously to the King's arrival, as before printed in p. 44; — a piccadil is well known to be a kind of stiff collar, made in fashion of a band.

And did invite those mighty men
 To—what think you?—e'en to a hen!
 He knew he was to use their might,
 To help to keep the door at night;
 And well bestowed he thought his hen,
 That they might tollbooth¹ Oxford men;
 He thought it did become a Lord
 To threaten with that bugbear word.

Now pass we to the Civil Law,
 And eke the Doctors of the Spaw,
 Who all performed their parts so well,
 Sir Edward Radcliffe bore the bell,
 Who was, by the King's own appointment,
 To speak of spells and magic ointment.

The² Doctors of the Civil Law
 Urg'd never a reason worth a straw;
 And though they went in silk and sattin,
 They, Tompson-like³, clipp'd the King's Latin;
 But yet his Grace did pardon then
 All treasons against Priscian.

Here no man spake aught to the point,
 But all they said was out of joint;
 Just like that Chapel ominous
 In th' College called God-with-us⁴,
 Which truly doth stand much awry⁵,
 Just North and South; "yes, verily!"

Now listen, Masters, listen, that tax us of our riot,
 For here two men went to a hen, so slender was our diet;
 Yet leave it, Scholar, leave it, he yields himself your debtor,
 And next time he's Vice-chancellor your table shall be better.

¹ The Tollhooth at Cambridge is the University prison.

² "Three," MS. Sloan, 1775.

³ See before, p. 59.

⁴ Emanuel.

⁵ This was the fact; for the present Library was at that time the Chapel. In a paper inserted in Mr. Baker's collections, vol. VI. p. 85, which is dated 1603, and entitled *The Public Disorders, as touching Church Causes in Emanuel College, Cambridge*, the first article is this: "First, for a prognostication of disorder, whereas all the Chapels in the University are built with the chancel eastward, according to the uniform plan of all Christendom, the chancel in that College standeth North, and their kitchen eastward." In Heylin's *History of the Presbyterians*, this Chapel is affirmed to have been built North and South, in positive opposition to the general custom. For the same reason, the pulpit, which generally faced the West, that the people's faces in all acts of devotion might look towards the East according to the custom of the primitive times, was changed to the South. The present Chapel was erected when Archbishop Sancroft was Master, and has on it the date 1673.

Philosophers did well their parts,
Which proved them Masters of their Arts;
Their Moderator¹ was no fool,
He far from Cambridge kept a school;
The country did such store afford,
The Proctors might not speak a word.

But to conclude, the King was pleased,
And of the Court the Town was eased;
Yet, Oxford, though, dear Sister, hark yet,
The King is gone but to Newmarket,
And comes again ere it be long,
Then you make another Song.

The King being gone from Trinity,
They make a scramble for degree;
Masters of all sorts and all ages,
Keepers, subsizers², lackeys, pages,
Who all did throng to come abroad
With "Pray make me, now, good my Lord."

They prest his Lordship wond'rous hard,
His Lordship then did want the Guard;
So did they throng him for the nonce³,
Until he blessed them all at once,
And said, "Vos hodiissime
Omnes Magistri estote."

Then goes he to the Regent House, and there he sets and sees,
How lackeys and subsizers pressed and scrambled for degrees;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, 'twas much against their mind,
But when the prison-doors were ope what thief would stay behind?

Behold more anger yet! he threatens us ere long,
When as the King comes back again to make another Song;
But leave it, Scholar, leave it, your weakness you disclose,
Your Bonny Nell doth plainly tell your wit lies all for prose.

¹ Dr. Reade; of whom before, p. 58.

² The rank of subsizer seems to be the lowest of all University gradations; but it is only known in the University of Cambridge. In Mr. Baker's collections, vol. IV. is a list of "*Nomina pensionarum et subsizatorum, qui in Coll. Trin. sumptibus amicorum aut suis vivunt*;" and another "*omnium nunc studentium*" in St. John's College, in which the members are thus classed: "*Præfectus, Præses, [Socii,] pensionarii in convictu Sociorum, discipuli, pensionarii in convictu discip., sisatores, subsisatores.*" HAWKINS.

³ That is, upon purpose;—a phrase frequently used by Shakspeare, and still in provincial use. It is of doubtful derivation; see Todd's Johnson and Nares's Glossary.

Nor is this all which we do sing,
 For of our praise the world must ring;
 Reader, unto your tackling look,
 For there is coming forth a book¹,
 Will spoil Joseph Barnesius
 The sale of "Rex Platonius"².

Nor can you make the world of Cambridge praise to ring,
 Your mouth's so foul no market ear will stand to hear you sing;
 Then leave it, Scholar, leave it, for yet you could not say,
 The King did go from you in March and came again in May.

A COURTIER'S CENSURE OF THE KING'S INTERTAYNMENT AT BOTH
 THE UNIVERSITIES³.

Now Cambridge is a merry Towne, and Oxford is another;
 The Kinge was welcome to the one, and fared well at the other.
 And is not this strange, is not this strange?
 That both exceeded, neither needed fooles for fooles to change.
 So as I knowe not unto which the King is most a debter,
 Though Oxford made him passing cheere, yet Cambridge score is greater.
 And is not this strange? &c.

In gay array the Oxford Men receiv'd him man by man-a;
 And Cambridge spent in butter'd beere three pounds to singe Hosanna.
 And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford had good pleasinge songs, and some of them were wittie,
 And so had Cambridge, by my faith, an 'twere not for the dittie.
 And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford had good Comedies, but not such benefactours;
 For Cambridge Byshopps whiffers⁴ had, and Preachers for their actours.
 And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford cried, "God save the Kinge!" and "blesse him" too cried some;
 But Cambridge men more learnedly "Beholde the Kinge doth come!"
 And is not this strange? &c.

Cambridge is a wittie Towne, and Oxford is a wise;
 But neither's logicke could discerne spectatours from the spies.
 And is not this strange? &c.

¹ No such book, if any was intended, was ever published.

² Of which see vol. I. p. 546. Joseph Barnes was the Oxford Bookseller.

³ From Cole's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) vol. XX.; and an imperfect copy in Hawkins's *Ignoramus*, xxxvii.

⁴ A whiffler is a player on the flute; the musicians at the Comedies are here meant.

Oxford they a Christ-church had to entertayne the Kinge;
And Cambridge had a Trinitie, but scarce one wise therein.

And is not this strange? &c.

"Most Jacob-Charles," did Cambridge cry, "thou welcome art to us;"
An Oxford boy must have untruss'd if he had cried thus.

And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford her Vice-chancellour exceeded in a muffle;
But Cambridge in a rochett blewe, and for a fringed ruffe.

And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford her Vice-chancellour did take his usual place;
But Cambridge lay upon the stage at pawne for further grace¹.

And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford an Oration had which made the Commons weepe²;
Cambridge an wholsome Phisicke Act which brought the Kinge asleep.

And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford had King, Queene, and Prince, with all their noble Traynes;
Cambridge had the Kinge and Prince, but God knowes who the gaynes.

And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford her Vice-chancellour no intertaynment spar'd;
Nor Cambridge with a good fat hen for to bumbaste the Gard.

And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford comicke Actours had; Cambridge a lawyer foole,
Who Ignoramus christen'd was by men of her owne schoole.

And is not this strange? &c.

Oxford Acts *in toto* were well pleasinge unto some;
But Ignoramus pleased best the Kinge when it was done.

And is not this strange? &c.

Yet will his Grace renewe the same, and awake himselfe will keepe;
God grant they please him then no worse than when he was asleepe!
Or else it will be strange, or else it will be strange,
That he his rest for such poore jest of *Dull-man* should exchange.

But Oxford, as of wynter frute, of Cambridge sports may say,
They did but bud the 7th of March and blossom'd at midd-May.

And is not this strange, is not this strange?

How the one doth put the other downe to see the newe moone change.

Yet, howsoe'er, I thus conclude, as friend to either place,
Both to be fooles untill they leave each other to disgrace.

¹ See note ³ in p. 70.

² This allusion requires explanation.

We now arrive at the ebullitions of the offended Lawyers. The following short production¹ was so far noticed at the time, as to be alluded to in the Epilogue to Ignoramus on its second representation :

“ To the Comedians of Cambridge,—who in three acts before the King abused the Lawyers with an imposed Ignoramus, in two ridiculous persons, Ignoramus the Master, and Dulman the Clerk,—John a Stile, Student in the Common Law, wisheth a more reverent opinion of their betters :

“ Faith, Gentlemen, I do not blame your wit,
Nor yet commend, but rather pity it;
Ascribing this your error and offence
Not unto malice, but to ignorance;
Who know the world by map, and never dare,
If beyond Barkeway, ride at most past Ware²,
But madly spur-gall home unto your Schools,
And then become exceeding learned fools!”

In the Harleian MSS. no. 5191, is a poetical production, entitled, “*The Soldier's Counterbuffe to the Cambridge Interludians of Ignoramus.*” Though professed to be the composition of a military man, this markedly bears the gall of one of the most irritated Lawyers. Unlike Bishop Corbet's “Grave Poem,” it might, without any equivocation, take that title; and it is, altogether, too heavy and too long for insertion here.

Another poetical vindication of the legal profession was called, “*A modest and temperate Reproof of the Scholars of Cambridge for slandering Lawyers with that barbarous and gross title, Ignoramus.*” On this Mr. Hawkins remarks: “The only copy I ever saw is in my own possession, and the object of it is to refute the charge of ignorance and want of learning, by the production of instances, from among the profession of the Law, of men eminent for learning.”

Lastly, Fennor's “*Deciding of the Difference betwixt the two Universities,*” printed hereafter in pp. 157—160, should not be left unnamed.—So much for the

¹ From the Sloane MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 1775.

² In the Epilogue above mentioned, Ignoramus says: “*vester poverus Ignoramus est bootatus et spuratus (ut videtis) ire ad Londinum; sed sine protectione Regali non audet ire ultra Barkeway, aut Ware ad plus, ut eleganter quidam legalis poeta. Quare, serenissime Domine [addressing the King], supplico ut concedas per literas tuas patentis saluum conductum mihi et consortibus meis!*”

present on this subject; but of the Lawyers' animosity further notices will be found hereafter ¹.

On the 17th of March, the King knighted, at Newmarket, Sir William Lamp-ton; on the 19th, Sir Nicholas Foster; on the 21st, at Royston, Sir Thomas Gerrard; and on the 23d, at Theobalds, Sir Thomas White.

On the 24th, the Anniversary of the King's Accession, his Majesty witnessed at Whitehall a Tilt between the following Combatants:

"TYLTE DECIMO-TERTIO REGIS JACOBI, 1615 ¹.

THE DUKE OF LENOX.	THE EARLE OF ARUNDELL.
THE EARLE OF PEMBROOKE.	THE EARLE OF DORSETT.
THE EARLE OF MONTGOMERY.	THE LORD WALDEN.
THE LORD HAYES.	THE LORD DINGWELL.
SIR THOMAS SOMERSETT.	SIR THOMAS HOWARD.
MR. HENRY HOWARD.	SIR SIGISMOND ZINZAN.
SIR ROBERT RICHE.	MR. HENRY ZINZAN.

JUDGES.

THE LORD KNOLLES. SIR FOULKE GREVILL. SIR HENRY CARY ²."

On the 31st of March, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton as follows:

"The King came to Town this day se'nnight, to the solemnizing of his 24th of March, which passed off in the ordinary course of prayers, preaching, shooting of ordnance, ringing, and running at Tilt, which was but barely performed every way, the number not exceeding fourteen.

"He made no longer stay here than till Monday after dinner, for it seems the

¹ See p. 89.

² From the volume in Camden's autograph, Harl. MSS. 5176. Nine of these Tilters had appeared in that character on the same occasion the last year (see vol. II. p. 759); and all two years before (vide *ibid.* p. 609). See most of them also at the Tilt at the Earl of Somerset's marriage, *ibid.* p. 729.

³ Sir Henry Carey (afterward Viscount Falkland), who had been a Tilter at the Earl of Somerset's marriage, was also a Judge of the Tilt in 1615-16, 1618-19, and 1621-2 (see pp. 135, 473, 754).

air or business of this Town do not agree with his constitution. But his journey was no further than Hampton Court, Oking, or some places thereabouts; whence he returns upon Saturday.

"The King hath a meaning, and speaks much of it, to go again privately to Cambridge to see two of the Plays; and hath appointed the 27th of the next month. But it is not likely he will continue in that mind; for of late he hath made a motion to have the Actors come hither, which will be a difficult thing to persuade some of them, being Preachers and Bachelors of Divinity, to be comic players anywhere but in the University, which was incongruity enough, and whereby the Oxford Men took just exception. They have offered at two or three bald Ballads, which are such poor stuff, they be not worth the looking after. But I hear they have it better in a Freshman's Letter to his Mother, wherein he relates somewhat handsomely all that passed. If I can come by it, and that it be worth the sending, you shall hear of it!"

Free Gifts in the Twelfth Year of the King's Reign, 1614-15.

To the two Zinzans, alias Alexander ² - - - -	£.100	lands, goods escheated for refusing the oath of allegiance	£. 6000
Peter la Costa ³ - - - -	60	Sir Richard Wigmore ⁶ , out of the same lands and goods	- 1000
Salomon de Caux ⁴ - - - -	50	To the Lord Sheffielde ⁷ , for surrendering his estate in a pension of £.1000 by the year, formerly given unto him by his Majesty	- - 6370
Monsieur de Tournon - - - -	100	The Earl of Nottingham ⁸ , for surrendering his estate for	
The Earl of Suffolk, for surrendering his grant of the import of currants - - -	10000		
The Lord Viscount Hadington and the Lord Dingwel, out of Sir Henry James ⁵ his			

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173. Of the Freshman's Letter I have traced no copy, either among Mr. Chamberlain's letters, or elsewhere.

² See vol. II. pp. 287, 759.

³ Ibid. p. 289

⁴ Who this person was does not appear; but he had a "yearly pension" or salary of £.100 appointed him by Prince Henry in 1610.

⁵ Knighted July 23, 1603; see vol. I. p. 219. He was convicted in a *præmunire* in 1608, when the maner of New Langport in Lid, Kent, of which he had become possessed in the reign of Elizabeth, was forfeited to the Crown. See Hasted, vol. III. p. 511.

⁶ See vol. II. pp. 610, 760.

⁷ Ibid. p. 334.

⁸ Ibid. p. 331.

the granting of licenses to	£.	by Master Maxwell, as of his	£.
sell wine in taverns - - -	11072	Majesty's Free Gift - - -	1100
Franciscus Julius, Duke of Sax-		To Master John Dackombe ⁴ ,	
ony, of his Majesty's Free Gift	2000	of Free Gift - - -	140
The Lord Viscount Hadington,		Sir Edward Cecil ⁵ - - -	500
out of the arrearages now		John Murray ⁶ - - -	150
paid in by Recusants - - -	2000	Sir James Sandilands ⁷ and	
The Earl Howme ¹ - - -	660	Patrick Abercromby ⁸ - - -	100
Ellen Felton - - -	300	Andrew Boide ⁹ , out of bounty	500
John Barkley ¹ - - -	333	Sir William Steward ¹⁰ , out of	
Alexander Mongrief ² - - -	660	bounty - - -	1500
The two Zinzans alias Alex-		Sir John Graham ¹¹ , out of	
ander - - -	1000	bounty - - -	1500
David Ramsey - - -	1000	Sir William Constable ¹² , out	
John Sandilands ³ - - -	600	of bounty - - -	500
Francis and John Bonham - -	300	John Murray - - -	1000
Sent unto the Lady Elizabeth		The total sum -	<u>£.50,595</u>

Whilst the King was at Oking, about this time ¹³, he there knighted Sir

¹ See vol. II. p. 247.

² Two of this name were Falconers to the King; Thomas received 2s. *per diem*, and £.13. 13s. 9d. *ob. per annum* for his livery, total £.50. 3s. 9d. *ob.*; and George a yearly fee of £.91. 5s.

³ John Sandilands was appointed in 1610 one of the Grooms of Prince Henry's Bed-chamber, with £.13. 6s. 8d. board-wages and livery; in October 1612 his salary was fixed at £.140. Mr. Lorkin, in a letter to Sir Thomas Puckering, July 22, 1612, speaking of the late Prince's servants, says: "Sandilands hath been offered a place of Equerryship to the Prince [Charles], and, as is said, refuseth it. But he may wait longer and succeed worse."

⁴ See before, in this volume, p. 22.

⁵ See vol. II. p. 441.

⁶ Of John Murray, of the King's Bed-chamber, and afterwards Earl of Annandale, see vol. I. p. 599; vol. II. p. 123; of John Murray, "the Queen's Servant," *ibid.* p. 440. Both received Free Gifts, and may have been one and the same person.—Another John Murrey was the King's Master Cook; see vol. I. p. 597.

⁷ Of whom see vol. I. p. 604; vol. II. pp. 123, 124.

⁸ See vol. II. p. 725.

⁹ Mentioned in the same page, as "Sergeant Boyde," another of "the high Dancers."

¹⁰ See vol. II. pp. 343, 704.

¹¹ *Ibid.* p. 440.

¹² See vol. II. p. 760.

¹³ On the 3d of March, says Philipott; on the 24th of April, says my MS. list; but neither of these dates appear to be correct.

Robert Vernon, "the Avener¹;" and during the month of April knighthood was also conferred on Sir Fulke Greville² and Sir Edward Banester.

On the fourth of April, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Queen continues crazed³, and in physic; not without danger, if it be not prevented, to fall into a dropsy. The Prince hath not been very well these two or three days; but it is rather thought to be some light surfeit than a disease of consequence⁴."

On the ninth, being Easter Sunday, Bishop Andrews, as usual, preached before the King at Whitehall; his text was John, ii. 19⁵.

On Saint George's-day, the 23d of April, Thomas Viscount Fenton⁶ and William Baron Knollys⁷ were admitted into the Order of the Garter⁸. On this occasion, Sir John Finett relates, "the King of Spain's Ambassador, Don Diego Sarmiento, discovered to the Master of the Ceremonies, Sir Lewis Lewkner, a desire he had to see the order of that Feast of the Garter; wherewith the King being made acquainted, his Majesty returned an assurance of welcome. He was placed for sight of the procession as it should passe by, upon the terras in the window there, about the middle of the brick-wall that divides the First-court and the Cloyster-court, and thence had his prospect upon his Majesty and their Knights on their passage; who being returned to the Chappell, he repaired thither through the Guard-chamber, and had his place for sight of Divine Service and Offering in the King's-closet. After retyring to the Councell-chamber, he had his dinner provided at his Majestie's charge in the Lord Chamberlain's lodgings thereby; and conducted thence in the time of his Majestie's dinner to the Banquetting-house, he stood at his right-hand, intertaining discourse with him all the latter part of his Majestie's dinner⁹."

¹ The Avener was an Officer of the Stable, the word being derived from the old French *avayner*.

² Nephew of Sir Fulke Greville, K. B. afterwards first Lord Brooke; being the third son of Sir Edward Greville, Sir Fulke's youngest brother, who was knighted at Theobalds, May 7, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 111), and of whom see Brydges's Peerage, vol. IV. p. 342. The present Sir Fulke was one of the Band of Gentleman Pensioners.

³ i. e. sick; of the use of the word in that sense see before, vol. II. p. 759.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁵ This Discourse is among the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the tenth on the Resurrection.

⁶ Of whom see vol. I. p. 270: vol. II. p. 440.

⁷ See vol. I. p. 560: vol. II. p. 629.

⁸ Camden's Annals.—Of the installation of these Noblemen see hereafter, p. 91.

⁹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 25.

On the 23d, the new Favourite, George Villiers, was sworn a Gentleman of the King's Bed-chamber, "with an annual pension," as Sir Henry Wotton says, "of £.1000 payable from the Court of Wards." On the following day, he received the honour of knighthood at the Queen's Palace, Somerset House.

Of these events we have the following authentic particulars from the pen of Archbishop Abbot¹:

"I repute it not amiss to observe a few words of the Duke of Buckingham, as he was in his rising. I say nothing of his being in France, because I was not present, and divers others there be that remember it well; but I take him at his first repair to Court². King James, for many insolencies, grew weary of Somerset; and the Kingdom groaning under the triumvirate of Northampton, Suffolk, and Somerset (though Northampton soon after died), was glad to be rid of him. We could have no way so good to effectuate that which was the common desire as to bring in another in his room, one nail (as the proverb is) being to be driven out by another. It was now observed, that the King began to cast his eye upon George Villiers, who was then Cup-bearer, and seemed a modest and courteous youth. But King James had a fashion, that he would never admit any to nearness about himself but such an one as the Queen should commend unto him, and make some suit on his behalf; that if the Queen afterwards, being ill-treated, should complain of this dear one, he might make his answer, 'It is long of yourself³, for you were the party that commended him unto me⁴.' Our old Master took delight in things of this nature.

"That noble Queen (who now resteth in Heaven) knew her Husband well; and, having been bitten with Favorites both in England and Scotland, was very shie to adventure upon this request. King James, in the mean time, more and more loathed Somerset, and did not much conceal it that his affection increased towards the other; but the Queen would not come to it, albeit divers Lords,

¹ From the Narrative which the Archbishop wrote in his defence, when, through the interference of this same Favourite, he was sequestered from his See in 1627, for refusing to licence Dr. Sibthorp's Sermon entitled "Apostolical Obedience." This Narrative is printed in the first volume of Rushworth's Collections.

² On this point see before, p. 19.

³ An expression used by the Poet Gower; see Todd's Johnson.

⁴ The historian Hume justly remarks, that "James was ashamed of his sudden attachment." His Majesty was probably aware how much his partiality to Favourites subjected him to public animadversion; and he evidently endeavoured to raise Villiers as quietly as possible. We have seen in p. 25, that Villiers's promotion to the Bed-chamber was an event expected more than five months before the present date.

(whereof some are dead, and some yet living) did earnestly solicit her Majesty thereunto. When it would not do, I was very much moved to put to my helping hand, they knowing that Queen Anne was graciously pleased to give me more credit than ordinary, which all her attendants knew she continued till the time of her death. I laboured much, but could not prevail; the Queen oft saying to me: ‘My Lord, you and the rest of your friends know not what you do. I know your Master better than you all; for if this young man be once brought in, the first persons that he will plague must be you that labour for him; yea, I shall have my part also. The King will teach him to despise and hardly intreat us all, that he may seem to be beholden to none but himself.’ Noble Queen! how like a prophetess or oracle did you speak!

“Notwithstanding this, we were still instant, telling her Majesty, that the change would be for the better. For George was of a good nature, which the other was not; and if he should degenerate, yet it would be a long time before he were able to attain to that height of evil, which the other had. In the end, upon importunity, Queen Anne condescended, and so pressed it with the King, that he assented; which was so stricken while the iron was hot, that in the Queen’s Bed-chamber, the King knighted him with the rapier which the Prince did wear. And when the King gave order to swear him of the Bed-chamber, Somerset importuned the King with a message, that he might be only sworn a Groom. But myself and others that were at the door, sent to her Majesty that she would perfect her work, and cause him to be sworn a Gentleman of the Chamber. There is a Lord or two living that had a hand in this atchievement¹. I diminish nothing of their praise for so happy a work; but I know my own part best; and, in the word of an honest man, I have reported nothing but truth. George went in with the King; but no sooner he got loose but he came forth unto me into the Privy-gallery, and there embraced me. He professed that he was so infinitely bound unto me, that all his life long he must honour me as his father; and now he did beseech me, that I would give him some lessons how he should carry himself. When he earnestly followed this chace, I said I would give him three short lessons, if he would learn them. The first was, that daily upon his knees he should pray to God to bless the King his Master, and to give him (George) grace, studiously to serve and please him. The second was, that he

¹ Sir Henry Wotton confirms this passage thus: “Somerset moved that he might be only sworn a Groom; but those whose aim it was to lessen Somerset, sticking to him, he was sworn a Gentleman.”

should do all good offices between the King and the Queen, and between the King and the Prince. The third was, that he should fill his Master's ears with nothing but truth. I made him repeat these three things unto me, and then I would have him to acquaint the King with them, and so tell me, when I met him again, what the King said unto him. He promised me he would; and the morrow after, Mr. Tho. Murrey, the Prince's Tutor, and I standing together in the Gallery at Whitehall, Sir George Villiers coming forth, and drawing to us, he told Mr. Murrey how much he was beholden unto me, and that I had given him certain instructions, which I prayed him to rehearse, as indifferently well he did before us; yea, and that he had made the King acquainted with them, who said, they were instructions worthy of an Archbishop to give to a young man. His countenance of thankfulness for a few days continued, but not long, either to me or any others his well-wishers. The Roman Historian Tacitus hath somewhere a note, that benefits, while they may be requited, seem courtesies; but when they are so high that they cannot be repaid, they prove matters of hatred¹."

On the 25th of April, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Thomas Lampough; Sir John Offley; and, at the same place, or at Newmarket, Sir Samuel Tryon², of London.

We now arrive at the period of the Second Royal Visit to Cambridge, which may be appropriately introduced in the words of Mr. Hawkins:

"The delight which the Comedy of Ignoramus had afforded the King was so great, that the month of March, in which it was acted, was not elapsed before he began to wish for a repetition of it. For this purpose, and to save himself the trouble of a journey to them, he endeavoured to prevail on the performers in it

¹ Mr. Lodge, who, in his *Illustrious Portraits*, has not done justice to the conscientious integrity and inflexible rectitude of Archbishop Abbot, stigmatizes this transaction as "in no small degree disgraceful to all the parties concerned in it." From this opinion I beg to dissent; and think, on the contrary, that the illustrious Prelate in question has in this defence fully justified his conduct. If he had suspicion of Somerset's guilt, or if he had formed a discriminating estimate of that man's character, surely to contribute in exposing that character, and punishing that guilt, was to perform a service both to his country and to justice. The only mode of effecting the desirable object, the King's temper being considered, was that which he adopted,—the introduction of a new Favourite.

² Son of Peter Tryon, an opulent Netherlander, who quitted his native country on account of the troubles raised in it by the Duke of Alva, and settled in England. Sir Samuel was created a Baronet March 28, 1620 (see under that date). He purchased several estates in Essex; built Boys Hall in the parish of Halsted; and dying March 8, 1626, aged 46, was buried in that Church. See Collins's *Baronetage*, 1720, vol. II. p. 138.

to come to London, and act there¹; but, failing in this attempt, he resolved on a second visit to Cambridge.

"That the Members of the University had an early information of his design, is certain; as also that they availed themselves of the intelligence, by preparing to receive him. The use Mr. Ruggle appears to have made of it was, to write a new Prologue to be spoken on this occasion, and which has usually, in the printed editions, accompanied the Comedy itself, under the title of '*Prologus posterior, ad secundum Regis adventum habitus.*'"

"At first the King had appointed the 27th of April for his journey, but he did not actually arrive at Cambridge till the 13th of May; and on that day the Comedy of Ignoramus was again performed before him, with the addition of such passages as had been inserted in it by its author subsequent to the first representation."

The following account of the King's Second Visit is from a paper in the hand-writing of Mr. James Tabor, the then Registrar to the University²:

"15 Maii 1615. Three weeks before the day early notice was given, both to the Deputy Vice-chancellor and the Actors of the Comedy called Ignoramus, that his Majesty, at his going up to London from Thetford and Newmarket, where he had sported, was fully resolved to hear the said Comedy acted again; whereupon the Actors were suddenly called together, and they made speedy preparation, as well for the altering and adding something to the plot³.

"In the interim, whilst this was prepared, certain Jesuits or Priests, being to be conveyed from London to Wisbich Castle, were not suffered to come through Cambridge, but by the Sheriff carried over the back side of the Town to Cambridge Castle, where they lodged one night; which the Vice-chancellor did carefully and wisely, to prevent the dangers which might have ensued if the younger sort of Students had seen them, and so by their own allurements, or persuasion of some of their adherents, drawn them to a private conference either there or at

¹ See before, p. 77.

² Communicated to Mr. Hawkins when editing Ignoramus, by the Rev. Mr. Borlase, of Peterhouse, Cambridge, a successor of Mr. Tabor in the office of Registrar; by whom he was likewise informed, that no account of the King's first Visit in March 1614-15, is to be found in the books or papers in his custody.

³ "Finding his endeavours had been attended with so great success, and conceiving his materials not yet exhausted, Mr. Ruggle, on the King's departure from Cambridge, set himself to revise his Comedy, and in the course of this revision made, as we are informed, considerable additions to it; but the particular passages it is impossible to discriminate." HAWKINS.

Wisbich; which also to prevent, the Vice-chancellor attended their coming into the Castle, and then sent back all such young Students as he saw there. This they perceiving, offered a Disputation to the Vice-chancellor upon three Questions, which were [the contradictions of] these¹:

[“ 1. Protestantium Ecclesia est vera Christi Ecclesia².

“ 2. Non datur Judex externus infallibilis in rebus Fidei.

“ 3. Fides non potest existere sine Charitate, sine quâ tamen est causa adæquata justificationis.

“ Contradictorias harum quæstionum proposuerunt Jesuitæ quidam; qui nuper ad Castrum Wisbicense destinati, et per Magd' Coll' confinia transeuntes, eas (chartulis inscriptas) in ulteriorem ejusd' Coll' aream projiciebant, et disputationem efflagitabant.”]

“ The Vice-chancellor told them, ‘he knew they were to make no abode there; neither had he power from his Majesty to give leave for a Disputation, which might give them occasion of stay, and cause a meeting of the Students;’ and so left them. Whereupon the Papists gloried as in the victory, ‘that they offered to dispute, and the Vice-chancellor did refuse it;’ and, that this might be the better known, they writ divers copies of the Questions, and fastened them to boughs; and the next morning, as they went to take boat for Wisbich, they threw them over Magdalen College walls, which were brought to the Vice-chancellor; whereupon the Vice-chancellor certified the King what they had done; so the King, about eight days before his coming, notified to the Vice-chancellor, that, at his coming to Cambridge, he would have a Disputation there of those Questions. Then the Vice-chancellor chose young men of the University to fit the Disputation; which were:

Mr. Roberts, Trinitatis, to answer³;

¹ A blank being here left in the original for these Questions, they are inserted from another authority.

² This Question is thus put in Baker's Coll. vol. XI. (Harl. MSS. 7038), p. 33: “ Romana Ecclesia non est vera Ecclesia.”

³ Whose Christian name was William, as appears by the MS. last quoted, and who, though now a Member of Trinity, was probably the same as Dr. William Roberts, who was successively Fellow of Queen's College; Prebendary of Ketton in Lincoln Cathedral 1628; Sub-dean of Wells; and Bishop of Bangor 1637: and who died at his Rectory of Landyrnoc, near Denbigh, Aug. 12, 1665, aged 80. See further of him in Willis's Bangor, 8vo, 1721, p. 113.

Mr. Bidglande, Reginalis, }
 Mr. Cumbar¹, Trinitatis, } to reply ;
 Mr. Chappel², Xti, }
 and Mr. Cecil³, Johannis, to moderate this Act.

¹ Thomas Comber, D. D. was born in Sussex, Jan. 1, 1575 ; admitted scholar of Trinity College in 1593 ; Fellow in 1597 ; and Master in 1631. He was in 1630 presented to the Deanery of Carlisle. Though ejected from his Mastership by the puritans, he died at Cambridge, Feb. 28, 1653, and was buried, says Willis, in St. Botolph's Church, without any memorial but what is in the Parish Register. Richard Boreman, B. D. a Fellow of Trinity (of whose Works see Wood's Ath. by Bliss, vol. III. col. 485) soon after published : "The Triumph of Faith over Death ; comprised in a Panegyrick and Sermon at the Funeral of Dr. Combar. Lond. 1654," 4to. There is also a Latin Poem to his memory in Duport's *Musæ Subsecivæ*.—A cousin of the same names, likewise a Cambridge man, and a Dean, was a distinguished Theological Writer, and has a large niche in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

² Of Dr. William Chappel, afterwards Bishop of Cork, Cloyne, and Ross, there is an ample Memoir in the Biographical Dictionary. Mr. Chalmers does not, however, notice that he was the College Tutor of the immortal Milton. "No one Tutor in our memory," says Dr. Fuller, "bred more and better Pupils, so exact his care in their education." He was for 27 years Fellow of Christ's College ; became Dean of Cashel in 1633 ; Provost of Trinity College, Dublin, in 1634 ; and Bishop of Cork, Cloyne, and Ross in 1638. Being cruelly persecuted by the Puritans, he retired to Derby, where he died May 14, 1649, aged 67 ; and was two days after buried at Bildesthorpe, Notts. of which Church his friend, Gilbert Benet, was Rector. A monument was erected there to his memory, at the expence (says Mr. Masters in his History of Benet College) of Archbishop Sterne ; see the inscription in Thoroton's Nottinghamshire. To Bishop Chappel has been ascribed "The whole Duty of Man ;" see the Biog. Dict.—Of his abilities in disputation we have testimonies on all sides. Fuller in his "Worthies" says : "He was a most subtile disputant, equally excellent with the sword and the shield, to reply or answer." Lloyd in his "Memoirs" attests him to have been "so good a disputant, as to be able to maintain anything, but so honest a man, that he was willing to maintain only, as he would call them, sober truths." Edward Borlase, in his "Reduction of Ireland," 1675, 8vo, relates the following anecdote, which, though perhaps unworthy of credit, certainly demands consideration in this place : "Our Provost Chappel was a close Ramist, and a notable disputant. He was once, riding to Cork, overtook by Sir William St. Leger, President of Munster, who had in his company the pseudo Dean of Cork, with whom the President would needs have had Chappel to have disputed. But, as [on the one hand] he was not forward, so [on the other] he would not deny the entertainment : which the pseudo Dean refused, for that the said Chappel had been accustomed to kill his Respondent ;—that he spake of an accident long before, happening at a Commencement in Cambridge, solemnized in the presence of King James, where Dr. Roberts, of Trinity College, being Respondent in St. Mary's, this Mr. Chappel opposed him so close and subtilely, that the Doctor, not being able to unloose the arguments, fell into a swoounding in the pulpit ; so as the King, to hold up the Commencement, undertook to maintain the thesis. Which Mr. Chappel by his syllogisms pressed so home, *ut Rex palam gratias ageret Deo, quod opponens ei fuisset subditus non alteri [Monarchæ] ;*

"Upon Saturday the 13th of May, news was brought that his Majesty would be at Cambridge that night, and that in the way he meant to hunt a buck; so at two of the clock the School-bell and St. Mary's-bells rung to call the University together. The Vice-chancellor set the Scholars towards Spital-end; they reached to the Armitage St. Ann¹; and above them up the Town to Trinity College the Bachelors of Arts; then the Gentleman-fellow Commoners; then the Senior Regents and Non-regents; then the Doctors, who stood in Trinity College-gate-house. His Majesty came from Thetford, whither the buck led him, and where awhile he had rested himself, and so came about four of the clock; the Scholars all saluted him with 'Vivat Rex!' Mr. Mayor and his Fraternity stood on the hill by the Spital-house, where Mr. Mayor, without either state or reverence, when his Majesty came right against the place where he stood, stepped to his coach-side, and then kneeled down, and delivered his Majesty a fair pair of perfumed gloves with gold laces, and the Prince another; telling his Majesty their Corporation was poor, and not able to bestow any matter of value upon his Majesty, and therefore invited him to accept of those; which his Majesty took, and gave him his hand to kiss; and so he took his horse, and rode before the King's Mace-bearer, with his mace over his shoulder, and the rest of his company leaving him, or lacking² by him, which needed not, for he had his two footmen, tired in watchet saye, with work-velvet jackets, and the arms that the red-coats wore at the fairs sewed to them. His Majesty made no stay till he came at Trinity College-walk, where he and the Prince and his Nobility alighted their coach; and being within Trinity College, against the first rails, Dr. Gwynne³, Deputy

aliàs potuisset in suspitionem duci, ne perinde trono suo atque cathedrâ submoveri debuisset!" This makes a good story; but some allowance must be made for exaggeration. That Dr. Roberts should have fainted as well as Mr. Cecil (see p. 88), is very improbable; besides, if such had been the case, Mr. Labor would not have failed to have noticed it. Mr. Cecil's indisposition may, indeed, have been the foundation of the whole.

² Of whom before, in p. 49.

¹ Qu. Hermitage?

² i. e. lackeying by him, attending him as lackeys.

³ Owen Gwynne, D. D. had been elected Master of St. John's College in 1612; he now supplied the place of Bishop Harsnet as Vice-chancellor, and soon after succeeded him in that office. Mr. Baker, in his MS. Collections, vol. I. p. 239, speaking of the King's Visits to Cambridge, says: "Dr. Harsnet, Master of Pembroke, and Bishop of Chichester, was then Vice-chancellor, who received all the marks of his Majesty's bounty and favours. That any great notice was taken of Dr. Gwynne, I have not read; but he made his court so well to the Vice-chancellor, that he was employed by him in his absence, wherein he acquitted himself to that advantage, that he was chosen Vice-chancellor the year after." Dr. Gwynne succeeded Dr. Laud as Archdeacon of Huntingdon and Prebendary of

Vice-chancellor, made an Oration to him, giving him thanks for his love to them, that he was pleased again so suddenly to come to them again, and highly extolling his Majesty and his virtues. The Vice-chancellor and Heads kneeled whilst this Speech was delivering, and the King stood, and Prince and Nobility by him; and then, the Speech ended, his Majesty went towards his lodge; and then, about the middle alley, the Orator made another Oration; which ended, the King and Prince and Nobility went to their lodgings. Then the Vice-chancellor took order for the placing of the University and strangers, not Actors, at the lower end of the stage; the Doctors, in a place next the stage; the Regents and Non-regents, in gowns, in the body of the Hall; other strangers, according to their qualities, upon the scaffolds; the upper end of the Hall, beyond the stage, was wholly reserved for the King and Prince's followers, and for the Courtiers. About eight of the clock the Play began, and ended about one; his Majesty was much delighted with the Play, and laughed exceedingly; and oftentimes with his hands and by words applauded it.

On Sunday, May 14, at nine of the clock, there was a Sermon in St. Mary's; at half an hour past ten the King went to Trinity Chapel, where he heard prayers and an anthem, and then a Clero [*Concio ad Clerum*] in Trinity, made by Mr. Simpson¹, of Trinity, which was an hour and half long, which seemed too tedious to his Majesty; and therefore he shewed some distaste, not of the Clero, for it was well and learnedly performed, but that the Preacher had no care to prevent tediousness, he being wearied over night. The Clero ended, there was another anthem sung and prayers, and then his Majesty went to dinner; at three a Sermon in St. Mary's², before divers of the Nobility. After dinner, about four of the clock,

Buckden in 1622, and dying in June 1633, was buried, says Willis, in his College Chapel, without any monument.

¹ Edward Simpson, D. D. son of a Rector of Tottenham of the same names, was born there in 1578, educated under Camden at Westminster School, elected to Trinity College in 1596, and admitted Fellow in 1601. He was domestic chaplain to Sir Moyle Finch; incumbent of a church in Cambridge; Rector of Eastling, Kent; and Prebendary of Corringham in Lincoln Cathedral. He died in 1651, aged 73. He was the author of "*Cronicon Catholicon ab exordio mundi*," and other learned works, for which, and further particulars of his life, see Chalmers's Biog. Dict. Two portraits of Mr. Simpson, prefixed to two editions of the *Chronicon*, are noticed by Granger.

² By Mr. Fletcher, of Trinity, as appears by a side-note in the MS. Another informs us that the Earl of Rutland was this day Swordbearer.

his Majesty went to Mr. Butler ¹, with his Nobles; the Sheriff Aldered, of Foulmere ² was very officious, and took upon him his office before his Majesty, which discontenting the University, the Vice-chancellor, upon notice given him, informed my Lord Chamberlain, who, from his Majesty, discharged Aldered, and told him it was his Majesty's pleasure he should not carry himself then as a Sheriff, for he had no power or authority in the University; and so he slunk aside, and took his place behind, and so whilst his Majesty was with Butler, where he stayed near an hour. After that his Majesty went to supper.

"On Monday, May 15, there was a Congregation at seven, where good order and decorum was observed, and these orderly admitted:

[*Here follows in the original a considerable blank, for the names of the persons who took Degrees.*]

"Then about ten the Vice-chancellor and whole Senate of Doctors, Regents, and Non-regents, and those of the Nobility in order, attended the Vice-chancellor to Trinity College; the Regents first, two and two, in state to Trinity Chapel, where they seated themselves, and thither came the King and Prince, and heard the Act, which was learnedly performed ³. At the end, Mr. Cecill, the Moderator, began to destroy their pleasure; he fainted the night before, and that morning, being sickly, fainted, and was carried out dead; but after a quarter of hour recovered again. The Act ended, the King went to dinner; and so, after he had made known how he was contented, suddenly departed.

"The Mayor, when he came into Trinity College, was put before the Beadles, and the Vice-chancellor went next after them, and so next before the King; and when the Mayor went out, he went without Serjeant or show of his mace."

The following Lines, which Mr. Hawkins supposed to have been spoken at the second representation of Ignoramus as a kind of introductory Prologue, describe many circumstances of the King's present Visit:

¹ The celebrated Physician, of whom before, pp. 25, 59.

² Edward Aldred, Esq. of Fulmere near Royston, was this year Sheriff of Cambridge and Huntingdonshires. The same active Gentleman, says Lysons, procured from James I. a new Charter for a market at Fulmere; but it soon declined, and was of short continuance.

³ Against this line in the original is the following memorandum: "Sword-bearer this day to and from the act, Lord Walden."

DE REPETITA CANTABRIGIA :
SIVE, DE ADVENTU REGIS AD MUSAS SECUNDO LIBER LICENTIATUS.

DAVUS DROMO in Laudem Autoris.
Vides ingenium mirè profundum,
Adventum pariens Regis secundum.

Venisti, Cantabrigia,
Ad gloriæ fastigia !
Jam jube sileat tuum propellum ;
Haud magnificum suum Sacellum,
Sed cantent Regem Martio hinc
 profectum,
Et Maio mense denuo revectum.

Venit Rex, non sicut ante
Magnâ turbâ comitante,
Sine pompâ nunc intrabat,
Rarus eques pererrabat ;
Non deerant tamen Nobiles,
Nobiliumque magna soboles,
Nec viri robusti et fortes,
Pretorianæ cohortes.
Locum Episcopi Cicesteriensis,
Procancellarii Cantabrigiensis,
Malo fato tunc absentis,
Alter ¹ forte tum supplebat,
Qui vices ejus bene gerebat ;
Fecit namque congregari,
Et in uno loco stare,
Scholasticorum totum gregem,
Ad videndum nostrum Regem.

Stabant primo loco gentes
Quos vulg. pop. vocat Recentes² ;

Illos subsequuntur isti
Qui vocantur hîc Sophistæ ;
Et post illos alter status,
Ordo Baccalaureatus ;
Proximas tenebant partes
Hi qui sciunt omnes Artes ;
Ubi illi desinebant,
Non-regentes apparebant,
Pone, (gentium dii majorum !)
Turba gravis stat Doctorum :
Hi, repente tum perlato
Regem adesse signo dato,
Academicorum more,
Clamant omnes uno ore :
' Jubes te salvere, Rex,
Scholasticorum totus grex ;
Salutat te, Britannia Pater,
Academiae Alma Mater !'
Hisce verbis compellatus,
Ad Collegium Trinitatis,
Suum hospitium, est delatus.

Hic cùm paulum requieverat,
Famemque cibo expleverat,
Occurrit ei Ignoramus,
Fabula quam nunc actitamus ;
Quam si nos facimus malam agendo,
Hanc, Rex, tu facis bonam videndo.

On the 20th of May, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton :

" On Saturday last the King went again to Cambridge, to see the Play Ignoramus, which hath so nettled the Lawyers, that they are almost out of all patience³,

¹ Dr. Gwynne, see p. 86.

² i. e. Freshmen.

³ "Nothing," observes Rapin, "could be more diverting to the King. The Civil Law, or the Laws made by the supreme authority of the Roman Emperors, appeared to him of much greater value

and the Lord Chief Justice, both openly at the King's Bench, and in divers other places, hath galled and glanced at Scholars with much bitterness¹; and there be divers Inn-of-Court Men have made rhymes and ballads against them², which

than the Common or Statute Laws; and he could not forbear now and then to speak of these last with contempt." The Civil Law was more suitable to his notions of Regal Authority, and to his love of subtle disputation. In 1609, when engaged on the question of "Prohibitions" (see vol. II. p. 210), James quarrelled with Coke, and openly avowed these sentiments. The wisdom of Cecil steered him out of the difficulty; but soon after he expressed them still more fully to the Parliament, as is related by Arthur Wilson. As early as 1603, the Author of "Advertisements of a loyal Subject to his gracious Sovereign, drawn from Observations of the People's Speeches" (printed in Somers's Tracts, vol. II. p. 144), thus addressed him: "It is said that your Majestie purposeth to alter the manner of Government, and that fault was found with the Common Lawe and Customes of England, and especiallie our Trials by oath of Twelve men, which is without doubt the beste and equalest course, and in itselfe leste capable of corruption. Every alteration, even in a privat familie, much more in Kingdomes, breedeth hurts. Doubtles there be abuses even in the Courts at Westminster, and chiefly in the arbitrarie Courts; but yet hade your Majestie but once purified a feawe of the cheifest officers, howe suddenlie would your Majestie with one experience, give the highest allowance to our Common Lawes and Statutes, which bee ever filled with the occurrents and natures of the People of this Kingdome."

¹ Sir Edward Coke has been supposed to be particularly alluded to in some passages of Ignoramus. This would not be offensive to the King. Sir Edward repeatedly incurred the Royal displeasure. An instance has been referred to in the last note, and many are mentioned by Wilson. In one of his Parliamentary Speeches he termed the King's prerogative "a great overgrown monster;" and while he presided in the King's Bench, he even had the boldness to insinuate that the Common Law of England was in imminent danger of being perverted.

² Several performances of this description have been noticed in p. 75. The wrath of the legal profession did not, however, entirely evaporate in empty song. "The lapse of two years," remarks Mr. Hawkins, "was not sufficient to eradicate the remembrance of the supposed injury; and one of their body, at that distance of time, thought proper, in the course of his profession, to notice with a proportional degree of asperity both the Comedy and the University." This person was Robert Callis, of Gray's Inn, Esq. who, when Lent Reader at Staple Inn, in 1617, stated a supposititious Law Case, in order to determine in which of six persons the right existed of presentation to a Church; and in the argument introduced Sir Ignoramus, a Clerk, presented to it by the University of Cambridge, who was described as being "egregiè illiteratus." This was published in 1648 as a quarto pamphlet, intituled, "The Case and Argument against Sir Ignoramus of Cambridge, by Robert Callis, of Gray's Inn, Esquire, afterward Serjeant-at-Law, in his reading at Staple Inn, in Lent 14 Ja. R." In the "Intentio nominum et interpretatio eorum," prefixed to this Case, is this paragraph: "5. Sir Ignoramus, intended for the University Catacoustichon, a general noted coxcomb, a resemblance of the actor which they bestowed on the Inns of Court, Ignoramus." And at p. 22 the Author says: "I now proceed to the title of the University of Cambridge, and of their inglorious Clerk, Sir Ignoramus; which is the fifth point of my Case. No Inn-of-Court or Chancery man need wonder wherefore I styled the University's Clerk by the name of Sir Ignoramus; for

they have answered sharply enough, and, to say truth, it was a scandal rather taken than given; for what profession is there, wherein some particular persons may not be justly taxed without imputation to the whole? But it is the old saying, *consciūs ipse sibi*; and they are too partial to think themselves so *sacro-sancti*, that they may not be touched.

“The King had a Latin Sermon on Sunday, and Disputations on Monday, before his coming away.

“On Monday our new Knights of the Garter, Lord Fenton and Lord Knollys¹, ride to Windsor with great preparation to revy² one upon another who shall make the best shew; and though I am of opinion that the latter will carry it by many degrees, by reason of the alliance with the House of the Howards, Somerset, Salisbury, and Dorset³, with many other great families that will bring him their friends, and most part of the Pensioners, yet most are persuaded, that the other will bear away the bell, as having the best part of the Court, all the Bed-chamber, all the Prince’s Servants and Followers, with an hundred of the Guard, that have new rich coats made on purpose, besides Sir George Villiers, the Favourite, and Mr. Secretary, whose presence had been better foreborne in my judgment, for many reasons,—but that every man abounds in his own sense⁴.”

On the 26th of May, the King knighted, at Greenwich, Sir Richard Carrell.

On the 27th, Thomas Blakiston, Esquire, of Blackiston, in the county of Durham⁵, was created a Baronet.

On Whitsunday, the 28th, Bishop Andrews preached before the King at Greenwich, on Luke, iii. 21, 22⁶.

it is to be conceived, that he had commenced Bachelor of Art in ignorance, and the late skirmish he had with Ignoramus of the Inns of Court, being both of one blood and kindred, may put us all in perfect remembrance of him!”

¹ See p. 79.

² *i. e.* re-vie, or vie in turn.

³ Lady Knollys (on whom see vol. II. p. 629) was daughter of Thomas Howard, Earl of Suffolk; sister to the Countess of Salisbury; and first cousin to the Earl of Dorset (whose mother was the Earl of Suffolk’s own sister).

⁴ Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁵ Son of Sir William Blakiston, knighted at Whitehall, July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 216). Sir Thomas was knighted a fortnight after his elevation to the Baronetcy, on the 10th of June. He had married Mary, daughter of Sir Henry Constable, of Burton Constable, Bart.; sister of Henry Viscount Dunbar.—Sir William’s title expired with him. See the pedigree of this wide-spreading family in Surtees’s Durham, vol. III. p. 163.

⁶ The Bishop’s Discourse is among his “XCVI Sermons,” the Eighth on the Sending of the Holy Ghost.

At Theobalds, on the second of June, were knighted Sir Roger Manners¹, and Sir Richard Newport; and on the 3d, Sir John Ashfield.

On the 10th, Sir Robert Dormer, of Wing in the county of Buckingham², Knight, was created a Baronet, preparatory to his purchasing a Peerage, with which he was invested on the 30th of this month.

At Greenwich, on the 10th, was knighted Sir Thomas Blackiston, Baronet; and, on the 13th, Sir Thomas Cave, of Northamptonshire³.

On the 15th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton, respecting the King's Ways and Means:

"The project of Pardons was set on foot again, but finally defeated the last week; as likewise Sylvanus Scory's device for enlarging the privileges of Baronets, — to be no wards, to be Justices of the Peace at twenty-one years of age, Deputy Lieutenants at twenty-five, that their bodies should be free from arrest, with divers other immunities, for which their rate should rise to £.3000 a man; whereby the King's want might be much relieved out of the vanity and ambition of the Gentry. He had often access to his Majesty, and pleased himself much with the invention and hope that he and his heirs, for this service, should be perpetual Chancellors of that Order; but, after much discussing, the business was overthrown, and he dismissed with a flout, that *argentum ejus versum est in scorium, et aurum in orichaleum*; which, that it might be the better understood, was thus Englished, that *his silver was turned to dross, and his gold to alchemy!*

"But the inquiry after New Buildings within seven miles of this Town [London] since the King's coming in⁴, goes on amain; and last week the whole Coun-

¹ Third and youngest son of Sir John Manners (noticed in vol. I. p. 88); brother of Sir George (of whom *ibid.* p. 91); grandson of the first, and uncle of eighth, Earl of Rutland. Sir Roger resided at Whitwell in Derbyshire; and dying unmarried, in 1650, was there buried. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. I. p. 477.

² See vol. II. p. 460.

³ Son of Sir Thomas Cave, of Stanford Hall, who has been doubly noticed in vol. I. pp. 92, 192, and who must have been one of the two Knights which occur in those pages. The present young Knight was now scarcely of age, being 19 at his father's death, Sept. 8, 1613. See the History of Leicestershire, vol. IV. p. 352.

⁴ The Proclamation against New Buildings had been issued in 1609. It forbid, says Arthur Wilson, all New Buildings to be set up for the future, within two [not seven] miles of the City, and strictly commanded, if any were, that they should be pulled down, though not taken notice of till seven years after. Whereby many men laid out their whole estates upon little hovels; or, not well heeding the Proclamation, and building fair houses upon new foundations, though it were but two

cil, from the highest to the lowest, brought down a Commission, and sat at Guild-hall about it. If they should proceed with rigour and extremity, they might raise a great mass of money, as is thought; but it would cause much murmur and complaint¹.

"Here is much speech of new Barons to be made for money, which were the less to be misliked, if it came to the King's coffers. But the Lord Sheffield (I know not for what service²,) hath the grant of one, and hath already agreed with Sir Robert Dormer for £.10,000; so that it hath passed the Seals, and he is to be created some time this week, unless some little controversy prolong it, for that the King will make none but such as must first pass through the Order of Baronets; and the question is, whether must bear that charge, the buyer or the seller. Sir George Villiers hath likewise the grant of one, which, it is thought, shall be Sir Nicholas Bacon³, upon the same rate, or rather more; and withall he hath a pension of £.1000 a year out of the Court of Wards.

"Moulin, the French Minister⁴, preached on Tuesday se'nnight before the King with good approbation. He is upon his return homeward, having besides other presents, a Prebend of Canterbury bestowed on him, worth £.200 a year⁵."

On the 18th of June, the King knighted, at Greenwich, Sir Henry Cowley;

yards from the old, became trespassers, and were obliged either to purchase their houses at a dear rate, or pull them down, "both ways tending to their ruine."—The chief motive for this highly arbitrary procedure was evidently that it proved a profitable source of revenue; the excuse seems to have been, that it prevented the Plague from approaching the Court.

¹ On the 20th of July, Mr. Chamberlain tells Sir Dudley Carleton: "All manner of Projects are still on foot; but the New Buildings bring in most present profit."

² His services had been important, as we may suppose from what has appeared in p. 77.

³ Sir Nicholas Bacon was never created a Baron; and, indeed, the rank of Premier Baronet of England might well be preferred to most Baronies. Nor were there any other promotions in the Peerage this year, than those which immediately follow, of Lord Hay and Lord Dormer.

⁴ Peter du Moulin, the very celebrated French Protestant divine. "In 1615, James the First, who had long corresponded with Du Moulin by letters, invited him to England; but this invitation his church at Paris would not suffer him to accept till he had given a solemn promise, in the face of his congregation, that he would return to them at the end of three months. The King received him with great affection, took him to Cambridge at the time of the Commencement, where he was honoured with a Doctor's degree; and, at his departure from England, presented him with a Prebend in the Church of Canterbury." Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. — Mr. Chamberlain mentions other presents; in the next list of Free Gifts will be found one of £.300 to him.

⁵ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

on the 22d, at the same place, Sir William Elways; on the same day, at Wanstead, Sir Thomas Winne and Sir William Souch¹; and on the 26th, at Greenwich, Sir Thomas Eliott.

On the 29th was made the first Baron created without investiture. This was James Lord Hay², "to whom the King granted the name and style of Lord Hay, that he should be next to the Barons of England, but without any place or vote in the Parliament of England: and, upon the recommendation of Henry Earl of Northampton, he was at this time (without any outward ceremony or solemnity,) on delivering Letters Patent under the Great Seal of England, before witnesses in the Privy-chamber at Greenwich, at nine o'clock at night, promoted to the state, dignity, degree, and honour of Baron Hay of Sawley in the county of York, to him and his heirs male of his body lawfully begotten; and the learned in the law informed the King, that this way of creating a Baron was sufficient without Investiture and other Ceremonies, seeing Letters Patent are the very essence of the Creation.

"The next day, Sir Robert Dormer, of Wing, Bart. being duly created Baron Dormer of Wing, is introduced in a furred scarlet gown, with a sword by his side, between the Lord Sheffield³ and Lord Compton⁴, in their parliamentary robes, the Lord Carew having a gown on with a train, the Garter Herald bearing the Letters Patent, delivering the same to the Chamberlain; which Winwood the Secretary taking from him, read them on his knees, and at the word 'imposuimus' (we put on), the King put the robes upon the new Baron. The Letters being read, the King delivers them into the hands of Baron Dormer⁵, trumpets sounding and drums beating. My Lord Sheffield reprimanded Garter, because he said the collar of St. George was not to be used; forasmuch as the other Companions of the Order did not make use of collars (but on the creation of the Earls of Hertford and Southampton in the 36th year of Hen. VIII. the Earls who introduced made use of collars). The style of Baron is not proclaimed, because there was no dinner, the King removing to Westminster⁶."

¹ Both these Knights appear in the list of Low Country Captains in the Cotton. MS. Titus, C. VII.

² Of whom see vol. II. pp. 102, *et sæpe*.

³ See p. 93.

⁴ See vol. I. p. 477; II. 453.

⁵ Dying in 1616, Lord Dormer never sat in Parliament; and it is a very singular fact that this Barony had existed upwards of two centuries before any of its possessors had so done. The "recusancy" of each succeeding Lord Dormer forbade his presence in the great Council of the Nation, till the title devolved in 1819 on the present and tenth Baron.

⁶ Camden's Annals.

On the 2d of July, Sir William Lister was knighted at Oatlands; on the 13th, Sir Godfrey Rodes, at Havering; and, on the latter day, Mr. Chamberlain communicated the following news to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“The King went hence on Monday to Wanstead; so to Havering and Theobalds. On Wednesday next he returns hither [Whitehall]; so presently to Windsor; and then begins a Progress into Hampshire and Wiltshire.

“The Aldermen of this town [London] have been long dealt withal, and urged to lend the King £.100,000. But after many refusals and excuses they have at last yielded to lend or give their credit for £.300,000; but ‘what is that among so many’ who gape and starve after it? ¹

“There was some question at Court on Sunday, for that the Lord Roos by the Lord Chamberlain’s appointment carried the Sword before the King; whereto some Noblemen tooke exceptions, as being a kind of determining of the business betwixt him and the Earl of Rutland. The matter was argued eagerly before the King; but Sir Robert Cotton, that hath ever some old precedent in store, made proof that Knights and Lords, that were not of the Parliament, have at times carried the Sword ².”

“About the beginning of July,” says Sir John Finett, “a young Nobleman of Poland, son to the great Zomoiski, the famous Chancellour of that Kingdome, arrived at London. He demanded accesse to his Majesty by a German (one Ryder) that then lived in England, who speaking in hearing of Sir William Button, Assistant of the Ceremonies, as if the Master of the Ceremonies had been in great fault, to have neglected to presse his desire of presenting his service to the King, was reproved by Sir William Button for so rashly condemning the Master of the Ceremonies, then employed into Kent to meete and receive the new come French Ordinary Ambassador; asking him ‘if Zomoiski were a Prince Sovereigne or an Extraordinary Ambassador, that he should challenge that respect of a King not to be seene at the pleasure and time of every stranger.’ But the difference quietted with the forward Germaines striking saile, he had an audience appointed and given him two dayes after in the King’s Withdrawing-chamber.

“The second or third day following, the same Zomoiski sent to the Master of the Ceremonies to let him know of an invitation he had received from the King, by a letter written to him in his Majestie’s name from Mr. John Murray of the

¹ See further in this business in p. 97, note ².

² Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

Bedd-chamber, to hunt with his Majesty at Theobalds; and asked (by his messenger) the Master of the Ceremonies' opinion and counsell touching his intention to be present at Court the next Sunday (as his letter intimated), at the Audience for that day assigned of the new French Ambassador; and touching his manner of carriage at it. Answer was returned him by Sir Lewes Lewkner, that he would not take upon him to resolve, or advise a man of his quality, especially having himselfe received no direction from the Lord Chamberlaine to the purpose of his invitation; so left him doubtfull, but not enough to hinder his repaire to Court after dinner, though too late to come to the Ambassador's Audience.

"That Ambassador, Monsieur de Mayeth, was that day, the second of July, fetcht to Theobalds in the morning, from his house at the Charter-house, by the Lord Walden, appointed with Sir Lewes Lewkner, myselfe, and half a score Gentlemen to accompany him thither; whether he had for his transport one of the King's coaches, and three others at the charge of his Majesty, besides two or three of his own providing. Arriving at one of the clock, he was brought to rest himselfe in the Councell-chamber, and at two was called thence by the Master of the Ceremonies, and conducted by the Lord Walden to his Audience in the Presence-chamber, where the King standing under the State, the Ambassador marcht towards him, his own followers first, next the King's Servants that had accompanied him from London, next before him Sir Lewes Lewkner, and at his side the Lord Walden. The Ambassador observing as little respect at his approaches as had been till then seene, after some few words of complement he presented his letters, which while his Majesty read, he in all that time nor before did so much as cast his eye towards the Prince there present, till Sir Lewes Lewkner sounding my Lord Walden in the eare, his Lordship stept to him with an admonition for his addresse to the Prince, which the Ambassador tooke. But whether the admonition were well given, or taken, or had been better deferred till the King had read his letters (or best of all perhaps intimated immediately after he had performed his respects to the King), it may be a *quere*. His Majesty invited him once to cover at first, but the Ambassador excusing, the King put on, and still stood bare-headed, till the King having read the letter, his Majesty put off again, and falling to a discourse with him of some length, he never after covered till he was out of the Chamber. He returned to London with Sir Lewes Lewkner and his followers' attendance onely, my Lord Walden leaving

him at the Court-gate, and remaining that night (not perhaps without a solecisme in ceremonie) at Theobalds¹."

On the 13th of July, Fennor, the rhymster, delivered before his Majesty at Theobalds, a Poem he called "The Deciding of the Difference between the two Universities, Oxford and Cambridge, about the King's Entertainment²."

On the 16th, was knighted, at Theobalds, Sir William Garraway³; on the 19th, at the same place, Sir Henry Southwell.

On the 20th, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King came to town yesternight, and goes this day toward Windsor; and so on Monday forward on the Progress. The Queen is likewise going to Bath; which comes ill to pass for those countries they are to go through, who made petition to be spared this year, in respect of the hard winter, and hitherto extreme hot and dry summer, whereby cattle are exceeding poor, and like to perish every where⁴."

The King left London on the 21st of July; on that day, before leaving Whitehall, he knighted Sir Thomas Southwell; Sir Thomas Smith, of Cheshire; and Sir Barnaby Bryan, of Ireland. On the following day he was at Bagshot, where he knighted Sir John Belley; and, on the 24th, the Queen began her Progress, intending to join her Royal Consort at Salisbury⁵.

By the fifth of August the King had reached that City. It being the Anniversary of the Gowry Conspiracy, Bishop Andrews preached before his Majesty in the Cathedral⁶; and, in the Bishop's Palace, Fennor, having followed the Court, again harangued before Royalty "concerning the Gowries' Treason and the Gunpowder Plot⁷." Sir John Lamuill was the same day knighted at Salisbury.

On the 15th of August, we find the King at Lulworth Castle⁷ in Dorsetshire,

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 25.

² See in Fennor's "Descriptions," re-printed under 1616.

³ "Old Garaway, the chief of the Customers," says Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, July 20, "was knighted on Sunday at Theobalds, as well for other good services as for giving security to the Aldermen for the last money, without which they made much difficulty to be brought to it." Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁴ Ibid.

⁵ Camden's Annals.

⁶ The Discourse (on Ps. v. 1—4) is in that Prelate's "XCVI Sermons," the Fifth on the occasion.

⁷ That noble pile was at this time a new erection. "It was chiefly built about 1600 out of the materials of Mount Poynings, and of Bindon Abbey, as Coker says in his History of Dorsetshire. Some have made Inigo Jones the Architect. The foundations were laid in 1588, and the building was finished in 1609. 'This mansion,' continues Mr. Hutchins, without naming his authority, 'has had the honour to entertain King James I. when he came in his Western Progress to hunt in the Park and in the Isle of Purbeck in 1615. The park, says Coker, was formerly large, reaching

then the seat of Thomas Howard¹, Viscount Bindon, where his Majesty knighted Sir John Fitz-James².

On the 24th of August, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The Progress draws well to an end ; for Mr. Secretary wrote that the King, Queen, and Prince were to meet at Windsor the 2d of this next month, where he expects the Seals should be delivered to him, unless some cross accident come in the way ; as indeed he hath many traverses and counter-blows, which he bears better and with more patience than I thought he could ; but he yeelds not a whit or sinks in courage, whatsoever happen ; but keeps in his course, rather to break than to bend or bow.

"The Spanish and Archduke's Ambassadors went the last week to the Earl of Exeter's at Burghley ; and so in Progress to Sir Lewis Tresham's³, Sir Anthony Mildmay's⁴, and other places thereabouts in Northamptonshire.

"The Archbishop of Canterbury [Abbot] went a month since with some state into Kent, and keeps house this vacation at Canterbury."

On the 27th, the King was at Broadlands, the seat of the family of St. Barbe, adjoining to the town of Romsey⁵ ; he there knighted Sir John Richards.

On the 29th, we find his Majesty at Tichborne⁶, the seat of Sir Benjamin

even to Bindon. In the second of Jac. I. Thomas Lord Howard had licence to impark 1000 acres of land in East Lulworth Park and Comb Keins, and to have free-warren there."—Lulworth Castle again entertained Royalty in 1665, when Charles the Second and the Dukes of York and Monmouth visited it ; the apartments they lay in still bear their names. George the Third and his family paid several morning visits to Lulworth, when resident at Weymouth in the years 1791, 1792, and 1793. See the History of Dorsetshire, 1796, vol. I. p. 227.

¹ Of whom see vol. II. p. 334. He died in 1619. Nicolas's Peerage.

² Of Leweston, in the county of Dorset. He died May 16, 1625, aged 77 ; and has a richly painted monument, with effigies of himself and wife, in Long Burton Church. See Hutchins, vol. IV. p. 14.

³ Aphthorp ; see p. 18, and vol. II. p. 457.

⁴ Rushton ; see vol. II. p. 427.

⁵ It was, doubtless, at Broadlands that the King was staying in 1606, when Bishop Andrews preached before him at Romsey, as noticed in vol. II. p. 144. I have not, however, yet discovered any Visit posterior to the present. — The old mansion was nearly rebuilt by the late second Viscount Palmerston, who purchased it about the middle of the last century from the St. Barbe family, after they had possessed it for almost two centuries. It is now a neat edifice of white brick, standing on the eastern side of the river Test, which flows through the park ; and contains a very fine collection of pictures. There is a view of it in Neale's Seats.—A baronetcy was conferred on the St. Barbes, Dec. 30, 1660, which became extinct with Sir John in 1723.

⁶ This ancient family mansion, "a very venerable building and of great age," was pulled down at

Tichborne, Gentleman of his Privy-chamber, where knighthood was conferred on Sir Henry Clarke; and Sir John Macdowgall, *Scotus*.

The Royal Traveller next visited Farnham Castle, the Episcopal Palace of the See of Winchester¹. Sir John Dingley was there knighted on the 31st; and during his Majesty's stay, Bishop Bilson was chosen of the Privy Council².

By the 7th of September the King had returned to Windsor, where he then knighted the celebrated Statesman, Sir Robert Naunton, Author of the *Fragmenta Regalia*³.

On the 15th of September, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to his friend Sir Dudley Carleton, in a Letter dated "Ware Park"⁴:

"The Court hath been farr off, and in Progress, and though the King be come somewhat near to us, and lies now at Theobalds, yet we are as ill furnished with news as before, whether it be that we hunt not after it, or that these hunting journies afford little alteration of affairs. The greatest matter I hear of is, that the Bishop of Winchester, at the King's being in Hampshire, was sworn of the Council, which point⁵, though of no great importance any way, being carried at the beginning of the present century. The new mansion, the seat of Sir Henry Joseph Tichborne, the seventh Baronet, is a handsome edifice. In the chapel Henry VIII. it is said, was married to one of his Queens; and Bp. Fox founded a chantry here.—Of Sir Benjamin Tichborne and his family see vol. I. pp. 27, 116, 465; and of two subsequent Visits of the King, under Aug. 29, 1618; and Aug. 29, 1623.

¹ Of which and the King's former Visits, see vol. II. p. 668.

² Camden's Annals.—In a note on the Bishop in vol. II. p. 261, it has been erroneously stated that Queen Elizabeth had appointed him of the Privy Council.

³ Who first appeared before the King, it is said, as the Orator who addressed him on behalf of the University of Cambridge, at Hinchinbrook, in 1603; see vol. I. p. 101. Jan. 8, 1618, he became Secretary of State; was afterwards Master of the Court of Wards; and died in March 1635. I have printed a long memoir of him, interspersed with letters, in my History of Leicestershire, vol. III. pp. 515 *et seq.* where will also be found an engraving of his monument at Letheringham in Suffolk, and an impression of his monumental brass from the same place. The brass is now in my possession. I bought it in 1789 from a tradesman at Woodbridge, when the Church, being exempt from ecclesiastical jurisdiction, had been suffered to fall under a state of dilapidation, and the fine alabaster monuments employed for manufacturing plaster of Paris!

⁴ The seat of Sir Henry Fanshawe, Remembrancer of the Exchequer; who was knighted May 7, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 112); who died in the March following the present date, aged 48; and of whom see Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. III. pp. 294—296. Ware Park is now the seat of Thos. Hope Byde, Esq.

⁵ Mr. Chamberlain here alludes to some endeavours the Bishop had been making to obtain the office of Privy Seal. This will be best illustrated by the following passages from three of his preced-

at last after so many difficulties and delays, and so much contestation, shews that the balance holds reasonably even without inclining much either way.

"The Queen, I hear, is returned from the Bath not so well as when she went. We have had a long and dry summer; and the best and fairest melons and grapes that ever I knew in England¹."

September 21, the King was at Theobalds, and there knighted Sir Francis Thornehy. A fatal accident occurred at this time, which is thus recorded in the Enfield Register: "Nicholas Brett, servant to Sir George Villiers, was killed in the chase with a buck, in hunting with King James. Sepult. Sept. 25², 1615."

On the 27th, that ill-fated and persecuted Lady, "Arabella Stuart, daughter of Charles Earl of Lenox, cousin-germain of Henry Darnley, Father of King James, died in the Tower of London. She was interred at Westminster, without any funeral pomp, in the night, in the same vault wherein Mary Queen of Scots and Prince Henry were buried." It is the saying of Charles the Fair, in *Papir. Mass.* p. 382, that those who die in the King's Prison, are deservedly deprived of funeral pomp, lest they should be thought to have been thrown into prison wrongfully.

"On Michaelmas-day, the 29th, the King departed from Greenwich³."

At Royston, on the 9th of October, he knighted Sir Patrick Murrey; and on the 14th, Sir William Harrington, and Sir Edward Hinde.

We have now arrived at the period of the fall of the Favourite Somerset. The circumstances of its approach are thus plausibly related in the "Historicall Narrative of the first Fourteen Years of King James:"

ing letters to Sir D. Carleton. June 15, he says: "The Bishop of Winchester is in the way to be Lord Privy Seal, that he may be a counterpoise for many purposes, but specially to keep the Seals from some [Somerset is alluded to], that pretend interest in them." July 13. "The Bishop of Winchester lingers here still, and will not leave his hopes. Indeed his friends labour for him with might and main; and, if there were not strong opposition, were likely to carry it. For they have in a manner given out, that they would not then rest upon it." July 20. "They have missed the mark they shot at in seeking to make the Bishop of Winchester Lord Privy Seal, whom the King hath dismissed with good words that he thought well of him, and perhaps meant to bestow the place upon him; but he would take his own time, and not do it at other men's instance;—so that he should do well to go home, and when there were use of him, he would send for him." — The office of Privy Seal, which, having remained vacant since the Earl of Northampton's death, had been executed by Somerset (see p. 13), was conferred on the 2d of January 1615-16 on the Earl of Worcester. Bishop Bilson died on the following 18th of June.

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² The circumstance of the King's keeping this day as an anniversary at Enfield has been noticed in vol. II. p. 101. It could scarcely be occasioned by this event?

³ Camden's Annals.

"Northampton, one of the greatest friends that Sommerset had, being dead, and himself still jealous of his safety, hee begins to cast about how he might avoid the danger of the Law; for his intelligencers gave him notice of many desperate words that were uttered concerning Overbury's death. Whereupon, finding the King in a good humour, he moves him to this effect, that, whereas it had pleased his Majesty to commit many things unto his charge, and some of them proving something too weighty for him to undergo¹, it was so, that ignorantly he had run himself into a Præmunire, whereby he had forfeited to him both his lands, goods, and liberty; and that he came now to surrender them all up into his Majestie's hands, unlesse it pleased him of his wonted favour towards him to grant him pardon for that and many other offences that hee had ignorantly committed. The King still bearing a good affection towards him, bid him draw his Pardon and he would sign it. Whereupon he makes his repair to Sir Robert Cotton², and intreats him to look him a Pardon, and the largest he could find in former precedents; so he brings him one that was made by the Pope to Cardinal Wolsey, the effect of which was, 'That the King, of his meer motion and special favour, did pardon *all and all manner of* Treasons, Misprisions of Treason, Murders, Felonies, and Outrages whatsoever, by the said Sir Robert Car, Earl of Sommerset, committed or hereafter to be committed³,' with many other words to make it more ample and large, according to form which he caused to be drawn and ingrossed, and brought it to the King. The King *signed it*. At length it came to my Lord Chancellor's hands; he peruses it, and refuses to let it passe the Seale⁴. My Lord asks the reason; answer was made that hee could not

¹ Arthur Wilson accuses him of having embezzled the Crown Jewels.

² It is interesting to remark how constantly Sir Robert Cotton's then unrivalled collection of MSS. was applied to for precedents. We have seen another instance very recently (in p. 95). — It was in this very year that Sir Robert was first tyrannically suspended from the use of his library, being suspected, it is said, of improper correspondence with the Spanish Ambassador. See Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

³ The wording of this Pardon, (if such a Pardon was made out,) particularly the conclusion "hereafter to be committed," certainly requires better authority than the Writer now quoted. Arthur Wilson, however, declares that Somerset obtained "a general Pardon, ample and full, that it rather exceeded than took rise from any former precedent."

⁴ Arthur Wilson affirms, that the Queen used her power in stopping the sealing of the Pardon till the King returned from "his Progress in the West," which is not improbable, being in accordance with what has been before related in p. 81.

justify the doing it, because he should incur a Præmunire as well as himself. This struck Sommerset to the heart; and now hee was in greater doubt than ever he was before, for still hee is stung with feare to bee touched with Overbury's death; and so very pensively retires to Whitehall, and thus remains.

"The King coming to London, my Lord Chancellor Ellesmere acquainted the King with the Pardon, and shewed the King what danger he had incurred in case he had sealed it. The King perceiving the truth of the businesse, besides suspecting greater matters than he knew of, withdraws his countenance from Sommerset, who now wanting vertue to support his greatnesse, without the King's favour, falls into contempt of many, and those that are his enemies neglect him, and do as it were deride his manner of carriage¹, by which means he runs headlong into his own perdition."

The introduction of Villiers, continues the same writer, "stung Sommerset to the heart, to see another step into his place; and he now more fears his subversion and downfall. Wherefore he goes about to circumvent danger, and for this purpose sends into France to make away the Apothecary that administered the physick that killed Overbury; endeavoured to get in all letters and writings that had passed concerning that businesse, and disgracing and discountenancing all such as at any time once spake of the death of Overbury, to the intent that it might be concealed; but what God will have disclosed shall never be concealed. Messengers are sent from place to place, he being a Privy Counsellor, and in favour his Warrant passes currant; so that in all places, trunkes, chests, boxes, studies, and such like houses, wherein he suspected any letters or other matters that appertained to that mischief lay hid, were broken open and searched, to the intent that they might bring such writings to my Lord. Neverthelesse, many (and more then he dreamt on) of those letters came to my Lord of Canterbury's hand, and

¹ When Archbishop Abbot wrote his Narrative, there was, he says, (see p. 81,) "a Lord or two living that had a hand in the atchievement" of introducing Villiers. Sir Walter Scott, after remarking, in his edition of Somers's Tracts, vol. II. p. 298, that Villiers was brought into the King's eye and favour by a cabal of the English Nobles, who wished to supplant Somerset, continues thus: "The plan, according to Heylin, was laid at a great but private entertainment at Baynard's Castle, by the families of Herbert, Hertford, and Bedford. In passing towards the place of meeting, one of the party caused his footman to throw a handful of dirt at Somerset's picture, which was hung out on a painter's stall in Fleet-street. This was a sort of public defiance of the late Favourite. *Aulicus Coquinariæ*, p. 166."

my Lord Coke's¹, as that those courses make him rather more suspected than any whit at all eases his grief.

"At home in his office he used extraordinary covetousness and parsimony. He thereby heaped up to himself great store of money; and would not undertake any enterprise without he was well rewarded for his pains; and every new occasion and occurrence that came to his hands brought him also a fleece of money. Offices in Court that lay in his gift he bestowed not without money; the King's Letters were not purchased without money; no Pardon obtained without money; so that he was as great a bribe-taker as his mother [-in-law] the Countess of Suffolk, and many rumors and hard reports were spread on him for the same. Yet, nevertheless, he continued in his favour, (in despite, as a man might say, of his opposites,) even unto the greatest dignity; which caused him to be as proud as covetous, and to commit as many insolencies as he had received sweet bribes. He thought it no matter to lean on the King's cushion in publique, to check some of the Nobility, and amongst the rest to make a flat breach with my Lord of Canterbury, a grave and reverend Gentleman, one of the Pillars of this Kingdome, and that could discern the follies of that young man.

"These things laying him open to the envy of the greatest, and Sir George Villiers seeing his exceeding covetousnesse, having now the ears of the King, would oftentimes crosse his expectations, as it is credibly reported; and deceived him of many a bribe which hee hoped for, doing those things voluntarily and for

¹ Somerset's own casket is mentioned (see p. 121) as revealing much.—Many letters were brought forward at the trials. Three from Northampton to Rochester were produced at that of Sir Gervase Elwes, and are printed in "Truth brought to light by Time" (re-printed in Somers's Tracts). Some of the same hypocrite to Sir Gervase still exist in Cott. MSS. B. VII. and are printed in Winwood's Memorials, Brydges's Peers of King James, &c. Several of the guilty Countess to Dr. Forman, who was employed by her as a druggist and magician, were delivered up by his widow. One of the Countess to the Doctor, and another to her confidante Mrs. Turner, are printed in "Truth brought to light by Time." The "First Fourteen Years," &c. (in Somers's Tracts) contains the substance of several, of which the Author must have seen the originals.—Others, however, were prematurely destroyed. At Mrs. Turner's trial it appeared that she had sent to Mrs. Forman, "desiring that all such letters and papers as concerned the Earl of Somerset, or the Countess of Essex, or other great personages, should be burned, telling her that the Council's warrant should come to search the study, and that all his goods might be seized; whereupon she and her maid Margaret, with the consent of Mrs. Forman, burnt divers letters and papers; but yet she kept some without their privy." Franklin, who supplied the poisons to the Countess, in his confession affirmed that he had twelve several letters from the Countess, and others from Elwes, all which he had burnt since the first discovery.

thanks, which my Lord would not without much money. These courses laid him open to the contempt of the vulgar also ; and now all men, according to the custome, began to exclaim of his great extortion. Thus we may see visible signes of his fall.

“ The death of Overbury having been now concealed about two years, and the Earl's insolvency growing every day greater than other, procures him many more enemies, as is said ; yet there was no man that was so hardy, for fear of the King's displeasure (hee carrying a very good affection still towards him), to make him acquainted with it, or to bring it to the triall of the Law. At last—divers are the rumours how it was discovered ; one was, that — Sir Thomas Overbury's man petitions to my Lord Coke, and the substance of the Petition was to let his Lordship understand that, whereas his Master had been committed to the Tower, by the consent of Northampton and Sommerset, and had there languished to death unnaturally, that if it pleased his Lordship to call Weston¹ before him, he might gather that out of him, that would discover the whole practise of it. Others say that my Lord of Canterbury, having conceived (as it is said) some dislike against Sommerset, and willing to make himselfe gracious with the King, possesses Sir Ralph Winwood with the businesse, (one that was preferred to bee the King's Secretary under my Lord of Sommerset, and to assist him,) and lets him understand the whole matter as hath been related, and ‘ that many letters came into his hands, and presumptions therein that it should be true ; and that there remained a trunke in such a place, wherein many writings were that would make evident the truth.’ Sir Ralph, being willing likewise to become more eminent with the King, possessed him with the businesse, and proceeding upon a confident ground, warrant was sent to my Lord Coke to prosecute the matter. Others say that by the losse of a letter it was disclosed. And divers opinions there were how it should come to light, it having been kept close so long ; for things of this nature when they are so long concealed bring more wonder.”

Arthur Wilson gives another, and not improbable turn to the story : “ On the King's coming to town,” he says, “ what was muttered in corners before, rung openly in the streets, for the Apothecary's boy that gave Sir Thomas Overbury the glisten, falling sick at Flushing, revealed the whole matter, which Sir Ralph Winwood by his correspondents had a full relation of ; and, a small breach being made, Somerset's enemies, like the rush of many waters, rise up against him, following the stream. The King hearing of the business, and what ill sound it car-

¹ The Keeper who administered the poison to Sir Thomas Overbury.

ried with it, as it was set out to him that in the face of the Court, and so near his own bosom, such poisonous practices should be perpetrated, and on one that was his prisoner, he seemed to be much moved with the relation, and sending for the Judges, gave them strict charge to examine the matter throughly, imprecating a curse upon them and their posterity if they did not endeavour to discover it; and if he did spare any guilty person, he wished God's curse might light upon him and his posterity, so violent the King appeared in prosecution of it¹. And away to Royston he goes, and Somerset with him. Thither these rumours came buzzing about Somerset's ears, like a rising storm upon a well-spread oak; but he thought himself too firmly rooted in the King's favour to be removed, therefore he went back to London to still the murmurs vented against him. Some say the Lord Chief Justice Coke sent for him; upon which he went to the King with a complaint, as taking it to be a great presumption; but the King made answer, 'Thou must go, then; for if Coke sent for me, I must go too!' Others say, when he came to take his leave of the King, his Majesty embraced and kissed him often; wished him to make haste back, shewed an extream passion to be without him; and his back was no sooner turned but he said with a smile, 'I shall never see thy face more!' Whether either or both of these were so cannot be asserted; but to London he went; his Countess was apprehended and committed to custody in Black Fryers before he came thither; he was no sooner there, but he was seized on and commended to the charge of Dr. Mountaign, Dean of Westminster²; and then they went on roundly with the business³.

It was on the 18th of October that the Earl was first put under custody. On the 19th, Weston was brought to the bar, and refused to plead⁴; "but in the mean time, between Weston's standing mute and his trial, one Lumsden, a Scotchman, took upon him to make a false and libellous relation of the business, and deliver it to Henry Gib of the Bed-chamber, to be put into the King's hand, in which writing he falsifies and perverts all that was done the first day of Weston's arraignment, turning the edge of his imputations upon the Lord Chief Jus-

¹ As James pardoned Somerset and his Lady, although their instruments were executed, this solemn imprecation, remarks Sir Walter Scott (*Somers's Tracts*, vol. II. p. 324), was often remembered during the subsequent misfortunes of the House of Stuart.

² See vol. II. p. 725.—Sir Oliver St. John (who was made Lord Deputy of Ireland in 1616, and afterwards Viscount Grandison) was appointed Somerset's Keeper. The Countess was first put in charge of the Sheriff of London; and March 27, from the custody of Wm. Smith, to the Tower.

³ Kennett's complete History of England, vol. II. p. 698.

⁴ Camden's Annals.

tice Coke; which bolt was boldly shot by him, but it was thought not to come out of his own quiver; and it lighted into an ill hand for him, for the King discovered it, and left him an open mark to that Justice he had traduced." On Monday the 23d, Weston was again brought to the bar, and, confessing the fact, was condemned¹. On the 25th, he suffered by the hand of the law, which, continues Wilson, "Sir John Holles, afterwards Earl of Clare², out of friendship to Somerset, and Sir John Wentworth³, a person debauched and riotous (hoping from the beams of Somerset's favour to encrease his wanting fortunes), strove to blast in the Spring; for they rode to Tyburn, and urged him at his execution to deny all; hoping that way to prevent the Autumn that followed. But Weston's soul, being prepared for death, resisted their temptations, sealing penitently the truth of his confession with his last gasp. And this attempt of Holles, Wentworth, and Lumsden, to prevent justice, being aggravated against them in the Star-chamber by the King's Attorney, Sir Francis Bacon, they were sentenced there, and found the reward of their presumption⁴." On the same day Somerset was examined at York House, before the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of Lennox, Lord Zouch, and the Lord Chief Justice. On the 28th he was again examined before dinner. On the 29th Lumsden was examined; as was also Sir Thomas Monson, as being guilty of witchcraft⁵, and Sir Gervase Elwes, Lieutenant of the Tower, several times. On the same or following day, Edward Sackville⁶, Sir John Wentworth, Bart. and Sir John Lidcot, Knight⁷, and afterward Sir John Holles, Knight, were committed to prison for their questions put to Weston at the gallows. Savery⁸, being addicted to magick, is imprisoned⁹.

On the 30th of October, which was this year Lord Mayor's-day, Sir John Jolles¹⁰ was sworn Chief Magistrate of the City of London. Anthony Munday produced the following Pageant on this occasion :

¹ The trial of Weston, and those which followed, are printed at length, with the evidence, in "Truth brought to light by Time;" and re-printed, with interesting notes, in the last edition of Somers's Tracts. ² See vol. II. pp. 374, 462. ³ Ibid. p. 425.

⁴ On the 10th of November Lumsden was fined in the Star-chamber in £2000 "for judgment against Weston, written to defame the King;" and Sir John Wentworth and Sir John Holles were each fined £1000. Camden. ⁵ See vol. II. p. 24; and hereafter, p. 122.

⁶ Afterwards Earl of Dorset, see vol. II. pp. 676, 729, *et sæpe*.

⁷ "Of Oxfordshire," knighted at Hampton Court, Oct. 3, 1609; see vol. II. p. 265. He was apparently Overbury's brother-in-law, as Sir Thomas, in a letter to Rochester, calls him "brother."

⁸ Dr. Savery was a "Sorcerer" employed by the Countess after Dr. Forman's death.

⁹ Camden's Annals. The subject is pursued in p. 119.

¹⁰ See vol. II. p. 62.

METROPOLIS CORONATA;
THE TRIUMPHES OF ANCIENT DRAPERY,
OR RICH CLOATHING OF ENGLAND,
IN A SECOND YEERE'S PERFORMANCE.
IN HONOUR OF THE ADVANCEMENT OF SIR JOHN JOLLES, KNIGHT,
TO THE HIGH OFFICE OF LORD MAIOR OF LONDON,
AND TAKING HIS OATH FOR THE SAME AUTHORITIE ON MONDAY,
BEING THE 30TH DAY OF OCTOBER 1615.
PERFORMED IN HEARTIE AFFECTION TO HIM, AT THE BOUNTIFULL CHARGES OF HIS WORTHY BRETHREN,
THE TRULY HONOURABLE SOCIETY OF DRAPERS,
THE FIRST THAT RECEIVED SUCH DIGNITIE IN THIS CITIE.



Devised and written by A[NTHONY] M[UNDAY], Citizen and Draper of London¹.

METROPOLIS CORONATA;

Or the olde Drapery and Cloathing of England, triumphing a Second Yeere.

Having, in our last yeere's discourse of Himatia Poloës, sufficiently approved the true antiquitie and primary honour of England's Draperie heere in the Cittie of London, first granted by King Richard the First, and seconded by his brother

¹ "Printed at London by George Purslowe, 1615." — One copy of this rare Pageant is in Mr. Gough's collection in the Bodleian Library; and another was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, August 6, 1820, to Mr. Knell for £.7. 17s. 6d. The latter, I believe, is now in the Library of Thomas Jolley, Esq. — This Pageant, it is to be remarked, was a companion, or second part of that of the preceding year, of which see before, p. 24, but which has eluded my researches. N.

King John, by enstalling that famous noble Gentleman, Sir Henry Fitz-Alwine, Knight, in the first dignity of Lord Maior of London, wherein he continued (by yeerely election) the space of twenty-foure yeeres and an halfe, and longer had done if hee had longer lived; seeing likewise that Drapery triumpheth now two yeares together, by succession of two Lord Maiors in one and the same Society; I held it not fit (finding myselfe not barren of invention in a theame of such scope and large extendure,) to runne againe the same course of antique honour; but rather to jumpe with the time, which evermore affecteth novelty, in a new forme of this second yeere's Triumph, prepared for that honorable and worthy Brother of Drapery, Sir John Jolles, Knight and Alderman, on the day of his entrance into so high a dignitie.

On Monday, being the 30th of October 1615, according to auncient and most honourable custome, the Lord Maior being to passe by water to Westminster, in company of his worthy Brethren, and attended by all other Companies in their severall bardges made fit for triumph, after such manner as formerly hath been observed; the first device that welcommeth him to the water is an invention proper to that nature, and thought apt to conduct him in his passage. He being both a Draper and Stapler, and these two professions (in former times) appertaining to the Brethren of London's Drapery, trading only in wools and woollen-cloth, the then chiefe riches of the Kingdome; both these mysteries meeting together so conveniently in one man, I did account it as a sinne in me to sunder them, and therefore made use of that creast or cognizaunce of the Golden Fleece, given by auncient heraldrie to them both, and remaining still in firme force with the Draper, as their escutcheon of armes maketh manifest.

In a goodly Argoe, shaped so neere as art could yeeld it to that of such auncient and honorable fame as conuaied Jason and his valiant Argonautes of Greece, to fetch away the Golden Fleece from Cholchos, we make use of that memorable historie as fit both for the time and occasion. Therein aloft sitteth Medea, whose love to Jason was his best meanes of obtaining the Golden Fleece; and therefore, as still witnessing the fiery zeale of her affection towards him, she sitteth playing with his love-lockes, and wantoning with him in all pleasing daliance, to compasse the more settled assurance of his constancy. His noble companions, as Hercules, Telamon, Orpheus, Castor, Pollux, Calais, and Zethes, the Sonnes of Boreas, are seated about him in their several degrees, attired in faire guilt armours, bearing triumphal launces, wreathed about with laurell,

shields honoured with the impress of the Golden Fleece, and their heads circled with lawrels, according to the manner of all famous conquerors. This Argoe is rowed by divers comely eunuches, which continually attended on Medea, and she favouring them but to passe under the Fleece of Golde, had all their garments immediately sprinkled over with golde, even as if it had showred downe in droppes upon them; and so they rowe on in Jason's Triumph.

Having thus borrowed the help of this well-knowne storie, to honour the day of our London Jason, we doe poetically inferre, that Neptune having declared himselfe kinde in their comming hither, and Thamesis shewen herself as gracious in passing over her watry bosome, to make his triumph more majestically, they lend the assistance of their sea-chariot, wherein they use to sport themselves on their watry regiment¹, it being shaped like to a whale, or the huge Leviathan of the Sea. Therein is placed the shadow of Sir Henry Fitz-Alwine, to grace this daye's honour both by water and land; and by him are seated Eight Royall Vertues, bearing the ensignes of armes of eight honorable Drapers and Staplers, with beautiful shields that declare each man's name, *viz.* Poultney, Cromer, Ayre, Wotton, Sidney, Bulloin, [Capell, Champion²; and there had been more³] to accompanie them, but neither place nor time might afford it; only these are remembred for their high deservings, as our Chronicles at large doe more amply declare, Fame triumphing in the top, and Time guiding the way before. No sooner is my Lord and his Brethren seated in their bardge, and such silence obtained as the season can best permit, but Fitz-Alwine saluteth him in this manner:

SIR HENRY FITZ-ALWINE'S SPEECH ON THE WATER,
AT THE THREE CRANES.

It is now a compleate yeere,
Since, in the borrowed shape I beare
Of olde Fitz-Alwine, I was raysed from rest.
On that daye's Triumph fully was exprest

¹ *i. e.* government; several examples are given in Nares's Glossary; and the very phrase "watery regiment," is used by Browne in his *Britannia's Pastorals*.

² Johan Poultney was Lord Mayor in 1312, 1330, 1331, 1333, and 1336; William Cromer in 1413 and 1423; Nicholas Wotton in 1415 and 1430; Symke Eyre in 1445; Johan Gedney in 1427 and 1447; Geoffrey Boleyn in 1457; Sir William Capell in 1503; and Sir Richard Champion in 1565.—William Cromer was M. P. for London in 1406 and 1417; Nicholas Wotton in 1414, 1419, and 1429; John Gedney in 1414; and Sir William Capell in 1492, 1511, and 1515. N.

³ Either the original or my transcript is deficient in a line to this effect. N.

The honour due by grave Antiquitie,
 Then given to London's Draperie,
 By Royall Richard, who in me
 First stilde the name of Mayoraltie;
 Which I held foure-and-twenty yeere,
 As in good records may appeare.

In all this time my labouring soule,
 Not quitted from the high controule
 Of divine poesie, hath waited still
 Upon her great commanding will;
 By information that another
 Of mine owne band, a Draper Brother,
 Was to succeed in dignitie
 Of London's famous Maioraltie;
 This was a motive of such might
 That made me hover day and night,
 To honour this solemnitie
 With whatsoere remaines in me.
 Two Drapers to succeede each other?
 I beeing their first advanced Brother,
 To both must my affection prove
 Of cordiall and sincerest love.

Then, Sir, as I am taught to know yee,
 So doe these goodly ensignes shew yee
 Draper and Stapler; so was I,
 And both but one Societie
 In those grave times when woollen-cloth
 Serv'd best for King and subject both.
 The Draper and the Stapler then,
 I tell yee were right worthy men;
 And did more needy soules maintaine
 Than I feare will be seene againe;
 But times must have their revolution,
 And each their severall execution.
 And passe wee then; and come to say
 What honours now doe crowne this day.

The Golden Fleece being the crest
 Of ancient Drapery, we digest
 The story of the Golden Fleece,
 Fetcht by the Argonautes of Greece
 From Cholcos, in resemblance here,
 Where Jason and those Greekes appeare,
 Which in that travaile did partake,
 Both for his love and honour's sake.

Medea's powerfull charmes prevailde,
 And all those dreadfull monsters quailde,
 That kept the Fleece in their protection,
 Which then was wonne by her direction.
 By way of morall application,
 Your Honour may make some relation
 Unto yourselfe out of this storie;—
 You are our Jason, London's glorie,
 Now going to fetch that Fleece of Fame
 That ever must renowne your name.
 An Oath of faith and fealtie
 That makes you his great Deputie
 Or image of authoritie.
 No monsters dare confront your way.
 Imagine then, as well you may,
 That all this faire and goodly fleete
 Do in meere love on purpose meete,
 Like to those Argonautes of Greece
 That then fetcht home their Golden Fleece,
 To tend the Argoe where you ride,
 Behind, before, on every side,
 With all applauding melodie,
 That best this day may dignifie.

Neptune and gracious Thamasis,
 To honour such a day as this,
 Have sent out of their watry store
 Their own sea-chariot, which before
 They nere would part with; but as now
 Their sacred Deities allow
 Our use thereof, which we employ
 To make more full this day of joy.

Eight Royall Vertues take the paine
 Eight honoured ensignes to sustaine
 Of eight Lord Maiors, as you may see
 Described by their heraldrie.
 Drapers and Staplers, Brethren kinde,
 Leaving rare monuments behinde
 Of their affection to this Cittie,
 For the poores' good whom they did pittie.
 Poltney, Cromer, Eyre, Wotton,
 Sidney, Bullen, Capell, Champion.
 Time checks me, that I may not tell
 Their severall deedes. Nor fits it well
 In serious businesse to delay.
 On then; a God's name let's away!

The Speech being ended, the Companies witnessing their joy for his taking water, and the same further confirmed by a gallant peale of ordenance, wee waite on my Lord so farre as conveniently we may, evermore having care of our further employment in the land service, the time being so short and our preparation requiring such decencie in order; yet much abused by neglect in marshalling, albeit so advisedly set downe in project, that nothing but meere wilfulnesse can misplace them.

THE SHEWES APPOINTED FOR SERVICE ON LAND.

First, a faire and beautifull shippe, stiled by the Lord Maior's name, and called Joell, appearing to bee lately returned from trafficking Wool and Cloth with other remote countryes, ushereth the way for her worthy Owner's service, and is well governed by her Captaine, Master, Mate, &c. Neptune, who had been auspicious to all her adventures, and Thamesis, by bringing her alwaies within her owne bounds, beeing mounted in triumphall manner, the one on a pelleted lyon, the supporter to the Drapers' armes, and the other on a sea-horse, belonging to the Lord Maior's armorie, doe both with their presence approve this daye's delighting. Then followeth a goodly Ramme or Golden Fleece, the honoured creast (as already hath been sayd) to Drapers and Staplers, having on each side a housewifely virgin sitting, seriously imployed in carding and spinning wooll for cloth, the very best commoditie that ever this Kingdome yeelded.

The Argoe succeedeth the Fleece or Ramme, according to our former description; and then, instead of Neptune's whale on the water, commeth another sea-device, tearmed the Chariot of Man's Life, answerable in all respect to Time's relation thereof; as also that other monument of London and her Twelve Daughters [the Twelve Companies], at this time imploying *Metropolis Coronata*, the King's chief Cittye and Chamber, most desertfully crowned as being the ancient Mother of the whole Land, and first receiving honour by the triple imperiall Crownes of Draperie.

After all these Shewes, thus ordered in their appointed places, followeth another device of Huntsmen, all clad in greene, with their bowes, arrowes, and bugles, and a new slaine deere carried among them. It savoureth of Earle Robert de la Hude, sometime the noble Earle of Huntingdon, and sonne-in-law (by marriage) to olde Fitz-Alwine, raised by the Muses' all-commanding power to honour this Triumph with his father. During the time of his out-lawed life,

in the Forrest of Merry Sherwood, and elsewhere, while the cruell oppression of a most unnaturall covetous brother hung heavy upon him, Gilbert de la Hude, Lord Abbot of Christall Abbey, who had all or most of his lands in morgage, hee was commonly called Robin Hood, and had a gallant company of men (out-lawed in the like manner) that followed his downecast fortunes, and honoured him as their lord and master,—as Little John Scathlocke, Much the Miller's sonne, Right-hitting Brand, Fryar Tuck, and many more. In which condition of life we make instant use of him, and part of his brave bowmen, fitted with bowes and arrowes of the like strength and length as good records deliver testimonie were then used by them in their killing of deere.

Now, because, after my Lord's landing, protraction of time necessarily required to be avoyded in regard of the Lords of his Majestie's most honourable Privie Councell and other great personages, invited guests to this solemne Feaste, such Speeches as should have been spoken to him by the way were referred till his Honour's returne to Saint Paule's in the afternoone. And then, another man of no mean sufficiency, both for knowledge and exquisite use of action, who had in the morning guided and directed Neptune's whale, made in the forme of a triumphall chariot on the water, and held the same office in the other chariot of Man's Life upon the land; neere to the Little Conduite in Cheapside delivereth this brieffe Speech (importing a narration of the other devices) to the Lord Maior in manner following:

THE SPEECH OF TIME IN THE AFTERNOONE, AT THE
LORD MAIOR'S GOING TO PAULE'S¹.

“Honourable Lord; Time hath nothing else to tell you but the brieffe meaning of these severall inventions. The water-devices have already sufficiently spoken themselves.

“This ship, bearing your own name, and called the Joel, trafficking England's Drapery with all other countries, as by the goodly Ramme or Golden Fleece of England appeareth, where two housewifely virgins sit carding and spinning, is, after many happie voyages, returned to honour the day of her worthie owner, being safely brought home by Neptune and Thamesis, who (mounted on a lyon and-sea-horse) vouchsafe their attendance on your Triumph.

“And instead of that sea-chariot, which waited on the Argoe in the morning,

¹ After dinner! as before noticed, in vol. II. p. 694.

they bring another, graced with the same Royal Vertues and ensignes of armes belonging to those honorable Drapers. On the top is placed a spheare or globe intimating the world, created for the use of man, and such expence of time as is allotted him. It is supported by the foure Elements, Water, Earth, Ayre, and Fire, as their figures and emblemes doe aptly declare. It runneth on seven wheelles, describing the Seven Ages of Man; his Infancie, Childhood, Adolescence or stripling estate, Youthhood, Manhood, Age, and Age's extremity or decrepit condition; all of them subjected to the power of the Seven Planets, as on each wheele they beare their characters. It is drawne by two lyons and two horses of the sea, figuring what swift motion hastneth on the minutes, houres, months, and yeeres of our frailtie; and the whole frame or body guided by Time as coachman to the Life of Man.

"That other goodly Monument, or Pageant, with the glorious sunne in continuall motion over it, appertaining to the Draper's armory, presents yee London in the supreme place of eminence, and Twelve Companies (her Twelve Daughters) all seated about her in due degrees, onely Drapery is nearest to her as being the first and chiefest-honoured Society before all others. As supporters to London's flourishing happinesse and continuance of the same in true tranquillitie, foure goodly Mounts (as strong and defensive bulwarkes) are rayzed about her, bearing emblemes of those foure especiall qualities, which make any commonwealth truly happy; Learned Religion, Militarie Discipline, Navigation, and Homebred Husbandrie.

"For thus, my Lord, I truly understand,
No greater crosse can hap to any land
Then lacke of schollars, souldiers, saylers, husbandmen,
Long may we have them all! Time sayes, Amen."

Evening hastening on speedily, and those usuall ceremonies at Paule's being accomplished, darkenesse becommeth like bright day, by bountifull allowance of lighted torches for guyding all the severall Shewes and my Lord homeward. The way being somewhat long, the order of march appeared the more excellent and commendable, even as if it had been a Royall Maske prepared for the marriage of an immortall deitie; as in the like nature we hold the Lord Maior to be this day solemnely married to London's supream dignitie, by representing the awefull authority of Sovereigne Majestie. No sooner commeth he to his owne gate, but there our supposed Sir Henry Fitz-Alwine, on behalfe of the honour-

able Company of Drapers, who made no spare of their bounty for full performance of this daye's solemne honor, speaketh this ensuing Speech :

FITZ-ALWINE'S SPEECH TO THE LORD MAIOR AT NIGHT.

Now, honour'd Lord, since day is done,
And you to your own house are come,
With all delight that we can make yee ;
Methinks we should not yet forsake yee,
But that strict Time will have it so,
And parts us, whether we will or no.

All then, my Lord, that I shall say,
Is, that your Honour would well weigh
Your worthie-minded Brethren's love,
Who have in firme affection strove,
How best they might renowne this day
In honouring you. And, I dare say,
That never men did more desire
To stretch their love and bounty higher,
Than they have done, and could afford
For such a worthy-minded Lord,
Which they by me humbly commend
Still at your service. So I end.

Afterward, as occasion best presenteth itselfe, when the heate of all other employments are calmly overpast, Earle Robinhood, with Fryer Tuck and his other brave Huntsmen, attending now at last to discharge their duty to my Lord, which the busie turmoile of the whole day could not before afford, shew themselves to him in this order, and Earle Robin himselfe thus speaketh :

THE SPEECH SPOKEN BY EARLE ROBERT DE LA HUDE,
COMMONLY CALLED ROBIN HOOD.

Since graves may not their dead containe,
Nor in their peacefull sleepes remaine,
But Triumphes and great Showes must use them,
And we unable to refuse them ;
It joyes me that Earle Robert Hood,
Fetcht from the Forrest of Merrie Shirwood,
With these my yeomen tight and tall,
Brave huntsmen and good archers all,
Must in this joviall day partake,
Prepared for your Honour's sake.

No sooner was I raysde from rest,
 And of my former state possest,
 As while I lived, but being alone,
 And of my yeomen seeing not one,
 I with my bugle gave a call,
 Made all the woods to ring withall;
 Immediately came Little John,
 And Scathlock followed him anon,
 With Much the honest Millar's sonne,
 And ere ought else could be done,
 The frolicke Frier came tripping in,
 His heart upon a merrie pinne.
 "Master," quoth he, "in yonder brake,
 A deere is hid for Marian's sake.
 Bid Scathlock, John, or honest Brand,
 That hath the happy hitting hand,
 Shoote right and have him." And see, my Lord,
 The deed performed with the word;
 For Robin and his bow-men bolde,
 Religiously did ever holde,
 Not emptie-handed to be seene,
 Were't but at feasting on a greene.
 Much more then, when so high a day
 Calls our attendance; all we may
 Is all too little; 'tis your grace
 To winke at weakenesse in this case.
 So, fearing to be over-long,
 End all with our olde Hunting-song.

FRYER. But, good Master, ere they sing,
 Favour me to move one thing;
 A boone, a boone, for Fryer Tuck,
 Who begges it with a lowly ducke!

ROBIN. What is it, Fryer?

FRYER. Since we are thus raysde from our rest,
 In honour of this famous Feast;
 And for his sake that may commaund
 (Next to my Master) heart and hand,
 Of mee and all these good Yeomen;
 Ere we returne to ground agen,
 Seeing jolly Christmas drawes so neere,
 When as our service may appeare,

Of much more merit then as now,
Which doth no longer scope allow
Than that which is already done.
Your love, my Lord, so much hath won
Upon the Fryer and his compeeres,
As ye could wish to live whole yeeres;
To yeeld you pleasure and delight,
Be it by day or be it by night;
For we have choise delights in store,
Command them, and I crave no more.

ROBIN. You heare, my Lord, the Fryer's motion,
Out of meere love and pure devotion;
You see beside that all my men,
(For any season where or when,)
Second his sute. May it please you then,
Earle Robine frankly doth protest,
We will all strive to do our best,
When any occasion shall require,
The offer of our merry Fryer,
For such a worthy-minded Lord;
Robin Hood seales it with his word¹.

FRYER. Thankes, my deare Domine,
And to you, noble homine,
For to this indenter
Frier Tuck subscribes *libenter*.
Now, lest we offer wrong,
Fall to your sing-song.

THE SONG OF ROBIN HOOD AND HIS HUNTESMEN.

*Now wend me together, my merry-men all,
Unto the forrest side-a;
And there to strike a buck or a doe,
Let our cunning all be tried-a.*

*Then goe we merrily, merrily, on
To the green-wood to take up our stand,
Where we will lye in waite for your game,
With our bent bowes all our hand.*

¹ Honest Anthony Munday here makes a powerful appeal for himself and fellow-mummers; but whether they were again employed at the ensuing Civic Christmas I have no means to ascertain. N.

*What life is there like to Robin Hood?
It is so pleasant a thing-a;
In merry Shirwood he spends his dayes
As pleasantly as a King-a.*

*No man may compare with Robin Hood,
With Robin Hood, Scathlocke, and John;
Their like was never, nor never will be,
If in case that they were gone.*

*They will not away from merry Shirwood
In any place else to dwell,
For there is neither city nor towne
That likes them halfe so well.*

*Our lives are wholly given to hunt,
And haunt the merrie greene-wood,
Where our best service is daily spent
For our Master Robin Hood.*

On the 31st of October, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Henry Crook.

“ November the first, Seignior Barbarigo, who about a month before had come to reside here as Ambassador, in place of Seignior Foscari departed ¹, was conducted from the Charter-house to Whitehall by the Lord Hay for his first Audience; attended by many Gentlemen of his Majestie’s Privy-chamber in two of the King’s coaches, and seven or eight of the Lords’, besides five or six others hyred by himselfe. Being come to Whitehall, he had his conduction, together with his Predecessor, through the first Court, up the Great Staires, by the Guard-chamber, into the Councell-chamber, where my Lord Hay remaining with him while the Master of the Ceremonies went to give an account that he was come, he was after brought to his Majesty in the Presence, no other Lord receiving him at the Presence-doore, the Earle of Somerset Lord Chamberlaine being then in prison. His Predecessor preceding, and first speaking, he delivered his letters, and a breife Speech, with a voice audible over all the roome. Whence reconducted by the same Lord, and the Gentlemen mentioned, to his house, they there found beyond expectation, a long table ready covered, and many white wax lights, it not yet being foure of the clock, lighted. When my Lord Hay offering to parte, but invited to stay at supper, (though unseasonably perhaps at so short a warn-

¹ George Barbadico, the Venetian Ambassador, dies in England, May 27, 1615. Camden.

ing for a person of his quality,) after some importunity of the Ambassador, yeelded, but with excuse (to indeare it might seeme) that he must first returne to Whitehall to waite on his Majesty, promosing to returne speedily, as he did, with such Gentlemen of his Company as would accompany him. The Supper was sumptuous, excellently ordered, and of five several services. The guests at it were thus ranged. At the tables' end my Lord Hay alone; at his right hand the old Ambassador, and beneath him the new; at his left-hand Sir Henry Wotton, then nominated Ambassador for Venice, and beneath him Sir Henry Rich, the rest in their places¹."

On the first of November also, the Duke of Lennox was made Steward of the King's Household; and, to proceed with the investigation of the Overbury business, on the same day Lord Thomas Howard, brother of the Countess of Somerset (and afterwards Earl of Berkshire), was committed to the Fleet, while the Countess of Suffolk is confined to her chamber at home.

"On the 2d, the Seals are taken from Somerset. He is commanded by the Lord Wotton to lay down the Staff, the badge of the King's Chamberlain, and to appear before the King's delegates, by whom he is sent to the Tower, Sir George More² being appointed to be Lieutenant³."

On the 5th, the Anniversary of the Gunpowder Treason, Bishop Andrews preached his wonted Sermon before the King at Whitehall⁴. Sir George Hastings⁵ was there knighted. And his Majesty having invited the Archduke's Ambassador, Monsieur de Boiscot, to dine with him; that personage was conducted into the Privy-gallerie Chambers somewhat before dinner, and thence to the

¹ "Within a few weekes after the Ambassador Foscari departed, who after at Venice, being a man free and full of fancy, of a stirring spirit and undertaking, was accused to the State by three or foure conspiring villaines of holding intelligence with the Spaniard, for what ends, either of malice to him or advantage to themselves, I know not, and condemned, and strangled in prison; but not long after, being found guiltless by his accusers' confession, his body was disinterred, buried with solemnity, and his Family, which after the course of that severe State suffered, were restored to their suspended charges in that Republique." Finetti Philoxenis, pp. 28, 29.

² Of whom see vol. II. p. 374. ³ Camden's Annals.

⁴ The Bishop's present Discourse, on Psalm cxlv. 9, is printed in his "XCVI Sermons," the Seventh on the occasion.

⁵ Second son of Francis Lord Hastings (who died v. p. in 1595), and youngest brother of Henry, at this time fifth Earl of Huntingdon (noticed in vol. II. p. 145). Sir George died in 1641. Of his family see Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 658; or Bell's Huntingdon Peerage, p. 96.

King's presence. His Majesty dined in the Privy-chamber, where as soon as he was set, the Ambassador, having washed apart, sate down also at the board's end at the left-hand of the King, and rising at the end of dinner, an instant before his Majesty, he followed him back into the Privy Lodgings. His Secretary and other servants (two onely being left to attend him at the table) had at the same time ten or twelve dishes of meate served them in the Chappell-chamber on the King's side. He after dinner demanded audience of the Prince, but whether his Highnesse had such businesse with the Queen his Mother as his excuse carryed, or that he thought the demand of the Ambassador's Audience unseasonable, and too familiar with so short a warning, he had it not till the next day, when he came purposely for it at the house of his assignation ¹."

"On the 7th of November, the King departed from London towards Royston.

"On the 9th, Anne Norton, the widow of one Turner, Doctor of Physic, concerned in procuring poison for Sir Thomas Overbury, is condemned for witchcraft and magick at Westminster. On the 11th, being persuaded by one Whitting, a Minister ², she confessed every particular (and more), which she had denied to the Bench. On the 14th she was hanged, a true penitent, at Tyburn ³.

"On the 18th, Sir Gervase Elwes, Lieutenant of the Tower⁴, is condemned; and on Monday the 20th is hanged by the neck near the Tower. Sir Robert Cotton delivered a packet of Overbury's letters to the Lord Chief Justice.

"On the 27th, Franklin, the Apothecary who provided the poisons, is condemned in Westminster Hall, and some days after was hanged ⁵."

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 22.

² Dr. Whyting and Dr. Felton, two of the King's Chaplains, attended Elwes at his execution.

³ Anne Turner was the widow of an apothecary or physician, in Paternoster-row, who, like Forman and many others of the period, had or pretended a bias to the study of natural magic and astrology. She had been educated with the Countess of Somerset, and was her counsellor through all her dark labyrinth of lust and murder. She is described as being eminently beautiful; particularly in "Sir Thomas Overbury's Vision," a Poem published in 1616, from which extracts are given in the last edition of Somers's Tracts, vol. II. pp. 330 *et seq.* Mrs. Turner, says the Author of "First Fourteen Years of King James" in his preface, was sentenced "to be hanged at Tiburn in her yellow tiffany ruff and cuffs, she being the first inventer and wearer of that horrid garb. Were there now in these days," continues the writer, "the like upon such notorious black-spotted faces, naked breasts, and backs, no doubt but that ugly fashion, which now is too vainly followed, would soon end in shame and detestation; for never since her execution in that yellow ruff and cuffs, was any ever seen to wear the like."

⁴ Noticed in vol. II. p. 417.

⁵ Camden's Annals.

The following passages are from a letter written by Sir John Throckmorton, then at Flushing, to Mr. William Trumbull, Resident at Brussels. It is dated December 1, and was written on that and some following day :

" I doubt not you have heard that Gervase Helwysse was hanged upon Tower-hill, accusing there openly the Earl of Northampton and Sir Thomas Monson for drawing him to this villainy, which brought him to that shamefull end. He confessed that he died justly for the fact, and commended the justice of the King and State. He hath impeached many ; as he said, for the clearing of his conscience. Some are in the Tower, some in the City, some in the Country. Believe me, Sir, the Lords Commissioners are perplexed, as not yet seeing the brim or bottom of this business. Upon Thursday last Sir Thomas Monson was indicted as accessory to the death of Overbury ; and upon Thursday next he shall be arraigned at the Guildhall of London. There are twelve persons detected to have a finger in this poisoning business ; three executed already ; then the Earl and his Lady, Monson, Franklin, Savery, Horn, Margaret, Stephen, and Monson's man¹.

" The Earl seems little to care for this aspersion, and shews no manner of change in his countenance, which is strange, seeing that by manifest proofs it is otherwise, which was delivered in public Courts ; but he knoweth not what is done or said abroad, being a close prisoner. I hear the Lieutenant of the Tower hath now commission to acquaint him with the arraignments and executions past, and with the discovery of his casket, wherein strange letters appear touching this business in hand ; and others also as is supposed.

" The Lady Somerset's furthest reckoning is three weeks before Christmas, which is now at hand. She is very pensive, silent, and much grieved. It is thought she is come to the knowledge of the proceedings abroad by some of her servants that attend her.

" By passengers which arrived here yesterday from London, I understand that on Monday last Franklin was executed² ; and that yesterday Sir Thomas Monson was to be arraigned, who will undoubtedly pass the same passage which his other wicked companions have gone before him. There is an eye cast upon some others, the rest of his own tribe also. You may easily guess whom I mean. The next who will play their part in this tragedy will be the Earl and his Lady, and then

¹ Of these Franklin alone suffered ; Monson and the five last escaped without trial. Savory has before occurred in p. 106 ; Mrs. Horne was the Countess's own handmaid ; Margaret and Stephen were Mrs. Turner's maid and man.

² Contradicted in the next letter.

undoubtedly we shall be able to see into the bottom of this and their other wicked practices¹."

On the 4th of December, the King knighted, at Newmarket, Sir John Leighton² and Sir William Brunkard³.

On the same day "Sir Thomas Monson was again brought to his trial, and the indictment being read over, he was, contrary to all expectation, sent to the Tower to be indicted of High Treason⁴."

"On the 14th, the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of Lenox, and the Lord Chief Justice had a conference with Somerset in the Tower. They turned off Copping and Andrews his servants, and committed them to prison⁵."

On the 15th, Sir Alexander Muncriffe⁶ was knighted at Newmarket.

On the 17th, (O. S.) Sir John Throckmorton, in a letter from Flushing to Mr. Trumbull, at Brussels, again reported the news that had reached him:

"Franklin is not executed; for he now makes new confessions of matters not before known. Monson should have been arraigned upon Thursday last, but the press was so great that the Judge nor Jury could have no passage to their places; so it is adjourned till Monday next. Some say that Monson made a petition to my Lord Chief Justice that a great Lord might be near at hand at the time of his arraignment, if there should be need to call for him to justify something, that he was to deliver for the safeguard of his life. But I dare not say that this was so; but I heard it spoken⁷."

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

² Thomas in MS. list *penès me*.

³ Who received a Free Gift of 1616, and was created an Irish Viscount by Charles I.

⁴ The expectations of our two authorities, Sir John Throckmorton and Camden, seem, with regard to Monson, to have been very different. The latter proved the more correct, inasmuch as Monson escaped not only death, but trial.

⁵ Camden's Annals.

⁶ Alexander Mongrief occurred in the last list of Free Gifts (p. 78) as having received £.660.

⁷ Sir A. Weldon slanderously imputes Monson's deliverance to the King being afraid of his making some unpleasant discoveries on his trial.—The extent of his participation in the murder remains unproved. It appears by Camden, (already quoted in p. 106,) that he was committed, like some other of his accomplices, for "witchcraft." At his indictment, as related in "Truth brought to light by Time," he pleaded his innocence most strenuously, whilst the Judges were (as frequently in those days) most cruelly abusive of an untried man. His actual guilt seems to have consisted in servility to Northampton, similar to that which Northampton paid to Somerset. He was a follower of Northampton, having probably been introduced by his brother Sir William, who was Vice-admiral, whilst Northampton was Lord High Admiral (and who himself fell under suspicion, and was committed to the Tower, Jan. 13). Sir Thomas certainly assisted the guilty Countess in procuring Weston his place in the Tower (see p. 104), and in secluding Overbury from other attendance. Elwes, when on the gallows,

"There is a seizure made of the Earl of Somerset's goods, plate, jewels, &c. to his Majesty's use; and there is an inventory to be taken of them. The Lady Somerset is not yet delivered, but her time is said to be near at hand¹.

"Mrs. Brittainne is committed to the King's Bench for some speeches she used of Prince Henry's poisoning, which she denied; but two men upon oath do depose she spake it².

"The King is at Newmarket, where there are at the present twenty Earls and Barons attending, and such a number of principal Gentlemen as that it is wondered how they can lodge in that poor village. The King hath sent for some of his great horses to Newmarket, and for St. Anthony the rider³. Every morning Sir G. Villiers is on horseback, and taught to ride; whose favour increaseth⁴."

"On the 18th of December, Lord Knollys and Lord Hay were sent underhand to Somerset by the King⁵."

On the 22d, his Majesty knighted, at Royston, Sir John Oglander, of the Isle of Wight⁶; on the 23d, at Theobalds, Sir Robert Brook⁷.

On the 23d, says Camden, "the King returned to Westminster, and delivering the Staff to the Earl of Pembroke, appoints him to be Chamberlain.

"On Christmas-day, the King, being sorely troubled with the gout, was not able to go to Divine Service; but heard a Sermon in private, and took the Sacrament." The Preacher was, as usual, Bishop Andrews⁸.

On the New Year's-night was first performed "The Golden Age Restored:"

accused Northampton and Sir Thomas Monson together. Sir Thomas was released after three months' close imprisonment.

¹ The Countess's only child, Anne, (afterwards married to William fifth Earl and first Duke of Bedford,) was born soon after this. Of her history see Brydges's *Peerage*, vol. I. p. 284.

² A hint is said to have escaped Sir Edward Coke, at Monson's arraignment, as if Prince Henry had died by poison, and that both Somerset and Overbury were concerned in the treason. This indiscretion is said to have contributed to the disgrace of the Chief Justice in 1616. The rumour that Prince Henry was poisoned has been before noticed in vol. II. pp. 471, 485.

³ Mons. St. Anthoine had been one of Prince Henry's French Equerries.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

⁵ Camden's *Annals*.

⁶ Son of Sir William Oglander, noticed in vol. II. p. 95, and father of Sir William, the first Baronet of the name. Sir John was made Deputy Governor of Portsmouth in 1620; Deputy Governor of the Isle of Wight in 1624; and served as Sheriff of Hampshire in 1637. He made collections for the History of the Isle, which were afterwards employed by Sir Richard Worsley. See Hutchins's *Dorsetshire*, vol. I. p. 451.

⁷ Philipot's *Knights*. My MS. list says Thomas, Nov. 6.

⁸ The Sermon, on Mich. v. 2, is in his "XCVI Sermons," the Tenth "of the Nativitie."

THE GOLDEN AGE RESTORED,

IN A

MASQUE AT COURT,

JANUARY 1, AND JANUARY 6, 1615-16.

BY THE

LORDS AND GENTLEMEN, THE KING'S SERVANTS¹.

 Written by BEN JONSON.

Loud music ; PALLAS in her chariot descending, to a softer music.

Look, look! rejoice and wonder
 That you, offending mortals, are
 (For all your crimes) so much the care
 Of him that bears the thunder.

Jove can endure no longer
 Your great ones should your less invade;
 Or that your weak, though bad, be made
 A prey unto the stronger²;

And therefore means to settle
 Astræa in her seat again;
 And let down in his golden chain
 The Age of better metal.

Which deed he doth the rather,
 That even Envy may behold
 Time not enjoy'd his head of gold
 Alone beneath his father,

¹ From the first folio edition of Jonson's Works, 1616. "This Masque," remarks Mr. Gifford, "is written with great care; the conclusion of it is highly poetical. It must have been a splendid and interesting performance." The names of the performers do not appear. N.

² This may, without presumption, be supposed to allude to the passing events of the day, the fall of "the stronger" Somerset, and the exposure of his having made a prey of the "weaker, though bad," Overbury. If so, Jonson's beautiful mode of improving so hateful a subject, is above all praise; it is performing the true office of a Poet, *prodesse quàm delectare*. N.

But that his care conserveth,
 As Time, so all Time's honours too,
 Regarding still what Heaven should do,
 And not what Earth deserveth.

A tumult and clashing of arms within.

But hark! what tumult from yon cave is heard?
 What noise, what strife, what earthquake and alarms,
 As troubled Nature for her Maker fear'd;
 And all the Iron Age were up in arms!
 Hide me, soft cloud, from their profaner eyes,
 Till insolent Rebellion take the field;
 And as their spirits with their counsels rise,
 I frustrate all with showing but my shield.

She retires behind a cloud.

The IRON AGE presents itself, calling forth the Evils.

IRON AGE. Come forth, come forth, do we not hear
 What purpose, and how worth our fear,
 The King of Gods hath on us?
 He is not of the Iron breed,
 That would, though Fate did help the deed,
 Let shame in so upon us.

Rise, rise then up, thou grandame Vice
 Of all my issue, Avarice,
 Bring with thee Fraud and Slander,
 Corruption with the golden hands,
 Or any subtler Ill, that stands
 To be a more commander.

Thy boys, Ambition, Pride, and Scorn,
 Force, Rapine, and thy babe last born,
 Smooth Treachery¹, call hither;
 Arm Folly forth, and Ignorance,
 And teach them all our Pyrrhic dance;
 We may triumph together,

Upon this enemy so great,
 Whom if our forces can defeat,
 And but this once bring under,
 We are the masters of the skies,
 Where all the wealth, height, power lies,
 The sceptre and the thunder.

¹ Another allusion to Somerset's crimes. N.

Which of you would not, in a war
 Attempt the price of any scar,
 To keep your own states even?
 But here, which of you is that he,
 Would not himself the weapon be,
 To ruin Jove and Heaven?

About it then, and let him feel
 The Iron Age is turn'd to Steel,
 Since he begins to threat her;
 And though the bodies here are less
 Than were the giants; he'll confess
 Our malice is far greater.

The Evils enter for the Antimasque, and Dance to two drums, trumpets, and a confusion of martial music; at the end of which, PALLAS re-appears, shewing her shield. The Evils are turned to Statues.

PALLAS. So change, and perish, scarcely knowing how,
 That 'gainst the Gods do take so vain a vow,
 And think to equal with your mortal dates
 Their lives that are obnoxious to no fates.—
 'Twas time t' appear, and let their folly see,
 'Gainst whom they fought, and with what destiny.
 Die all, that can remain of you, but stone,
 And that be seen a while, and then be none!
 Now, now descend, you both belov'd of Jove,
 And of the good on earth no less the love.

The scene changes; and she calls ASTRÆA and the GOLDEN AGE.

Descend, you long, long-wish'd and wanted pair,
 And, as your softer times divide the air,
 So shake all clouds off with your golden hair;
 For Spite is spent; the Iron Age is fled,
 And, with her power on earth, her name is dead.

ASTRÆA and the GOLDEN AGE descending with a Song.

ASTRÆA. And are we then

GOLDEN AGE. To live agen,
 With men?

ASTRÆA. Will Jove such pledges to the Earth restore
 As justice?

GOLDEN AGE. Or the purer ore?

PALLAS. Once more.

GOLDEN AGE. *But do they know,
How much they owe?
Below?*

ASTRÆA. *And will of grace receive it, not as due?*

PALLAS. *If not, they harm themselves, not you.*

ASTRÆA. *True.*

GOLDEN AGE. *True.*

Chorus. *Let narrow natures, how they will, mistake,
The great should still be good for their own sake.
They come forward.*

PALLAS. *Welcome to earth, and reign.*

ASTRÆA, *But how, without a train*

GOLDEN AGE. *Shall we our state sustain?*

PALLAS. *Leave that to Jove; therein you are
No little part of his Minerva's care.
Expect awhile.—*

You far-fam'd spirits of this happy Isle,
That, for your sacred songs have gain'd the style
Of Phœbus' sons, whose notes the air aspire
Of th' old Egyptian, or the Thracian lyre,
That CHAUCER, GOWER, LIDGATE, SPENSER hight,
Put on your better flames and larger light,
To wait upon the Age that shall your names new nourish,
Since Virtue press'd shall grow, and buried Arts shall flourish.

CHAUCER. GOWER. We come.

LIDGATE. SPENSER. We come.

Omnes. Our best of fire
Is that which Pallas doth inspire.
They descend.

PALLAS. Then see you yonder souls, set far within the shade,
That in Elysian bowers the blessed seats do keep,
That for their living good, now semi-gods are made,
And went away from earth, as if but tam'd with sleep¹?
These we must join to wake; for these are of the strain
That justice dare defend, and will the Age sustain.

¹ This is from Hesiod: *ὅντιν' ὡς ὑπνῷ δεδμημένοι.* It is remarkable that Ovid, who, in his description of the Golden Age, copied Hesiod, has neglected to take notice of so beautiful a circumstance. WHALLEY.

Quire. *Awake, awake, for whom these times were kept,
O wake, wake, wake, as you had never slept !
Make haste and put on air¹, to be their guard,
Whom once but to defend is still reward.*

PALLAS. Thus Pallas throws a lightning from her shield.

The scene of light discovered.

Quire. *To which let all that doubtful darkness yield.*

ASTRÆA. Now Peace.

GOLDEN AGE. And Love.

ASTRÆA. Faith.

GOLDEN AGE. Joys.

ASTRÆA AND GOLDEN AGE. All, all increase. *A pause.*

CHAUCER. And Strife.

GOWER. And Hate.

LIDGATE. And Fear.

SPENSER. And Pain.

OMNES. All cease.

PALLAS. No tumour of an Iron vein.
The causes shall not come again.

Quire. *But, as of old, all now be gold.
Move, move then to the sounds ;
And do not only walk your solemn rounds,
But give those light and airy bounds,
That fit the Genii of these gladder grounds.*

The First Dance.

PALLAS. Already do not all things smile ?

ASTRÆA. But when they have enjoy'd a while
The Age's quickening power ;
That every thought a seed doth bring,
And every look a plant doth spring,
And every breath a flower.

PALLAS. The earth unplough'd shall yield her crop,
Pure honey from the oak shall drop,
The fountain shall run milk ;
The thistle shall the lily bear,
And every bramble roses wear,
And every worm make silk.

¹ Also from Hesiod : *πνερα εστραμανος*.

Quire. *The very shrub shall balsam sweat,
And nectar melt the rock with heat,
Till Earth have drank her fill ;
That she no harmful weed may know,
Nor barren fern, nor mandrake low,
Nor mineral to kill.*

Here the Main Dance; after which,

PALLAS. But here's not all; you must do more,
Or else you do but half restore
The Age's liberty.

POETS. The male and female used to join,
And into all delight did coin
That pure simplicity.

Then Feature did to Form advance,
And Youth call'd Beauty forth to dance,
And every Grace was by ;
It was a time of no distrust,
So much of love had nought of lust,
None fear'd a jealous eye.

The language melted in the ear,
Yet all without a blush might hear ;
They liv'd with open vow¹.

Quire. *Each touch and kiss was so well placed,
They were as sweet as they were chaste,
And such must yours' be now.*

Here they dance with the Ladies.

ASTRÆA. What change is here? I had not more
Desire to leave the Earth before,
Than I have now to stay ;
My silver feet, like roots, are wreath'd
Into the ground, my wings are sheath'd,
And I can not away.

Of all there seems a second birth,
It is become a Heaven on Earth,
And Jove is present here.
I feel the Godhead ; nor will doubt
But he can fill the place throughout,
Whose power is everywhere.

¹ Aperto vivere voto. Persius.—GIFFORD.

This, this, and only such as this,
 The bright Astræa's region is,
 Where she would pray to live,
 And in the midst of so much gold,
 Unbought with grace, or fear unsold,
 The law to mortals give.

Here they dance the Galliards and Corantos.

PALLAS ascending, calls the POETS :

PALLAS. 'Tis now enough ; behold you here,
 What Jove hath built to be your sphere,
 You hither must retire ;
 And as his bounty gives you cause,
 Be ready still without your pause,
 To shew the world your fire.

Like lights about Astræa's throne,
 You here must shine, and all be one,
 In fervour and in flame ;
 That by your union she may grow,
 And you, sustaining her, may know
 The Age still by her name.

Who vows, against or heat or cold,
 To spin your garments of her gold,
 That want may touch you never ;
 And making garlands every hour,
 To write your names in some new flower,
 That you may live for ever.

Quire. *To Jove, to Jove, be all the honour given,
 That thankful hearts can raise from Earth to Heaven*¹.

¹ "It is with regret," remarks Mr. Gifford, "I inform the reader that the excellent old folio here deserts us. I am not quite sure that the concluding pages enjoyed the benefit of Jonson's superintendence ; but as by far the greatest portion of the volume undoubtedly did, it is come down to us one of the correctest works that ever issued from the English press.—The second folio, which has a medley of dates from 1630 to 1641, has no such advantages. No part of it, I am well persuaded, was seen by Jonson ; as, exclusive of the press-errors, which are very numerous, there is a confusion in the names of the speakers, which he could not have overlooked. I have revised it with all imaginable care, and endeavoured to preserve that uniformity of arrangement of which he was apparently so solicitous."

On the 2d of January, the Earl of Worcester was made Privy Seal, he giving up the place of Master of the Horse into the King's hands the day before ¹.

"On the 3d, Sir Thomas Lake was sworn one of the Principal Secretaries².

"On the 4th, Sir George Villiers was sworn Master of the Horse, in the room of the Earl of Worcester³."

On Twelfth-night was the second performance of Ben Jonson's Masque of "The Golden Age Restored," to which the French, Venetian, and Savoyard Ambassadors were invited. This invitation having been deferred from New Year's-night, from a punctilio of the French Ambassador, "they were received," says Sir John Finett, "at eight of the clock, the houre assigned (no supper being prepared for them, as at other times to avoid the trouble incident), and were conducted to the Privy Gallery by the Lord Chamberlaine and the Lord Danvers, appointed (an honour more then had been formerly done to Ambassadors Ordinary,) to accompany them, the Master of the Ceremonies being also present. They were all three placed at the Maske on the King's right-hand (not right out, but byas forward); first and next to the King the French, next him the Venetian, and next him the Savoyard. At his Majestie's left-hand sate the Queene, and next her the Prince. The Followers of the French were placed in a seate reserved for them above, over the King's right-hand; the others in one on the left. The Spanish Ambassador's son, and the Agent of the Archduke (who invited himself), were bestowed on the forme where the Lords sit, next beneath the Barons, English, Scottish, and Irish; as the sonnns of the Ambassadors of Venice and of Savoy had been placed the Maske-night before, but who were this night placed with their countrymen in the Gallery mentioned. The Maske being ended, they followed his Majesty to a Banquet in the Presence [Chamber], and returned by the way they entered.

"At a Reading in the Middle Temple, held by Mr. Martin, were invited to Dinner the former three Ambassadors and the States' Ambassador Sir Noel Caron also. At the table's end sate the Reader; on his left-hand on the bench next the wall sate the French Ambassador; beneath him on that side the Savoyard; then the Earle of Worcester, &c. On the Reader's right-hand on a forme sate first the Venetian, beneath him the States' Ambassador, next him the Lord Lysle, &c. It was observable that at this time the States' Ambassador (as

¹ See before, pp. 13, 100.

² See pp. 2, 13, 18.

³ Camden's Annals.

appeares) made no scruple of quitting the precedence to that of the Duke of Savoye, which they have since questioned and still stand upon ¹."

"On the 13th of January, towards night, William Monson, brother of Sir Thomas ², is carried to the Tower. On the same day, Simon Digby comes from Spain with letters. On the 19th, the Earl of Somerset and his Countess are indicted of felony, and the Billa Vera is found by the Jury.

"The King departs from London to Royston ³."

On the 22d of January, the King made the following Knights at Theobalds :

Sir Thomas Peryent.

Sir John Leigh.

Sir Robert Leigh.

Sir John Suckling ⁴.

Sir Robert Offeley.

On the 27th, Sir Thomas Bland was knighted at Newmarket; whither, says Sir John Finett, "the Ambassador of Savoy comming to the King on the second of March, was by me fetcht and conducted, in the Lord Chamberlaine's (not the King's) coach with foure horses, in company of the Lord Worcester, Sir James Spence, and Sir William Anstroder, from his lodging two miles out of towne there to the Presence-chamber, where he attended till the Lord Chamberlain comming forth of the King's Withdrawing-chamber brought him to his Audience there. This done, the Ambassador requested me to moove the Prince for the honour to kisse his hand. But it was objected, that the demand should have been more seasonably made before the very instant of pretending to it. Whereto the Ambassador replied, that he had no spare time for it between that of his arrivall at Court and his immediate repaire to his Majesty; which excuse admitted, he was immediately introduced to his Highnesse in his lodgings.

"March the sixteenth, I brought the States' Ambassador, Sir Noel Caron, to an Audience at Theobalds, after he had attended a while at the Lord Fenton's lodgings, and was called up to his Majesty in the Privy-gallery ⁵." Two Belgians

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 31.

² See before, p. 122.

³ Camden's Annals.

⁴ Father of the accomplished Poet of the same names. He was probably the person of whom Mr. John More says in a letter to Mr. Winwood, Dec. 21, 1604: "Mr. Suckling is preferred to Sir Arthur Atty's place of Collectorship" [qu. of what? Sir Arthur Atty, Principal of St. Alban Hall, and Orator of the University of Oxford was then lately dead.] He afterwards became Comptroller of the King's Household, and in March 1622 was appointed one of the Principal Secretaries of State. He resided at Whitton, in the parish of Kensington, where his son Sir John was baptized Feb. 10, 1608-9. See Lysons's Environs.

⁵ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 32.

of the Ambassador's retinue, Sir Giles and Sir Cornelius Waterfleet, received the honour of knighthood.

On the same day, says Camden, "the King returned to London."

"On the 19th of March, my Lord Binning¹, a Scot, is chosen into the King's Privy Council²."

On the 21st, our accurate annalist, Sir John Finett³, was himself knighted at

¹ This great man, originally styled Sir Thomas Hamilton, of Priestfield, was born 1563, studied the law in France; was admitted Advocate 1587, and soon distinguished himself at the bar by talents and learning, was in 1592 appointed a Lord of Session, by the title of Lord Drumcairn. In 1595 he was constituted one of the eight Commissioners of the Treasury and Exchequer, called from their number Octavians; and soon after appointed King's Advocate. In 1604 he was nominated by the Parliament of Scotland, one of the Commissioners for the projected Union; in May 1612 he was received Lord Clerk Register of Scotland; and in October following he succeeded Sir Alexander Hay as Secretary of State. He was raised to the Peerage in 1613 by the title of Lord Binning and Byres. In 1616 he was appointed Lord President of the Court of Session. By patent, dated Newmarket, March 20, 1619-20, he was advanced to the title of Earl of Melrose; but, after the death of Sir John Ramsey, Viscount of Haddington, judging it more honourable to take his style from a county than an abbey, he obtained another patent, dated Bagshot, Aug. 27, 1627, suppressing the title of Melrose, and creating him Earl of Haddington. His Lordship continued Secretary of State and President of the Court of Session till Feb. 15, 1626, when he was constituted Keeper of the Privy Seal. He died May 29, 1637, aged 73. He discovered considerable acuteness in the Session, and by means of the lucrative offices he enjoyed, acquired one of the largest fortunes of the time, and, vesting his acquisitions in landed property, his wealth was still further increased by the discovery of several valuable mines, particularly one of silver. Charles, the present and eighth Earl of Haddington, is this Nobleman's lineal descendant. See more fully in Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, I. 678.

² Camden's Annals.

³ Sir John Finett, says Anthony à Wood, (*Fasti*, by Bliss, vol. I. col. 492) was son of Sir Robert Finett, of Souton near Dover in Kent, son and heir of Thomas, son and heir of John Finett, of Sienna in Italy (where his name is antient), who came into England in quality of servant to Cardinal Campegius, and married a maid of honour to Queen Katharine. "Sir John was always bred in the Court, where by his wit, innocent mirth, and great skill in composing songs, he pleased James the First very much. He was sent into France in 1614, about matters of public concern, and in the year after received the honour of knighthood at Whitehall; about which time [or rather about 1612] he was made Assistant to the Master of the Ceremonies, with the reversion of that place. Upon the death of Sir Lewis Lewknor, it was conferred upon him March 12, 1626, he being then in good esteem with Charles I." His "*Finetti Philoxenis*" has been already noticed in vol. II. p. 465. He also published a translation from the French of R. de Lusing: "*The Beginning, Continuance, and Decay of Estates, &c.* 1606," 4to. He died July 12, 1641, and was buried in St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, by the side of his wife Jane, daughter of Henry Lord Wentworth of Nettlestead, and sister

Whitehall, "upon pretence," says Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, March 27, that "he should have a widow that must needs be a Lady."

On the 23d of March, "when the King came to Whitehall," the Ringers of St. Margaret's, Westminster, were paid 2s. 6d. On the same day "a Messenger from Russia came to his Audience there; who not being qualified with the title of Ambassador, I onely (with no Lord to receive him) met him at the Court-gate, and brought him to the Councill-chamber. He was, after an houre and an halfe attendance there, sent for by one of my Lord Chamberlain's Gentlemen, received in the Stone-table Chamber by that Lord, and in the next admitted to the Presence of his Majesty.

"The foure-and-twentieth of March (being the King's day of comming to the Crowne of England, and that yeare Sunday,) a Tilting then prepared for, was put off till the day following. That evening a question falling between his Majesty and some Lords, whether some, all, or no Ambassadors were to be invited, the Lord Chamberlain askt me, 'if I knew whether ever the Spanish Ambassador (Sarmiento) had been invited to that solemnity.' I said he had, and upon search of my notes found that at the Earle of Somerset's Marriage he, the Arch-duke's Ambassador, and both their Ladies had been present at a Tilting. This precedent brought, over-ruled his Majesty (who seemed inclined otherwise) to invite the French, Venetian, and Savoyard (never before at any Tilting), and now not willingly called to this, because of the troubles that those publique Ministers usually brought by their punctillios at such incounters. Sir Lewes Lewkner was sent the evening before to the French and the Venetian, and I to that of Savoy. The next day at two of the clock he received the two first, and I the latter at the stayre-foote of the Tilt-yard Gallery, and conducted them to the Chambers next that of ordinary Audiences, where they all attending till his Majesty and the Queen passed that way, they were taken along with them to the Tilting. They were seated thus: the French on the left-hand of the King with his back to the side of the balconie window, and somewhat sidelong from the Queen, that being held the best place after the Prince's place on the King's right-hand; beneath whom sate the Venetian, both their backs to the balcony; and the Savoyard on the other side beneath the French Ambassador¹."

of the Earl of Cleveland. Her first husband, if she was a widow as Mr. Chamberlain says, is not mentioned by Brydges (under the title of Wentworth, vol. IV. p. 206).

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 33.

“ TYLT DECIMO-QUARTO REGIS JACOBI, 1616¹.”

ERLE OF PEMBROKE, Lord Cham ⁿ .	EARLE OF ARUNDELL.
EARLE OF RUTLAND.	LORD WALDEN,
EARLE OF DORSETT.	EARLE OF MONTGOMERY.
LORD HAY.	LORD DINGWELL.
SIR GILBERT GERARD.	SIR THOMAS HOWARD.
SIR SIGISMUND ALEXANDER.	MR. HENRY HOWARD.
SIR HENRY RICHE.	MR. HENRY ALEXANDER.

JUDGES.

THE LORD BURGHLEY. THE LORD KNOLLES. SIR HENRY CARYE².”

On the 27th of March, Mr. Chamberlain resumed his correspondence to Sir Dudley Carleton, who, after having spent some months in England, was now resident at the Hague as Ambassador to the States of the United Provinces:

“ The King came to town the 16th, and visited the Queen at Greenwich a day or two after. She is said not to be well, but troubled with her usual infirmity. Yet she came to the Tilting on Monday the 25th of the present, which was performed but very indifferently, they say, though there were four Earls, Arundel, Rutland, Dorset, and Montgomery, besides seven others of good sort², and three of the Lord Treasurer’s sons. But the Lord Dingwell and the Lord Hay carried away the bell for good running. Yet the Lord Hay came very lately out of a fit of the gout, which suddenly fixed on him without any warning, and before he suspected any such matter. He is providing to go in embassy into France, where he means to be very gay and gallant.

“ As the King came from Newmarket he had a Play at Royston, acted by some of the younger sons of our Cantabrigians. He had heard it commended, and so would needs have it, bearing their charges³.”

¹ From the volume in Camden’s autograph, Harl. MSS. 5176.—All these Tilters but Sir Gilbert Gerrard had appeared in one or all of the Tilts on the three last King’s Days; see vol. II. pp. 609, 759; and this volume, p. 76; and Sir Gilbert occurs again when Lord Gerard in 1617-18 and 1621-2 (see pp. 473, 754).

² Mr. Chamberlain should have said “ five Earls (including Pembroke), and six others,” &c.

³ With his next letter Mr. Chamberlain sent Sir D. Carleton, “ a proper piece of heraldry [*sic*], being a part of the Play or Shew our young Cambridge Scholars presented to the King at Royston.”—From this it might be presumed that the Play was printed; but, although that were the case, I have not ascertained its name. There is, indeed, one Cambridge Comedy said to have been represented before King James the First, the date of the performance of which does not appear; it is *Labyrinth*, by Mr. Hawkesworth, and its first known edition was published in 1636.

Free Gifts in the Thirteenth Year of the King's Reign, 1615-16.

To Wm. Shaa ¹ , out of Bounty	£.1500	ship called the Pearle -	£.6000
Sir Geo. Ramsey, out of Bounty	1000	The Earl of Nottingham ⁶ -	1500
Sir James Oughterlony ² , out of		John Berkley ⁷ - - -	250
Bounty - - - -	1800	Thos. Dempster, historiographer ⁸	200
Francis Tirrel - - - -	300	John Garrett ⁹ - - -	20
Sir David Murray ³ , to pay his		The Lord Viscount Hadington ¹⁰	800
debts - - - -	5200	Sir Arthur Ingram, in reward	
Sir Robert Douglas ⁴ - - -	1000	for his pains taken about the	
Peter de Moulyn, D. D. lately		allum business ¹¹ - -	666
come out of France ⁵	300	William Parkhurst - -	500
Philip Jacobson, merchant, out		Total sum -	£.21,036
of the goods forfeited in the			

On the 31st of March, it being Easter-sunday, Bishop Andrews preached his wonted Sermon before the King at Whitehall,—on 1 Peter, i. 34 ¹².

On the 2d of April, Henry ¹³, second son of Lord D'Aubigny, was Christened at the Royal Chapel, Whitehall ¹⁴. The Officers of the Vestry had as fees 40s. ¹⁵

By patent dated Whitehall, April 2, John second Lord Maitland of Thirlestane (and afterward Earl of Lauderdale) was created Viscount of Lauderdale ¹⁶.

“On the 3d, Sir John Digby, who the week before returned out of Spain, is elected one of the Privy Council, and Vice-Chamberlain of the King's Household, in the room of my Lord Stanhope, who was persuaded by the King's letters to give place. The same day the King retired to Newmarket, after having appointed Sir Oliver St. John ¹⁷ Lord Lieutenant of Ireland ¹⁸,”

On the 4th, his Majesty knighted at Theobalds, Sir Francis Henderson, *Scotus* ¹⁹.

¹ See vol. II. p. 288. ² Ibid. ³ Ibid. p. 374. ⁴ Ibid. p. 245. ⁵ See before, p. 98.

⁶ He received £.11,072 the preceding, and £.1500 the next year. ⁷ See vol. II. p. 247.

⁸ Of this learned Scotchman there is a long memoir in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

⁹ Who had £.20 the following year.

¹⁰ See vol. II. p. 160.

¹¹ See vol. II. p. 288; and this volume, p. 8.

¹² It is one of his “XCVI Sermons,” the Eleventh on the Resurrection.

¹³ He died young. Douglas's Peerage of Scotland, by Wood, vol. II. p. 101.

¹⁴ See the Christening of his elder brother, in vol. II. p. 442.

¹⁵ Malcolm's London, vol. IV. p. 275.

¹⁶ See hereafter, p. 1028.

¹⁷ See p. 105.

¹⁸ Camden's Annals.

¹⁹ Termed “Captayn” in my MS. list of Knights.

On the 6th of April, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“All the alteration that we have since I wrote last is, that the same day [March 27] the Lady of Somerset was committed to the Tower upon so short warning that she had scant leisure to shed a few tears over her little daughter¹ at the parting. Otherwise she carried herself very constantly enough, saving that she did passionately deprecate and intreat the Lieutenant, that she might not be lodged in Sir Thomas Overbury’s lodging; so that he was fain to remove himself out of his own chamber for two or three nights, till Sir Walter Raleigh’s lodging might be furnished and made fit for her².

“It is thought the Lady of Suffolk’s unexpected coming to town the Saturday before [March 22] did her no good, but rather hastened her commitment. Her arraignment was fully resolved should be the 15th of this present, and her Lord’s the day following, being the Monday and Tuesday before the Term; and the Lord Chancellor was appointed to be Lord High Steward for that time. But since it is put off till St. George’s-day; which falling in the midst of the Term, makes some think the matter may be further delayed³. There is great means, they say, made for them, and the Queen is an earnest suitor for her, whatsoever the success will be.

“The King went hence on Wednesday to Theobalds, and so to Chesterford, a park of the Lord Treasurer’s⁴, where he is to hunt, and enter his buck-hounds. The Lord Walden went down before to prepare all things and take order for the entertainment⁵.”

Again on the 20th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to his friend as follows:

“The King comes to Town this night from Theobalds to celebrate St. George’s Feast, and goes back on Wednesday towards Newmarket and Thetford.

“The Lord of Somerset’s and his Lady’s arraignment should hold the 29th of this present, but I hear it is deferred till the 6th of May, or God knows when; for the world apprehends that these delays are to some such end, the rather for that there is a new Commission to examine and proceed in this cause, wherein the Lord Chief Justice is omitted⁶. And on Wednesday and this day the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of Lennox, and the Attorney General [Sir Francis Bacon] have

¹ See p. 123.

² Sir Walter had been just released, and was now preparing for his unfortunate voyage to Guiana.

³ It was so,—till May 23 and 24.

⁴ See vol. II. p. 756.

⁵ Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁶ See p. 123; and hereafter, under June 22.

been at the Tower to examine the Lord of Somerset, not contenting themselves with what the Lord Coke had done before, who meddles no more since he delivered his papers and examinations to the Attorney to draw the process, and inform thereupon.

“Sir George Villiers hath been crazy of late, not without suspicion of the small-pox; which if it had fallen out, *actum erat de amicitia*¹. But it proves otherwise; and we say there is much casting about how to make him a great man, and that he shall be now made of the Garter; but *non credo*. His great friend and favourite Sir John Grimes, a known Courtier, died about a fortnight since, and was solemnly buried in the night at Westminster, with better than 200 torches, the Duke of Lennox, the Lord Fenton, the Lord of Roxburgh, and all the great Scottish Men accompanying him; in an apish imitation whereof, as it is now supposed, certain rude knaves thereabouts burned a dog with great solemnity in Tothill-fields, by night with good store of links! which was so heavily taken that divers of them have been whipt by order from the Council, though upon examination the matter proved not so much in degradation of the Scots, seeing some of them were found to be ringleaders in that foolery.

“The Spanish Ambassador was yesterday with the King at Theobalds, where, among other things, he complained of a kind of partiality too visible to pass in silence, that whereas we keep Ambassadors at Venice and in the Low Countries, an Agent serves the turn in Spain and with the Archduke².”

“St. George’s Feast being come,” says Sir John Finett, “the French Ambassador (without notice given to him, or from him of his coming to Court for sight of the solemnity,) was present onely with Sir George —eere, a Gentleman Usher of the Privy-chamber, in the Closet of the Chappell, for sight of the Procession, both without Sir Lewes Lewkner’s, or my attendance, as his prepare to Court was without our knowledge. His omission of not making known to the King or his Lord Chamberlain (as other Ambassadors had been accustomed) his desire to see the Feast, might have brought him to some inconvenience, worse then loosing his dinner (which the Spanish Ambassador had the year before), as this might also have had at the Lord Chamberlain’s tables.

“About the middle of the King’s dinner, Mr. Secretary Winwood, meeting me, wisht me to accompany him where he was all alone in the Closet, and to bring

¹ Mr. Chamberlain, it is presumed, meant to hint that James would have turned off the Favourite when his good looks were spoiled.

² Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

him to see the King and the Knights at dinner. This I performed, and conducted him to the Banqueting-house, where, placing himselfe at the left-hand of his Majesty dining, he entertained discourse with him about an houre, and after (upon my intimation of the fitnessse of it), he descended to the side table, and saluted the Prince and Knights of the Order, passing along before them; and thence returning by the Privy Galleries, took coach in the Parke to go to his lodgings¹."

On the same day, Fennor, the rhymster², was allowed to repeat before the King, a Poem on the Order of the Garter, which is contained in the ensuing curious Poetical Tract:

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 34.

² William Fennor was an actor at the Swan, on which pretence he styled himself "his Majestie's Servant;" (see an account of the different dramatic corps in Gilbert Dugdale's "Time Triumphant," in vol. I. p. 413). He performed at that Theatre in the Melodrame of "England's Joy;" see vol. II. p. 399, and hereafter, under Ben Jonson's Masque of Augurs, 1621. In the *Censura Literaria*, vol. X. p. 300, is an analysis of another production of Fennor, entitled, "The Compter's Commonwealth; or, a Voiage made to an Infernall Iland," &c. published in 4to, 1617. It is dated from Wood-street Compter, and describes the vices and miseries of that prison-house; and Mr. Haslewood gives some very curious extracts. The poetry of Fennor is much on a par with that of Taylor the Water-poet. From their rivalry, indeed, originated a dispute, conducted by the following tracts (the titles of which are here taken from the list of Taylor's Works, given in the sixth volume of the *Censura Literaria*): "Taylor's Revenge; or the rimer Wil. Fennor firkt, ferritted, and finely fetcht over the coals."—"Fennor's defence against John Taylor, or I am your first man," &c.—"A cast over the water by John Taylor, given gratis to Will. Fennor the rimer, from London to the King's Bench;" from which it seems probable that poor Fennor paid a visit to the King's Bench as well as the Compter. — In vol. I. p. 142, he was erroneously confounded with Richard Vennard, a totally distinct author.



FENNOR'S DESCRIPTIONS;

OR,

A TRUE RELATION OF CERTAIN AND DIVERS SPEECHES,

SPOKEN BEFORE

THE KING AND QUEENE'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTIE,

THE PRINCE HIS HIGHNESSE, AND THE LADY ELIZABETH'S GRACE.

By WILLIAM FENNOR, his Majestie's Servante¹.

To the Right Honorable WILLIAM EARL OF PEMBROKE, Lord Chamberlaine of his Majestie's Houshold, Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter, &c.

This silly Infant, born before the time,
Got life by reason, though begot in ryme
By his true Father; she is very yong,
And yet, as females quickly find a tongue,
So doth this changeling babble for a Patron,
Forsakes his Father, and out-runnes his Matron.
At length for his protection she hath found,
Your Honour, with a wreath of vertues crown'd,
To whom hirselle she humbly dedicates,
That knew hir birth and breeding. Let the Fates
Prove happy to the end of your life's race,
To crown your greatnesse with immortall grace.

Your Honor's ever bounden in all duties, WILLIAM FENNOR.

TO THE GENTLEMEN READERS.

Worthy Gentlemen, of what degree soever, I suppose this Pamphlet will hap into your hands before a Play begin, with the importunate clamour of "Buy a new Booke!" by some needy companion that will be glad to furnish you with worke for a turned

¹ "London: "Printed by Edward Griffin for George Gibbs, and are to be sold at his shop in Paul's Church-yard, at the signe of the Flower Deluce, 1616." There is a copy of this tract in the Bodleian Library. It is priced at £.5. 5s. in the Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica. A copy, bound up with Maria de Franchis's Hymne on the Marriage of the Princess Elizabeth, (of which see vol. II. p. 625,) was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Jan 15, 1819, and purchased by Mr. Hill for £.6. 16s. 6d. N.

teaster'. I rest well assured some of you will know mee at the sight of the Infant; to such I commend it for acquaintance sake. Others (I make no question) have heard of me; to those I send it, in hope of better acquaintance. A third sort (it may be) never knew mee, nor I thinke care not whether ever they doe or not; to them I present it as carelessly as unthrifts spend their annuities. Last to Criticks, I wish it may hap as sel-dome into their hands as usurers give almes, or lawyers plead *pro nihil*. If any chance to say my intention runs low, in regard I sell relations for demonstrations, to such I answere, not like a light huswife that will be wonne before she be wooed, but like a chaste virgin that would be scarce wonne with wooing; as for example, it is three yeares since I spake some of these Speeches, and since that time I have beene earnestly intreated by noble personages (who have had private copies for their own use) to print it for publike delight; at length I consented, and since I am won, "have amongst you, gallants, let it speed as it will!" This is my comfort, howere it prove in the reading, it was well liked in the rehearsing, by that Imperial Power, for whose prosperous continuance we all are in dutie bound to pray.

Farewell. Yours in honest mirth, W. F.

IN LAUDEM AUTHORIS.

What enthusiasmos, what celestial spirit,
 What sacred fury doth thy braines inherit?
 When as without the libertie of time,
 With reason thou dost couch thy witty ryme
 So quick, so nimble, and acute, that all
 Wise men will hold thy wit canonicall.
 Why shouldst thou not then weare a wreath of bayes,
 Nay, a whole grove of laurell to thy praise
 On thy ingenious temples, seeing no man
 Can match thee, our time's best Ovidian?
 Though in this wit-blest age there's many men,
 Have gain'd them endlesse glory by their penne;
 Yet none of these could ever say like thee,
 That what they writ was done extempore.
 Therefore, were I thy Patrone, and posset
 But halfe that wealthe wherewith some men are blest,
 Thou shouldst for ever in thy life inherite
 Meanes as were correspondent to thy merit;
 And being dead thy name should live enroll'd
 Not in coarse parchment, but rich leaves of gold.

JOHN MELTONNE².

¹ This is a very curious record of an ancient custom. Books, even of repute, were cried as late as 1700. Fosbroke's Enc. of Antiq. N.

² This person was Author of "The Astrologaster, or the Figure-caster; rather the arraignment of artlesse Astrologers and Fortune-tellers," &c. 1620, 4to, of which see the full title in the British Bibliographer, vol. 1. p. 531. It is dedicated to his father Evan Melton, and has encomiastic verses prefixed from John Maslin, M. A. Trinity College, Cambridge, and John Hancocke, B. A. Brazenose College, Oxford. N.

IN LAUDEM AUTHORIS.

Why hath thy pen been hid in obscure shades,
 Or thy lines lockt in the darke wombe of night,
 Which being publisht, when thy body fades
 In earth's deep cavernes, may give others light?
 Thy Muse the love of Noblemen perswades
 To shelter her by their protecting might,
 'Gainst pining Envy, who with rusty blades
 Stands opposite against good workes to fighte;
 With belching Hate, who her full gorge unlades,
 To make wit loathsome in the vulgar sight
 Of men illiterate, and mechanicke trades,
 That scarce can judge betwixt the wrong and right
 Of thy indeavours, which the heart invades
 Of worth to praise thee, what though criticks byte;
 And through the gulfe of base disliking wades,
 So farre untill she drowne herselfe in spight
 Of all man's succour. Other wincing jades
 Can like of nothing, but all things indight
 To their own censures; but bright fame shall spread
 Her leaves where thou shalt live, when thou art dead!

THOMAS GUNSON.

TO HIS FRIEND MR. FENNOR.

I prayse not thee, because thou art my friend,
 Nor would I hate thee, if thou wert my foe;
 But these good parts in thee I must commend,
 Which Art and Nature did on thee bestow
 In thy blest cradle; but goe forward still,
 Make thy friends sharers of thy nimble quill.

J. B.

THE CONTENTS.

1. The Description of a Poet.
2. The Description of the Palsegrave's countrey, with an addition of the Marriage betwixt the Prince and Princesse, &c.
3. Cupid's journey to Germany, with the effects of the same.
4. The originall of the most Noble Order of the Garter.
5. The deciding of the difference betwixt Oxford and Cambridge, about the King's Entertainment.
6. The Gowries', and Gunpowder Treason.
7. A Parliament of Gods, in a Pastorall Song.

THE DESCRIPTION OF A POET.

A Poet's life is most unfortunate,
 Governed by starres of high malignant fate;
 Yet for his worth thus high my pen shall raise him,
 The rankled tooth of envy never stayes him
 From writing nobly. A true Poet can
 Describe the inside of an outward man;
 Kill him in 's life-time, make him live being dead,
 His lines with bayes adorne the victor's head.
 This is his chiefest blessing—to be good;
 But when his writings are not understood,
 Oh! 'tis a plague beyond man's patient thought,
 What he makes good a multitude makes nought.
 A horrid murtherer, or a base thiefe,
 In his foule bosome harbers lesser grieve
 Then Heaven-bred Poesye; they shall be tryed
 By upright justice, and their faults descried
 Before a publike bench, hold up their hand
 And plead "Not guiltie;" on their just cause stand
 Twelve men empannelled to finde this out
 Before the sentence passe, to cleere the doubt
 Of judging rashly. But sweet Poesye
 Is oft convict; condemn'd, and judg'd to die
 Without just triall, by a multitude,
 Whose judgements are illiterate and rude.
 Witness Scejanus¹, whose approved worth
 Sounds from the calme South to the freezing North;
 And on the perfum'd wings of Zepherus,
 In triumph mounts as farre as Æolus;
 With more than humane art it was bedewed,
 Yet to the multitude it nothing shewed;
 They screw'd their scurvy jaws and lookt awry,
 Like hissing snakes, adjudging it to die;
 When wits of gentry did applaud the same,
 With silver shouts of high loud-sounding fame;

¹ The Tragedy by Ben Jonson, which had been first produced in 1603. It was a Poem, which, as Jonson allows in his Dedication to Lord D'Aubigny, written about this time (1616), "if I well remember, in your Lordship's sight, suffered no less violence from our people here, than the subject of it did from the rage of the people of Rome." It was first published in 4to, 1605, with several commendatory verses. In 1616, when it was published in folio, it had, continues Jonson, outlived the malice of his enemies; and it was one of the first plays, says Mr. Gifford, which was revived after the Restoration of Charles the Second. N.

Whilst understanding-grounded men ¹ contemn'd it,
 And wanting wit (like fools) to judge, condemn'd it.
 Clapping or hissing is the onely meane
 That tries and searches out a well-writ sceane ;
 So it is thought by Ignoramus crew,
 But that, good wits acknowledge, is untrue ;
 The stinckards oft will hisse without a cause,
 And for a bawdy jeast will give applause.
 Let one but ask the reason why they roare,
 They 'l answer, "cause the rest did so before."

But leaving these, who for their just reward,
 Shall gape and gaze amongst the fools in th' yard ²,
 Now to our Poets ; they are much like mothers,
 That love their own babes farre above all others,
 Though harder favour'd ; so a Poet's quill
 With his owne labours best doth please his will.
 The reason's this ;—because he knowes the paines
 He took in the composing, from whose braines
 A Poet's work takes birth, at first 'tis weake
 Till by the life of action it doth speake,
 In a square Theator ; yet understand
 The Actor speakes but at the second hand.
 The Poet scans, and knowes what best befits
 His birth whom he adornes with epethites,
 Congruus accents ;—but I here strike saile,
 That have just cause my weaknesse to bewaile,
 That am no Poet, rather a poore pleader
 For friendly sentence from the judging Reader ;
 As you allow the best, forgive what's ill,
 Though harshly wrote, accept of my good will.

¹ The spectators in the Pit ; who were then as commonly so termed, as those in the Galleries are now called "the Gods." Shakspeare, in *Hamlet*, speaks of "the groundlings ;" and what is more like the present case, Ben Jonson, in his *Bartholomew Fair*, uses the term "*understanding gentlemen of the ground*." See other instances of this perpetual quibble in Nares's *Glossary*, and Gifford's *Jonson*, vol. IV. p. 366. The Pit itself was called the ground ; because it was deficient in benches or other accommodations, and originally was not even floored. N.

² Another allusion to the playhouse,—the court-yard round the theatre. N.

A DESCRIPTION OF THE PALSgrave's COUNTRY¹, AS IT WAS DELIVERED IN A
SPEECH BEFORE THE KING, THE PRINCE, AND THE LADY ELIZABETH,
AT WHITEHALL. BY W. F.

The Morning's Bridegroom with his rosie cheek,
Invites chaste Cynthia to a Royall Feast ;
Long for her welcome presence did he seeke,
To grace his Princely region in the East ;
Faire Phebe's light he doth esteeme divine,
To make his splendour 'mongst the Germanes shine.

High Princely Palsgrave, Protestants' Protector,
Loud sounding fame's report, Germanes' rich treasure,
Arch-sewer of the Empire, chiefe Elector !
Whose Yea or Nay sets up, or puts downe Cæsar ;
O let it not in me be thought ambition,
To shew the Countrie's worth and thy condition.

On the right-side of Pals, the river Rhyne
Runnes swimming by the bankes of pleasant vines,
Upon whose tops bright Sol so warme doth shine,
That from the flinty rockes flow Rhennish wines ;
And on the left-side glides the gentle Maine,—
There are few lands have two such fouds againe.

These rivers meet at Mence, and are united,
Like Gemini to swim towards Belgicke seas ;
But upward these sweet waters are divided,
For Pals-land's comfort and the people's ease ;
The Rhyne brings boats unto each southward towne,
But in the North the Maine brings treasure downe.

From Brandenburgh and high-borne Saxons' land,
Great Chamberlaine and Lord High Martiall ;
Mence, Triurs, and Cullen, for the Pope's right stand,
If either side in choice be partiall,
Bohemia's King he is indifferent,
Betwixt the Papist and the Protestant.

These are the seven pillars of the land,
On which great Europe's empire standeth fast ;
Pals, Brandenburgh, and Saxony, in one hand
Unite their strength which makes their powers last ;

¹ A short prose Description, composed about the same time, has been printed in vol. II. p. 621. It is to be premised that the Palsgrave's Country had much suffered in vulgar report, the publick being somewhat disappointed in the poverty of the Princess's Match. N.

The Popish Prelates at these Princes frowne,
Yet these three Protestants uphold the Crowne.

To second them there's Brundswicke's valiant Duke,
Hesson's great Landsgrave worthy of renowne;
And for the Pope's right there's the Prince of Luke,
The Cittie Cullen, and great Ausburge Towne.
But Franckford's force with Protestants doth hold,
Which by the Palsgrave's power make Papists cold.

In this faire Franckford Cæsar was install'd;
This Citie borders on the Palsgrave's land;
'Tis richly furnish'd and most strongly wall'd,
Well stor'd with all provision, stoutly man'd.
But leaving Frankford seated on the Maine,
The bridge hath brought me into Pals again.

Betwixt the rivers that are named before
The Palsgrave's land stands like a paradise;
The ground is fruitfull yeelding vine-yards' store,
And mightie woods for hunting exercise
Stand on the hills invironing the plaines;—
These forrests bring the Palsgrave trebble gaines.

First, they enrich his countrey large with wood;
Secondly, they afford him venison store;
Thirdly, for hunting pleasures they are good,
To rouse the stagge or chase the tusked bore.
If man on earth would chuse a place of pleasure,
His countrey yeelds it in exceeding measure.

On rocky cliffs his stately castles stand,
Like to Mount Sion built of marble stone,
With turrets out of which he viewes his land;—
Such worthy prospects heere are few or none.
Their aire it is so wholesome, kind, and sweet,
They seldome die till death and age doe meete.

At Bachrade stands a Castle on a clift,
And underneath a Cittie of some state,
Which ever is his eldest sonn's by gift;
It would seeme tedious if I should relate
Each severall Castle, but let mee report
The state of Hedelberge, his Princely Court.

Palace of pleasure, and a house of state,
His winter's Whitehall, and his summer's Hampton;

A river glideth underneath the gate,
Which brings him plentie, nothing hath he lack on;
There stands a vessell which shall neare want wine,
So long as earth beares fruit, or sunne doth shine¹.

Brave Knights and Barons on his Grace attend,
His country's ordered by a Martiall;
All strangers doe his government commend,
Because in nothing he is partiall;
But deales with all according to desert,
Which makes all people honour him in heart.

This Court is pleasant, and his person Royall,
His Councell grave, his Officers are true,
His Gentry faithfull, and his Commons loyall,
His lands are fruitfull;—what can then ensue?
Nothing but his Religion, which is grounded
Upon the Gospell, that hath Rome confounded.

In him there flowes the best of Art and Nature,
Himselfe like David, and his Court like Sion;
Of lovely visage and of comely stature,
Yet full of majesty as is a lion;
For with severitie his Grace is kinde,
Justice and pittie in his heart are joyn'd.

What may be in a Prince in him there flowes,
Excepting vice, for that he ever hated;
What should be in a Prince in him there growes;
For England's good this Prince was created!
His lawes are just, his government is civill,
He doth pursue good and escheweth evill.

Many brave Castles his faire land doth yeeld,
And toll-houses upon the river Rhyne,
Which underneath his Castles he doth build,
To store his coffers with all countrey coyne.
Each passage-boate, before they passe away,
Unto these toll-houses must custome pay.

Five Princes in this Iron Age survive,
Which makes it seeme the Silver World againe;
To match them hardly shall we find out five,
Yet wee'll forbear to speake of France or Spaine.

¹ The celebrated Heidelberg Tun, of which there is a good engraving, representing its appearance at this very time, in that singular book, Coryat's Crudities. N.

Five heires, five youths, five kinsmen, and five Princes,
Of one religion though in five provinces.

Yong Prince of Hesson¹ is the first must enter,
To act his vertues on the world's theater;
'Tis hard to finde a yong man on earth's center,
That is a vertue-lover and vice-hater.

Old Landsgrave's glasse hath many houres to runne,
Whilst all his vertue liveth in his sonne.

Yong Prince of Brundswicke craves the second place,
Whose vertues with him bring a noble spirit;
Hee's milde and courteous, mixt with majesticke grace,
His praise is not so much as he doth merit;
A Prince, a schollar, and a travailer²,
A peacefull youth, and yet a soldier.

Yong Prince of Brandenburg, Prince absolute,
For now thou raignest in thy father's stead;
Thy eares are open unto every suite,
Thy hand is prone to every worthy deed;
Many degrees thy vertues doe commence;
Brandenburgh never had a better Prince.

Yong Prince of Pals, or Palsgrave of the Rhyne,
Were this a chronicle and the letters gold;
To register thy vertues most divine,
To make all nations wonder to behold;
Thy grace of all their goodnesse doth allow,
But all their graces to thy goodnesse bowe.

Yong Prince of England, period of my praise!
Thy vertues, now thou entrest, fils the round,
Subduing evill and all good to raise
Thy power's ready;—now my praise is crown'd;
Foure Kingdomes' comfort, and Great Britaine's joy,
Mischiefe befalle him that thinkes thee annoy!

These Princes' severall vertues doe agree,
And in a true conjunction sympathize;
When Princely fruit springs from a Royall tree,
There future branches to the like state rise;

¹ Prince Otto of Hesson, or Hesse, had visited England in 1611; see vol. II. p. 424. It appears from what Fennor says in his next Poem, p. 150, that he had some idea of obtaining the Princess Elizabeth's hand. N. ² He also had travelled in England in 1610; see vol. II. pp. 290, 307, 310.

Each of these are their Countrie's joyfull hope,
Friends to the Gospel, foes to the Divell and Pope.

Three matchlesse Virgins, in this wanton age,
Virtue doth here commend for the world's mirror;
Their hallowed feete tread on Dyana's stage,
Their spotlesse thoughts are free from female error;
In framing of these three Nature did well;—
But made a fourth that doth herself excell.

Hesson's faire Virgin, one of Vertue's traine,
Ladye of pleasure and the nymph of peace,
Whose face the stampe of beauty doth containe,
Which in her lively image neare shall cease;
A match fit for a Prince, sweet saint-like creature,
Wonder of all that gaze on thy faire feature.

Brunswick's bright Virgin, Germanes' lovely rose,
Whose vestall lampe shines like the moone at full;
Thou art admired by the Dutch-land froes,
Saxony vowes thy blowming bud to pull;
A Prince of vertues and a Princesse true,
Who can deny when such for love doe sue.

Brandingburgh's Sister, of an angel's face,
The top of vertue and the branch of beautie;
Of humble, modest, and majesticke grace,
The Gods have strove who first should do their duty.
Dyan and Venus are for hir at strife,
Which choise is best for hir, a maide or wife.

Thus they contend each houre about all three;
Dyan speakes, "Virgins, hearken to my voyce;
Keepe yourselves single if you would live free."
Venus says, "Sports in bed cause maides rejoyce."
But let them chide, I can judge neither rude,
Till the fourth Virgin Wife the jarre conclude.

England's faire Phœnix, Europe's admiration,
Of matchlesse beauty, yet of vertue rare;
A kingdome's comfortable consolation,
Who ever rarest is, yet she is rarer.
Now in the East she lets her splendour shine,
All doe confesse she is a light divine.

She seeing Dyan and Love's Queene at odds,
 Dyan made claime, bright Venus swore shee'd have her;
 At last the cause being heard before the Gods;
 Hymen stood up and this sweet sentence gave hir,
 "For chaste virginitie mates hast thou none,
 And being wed, like thee shall scarce be one."

Poets, leave writing of the Grecian Queene,
 And of Æneas, Lady Venus' sonne;
 Two rarer beauties shortly shall be seene
 In Almany, when England's pride is wonne.
 Make hast, yong Prince, swim lively down the Rhyne,
 To stile hir peerelesse Princess Palatine.

Lend all your hands to knit this Princely knot;
 All everlasting joy binde sure the same;
 A noble Prince, a Princesse without spot,
 Will fill the trump of ever-sounding Fame;
 All Europe's bells that joyfull day shall ring,
 Pals hath join'd power with England's Royall King.

CUPID'S JOURNEY TO GERMANIE AND THE EFFECTS OF THE SAME.

When Hymen had his sentence ended,
 He of the Gods was much commended;
 Venus was buxome, blith, and glad,
 But Dyan's front with frowne look'd sad;
 Almaine was fild with love's desires,
 Their heart flam'd Citharean fiers;
 Oldenburgh's Earle and Hesson's Prince
 Sent presents from their heart's province.
 Love in a rich shape crost the maine
 From courtly France and hauty Spaine,
 With hope to gaine this matchlesse prize;
 But stormes of nonsuite did arise,
 Which fill'd their sails with discontent,
 And blew them back incontinent.

Then Cupid tooke a boxe of balme,
 And gave to Neptune for a calme;
 To Æolus he sent a ring,
 Intreating him no sighs to fling
 In his sail's forefront; thus he went
 To the seas imbarckt with sweet content.

Sweet Zephirus, to winne a wreath,
Into Love's sailes good will did breath,
Which soon convey'd him to the Rhyne,
Where Bacchus quaffes up Rennish wine.
There Cupid feasted in each Court,
And at the length met true report,
Whose newes did cause the Boy admire,
Filling his heart with ardent fire.
And presently he mounts the skies,
To crave one of his mother's eyes;
She grants the suite and thus she spake,
"I'll doe it for the Prince's sake."
Hir left eye she plac't in his forehead,
Which made the God of Love adored;
He took his leave and humbly bends,
And from his Deity descends.

The winged youth who understood,
His way by's eye through thickest wood;
Where Silvian tooke up her stay,
And met with Cupid on the way;
But she from him began to flye
When she perceiv'd he had an eye,
Least he her nakednesse should see,
She shrowdes hirsselfe behinde a tree.
For Autumne, that the field bereaves,
Had left hir nought but withered leaves;
Cupid amaz'd kept still the path
Which brought him to a private bath;
And close by it a thicket stood,
More like an arbour then a wood,
The willowes twisted arme in arme,
To keepe the bower in winter warme;
And in the summer when the sunne
Through the high meridian runne,
Hee cannot pearce in with bright eyes,
But peepe through holes cut checkerwise.

This arbor, fil'd with naked imphes,
The thrice three Muses and their Nymphes,
Dyan with sundry flowers crown'd,
Begirt about with Virgins round;
Cupid drew nye and got a sight,
Which bred in him no small delight.
None did deny the shamefac't Boy,
But in him tooke exceeding joy,

Save Dyan, whose wrath did invade hir,
 Untill at length all did perswade hir
 To smiling mirth, which she allowes,
 And took her viol from the bowes,
 Whereon most sweetly she did play
 A well contrived roundelay,
 Which ravisht so the God of Love,
 That he a question thus did move :
 " You Nymphes and Goddesses of grace,
 How doe you call this sacred place ?"
 " This is," quoth they, " the Muses' Fountaine,
 Imyayl'd with many a craggy mountaine ;
 The name of it is Helycon ;
 Hence Germaine's bounds first border on,
 It parts the Lowe Dutch from the High,
 And heere great Cæsar's crowne doth lye.
 We know, young Archer, thou art sent
 To wound a Prince with love's content ;
 Thy shaft shall not be shot in vaine,
 For he a faire Princesse shall gaine,
 Whose beauty no Apelles needes,
 His virtue all our worths exceeds.
 But haste thee, Cupid, flye away,
 And Hymen crowne their Nuptiall-day."
 The one-ey'd Boy tooke leave of all,
 And tooke up's bowe which he let fall.
 His quiver on his backe he hung,
 And spread both wings and up he sprung ;
 With matchlesse swiftnesse to the Rhyne,
 Which shewes the way to Palatine ;
 But being driven in by stormes,
 He was constrained to lodge at Wormes ;
 The Citie's worth the God admires,
 And the next day he dyned at Spyres ;
 But ere the night approached nye,
 He came to the Universitie,
 Call'd Hedelberg, a famous place,
 Where he beheld the Prince's Grace
 Well mounted on a stately steed,
 Which did Bucephalus exceed.
 The day had left the Easterne coast,
 And to faire Thetis gallopt post ;
 Which made the Germaine mountaines darke,
 Cupid drew nye to view the marke ;

And at his bosom sent a shaft
 Which after it a tincture left;
 No sooner Cupid dedicates
 This stroke, but straight he elevates
 To the Gods, where he a lecture redde,
 How love had metamorphorsed
 This Prince's heart perplext with paine,
 Which caused him to cross the maine
 To Britaine's coast; first Gravesend gaines him,
 And England bravely entertaines him.

The Court his company desires,
 London the lovely Prince admires;
 Such joy sprung forth on every side,
 That all the Gods man's mirthe envide;
 Therefore they held a Parliament,
 How they might worke his discontent.
 Last they agreed (oh dismal day!)
 To take our chiefest hope away;
 Grim visag'd Death presum'd to strike
 A Prince that never had his like,
 For as his virtue all excel'd,
 His valour was unparalel'd;
 Heaven tooke his worth, Earth knew his want,
 And made a general complaint.
 Great Brittain, clad in sable blacke,
 With endlesse teares lament his lacke.
 This hopefull Match begot great gladnesse,
 But Henrie's death a solemne sadnesse;
 And had not these two opposites
 Met, England sure had lost hir wits;
 For had there beene no Funerall
 To stay this happy Nuptiall,
 This Kingdome, being overjoy'd
 With mirth, herself might have destroy'd;
 So had there been no Nuptiall,
 After this dreary Funerall,
 This Iland would herselfe confound
 With her own teares, of force t' have drown'd
 A heart of cork; therefore the Scene
 'Twixt mirth and mourning kept the meane.
 And Time, which all things doth expell,
 Provided for this Kingdome well;
 For though he took our hope away,
 He left behinde a second stay,

Whom Heaven's highest hand preserve,
 For he all goodnesse doth deserve !
 Thus leaving hearts with sorrowes clad,
 For him whose like Earth never had ;
 'Tis fit my pen pursue the carriage,
 Of this selected sacred Marriage,
 'Twixt these two Princes' dignity,
 Who were with all solemnitie
 Joyn'd, with the forefront of the Spring,
 In Nuptiall bands before a King.

But Time, that for no King will stay,
 Conducts this Virgin Bride away
 Towards her new confines ; blest content
 Attended on her Grace in Kent ;
 The trees stood all in suites of greene,
 To guard this Nymph-like Nature's Queen ;
 She leaves a land where she is knowne,
 To see a strange land of her owne.
 The lovely nightingale did sing
 Hir sweete farewell from England's King.

Thus, after many parting stories,
 Time brought them to their territories ;
 And ere twelve moneths their course had run,
 Betwixt them they possest a Sonne.
 This blessed newes the seas sent post,
 To comfort us for him we lost ;
 From Henry's ashes there is sprung,
 A second Henry ¹ who ere long
 We hope shall in this land arrive,
 The hearts of all men to revive ;
 And greet his Royall Grandsire's raigne,
 The Queen, and his Uncle Charlemayne ².
 Whom Heaven still protect and blesse
 With Royall issue, to possesse
 This Kingdome, Scepter, and beare sway,
 'Till sunne and moone doe passe away !

¹ See vol. II. p. 746. N.

² Prince Charles of England is meant. N.

THE ORIGINALL AND CONTINUANCE OF THE MOST NOBLE ORDER OF THE
GARTER, AS IT WAS SPOKEN BEFORE THE KING'S MAJESTIE ON SAINT
GEORGE'S DAY LAST, ANNO DOM. 1616. BY W. FENNOR.

Edward the Third, that truly potent King,
Whose temples worthily wore England's Crowne,
This Noble Order, of whose fame I'll sing,
Invents for Britaine's trophy of renowne.
Salsburie's Countesse hath all Ladies grac't
That loose their garter, yet keepe honour chaste.

From honor'd chastitie the Garter fell,
And in a moment rose to Royaltie;
King Edward grac't this Ladie's favour well,
Who humbly bends his Kingly Majesty,
Catcht up the ribbon had a leg imbract
That never capor'd with a step unchaste.

The Lady dies her cheekes with tell-tale redde,
Which blabs she blushes that her garter's found,
By him that had advanc't it to a head
Which with Imperiall dignity was crown'd;
The Nobles murmur, and the King, by chance
Perceived, spoke, *Hony soit qui mal y pense!*

Exchanges lawlesse love for lawfull armes,
Buckles on armour, weells [wields] his warlike sword,
Beats his brac't drums, with trumpets sounds alarms;
Thus like old Hector rode he to the field,
Subdued his foes, and for his deeds in fight,
Of the rich Garter was instal'd a Knight.

Which bred such luster in each noble brest,
As if new Troy had mustred up the sonnes
Of strong-back't Priam, and amongst the rest,
The bold Blacke Prince to th' field most fiercely runs,
And with his sword hammer'd in Vulcan's forge,
Made the French Dennys kneele to English George.

For which he with the Garter was instal'd,
And made a Knight of that most Noble Order;
With many other Nobles that were call'd
Worthy by Fame, that ancient true recorder.
The Garter bred such luster in great hearts,
Each strove for excellence in armes and arts,

Saint Patrick's Crosse did to the Garter vayne,
 Saint Jaques' Order was with anger pale;
 Saint David's leeke began to droupe i' th' tale [tail] ¹,
 Saint Dennys he sate mourning in a dale;
 Saint Andrew lookt with cheereful appetite,
 As though to th' Garter he had future right.
 But dragon-killing George, that still depends
 Upon the Garter since Third Edward's dayes,
 In this age present hath as many friends,
 As well deserving high eternall praise;
 As many ages ever had before,
 Never at one time better, never more.
 Hanniball strove for Rome's triumphant bayes,
 Scipio for the Carthaginians' bough;
 But thanklesse Senators did dimme the rayes
 Of these two worthies, and would not allow,
 Nor wreath, nor branch; they died and left their fame,
 Unto the glory of the Garter's name.
 Impartially a Royall King bestowes it,
 Upon some subject worthy of the wearing;
 His armes advanct within a church that owes it,
 The oath administred in publique hearing,
 Which being falsified, the Honor's crost
 By heraldry, the Armes and Garter lost.
 Say that a man long languishing in love,
 Whose heart with hope and feare grows cold and warme;
 Admit some pittie should his sweethearte move,
 To knit a favour on his feeble arme;
 All parts would joyne to make that one joint strong,
 To oppose any that his love should wrong.
 The Garter is the favour of a King,
 Clasping the leg on which man's best part stands;
 A poesye in't, as in a nuptiall ring,
 Binding the heart to their liege Lord in bands;
 That whilst the leg hath strength, or the arme power,
 To kill that serpent would their King devoure.
 For which the George is as a trophy worne,
 And may it long, and long remaine with those,
 Which to that excellent dignitie are borne,
 As opposites unto their country's foes.
 God keepe our King and them from Rome's black pen,
 Let all that love the Garter say, Amen!

¹ A metaphor taken from the canine race! N.

THE DECIDING OF THE DIFFERENCE BETWIXT THE TWO UNIVERSITIES, OXFORD
AND CAMBRIDGE, ABOUT THE KING'S ENTERTAINMENT, SPOKE BEFORE HIS
MAJESTY AT THEOBALDS, THE 13TH OF JULY, 1615. BY W. F.¹

Parnassus and the Fountaine fell at odds,
Who should give best contente unto the Gods;
The Mountaine spake, "'tis not thy fenne can yeeld
Such learned arts, nor can thy foggy field
Give such delightful taste to gods or men
As my sweet shady groves." Hellicon then
Returnes this answeare, "Though thou stand'st on high,
My brains are moist when thine are hot and dry.
But leaving this upbraiding argument,
To stand to triall dar'st thou be content."
"Dare!" quoth Parnassus, "yes I dare and will
Make triall when thou dar'st not shew thy skill."

Thus throwing downe their gauntlets they appeal'd
Unto the Gods, who justly with them deal'd;
Jove sent his nimble-footed Mercury,
With all the'tropheyes of high herauldry,
To signifie unto the learned Mount²,
That Kingly Jove himselfe made full account
To visite him in 's Progresse; she o'erjoy'd,
Hir chieftest, choysest, curest³ wits employ'd
To give him welcome; Sylvian left the woods,
Heardsmen their cattel, townsmen for their goods,
Fled with amazement to behold the shew
Of Royall Majestie. Among this rowe
Stept in some fortie of Helconian race,
And'mongst the Pernasitians tooke their place,
To view in secret note the whole event
Of his receiving welcome and content,
And where a word or letter was mistooke,
To brackagram⁴ it in a table-booke.
Time turn'd three hower-glasses whilst they stood
Expecting him whose sight should doe them good;
But on a sudden all their voyces summes
A joyfull generall clamour, "Yon he comes!"

¹ It is remarkable that Fennor should be mentioned in the "Cambridge Madrigal" (p. 66):

"Some say the rhyming Sculler, and others say 'twas Fennor."

The dispute of these rival versifiers has been noticed in p. 139. N. ² i. e. most curious. N.

³ Parnassus is Oxford, and what follows alludes to the King's Visit there in 1605. N.

⁴ i. e. make notes. The word was probably coined by Fennor, as it does not occur in Nares's Glossary. N.

See, see! who's that rides with agilitie?"
 "Peace, peace! that's one of the Nobilitie!"
 Who passed by in state and due degree;
 And after them his Royall Majestie,
 Drawn by the winged coursers of the sunne,
 About whose chariot thousand people runne;
 With shouts of joy the multitude still speakes,
 "Welcome, dread King!" the Students, "*Vivat Rex!*"
 The heardsmen, mov'd to testifie their loves,
 Bestow'd on him a pair of hunting gloves.
 So usher'd him unto Parnassus hill,
 And there to welcome him shew'd their best skill,
 With masking, revells, and a Comedy,
 Which was performed very solemnly.
 In penning it the Poet paines did take
 To cause Jove sleepe, though he himselfe did wake.
 But when their sports were past, great Jove retyr'd,
 Yet at their learned arts he much admired;
 Helycon's Nymphes returned to their cell,
 And there the whole discourse of all did tell;
 Which when some heard, they laid their heads together,
 And made a ballad of "The Buck-skins' leather"¹.
 Now Time with stealing steps doth swiftly hast,
 Imagine seaven yeeres compleatly past;
 When Jove remembring the Gods' request,
 Hath tane his Royall journey North by East;
 To visit the distressed Helycon²,
 Whose face till now his eye neare lookt upon.
 Parnassus hearing that he thither would,
 From frozen Alpes sent forth a bitter cold;
 Which did congeale the waves of Neptune so,
 That all the water in the ayre turn'd snow;
 And from the ponderous clouds fell downe in flakes,
 Covering high mountaines, filling dales and lakes;
 By which the little brookes forsooke their boundes,
 And water all the passages so drown'd,
 That thousands durst not venture, yet his Grace
 Held firme his resolution, spight the face
 Of grisled Hyems, or sterne Boreas,
 Æolus, Auster, or sweet Zephirus.

¹ This was one of the Ballads upon the Oxford Entertainment alluded to by Wood (as quoted in vol. I. p. 531). I have not met with any other mention of it. N.

² Cambridge, in March 1615-16. N.

Thither he would to view the learned skill,
 Betwixt the Fountaine and Parnassus hill.
 Minerva hearing this, she calls the clownes
 And rusticke swaines, and saide, "Put on your gownes;
 You first shall meet his Majestie in order,
 By the advice and wit of your Recorder."
 Out rode the rustickes in their glittering pride,
 And when they had their Royal Jove espyed,
 Upstart god Pan, who with a studied Speech
 His Kingly Majesty he did beseech,
 That hee'd be pleas'd still to protect his darling,
 Before his croch [coach] came neere by halfe a furlong.
 Moreover that the Nymphes might beare no sway
 Above them and their wives by night or day;
 And further, more their good wils to unfold,
 They gave a silver cup was three yeeres old;
 So gave him way. He on rides towards the Towne,
 Met by Minerva in a scarlet gowne,
 Who spoke a rare Speech of such high deserning
 That at the very first she shew'd her learning;
 Which when Jove heard he rode unto the cell,
 And after was conducted to the well;
 Where he most freely of the water tasted,
 And for foure dayes this Royall pastime lasted.

But when Minerva's maides their wits had spent,
 Great Jove retired thence incontinent;
 Yet at his parting graciously did say,
 He would returne and visite them in May,
 Which promise he performed; Parnassus then
 Wrote sharpe invectives from her whipping penne,
 Which sent to Helicon, were back retorted,
 Thus these two Worthies the wide world have sported.
 Th'are like two famous Castles in one towne,
 Who for their worths would put each other downe;
 Or like a jealous husband who breeds strife,
 If he espy another lookes on's wife.
 Two beauteous Virgins cannot well indure,
 One man unto them both should be made sure;
 Were there a difference, 't would be no contention,
 But being equals both breeds this discention.

But to conclude, Parnassus is the Mountaine
 Of learned arts; and Helicon the Fountaine;

And this is all I'll say of both, I thinke
 The one gives food to us, the other drinke;
 Then why should they each others' worth controule,
 Since they can both give physicke for the soule?

A SPEECH CONCERNING THE GOWRIES' TREASON, AND THE GUNPOWDER PLOT;
 SPOKEN BEFORE THE KING'S MAJESTY, AT THE BISHOP'S PALACE AT SALYS-
 BURY ALIAS SARUM, THE FIFTH OF AUGUST 1615¹. BY W. F.

No Poet's Muse can better tidings bring
 Then mine,—the safetie of a Royall King;
 Yet I with words cannot describe the faction
 So well as you, dread King, which try'd the action
 Of base deluding traitours; whose invention
 Proceeded from the author of discention;
 Whose blacke plots in the heart all mischiefe sowes,
 Which not prevented to ranke treason growes;
 As this day well can witness to all ages
 The Gowries' cruell and insatiate rages.
 Well may their titles stile them *goe awry*,
 Who in their bye-paths led a King to die.
 But th' Almightye for his chosen stands,
 And strikes amazement, staies the villaine's hands,
 That are lift up against his true anointed,
 All praise be to Him that all disappointed;
 Nay, gave unto your Majesty such strength,
 To grapple with your butcher, till at length,
 He shew'd his power, as once to Abraham,
 And in the place of Isaac sent a ram²;
 Who rushing through the midst of bramble thornes,
 He gor'd the Gowries with his two-edg'd hornes;
 Which deed hath rais'd his name eternally,
 And hurl'd them downe to lasting infamy.
 For whosoever speakes of Ramsey's name,
 Shall sound it to the Gowries' endlesse shame;
 Or whilst the Fifth of August can give light,
 Let men give praises to the God of might;
 And let it be as holyday observed,
 Wherein your Grace by wonder was preserved.

¹ See p. 97. N.

² Sir John Ramsey; see vol. I. p. 126. N.

Or whosoever shall that day remember,
 Let him record the Fifth of cold November,
 Where they the divell's highest plot shall read,
 Who sought not to destroy the Royall Seede
 Alone, but with it all Posteritie,
 The Gentry and the States' Nobilitie.
 Making this land a chaos in an houre,
 After replant it in their forraine power;
 But Heaven's just, when he begins to speake,
 And sent a warning in Mounteagle's beake;
 As he by Joseph did to Pharaoh tell,
 Of scarcitie for th'good of Israel.
 So in your Royall heart he sent a doubt,
 By which the height of treason was found out;
 And the base traitours for their works rewarded,
 Thus a good Prince is by the angels guarded.

What plots were layd 'gainst Queene Elizabeth,
 To cut her off by an untimely deathe!
 Yet, maugre all their blasted blacke infection,
 She liv'd till Heaven call'd her by election.
 In joy abounding and her Princely Throne,
 She left unto your Majesty alone,
 Whom God hath placed with a peacefull hand;
 The like hath scarce beene heard in any land,
 To have so many foes, and all turne friends,
 By th' which the sword of warre to th' olive bends.
 I guesse the reason since you entred heere,
 The Lion rampant ¹ keepes the rest in feare;
 The Dragon ² is dismiss, whose poysonous breath
 Hath oft beene cause of many a thousands' death.
 And in the place you have put the Unicorn,
 T' espell the poyson with his precious horne;
 By which each Royall subject safe may dine,
 And taste the propper fruit of his owne vine.

Then, if ingratefull men will this record,
 Can they forget to praise or laud the Lord
 For His preserving of you many wayes,
 Giving them peace in your most happy daies.
 Sure who forgets is an ungratefull guest,
 Not worthy to injoy this peacefull feast;
 Which God continue many many yeeres,
 And still preserve you from all forraine feares,

¹ Of the arms of Scotland. N.

² The Supporter of the arms of Tudor. N.

False plots at home, ever confounding those
 Who in their heart professe to be your foes.
 But let good subjects "Haleluiah" sing
 To God, for the protecting our good King;
 O! let their prayers invoke agen,
 "God long preserve your Grace, Amen, Amen!"

A PASTORALL SONNET, CONTAINING A PARLIAMENT OF THE GODS.

Walking of late it was my chance,
 To view Florae's rosy bowers;
 When drowsie Morpheus into a trance
 Did confine me certaine howres,
 Where I might spy very much resort passe to a maine,
 And one did come unto me this meeting to explaine.
 "Come," quoth he, "prepare thyself to goe,
 Where thou shalt attend,
 I to thee the event will shew
 Whereeto and what end."
 Straight methought I was conveyed away,
 Whereunto my sense he did display,
 How that this meeting was of all the Gods,
 And that brave Mars and Vulcane false were at ods;
 Vulcane as plaintiffe did for justice cry,
 'Cause Mars which was defendant did with Venus lye.
 And moreover, would discover,
 But alas, it was his fate;
 Whilst he's working, they are lurking,
 How they may cornute his pate.
 Straight a dissention there arose,
 Who in judgement chief should sit,
 Fearing that man would hold them as foes,
 Each of other thought most fit.
 At last it past, that bright Sol as umpire needs must stand,
 For why, his eye underneath the spheares hath chiefe command.
 Phœbus at the last did condescend,
 Yet with this condition,
 Cynthia might sit as Venus' friend,
 Joynly in commission;
 Presently was set a chaire of State,
 On which the pale-fac't Luna sate;

Next Jove and Juno did assume their place;
 Then Saturne, Æolus, and Neptune with his mace.
 After Apollo with the Muses nine,
 And black-fac't Pluto took his place by Proserpine;
 And belowe here sate a rowe
 Of shepheards, which adore God Pan;
 Each one sitting, all things fitting,
 Straight a silence there began.

A civill silence being proclaimed,
 One there stood up presently,
 And as I deeme he was Mercury nam'd,
 Which full loud began to cry,
 "O yes!" then he paus'd a while and began againe,
 "O yes! silence in the Court on further paine."
 Thus, "O yes!" being thrice proclaimed,
 They beginne to plod,
 On the inditements which pertained
 'Gainst this worldly god.
 Straight a jury of Twelve Shepheards' swaines,
 Which with rurall pastime keepe the plaines,
 Inpanel'd were the sole events to prove
 'Twixt noble Mars, and Venus faire, the Queene of Love.
 Without attorneyes Mars and Vulcane plead,
 And Venus absent, Cupid stood in's Mother's stead;
 Vulcan still swore, Mars did ill,
 In wronging of his marriage bed;
 Which was cause 'gainst reason lawes,
 He always wore a heart-like head.

Mars in reply was resolute,
 As he e're in the field did fight,
 And soone he did poore Vulcane confute;
 Sometime might may orecome right.
 Yet he did agree unto all that Vulcan could report,
 And would withhold, if this age would yeeld him better sport.
 "For," quoth Mars, "alas, I am kept so long
 From my wonted use,
 Its no marvell though I Vulcan wrong
 With so small abuse.
 Idely I sleepe in Ladies' laps,
 Childishly I am dandled on their paps;
 Armour, shield, sword, which oft my foes did chase,
 Are into silkes and velvets turn'd, Oh too, too base!

I that before my foes in field did just,
 Now in a downe-bed lye, whilst all my armour doth rust,
 Souldiers now, alas must bow
 Unto each silken-feathered swaine,
 That before had gold good store,
 Besides the credit they did gaine.

Thus having ended, the jury resin'd
 The sole verdict, which did say,
 Mars in no errour at all they could finde,
 But the fault in Cupid lay;
 Who then began to excuse himselfe, but all in vaine,
 And swore no more rusticke clownes henceforth his love should gaine.
 Crooked Vulcan, seeing that his suit
 Might no whit prevaile
 On poore Cupid, which alas stood mute,
 He began to raile:
 "Hud-wink'd Boy! how darest thou be so bold,
 As let flie those shafts whose heads were gold?
 It had beene fitter shot with them of lead,
 Then Mars had ne'r made me to weare a horned head."
 Cupid made answer, urging this disgrace,
 "If hornes thou were, thou need'st not feare to breake thy face."
 Sol stood up and drank a cup
 Of Nectar to his fellow gods,
 Which being done, he thus begun,
 To sentence these their forepast odds:

"Cupid," quoth Phœbus, "hold up thy hand,
 Heare thy sentence from my lips;
 Twelve moneths I banish thee the faiery land,
 'Cause bright Mars thou dost eclipse;
 Thy flight with spight hath bereft souldiers thy chiefest joy,
 In place of disgrace, hath took up her seat to worke annoy."
 "Well," quoth Cupid, "I your wills obey,
 But I'll match you all,
 And no doubt, eare long I'll find a day,
 When to minde I'll call,
 How that you wrong'd the God of Love,
 As the stonts¹ of all in time shall prove."
 "Peace else!" quoth Jove, "what dost thou threaten me!"
 "Yes, Jove, ere long shall finde me strong, to o're-match thee."

¹ Stond, a Saxon word, here signifying situation. See Nares's Glossary. N.

The Court being ended, long they did not stay ;
 They to their mansions, Cupid banisht went away.
 Then came hee, that first led me,
 With charge my vision to indite ;
 'Twixt Warre's King, and Love's bright Queene,
 To relate poore Vulcan's spight.
 He being gone, my eies anone,
 From sleepe unclasp't their haiery fringe ;
 Now remaines, I take some paines,
 In the relating Love's revenge.

On the 24th of April, Francis Earl of Rutland¹ and Sir George Villiers were admitted Knights of the Garter; the King knighted Sir Anthony Marbury²; and after dinner he left Whitehall³.

On the 25th, Sir Thomas Riddell⁴ and Sir Walter Smith were knighted by his Majesty at Theobalds.

On the 27th, "the Peers were summoned by letters to sentence Somerset⁵."

On the 30th, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The King went away the next day after St. George's Feast towards Newmarket and Thetford, the Earl of Rutland and Sir George Villiers being that morning elected unto the Order of the Garter; which seemed at first a strange choice, in regard that the wife⁶ of the former is an open and known recusant, and he is said to have many dangerous people about him; and the latter is so lately come into the sight of the world, and withall it is doubted, that he had not sufficient likelihood to maintain the dignity of the place, according to express articles of the Order⁶. But to take away that scruple, the King hath bestowed on him the Lord Grey's lands, and means, they say, to mend his grant with much more not far distant in the present possessions of the Earl of Somerset, if he do *cadere causa*, and sink in the business now in hand.

"The Lord Chancellor and the rest of the Commissioners in these causes go

¹ Of whom see vol. II. pp. 450, 676.

² See vol. I. p. 217; vol. II. p. 48.

³ Camden's Annals.

⁴ Of Gateshead, Durham, son of an eminent Merchant in Newcastle.

⁵ Frances, daughter and co-heir of Sir Henry Knevet, of Charlton, Wilts, Knight, and widow of Sir William Bevil, of Kilkhampton, Cornwall, Knight.

⁶ Villiers, we may presume, was already intimate with the Earl of Rutland, for they were neighbours in Leicestershire. In 1620 he became the Earl's son-in-law, by marrying Catherine, his only child by his first wife, the Lady above mentioned.

often to the Tower, and yesterday the Lord Coke went with them, which was much noted, for that he hath been neglected of late, and so far eclipsed, that it was generally bruited that he was put out of the Commission.

"Sir Robert Ker, near about the Prince¹, and Gibbe of the Bed-chamber, were examined the last week about conveying away and burning of papers² and letters, and were restrained to Sir James Fullerton³, but I hear Sir Robert Ker hath found means to be enlarged, whatever becomes of Gibbe. The arraignment is now certainly set down to hold the Wednesday and Thursday after the Term; and letters are sent out to summon the Lords.

"The Lady Roxburgh's daughter was Christened at Greenwich on Sunday, the Queen and Lady of Bedford being Godmothers. Her son died before or after your going hence⁴.

"There is much speech of the King's going to Scotland the next year. For my part I shall believe when I see it; for many times *multa cadunt inter calicem, &c.*⁵"

In the beginning of May the King spent some days at Thetford⁶, where on the 4th, he knighted Sir Walter Earle; on the 8th, Sir Henry Doily; on the 9th, Sir Edmund Gawsell.

¹ Afterwards Earl of Ancrum; see vol. II. p. 412.

² See p. 103.

³ Who had been sworn of Prince Charles's Bed-chamber together with Sir Robert Ker in July 1613.—Letter of Mr. Lorkin to Sir Thomas Puckering, in Birch's MSS. 4176.

⁴ Wood's Douglas (II. 449) mentions only one child of this Lady Roxburgh, — Hary Lord Ker, who lived till 1643. See vol. II. p. 748.

⁵ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁶ From the 4th of March 1604-5, when Rowland Whyte told the Earl of Shrewsbury (see vol. I. p. 497), that "the King was at Thetford, and soe farre in love with the pleasures of the place, that he meant to have a house there,"—during the last twelve years,—the King's Visits had been frequent; see vol. II. pp. 212, 309, 608. That James the First did build a house at Thetford seems very probable, since Blomefield in his History of the Town says that, the ancient seat of the Earls of Warren, which came to the Crown with the Dutchy of Lancaster, "was rebuilt by the Crown, as I think, in Queen Elizabeth's time." Now it appears that, when Queen Elizabeth visited Thetford in 1578 (see her "Progresses," vol. III. pp. 214, 275,) she lodged at Sir Edward Cleere's; the Palace, if one was then standing, must have been unfit for her reception; and therefore the new edifice was undoubtedly built by King James. In the "Abstract of his Majestie's Revenew," attached to "The First Fourteen Years of King James," occur, among the Keepers of the King's Houses, "To the Lady Barwick and John her son [see vol. II. p. 289] for keeping the King's House at Thetford 12*d.* by the day, and for keeping the garden there 12*d.* by the day. In all by the year £36. 10*s.*"—As far as I can ascertain, the present was the King's last Visit, of which Martin in his History of Thetford gives the following anecdote: "James the First during the hunting seasons for several years spent some time in this ancient Burgh, till he received an affront from one of the farmers belonging to the Town, who

On the 14th of May, the King knighted, at Newmarket, Sir Stephen Boteler.

The Trial of the Earl and Countess of Somerset, "which was appointed to be on the 15th day of this month, the Peers being then assembled in Westminster Hall, and scaffolds being there erected, was deferred till the 22d, because she (as was reported) was indisposed ¹."

On the 18th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton as follows :

"I thought I should this day have given you an account of our intended arraignments, but the matter is once more deferred till Thursday and Friday next. The stage in the midst of Westminster Hall, with numbers of scaffolds round about, was finished, the Lords assembled, and all things ready against Wednesday, when about Tuesday noon came order to put all off, whereby a great many that tarried of purpose after the Term, are disappointed, and have since got themselves out of Town with loss of their earnest for places, which at this time were grown to so extraordinary a rate, that four or five pieces (as they call them) was an ordinary price; and I know a lawyer that had agreed to give ten pounds for himself and his wife for the two days, and fifty pounds were given for a corner that could hardly contain a dozen.

"The cause of the stay is not certainly known; but this is certain, that warning being given the Lady on Saturday to prepare for her Trial against Wednesday, she fell that night to casting and scouring, and so continued the next day very sick, whether it were that the apprehension wrought so violently with her, or that she had taken a dram. Some make this the reason; others say that her Lord begins to relent, and makes show to reveal secrets of great importance. He

being highly offended at the liberty his Majesty took in riding over his corn, in the transport of his passion threatened to bring an action of trespass against his Majesty. Since that time neither that King nor any of his Successors have visited this Town." P. 57. "The Royal Palace," says the same author, which when Blomefield wrote was called "The King's House," "was given by James I. to Sir Philip Woodhouse [of whom see vol. II. p. 426], whose arms are yet remaining over the west side of the outer gate. It was the seat of that family in the time of Sir John Woodhouse, late Recorder, after which it was purchased by Mr. Thomas Wright, Attorney, of this town; but on his death became the property of his daughter. It was re-built again in the present century, and served for the reception of the Judges during the Assizes." Pp. 274—275. Such is the known history of King James's Palace of Thetford. Some of our earlier English Monarchs certainly resided at that Capital of the East Anglian Kingdom. Henry the First, says Blomefield, dated there many Charters made to the Abbot of Ramsey, the Priory in Thetford, &c.; and Henry the Second and several others were often there.

¹ Camden's Annals.

desired to have the Duke of Lennox sent to him, and the Lords Commissioners have been with him once or twice since. The Lord Treasurer [Suffolk] with his Lady and the Lord Knollys went hence to Audley End the Friday before, and there continue, to see the issue. In the mean time the Peers attend here in Town.

"Schomberg is come from the Palsgrave, but hath not yet seen the King, who came late last night to Greenwich, where the Court continues till Whitsuntide¹."

On the 18th of May, the King knighted Sir Thomas Chamberlayn, at Greenwich; and on 19th, being Whitsunday, Bishop Andrews preached before his Majesty there, on John, xx. 22².

On the 22d the Trials of the Earl and Countess "were again deferred to the 24th, and the Peers again summoned. On the latter day the Countess of Somerset is brought to Westminster Hall before nine of the clock, the ax not being carried before her. The Chancellor of England, appointed Lord High Steward of England for this time, came a little after on horseback, servants attending him, and other Noblemen; six Serjeants-at-Law; the Clerk of the Crown in Chancery bearing the letters patent of the Steward; and Sir Richard Coningsby carrying the White Staff before them, together with the Seal-bearer. The two Barons, Norris and Russel, and two others of the Order of Knighthood, followed after. She confessing herself guilty, is condemned to be hanged. She hath recourse to the mercy of God and the King, beseeching the Peers to interceed with the King for her life; all the by-standers commiserating her condition.

"On the 25th the Earl of Somerset is conducted to Westminster Hall a little before ten of the clock, having a cloak on with the George and Garter, the ax not being carried before him. The Chancellor comes by and by, Coningsby on horseback bearing the Staff. He is convicted of Felony; and at nine o'clock the Court is dissolved *pro more*³."

The following extracts from a letter from Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, are particularly interesting as being written whilst the Trial of the Earl was going forward:

"I wrote now upon Scarborow warning⁴, because the Messenger Dieston must

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² The Discourse is among that Prelate's "XCVI Sermons," the Ninth on the Sending of the Holy Ghost.

³ Camden's Annals.

⁴ "That is," says Dr. Fuller, "*none at all*, but a suddain surprize. This proverbe is but of 104

not come empty, being a special man about Mr. Secretary, and one well known and trusted at the Hague, and thereabouts.

"It is now eight o'clock, and he tells me he must needs be at Greenwich this night, by commandment of Mr. S.; so that I cannot say much, though I would, as well for the lack of time as for that I come tired from hearing a piece of the Earl of Somerset's arraignment, who, I think, is but now in the midst of his answer, (the proceeding against him having continued ever since ten o'clock in the morning till five, that he began to answer for himself,) which how it will succeed I cannot certainly say; for he denies all, even his own letters, saying they be counterfeited, and will not be brought to write, whereby to shew the conformity of the character, but says, that it is against law, that he should be put to it. He had pen and ink allowed him, to take notes; which is more than ever I knew heretofore. I was there by six o'clock in the morning, and for 10s. had a reasonable place; but the weather is so hot, and I grew so faint with fasting, that I could hold out no longer, especially when I heard they had sent to provide torches, so that it is verily thought he will hold them till midnight, if the Lord Chancellor, who is Lord High Steward for the time, be able to continue it. The Lady Winwood is there, and more Ladies and great personages than ever I think were seen at any trial. All the Lords in the paper I sent you are not present, some being dispensed withall for several reasons.

"His Lady was arraigned yesterday, and made shorter work of it by confessing the indictment; so that all was done, and we were home before noon. She won pity by her sober demeanour, which in my opinion was more curious and confident than was fit for a Lady in such distress; and yet she shed, or made shew of, some tears divers times. She was used with more respect than usual, nothing being aggravated against her by any circumstance, nor any invective used¹, but only touching the main offence of murder; as likewise it was said to-day, to be the King's pleasure, that no odious or uncivil speeches should be given. The general opinion is, that she shall not die; and many good words were given to put her in hope of the King's mercy, wherein the Lord Steward with the rest of the Peers promised their best mediation. The Earl of Essex was at her

years standing, taking its original from Thomas Stafford, who in the reign of Queen Mary, anno 1557, with a small company seized on Scarborough Castle, (utterly destitute of provision for resistance,) before the Townsmen had the least notice of his approach." Worthies, by Nichols, II. 494.

¹ As was most usual in those days.

arraignment, but somewhat more privately than this day, when he stood full in his [the Earl of Somerset's] face.

“For all my haste I must not forget that it is thought the Lord Lisle¹ shall tomorrow be made Knight of the Garter², a Chapter of the Order being appointed for that purpose, to grace him the better now he is going over to render Flushing³.”

On the 26th of May, Mr. Secretary Winwood thus wrote from Greenwich to Sir Dudley Carleton at the Hague:

“The Countess of Somerset was arraigned the 24th of this month, and confessing herself guilty, had without long debate her sentence pronounced, which was to return to the Tower, from whence she came, and from thence to the place of execution, to be hanged by the neck till she were stark dead. Yesterday, being the 25th, the Earl of Somerset also was arraigned, who gave his Judges and Peers much more trouble, for he held them in Westminster Hall from nine in the morning untill nine of the clock at night; yet was he also clearly found accessary to the said murder of Sir Thomas Overbury before the fact; and so received the same judgement, which his Lady had the day before⁴.”

On the 3d of June the King knighted Sir John Dacombe, on his being made Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster⁵; on the 6th, at Theobalds, Sir Edward Baesh⁶, of Hertfordshire; and Sir Thomas Braithwayt, of Westminster.

On the 8th, Mr. Chamberlain again addressed Sir Dudley Carleton:

“When I wrote last I left the Earl of Somerset pleading for his life; but that

¹ See vol. I. p. 510; vol. II. p. 610.

² This was done, as we find in Camden's Annals.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.—On the 31st of this month, says Camden, “Flushing and Breda Cautionary Towns are delivered up by Viscount Lisle and Sir Horatio Vere, Generals, to the States General.”—Sir Horatio Vere, who had been knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1595, was raised to the Peerage in 1625, by the title of Baron Vere of Tilbury. ⁴ Letters of Sir Dudley Carleton, p. 29.

⁵ He had been a Master of Requests, with a yearly fee of £.100; and had received a Free-gift of £.140 in 1614; see p. 78. He now succeeded Sir Thomas Parry (who died May 31) in the Chancellorship of the Duchy of Lancaster, whereof, says Mr. Chamberlain June 8, “he had the grant and patent before; but all the Council stood against him, alleging the invalidity of such patents and reversions of places of judicature, as being directly against the Law, besides the meanness of the man, and that he had been detected of divers frauds and foul dealings, specially in the Pardon propounded the last year for the Earl of Somerset [see p. 101]; but I always said, *quod differtur, non aufertur*, when I understood what sure cards he had for him, and that Sir George Villiers and the Prince betted on his side.” In September Mr. Chamberlain says he was expected to be made a Privy Councillor.

⁶ Edward Baesh, Esq. of Stanstead, had been Sheriff of Hertfordshire in 1584. Of the family see Clutterbuck's History of Hertfordshire, vol. I. p. 211.

he said for himself was so little, that he was found guilty by all his Peers; which did so little appal him, that when he was asked what he could say, why sentence should not be pronounced, he stood still on his innocence, and could hardly be brought to refer himself to the King's mercy. Upon which terms he stands still; and having leave to write to the King, hath only required that his judgment of hanging should be changed to heading; and that his daughter might have such of his lands as the King doth not resume, and reserve in his own hands.

“The Lady Knollys and some other friends have had access to the Lady divers times since her conviction, and carried her young daughter to her twice or thrice. But I hear not of any that comes to him. He hath been much urged and fair offered to confess the offence both before his arraignment and since; but he stands firm in denial, though by all circumstances, and most pregnant, yea almost infallible, probabilities, he be more faulty and foul than any of the company; which makes the King marvel that, all the rest that have gone before having so freely confessed the matter after their condemnation, he only should continue so confident. Whether this or any other reason be the cause of stay of execution I know not; but they live yet, and for aught I can learn, so are like to do many a day!

“Sir Thomas Monson's arraignment, which would have been yesterday, was put off again till the Tuesday after the Term; which procrastination from time to time makes the world think we shall hear no more of this business¹; the rather for that the Lord Coke of late is fallen (I know not how) into disfavour, so far forth that the King hath been very bitter to him, both in private and public²; as upon Thursday last, when all the Judges were called before the King at Whitehall, to give a reason of their proceeding in the Exchequer to argue a case of Commendams contrary to his commandment by express message, and sending a letter subscribed by them all, not so respectfully and reverently written, as might become them. They all stood upon the very words and terms of law and statutes, and upon the strictness of their oath; but the heaviest burthen lighted upon him, wherein he behaved and carried himself so well and confidently, that

¹ On this subject as connected with the Monsons, see p. 122, and under Feb. 8, 1617-18.

² The whole progress of the King's persecution of Sir Edward Coke, may be gathered from the subsequent letters of Mr. Chamberlain, who seems to have been very attentive to it.

the matter goes on, and they argue it again this day, contrary to the expectation and hope of all the Bishops. But the worst is, that the Lord Chancellor, the Attorney, and Solicitor, persecute him implacably, and have won so much ground upon him, that there is a commission granted to the Lord Archbishop, the Lord Knollys, Sir Thomas Lake, and Sir Fulk Grevile, to call him before them, and examine him upon articles and points touching the *præmunire*; and withall the whole course of his life is like to be ript up and looked into, which if it be severely followed, many men fear it may be his utter overthrow. But he holds up his head, and gives no way; which makes his friends think he will pass over this tempest well enough. Our good friend [Mr. Secretary Winwood] stands firm by him, in what he may; which many marvel at, and stick not to say he is corrupted, which I think is as far from the one as the other. But howsoever I could wish he should not presume so much on the strength of his shoulders as to think he alone were able to bear up the ruins of a building that is falling. And to say the truth, in many cases I observe he hath more courage than needs, not weighing his own strength, nor that it is *soma d'altri humeri*; for I perceive he hath little *appoggio* to the main pillar that now stands upright.

“Sir Francis Bacon was in election to be sworn of the Council on Sunday last, and missed it narrowly, by the opposition almost of the whole Table, not so much in shew against his person as his place of Attorney, as being incompatible for many reasons; whereof among others, this was not the least, that it was unseemly he should plead before his Fellow-counsellors uncovered. But if that be all, he hath precedents in store; and for more surety, the King is so well affected to him; and the Lord Chancellor, as well in spite to the Lord Coke, as favour to him, so pliable, that it is thought he will part with the Great Seal upon good composition; whereby he may take his ease, and the other become Lord Keeper, whilst in the mean time the King should not want the Lord Chancellor's service, if he be preferred to be President of the Council¹.

“The Countess of Salisbury hath brought a son, whereto the King is invited sometime the next week to be Godfather².

¹ Sir Francis Bacon was sworn of the Privy Council the day after this letter was written; and, says Mr. Chamberlain, June 22, was “in election by every man's account to be presently Lord Keeper.” That office was not, however, conferred on him till the 7th of March following.

² See in Mr. Chamberlain's next letter, p. 175.

"The King dines this day in town at Alderman Cockaine's, invited thither by the Company of the New Merchants; where, I hear, they mean to present him with a basin of gold of £.1000 value; and the Prince with half as much¹."

On the 15th of June, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Gerrard Sams and Sir John Bennet², both of London; on the 16th, at Greenwich, Sir Thomas Tildesley, of Lancashire; and Sir Richard Wynne³, of Carnarvonshire; and on the 20th, at Whitehall, Sir Henry Finch, of Kent⁴; and Sir Conor Macgwire, of Ireland.

On the latter day, says Camden, "the King, accompanied with the Prince, goes to the Star-chamber. The Peers and Judges receive him at Kings-bridge⁵. He made a very fine Speech, wherein he vindicated the authority of the Chancellor as his own; and gave the Judges a gentle touch, &c. which is expected to be published⁶."

On the 21st of June, says Sir John Finett, "the King, being invited by the Earle of Exeter to hunt and dine at Wimbelton⁷ (as was also the French Amba-

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.—Of the Alderman's dinner see Mr. Chamberlain's next letter.

² On the 22d Mr. Chamberlain told Sir Dudley Carleton that "young Bennet and young Sams were both knighted together the last week at Theobalds." Of the former I find nothing more than that in the parish register of Stratford-le-Bow is this entry: "Sir Gerard Samms, Knt. and Ursula Saxy, widow, married Nov. 4, 1619." (Lysons's *Environs*, vol. III. p. 501.) — The latter was the eldest son of Sir John Bennet, D. C. L. who is fully noticed in vol. I. p. 206; father to John first Lord Ossulston, and to Henry Earl of Arlington; and grandfather to Charles first Earl of Tankerville. He resided at Dawley in the parish of Harlington, Middlesex. Of his family see Brydges's *Peerage*, vol. IV. p. 128.

³ Second son of Sir John Wynne, Baronet (of whom see vol. II. pp. 48, 428). He succeeded his elder brother John as third Baronet, and, dying himself without issue, was succeeded by another brother, Owen.

⁴ Father of John Lord Finch, of Fordwich, Keeper of the Great Seal. He was second son of Sir Thomas Finch, of Eastwell in Kent; and brother to Sir Moyle Finch, Bart. the ancestor of the Earls of Winchelsea and Nottingham. Sir Henry was educated at Oriel College, Oxford; was Reader at Gray's Inn in 1605; attained the rank of Serjeant in 1614; and died Oct. 11, 1625. He published some legal works, of which see Chalmers's *Biographical Dictionary*.

⁵ The water-stairs in Palace Yard; see vol. II. p. 32.

⁶ It was printed in 4to, and a copy is in the British Museum. Minutes of it in Sir Julius Cæsar's autograph, are in the Lansdown MSS. 160.

⁷ Queen Elizabeth visited the Earl at Wimbledon in 1597 and 1599; see her "*Progresses*," vol. III. pp. 413, 440. The mansion was re-built by him in the memorable year 1588, it having been

sador), killed a brace of staggs before he came to the house. There I demanded when it would be his Majestie's pleasure to give accesse there to the Ambassador, whom he had not yet seen. It was assigned him for after dinner. The Ambassador dined with the Lords and Ladies at a table placed in the midst of a faire roome, he seated in a chaire at the upper end, at his right-hand the Earle of Arundell, the Earle of Mountgomery, the Lady Elizabeth Hatton, the Lady Rosse, &c. At his left, the Lady of Exeter, the Lady Ann Tuffton, the Marquisse de l'Isle, uncle to the Duke of Retz, (new come into England, and to that Feast in company of the French Ambassador,) the Lord Haye, Sir George Villiers, and others. After dinner the Ambassador going to see the house, he attended in the gallery the King's comming, and had there an houre's entertainment of discourse with his Majesty¹."

On the 22d of June, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The King dined at Alderman Cockaine's, where he was presented with a basin of gold, and as many pieces in it as together made up the sum of £.1000; the Prince after the same manner with £.500; so that the whole charge of this feast stood the new Company² in more than £.3100, the thanks remaining wholly with the Alderman, who at parting was knighted with the City Sword³.

purchased of Sir Christopher Hatton, and the manor obtained from the Crown in exchange for an estate in Lincolnshire. The Earl of Exeter left Wimbledon to his third son Sir Edward Cecil, who was in 1626 created Lord Putney and Viscount Wimbleton, and of whom see vol. II. p. 441. It was afterwards purchased by the Crown for Queen Henrietta Maria, in whose possession it continued till the Civil War, and on the Restoration the Crown again got possession; but it was soon after sold, and it has since passed through several private hands to Earl Spencer. The magnificent palace built by Lord Burleigh was pulled down by Sir Theodore Jansen about 1716; but two views engraved in Lysons's *Environs* from two scarce prints, and the Parliamentary Survey, printed in the Tenth volume of the *Archæologia*, preserve some idea of its former grandeur. Fuller, in his "Worthies" under Surrey, calls it "a daring structure," and prefers it to Nonsuch. Several smaller mansions have since arisen and disappeared near its site, as described in the *History of Surrey*, vol. III. p. 270.—King James paid another Visit to Wimbledon, very similar to the present, June 28, 1619.

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 35.

² See Mr. Chamberlain's letter of Nov. 2.

³ This eminent Citizen was descended from an ancient Derbyshire family, which produced a Judge of the King's Bench in the reign of Henry the Fourth; and was son of Mr. William Cockaine, Merchant Adventurer in the Muscovy, Spanish, Portugal, and Eastland Companies, who died in 1599. Sir William, who, as his father, was a Citizen and Skinner, served Sheriff of London in 1609, and was soon after elected an Alderman. In 1612 he was appointed the first director and governor of the artificers sent over to plant the City of Londonderry. He was chosen Lord Mayor in 1619, and during his Mayoralty had the honour of receiving the King at St. Paul's, on his visit to the Cathedral,

“The Installing of the new Knights of the Garter is to be at Windsor the 7th of the next month, when it was once appointed likewise that the Prince should have been created Prince of Wales there, as it were in private. But that is since altered, and put off till after Michaelmas.

“The Progress is to begin the 19th of the next month, and goes no further than Rufford, a place of the Earl of Shrewsbury in Nottinghamshire, and so comes back by Grafton and Woodstock.

“This day sevensnight the King was in person at Hatfield to Christen the Earl of Salisbury’s son¹, and kissed the old Countess² twice or thrice, who kept a table alone, save that the Lady Villiers Compton³ only was admitted, and all the Entertainment was chiefly intended and directed to her and her children and followers. The Lady Walden was Godmother, and the Lord Treasurer [the Earl of Suffolk] the other Godfather⁴ with the King⁵, with whom he is grown as great and as far in grace as ever he was; which sudden mutations without any intermedium make the Spanish Ambassador cry out: *Voto a Dios, que la Corte d’Inglaterra es como un libro de Cavalleros andantes!*

March 26, 1619-20; see more particularly under that date. He died Oct. 20, 1626, aged 66, and was buried Dec. 12, in St. Paul’s, where a Sermon was preached by Dean Donne (printed in his “LXXX Sermons”), and a monument erected to his memory. His son Charles was in 1642 created an Irish peer by the title of Viscount Cullen; the title became extinct in 1810 with Borlase the sixth who had enjoyed it. See more fully in Lodge’s Irish Peerage, vol. IV. pp. 329 *et seq.* and in the History of Leicestershire, vol. IV. pp. 607 *et seq.* under Elmeſthorpe, which was for some time the seat of the family. The Alderman’s town-house at which the King dined, was, according to the History of Surrey (III. 401), one he had newly built in the parish of St. Peter-le-Poor. His father was buried in that Church.

¹ The eldest son, named James from his Royal Godfather, but died an infant. In Mr. Chamberlain’s letter of Nov. 9 this year, he says: “The Earl of Salisbury’s young son died this day fortnight. The King was his Godfather in person, held him at the font all the time he was Christening, gave him the reversion of all his father’s places and offices;—and yet all these favours could not prolong life.”

² The Countess of Salisbury’s mother, the Countess of Suffolk. She had been partly involved in the disgrace of another daughter, the Countess of Somerset, and for a short time confined; see p. 119.

³ The mother of the new Favourite, Sir George Villiers; she was Mary, daughter of Anthony Beaumont, Esq. married first to Sir George Villiers, and, secondly, to Sir Thomas Compton, second son of Henry Lord Compton. She was afterwards, in 1618, created Countess of Buckingham.

⁴ The Earl of Suffolk was maternal grandfather to the infant; the Lady Howard de Walden aunt by marriage.

⁵ The service was performed, says Camden’s Annals, by Dr. Richard Neale, of whom see vol. II. p. 190, at this time Bishop of Lincoln.

"The Lord Coke hath had much ado to bear off the storm, and whether he be yet well cleared of it is a question; though the general voice goes, that on Wednesday night he made his peace with the King¹, who had him *coram*, and in long confession; but the next day the King coming to the Star-chamber, and passing him over in silence, makes the world judge the best of his case. The truth is that his Lady² stood him in great stead, both in soliciting at the Council-table, wherein she hath done herself great deal of honour, but specially in refusing to sever her state or cause from his, as she was moved to do; but resolving and publishing that she would run the same fortune with him³. This is thought not to be the least motive of his safety, that it was told the King that he could not do him a greater honour than to take him down now, for, whereas he was nothing well beloved before, if he should suffer in this cause, he would be accounted the Martyr of the Commonwealth⁴."

On the 26th of June, the King knighted, at Greenwich, Sir Robert Wiseman, of London; and Sir Henry Fox; on the 27th, Sir Theobald Gorges, of Wiltshire; and on the 28th, Sir Patriarck Fox, of Ireland.

On the 30th, his Majesty knighted, at Oatlands, Sir John Villiers⁵, of Leicestershire; and Sir Robert Gorges, of Wiltshire; and on the 3d of July, at the same place, Sir John Sedley⁶, of Kent; Sir Thomas Wiseman, of Norfolk; Sir George Stoughton⁷; and Sir Thomas Mildmay⁸.

¹ See, however, the next letter of Mr. Chamberlain; p. 178.

² Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Earl of Exeter, first married to Sir William Hatton, and secondly to Sir Edward Coke. She was often called Lady Hatton; see p. 177.

³ Her conduct afterwards altered; if we believe Mr. Chamberlain's letter of Nov. 14 this year.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁵ The Favourite's elder brother, who on June 19, 1619, was advanced to the titles of Baron Villiers of Stoke, and Viscount Purbeck. He died in 1657, s. p. l. when his titles became extinct. Of his titles being claimed by the descendants of an illegitimate son, see Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 769; and Nicolas's Peerage, p. 529.—Of Sir John's marriage see under September 29, 1617.

⁶ Eldest son of Sir William Sedley, Baronet, noticed in vol. II. p. 429. He succeeded to his father's title, and was Sheriff of Kent in 1620. His brothers Henry and Charles successively enjoyed the title; and with the latter, the celebrated Wit, it became extinct.

⁷ One of the seventeen children, and eldest surviving son, of Sir Lawrence Stoughton, of Stoke near Guildford, Surrey, noticed in vol. II. p. 432. Sir George married, but died s. p. Jan. 25, 1623-4, aged 41. See the History of Surrey, vol. I. p. 170.

⁸ This Sir Thomas Mildmay was of Springfield, Essex, born Dec. 8, 1591; of that branch of the family see Morant's Essex, vol. II. p. 9.

On the 6th of July, Mr. Chamberlain again wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The King is now at Windsor, where the Instalment of the Knights of the Garter [Francis Earl of Rutland, George Villiers, Master of the Horse, and Robert Sydney, Viscount Lisle,] is to be to-morrow upon the King's charge¹; and this afternoon there is a Chapter to be held about the Earl of Somerset's arms or hatchment (as they call them) whether they were to be taken away, or left as they are². Only he wears his Garter still and his George; by what privilege I know not, but sure he finds very great favour, and hath already the liberty of the Tower, with the Lieutenant's company; and they say his Lady's Pardon is drawn up, or drawing, and will be signed before the Progress.

"The Lord Hay is upon parting³, having lingered here long in hope to be made of the Garter; the success whereof cannot be held now in suspense beyond this day⁴. He goes in great pomp; but they say is like to be shrewdly disappointed; for having made twenty special suits of apparel for so many days' abode, besides his travelling robes, news is very lately come, that the French have newly changed or altered their fashion; whereby he must needs be out of countenance if he be not set out after the last edition! But the Lady Hadington hath bestowed a favour upon him that will not easily fall to the ground; for she says the flower and beauty of his Embassy consists in three Mignards⁵, three Dancers and three Fools or Buffoons. The Mignards are himself, Sir Harry Rich⁶, and Sir George Goring⁷; the Dancers, Sir Gilbert Hoghton⁸, Auchmouty⁹, and Abercromby¹⁰; the Fools or Buffoons are Sir Thomas Jermyn¹¹, Sir Ralph Sheldon¹², and Sir Thomas Badger¹³.

"The King dined last week at Wimbledon, where the Earl of Exeter made great entertainment. The Lady Hatton¹⁴ was there, and well graced, for the

¹ Camden says they were installed, "the King being present; but there was no Sermon preached, although it was Sunday."

² After a long dispute," says Mr. Chamberlain, July 6, "by warrant under the King's own hand, they were removed higher, as the manner is when new come in." Camden says, "the King ordered that felony should not be reckoned amongst the disgraces for those who were to be excluded from the Order of St. George, *which was without precedent*."

³ As Ambassador to France.

⁴ He was never K. G.

⁵ The French beau of the day.

⁶ See vol. II. p. 344, *et sæpe*.

⁷ Ibid. pp. 38, 197.

⁸ Vol. I. p. 454; vol. II. p. 267.

⁹ Ibid. p. 725.

¹¹ Vol. I. p. 226.

¹² Knighted Dec. 10, 1607, at Theobalds (see vol. II. p. 160) or, according to my MS. list of Knights, at Thetford.

¹³ See vol. I. p. 471; vol. II. pp. 25, 108.

¹⁴ Sir Edward Coke's Lady, and the Earl's daughter; see p. 176.

King kissed her twice ; but it seems it was but a lightening ; for on Sunday last the Lord Coke, by the King's express order delivered by Secretary Winwood, was sequestered from the Council-table, from riding his circuit, which is supplied by Sir Randolph Crew, and willed to review and correct his Reports, as many ways faulty and full of novelties in point of law. This was the sum of the censure for his corrupt dealing with Sir Robert Rich and Sir Christopher Hatton in the extent of their lands and instalment of the debt due to the King, and for words spoken touching the *Præmunire* the last day of Easter Term, and for his insolent behaviour when he and the Judges were before the King at Whitehall. Some that wish him well, fear the matter will not end here ; for he is wilful and will take no counsel, but, seeking to make good his first errors, which in truth were foul, runs into worse, and entangles himself every day more and more, and gives his enemies such advantage to work upon the King's indignation towards him, that he is in great danger. The world discourses diversely how he should run so far into the King's displeasure, and will not take those alledged causes for sound payment ; but stick not to say, that he was too busy in the late business, and dived further into secrets than there was need, and so, perhaps, might see *nudam sine veste Dianam*. Howsoever it be, he was not well advised, that he doth not *cedere temporibus*, and carry himself more dutifully and submissively to his Majesty in his actions, though his words be now humble enough. His Lady hath likewise carried herself very indiscreetly of late towards the Queen, whereby she hath lost her favor, and is forbidden her Court, as also the King's. The story were too long to tell, but it was about braving and uncivil words to the Lady Compton, Sir George Villiers's mother, and vouching the Queen for her author ¹."

On the 10th of July, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Humphrey Mildmay ², of Essex ; and in the afternoon, at Theobalds, Sir George Smith ³, of Herefordshire.

On the 16th, were knighted Sir Henry Leveston, *Scotus* ; and Sir Charles Snell, of Wiltshire ; on the 17th, Sir Sebastian Harvey ⁴, of London ; and Sir

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Sir Humphrey Mildmay, of Danbury, was Sheriff of Essex in 1635. Of this family see Morant's History of that County, vol. II. p. 29.

³ Mr. Chamberlain tells Sir Dudley Carleton, Sept. 3, that "your cousin Sir George Smith hath made his wife a Lady."

⁴ Sheriff of London in 1610, and Lord Mayor in 1618.

Piers Crosbie, of Ireland; on the 18th, Sir Edward Chichester¹, of Devonshire; Sir Francis Anneslow; Sir Arthur Basset²; Sir Edward Dorrington; and Sir William Henton; on the 19th, Sir Richard Lumley³, of Sussex; and Sir Robert Lloyd.

During the King's stay at Theobalds, says Sir John Finett, "the Spanish Ambassador being invited to hunt with his Majesty in the Park, went thither early, and after hunting, dined with his Majesty in the Privy-chamber; the King seated (as alwaies) in the midst of the table, and the Ambassador on the left-hand at the end. His son Don Antonio, his Gentlemen, and Servants, had their dinner provided them in the Councill-chamber, where Sir Patrick Murray, myselfe, and some other of the King's servants, kept them company. Don Antonio sitting on a stoole at the end of the table, gave subject of exception to one of the King's Gentlemen Ushers, as being, he said, irregular and unusuall, that place being ever wont to be reserved empty for state, but this, as a superstition of a Gentleman Usher's, was neglected. After his Majestie's dinner the Ambassador (introduced by the Vice-chamberlain to the presence of his Majesty in the Privy-gallery) had there his audience; and as he was parting, the Lord Lysle,

¹ Brother to Sir Arthur Chichester, Baron Belfast, noticed in p. 1; and himself in 1625, on succeeding to his brother's estate, advanced to that title and to the superior one of Viscount Chichester of Carrickfergus. He was also constituted his brother's successor in the government of Carrickfergus, Admiral of Loughneagh, Governor of Culmore, and sworn of the Irish Privy Council; and in 1632 made joint Commissioner of the Treasury. He died July 8, 1648, and was succeeded by his son Arthur, afterwards Earl of Donegal. See minor particulars in Brydges's Peerage, vol. VIII. 193.

² Of Omberleigh in Devonshire, of the family of the present Lord de Dunstanville. He married a sister of the above Sir Edward Chichester. His mother was descended from the Plantagenets; and his son, Sir Robert Basset, affected to make some pretensions to the Crown of England; and (not being able to make them good) was forced to fly into France to save his head. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 503.

³ Great-grandson of Richard fourth Baron Lumley, and second cousin of John sixth Baron, (fully noticed in vol. I. p. 71,) who selected him for his heir, and on whose death in 1609 he had succeeded to the greater part of the family estate. In 1628 (the old Barony being dormant under the attainder of Sir George Lumley, the last Baron's father,) he was created an Irish Peer by the title of Viscount Lumley of Waterford. He is said to have garrisoned Lumley Castle in Durham for the King; and had a command in the Royal Army, in the West, under Prince Rupert. He was in Bristol when the garrison surrendered to the Parliament Forces in 1645. He survived the Restoration, and was succeeded by his grandson Richard, advanced in 1681 to be an English Baron, and in 1690 to the Earldom of Scarborough.

Chamberlain to the Queen, asked me, and I the Ambassador, whether he had any intention to visite her Majesty. He answered, he thought it ill manners, and a kind of disrespect at so short a warning to venture the trouble of her Majesty¹."

On the 19th of July, the King began his Summer Progress, the Gests of which were as follow :

" HIS MAJESTY'S GESTS, 1616².

					Nights.	Miles.
July 19.	From Theoballs to Royston	-	-	-	1	21
20.	Thence to Hauns	-	-	-	3	14
23.	To Bletsoe	-	-	-	3	8
26.	To Ashby	-	-	-	3	8
29.	To Kirbie	-	-	-	2	16
31.	To Apethorp	-	-	-	3	6
August 3.	To Burleigh	-	-	-	3	11
6.	To Beavor	-	-	-	2	11
8.	To Newarke	-	-	-	1	10
9.	To Rufford	-	-	-	5	9
14.	To Nottingham	-	-	-	1	14
15.	To Leicester	-	-	-	1	16
16.	To Dingley	-	-	-	1	11
17.	To Holmbie	-	-	-	2	17
19.	To Grafton	-	-	-	3	11
22.	To Woodstocke	-	-	-	5	22
27.	To Rycote	-	-	-	1	12
28.	To Biesame	-	-	-	1	13
29.	To Windsor during pleasure."					

On the 20th of July, the King knighted, at Royston, Sir Archibald Napper³,

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 35.

² Communicated from the records of the Corporation of Leicester, by Mr. J. Stockdale Hardy; see vol. II. p. 450.—That another copy reached that Town (where all would be anxious to examine it), we perceive from a Letter of Mr. Alderman Robert Heyricke (of whom see vol. II. p. 463) to his brother Sir William, the King's Jeweller, in which he says: "I thank you for the King's Gests, which you did send me, and for the news of his Majesty's dining at Mr. Alderman Cockayne's [see p. 174]." History of Leicestershire, vol. II. p. 630.

³ Sir Archibald Napier, Laird of Merchiston, was educated at Glasgow University, became a Gen-

Scotus; Sir James Cragge, *Scotus*; and Sir Sidney Montague¹, of Northamptonshire.

On the same day, July 20, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir D. Carleton:

“The Lord Hay the week and very day before his departure made many *allées* and *venues* betwixt the King and the Earl of Somerset; which was the more noted, for that he was the first that openly fell from him, and now belike finding the wind coming about, applies himself to it; for he is known to be a cunning observer; and *quo non sagacior alter Principis affectus rimari*. The success of these errands is already come thus far, that yesterday he had the liberty of the Tower granted him; and Henrickson and his wife had the fortune to see him with his Garter and George about his neck walking and talking with the Earl of Northumberland²; and he and his Lady saluting at the window. It is much spoken of how foreign Princes of that Order, to let our own pass, can digest to be coupled in society with a man lawfully and publicly convicted of so foul a fault; or how a man civilly dead, and corrupt in blood, and so no gentleman, should continue a Knight of the Garter. But this age affords things as strange and incompatible.

“The Lady’s Pardon was signed the other week. The special means and inducements for it were four; the great and long services of her father’s family and friends; her own penitence and voluntary confession both before her arraign-ment of the Privy-chamber to King James, and accompanied him to England. He was sworn a Privy Counsellor of Scotland in 1615; was appointed Treasurer Depute for life in 1622; Lord Justice-clerk, and one of the Lords of Session in 1623. He was created a Baronet of Nova Scotia, March 2, 1627, and advanced to a Scotch Peerage, by the title of Lord Napier of Merchiston, May 4 following. He died in November 1645, having suffered not a little for his loyalty and opposition to the Covenanters; and was succeeded by his son Archibald. His “Memoirs,” written by himself, were published in 1793, by the late Lord. See very fully in Douglas’s Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 292. — One “Archibald Napper” (probably the same) received Free Gifts of £.200 in 1613; and of £.1800 this year.

¹ The youngest of the six sons of Sir Edward Mountague, K. B. created in 1622 Lord Montague of Boughton (of whom see vol. I. p. 225); and father of Edward first Earl of Sandwich. Sir Sidney was one of the Grooms of the King’s Bed-chamber, and “in the particular esteem of James the First;” Charles made him a Master of his Court of Requests. He was M. P. for Huntingdonshire in the memorable Parliament of 1640, and was for a time one of the most forward in opposition to the Earl of Strafford and the ministry; but afterwards, finding his colleagues go too far, he refused the oath to the Earl of Essex, was expelled the House Dec. 3, 1642, and was confined for some days in the Tower. He died Sept. 25, 1644. See more minutely in Brydges’s Peerage, vol. III. p. 448.

² Who was still a prisoner in the Tower on account of the Gunpowder Plot; see vol. I. p. 583; vol. II. p. 441.

ment and at the bar ; the promise of the Lord Steward and Peers to intercede for her ; and lastly, that she was not the principal, but accessory before the fact, and drawn to it by the instigation of base persons. But it seems the common people take not this for good payment ; for on Saturday last the Queen with the Countess of Derby, the Lady Ruthen, and the Lord Carew, coming privately in a coach to see somewhat here in town, there grew a whispering that it was the Lady Somerset and her Mother ; whereupon people flocked together, and followed the coach in great numbers, railing, and reviling, and abusing the footmen, and putting them all in fear. Neither would they be otherways persuaded, till they saw them enter into Whitehall, though the Countess discovered herself, and talked a pace ; and the Lord Carew would have gone out of the coach to satisfy them, but that the Queen would not let him, least he could not have got in again.

“The King came hither from the Instalment the 9th of this month ; and within a hour of his arrival Sir John Holles was created Baron of Houghton¹, and Sir John Roper Baron of Tenem [Teynham]², or Ten Ms, as Ned Wy-marke³ terms it, being the sum they were rated at⁴. This money was presently delivered to the Lord Hay, for that he could not move till this weight set his wheels agoing. He went thence the 12th of this present ; and, as we hear, landed at Dieppe the 14th.

“On Sunday the King gave order at Theobalds that the Earl of Arundel should be sworn a Counsellor, which was done upon Thursday at Whitehall ; *quod bene vertat* !⁵ The Queen hath long laboured the same honour for the Lord

¹ In 1624 advanced to the Earldom of Clare ; see vol. II. p. 178.

² See vol. I. p. 201. His grandson John, afterwards third Lord Teynham, was made K. B. at the latter end of this year 1616, on the Creation of Charles Prince of Wales ; see hereafter.

³ “A wealthy man, great novilant, and constant Paul’s-walker,” of whom Dr. Fuller tells a laughable anecdote, which will be quoted in its place.

⁴ Sir John Holles enjoyed a large income, for in Queen Elizabeth’s reign he had £4000 a year ; see vol. I. p. *526. This was well known and taken advantage of ; only a few months before the present date he had been fined £1000 in the Star-chamber ; see p. 106.—Lord Teynham must also have had a great fortune. Brydges (Peerage, vol. VII. p. 83) says : “From the secret history of Court Intrigues, it seems that the peerage was given him as a compensation for some place, which Villiers the Favourite wrested from him.” This must be rejected as an error ; it was a compensation for the round sum of *ten thousand pounds paid down*.

⁵ Mr. Chamberlain makes use of this expression because the Earl was a Papist, and therefore a doubtful Counsellor for a Protestant King. But on Christmas-day this year this Nobleman conformed to the Church of England ; see under that date.

Carew¹; so that, going to Theobalds on Monday to take her leave of the King, that is now gone on his Progress, she brought yesterday a warrant to swear him this day or to-morrow²." It was objected as an incongruity that he should be preferred to that place before her Lord Chamberlain; but that is salved with a distinction, that he is not made as her Vice-chamberlain, but as Master of the Ordnance³."

The splendid Embassy of the Lord Hay to France, mentioned by Mr. Chamberlain in his last Letters, was undertaken, according to Wilson, ostensibly to congratulate King Louis on his Marriage with the Infanta of Spain, but in reality to ascertain how far an alliance with the French's King sister would be attainable for Prince Charles. "And who," says that Historian, "is fitter for that employment, being only for courtship and bravery, than the Lord Hay, a Gentleman whose composition of mind tended that way? he was born in Scotland, where bravery was in no superfluity; bred up in France, where he could not have it in extravagancy; but he found it in England and made it his vanity. The King had a large hand and he had a large heart, and though he were no great Favourite ever, yet he was never but in favour. He with a great Train of young Noblemen and others, Courtiers of eminency, suited themselves with all those ornaments that would give lustre to so dazzling an appearance, as love and the congratulation of it carried with it. All the study was who should be most glorious; and he had the happiest fancy whose invention could express something novel, neat, and unusual that others might admire; so that Huntington's Prophecy was fulfilled here, when speaking of the time of the Scots' Conquest of England he said, '*Multimodâ variatione vestium et indumentorum designaretur.*' I remember I saw one of the Lord Ambassador's suits (and pardon me that I take notice of such pretty things); the cloak and the hose were made of very fine white beaver, imbroidered richly all over with gold and silver; the cloak almost to the cape within and without having no lining but imbroidery. The doublet was cloth of gold imbroidered so thick that it could not be discerned, and a white beaver hat suitable, brim-full of embroidery both above and below. This is presented as an essay for one of the meanest he wore; so that if this relation should

¹ Her Majesty's constant attendant; see vol. II. p. 644.

² He was chosen July 17 (Camden's Annals), and sworn July 20 (Howes' Chronicle).

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

last longer than his old cloathes, the Reader might well think it a romance, savouring rather of fancy than reality.

“ Thus accoutered and accomplished, he went into France; and a day for Audience being prefixed, all the argument and dispute betwixt him and his gallant Train (which took up some time) was how they should go to Court. Coaches, like curtains, would eclipse their splendour; riding on horseback in boots would make them look like travellers, not Courtiers; and not having all foote cloathes it would be an unsuitable mixture. Those that brought rich trappings for their horses, were willing to have them seen; so it was concluded for the foot-cloathes, and those that have none, to their bitter cost, must furnish themselves. This preparation begot expectation, and that filled all the windows, balconies, and streets of Paris as they passed with a multitude of spectators. Six Trumpeters and two Marshalls in tawney velvet liveries completely suited, laced all over with gold richly and closely laid, led the way; the Ambassador followed with a great Train of Pages and Footmen in the same rich livery encircling his horse; and his rest retinue according to their qualities and degrees in as much bravery as they could desire or procure, followed in couples to the wonderment of the beholders. Some said (how truly I cannot assert) that the Ambassador's horse was shod with silver shoes, lightly tacked on; and when he came to a place where persons or beauties of eminency were, his very horse prancing and curveting in humble reverence, flung his shoes away, which the greedy understanders scrambled for; and he was content to be gazed on and admired till a farrier, or rather an argentier, in one of his rich liveries among his Train of Footmen, out of a tawny velvet bag, took others, and tacked them on, which lasted till he came to the next troop of *Grandeës*. And thus with much ado he reached the Louvre.

“ All compliments and outward ceremonies of state being performed, the Lord Ambassador made his business known by more private addresses, which in appearance was well resented, but indeed not intended, and came to no effect; for the Duke of Savoy had anticipated the young Lady's affection for the Prince of *Piemont* his son. The Savoyan Agents, bringing more gold in their hands than on their backs, had so smoothed their ways, that not only those about the *Princesse* but the great ones themselves are made workers for them. After the Ambassador had been feasted magnificently, with all his gallant Train, in several places, to show the grandeur of France, he came over into England and practised it here;

making many times upon several occasions such stupendous feasts and heaped banquets, as if all the creatures had contributed to his excess¹. I know not what limits or bounds are set to the glories of Princes' Courts or Noble minds. We see the sea itself and all its tributary rivers do ebb and flow; but if they swell so high to overflow that bank that reason hath prescribed to keep them in, what inundations of sad mischief follow, experience shows²."

Having visited Hawnes³ and Bletsoe⁴, the King, before leaving the latter mansion, on the 26th of July, knighted Sir Thomas Hatton, of Cambridgeshire. The Gests would then lead his Majesty to Castle Ashby⁵, Kirby⁶, Apthorp⁷, and Burley-on-the-Hill⁸.

On the 5th of August, the Anniversary of the Gowry Conspiracy, Bishop Andrews preached before the King at "Burleigh neere Okeham," on Esther, ii. 21⁹. On the next day Sir Francis Bodenhams¹⁰ was knighted there.

Following the Gests we find the Royal Progress next directed to Belvoir Castle, Newark, Rufford¹¹, and Nottingham.

From the Corporation Records of Nottingham we have this year the following particulars of the Royal reception¹²:

"Mr. Mayor and his six Brethren and seven of the Counsell are required to take care for the passages, and wayes, and streets within and about the Town, against his Majesty's coming, that they may be in good and convenient order; and for this purpose seven are required to oversee the North side and seven the

¹ For one of these entertainments, given to the French Ambassador Extraordinary, Baron de Tour, Feb. 22, 1616-17, Ben Jonson's *Masque of Lethe* was composed; which see hereafter.

² Kennett's *Complete History of England*, vol. II. p. 703.

³ See p. 13.

⁴ See vol. II. p. 453.

⁵ Ibid.

⁶ Ibid. p. 454.

⁷ See vol. II. p. 457, and this Volume, p. 18.

⁸ See p. 20; and under March 1616-17.

⁹ This Discourse is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Sixth on the subject. The text is very appropriate: "In those days, while Mordecai sat in the King's gate, two of the King's Chamberlains, Bigthan and Teresh, of those which kept the door, were wrath, and sought to lay hand on the King Ahasuerus."

¹⁰ Son of Sir William Bodenhams, of Ryhall, Rutland, mentioned in vol. II. p. 210, who died in 1613. Sir Francis was Sheriff of that county in 1614, and died in 1645, aged 63. See a pedigree of the family in *Blore's History*, pp. 49, 201.

¹¹ Of these three places see vol. II. pp. 457-460. — From Mr. Chamberlain's letter in p. 175, it appears that Rufford was still called the Earl of Shrewsbury's, not Sir George Saville's.

¹² Communicated by Mr. Enfield, the Town Clerk; see vol. II. p. 462.

South side of the Town. Mr. Mayor to have £.26. 13s. 6d.¹ from the Chamberlains at his will. Forty to be in red gowns, forty in black, and forty in cloaks with halberts. The forty in red gowns to be Mr. Mayor and his Brethren and the rest of the Clothing; the forty black gowns to be [as named in the Book]; for cloaks and halberts [as also named]; for the night watch [as named]."

The only account of the King's coming is on the Book's cover:

"Wednesday, August 15, 1616. His Majesty at Nottingham for one night only, at Thurland House²."

A few days after, "before this Company Mr. Stables made his account for the charges spent about his Majesty's Entertainment here, who lodged here one night, viz. the 14th of August last." The several payments, amounting to £.27. 1s. 10d. are nearly the same with those particularized under 1616.

From Nottingham the King would proceed to Leicester³, and from thence to Dingley, where on the 17th, before his departure, he knighted Sir Thomas Cave⁴, of Leicestershire.

On the following day, at his Palace of Holdenby⁵, his Majesty conferred the same honour on Sir James Ware, of Somersetshire.

Having spent three days at Grafton⁶, the King's arrival at Woodstock was appointed for the 22d of August, where he met the Queen. Whilst this rendezvous was in anticipation, her Majesty addressed the following familiar letter to the Favourite Sir George Villiers, then attending on the King:

"My kind Dog; Your letter hath bin acceptable to me; I rest alreadie assured of your carefullnesse. Yow maye tell your Maister, that the King of Denemarke hath sent me tuelf faire mares, and, as the bringer of them assures me, all greate with foles, which I intend to put into Byfield Parke⁷, where, being the other day a hunting, I could find but verie few deare, but great store of other

¹ The same sum was provided for the King's Entertainment in 1614; see p. 21.

² See vol. II. p. 462.

³ No particulars of his entertainment there, as in 1612 and 1614, have been found among the Corporation Records. Some poor women having been recently executed as witches at Leicester, the Royal Author of the "Demonologie" is said to have personally examined the boy who counterfeited to be bewitched, and to have detected the imposture. Of this see Mr. Chamberlain's letter, p. 192.

⁴ This is the fourth Sir Thomas Cave knighted by King James the First (see p. 92); nor can I determine whether the note in that page does not apply to the present Knight.

⁵ See vol. II. p. *460.

⁶ Ibid.

⁷ The manor of Byfleet, Surrey, which had been in the Crown from the time of Edward II. was

cattle, as I shall tell your Maister my self when I see him. I hope to meete you all at Woodstock at the time appointed, till when I wish you all happines and contentment, ANNA R.

"I thank you for your paines taken in remembering the King for the pailing of me Parke. I will doe you anie service I can¹."

On the 24th of August, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The Queen is gone towards Woodstock, to meet the King, where they say Sir George Villiers shall be created Viscount Beaumont to-morrow². The Coronet and robes are sent down for the purpose. In the mean time the Earl of Somerset and his Lady have the liberty of the Tower, and converse freely together both by day and night; and the Earl of Northumberland is much in their company, framing himself altogether to be friendly and sociable."

"On the 27th, toward the evening, George Villiers, Master of the Horse, was created, at Woodstock, first Baron of Whaddon in the County of Berks, (which was the estate of my Lord Grey lately banished,) being introduced by the Lords Compton and Norris, the Lord Carew carrying the trabea or robe of state before him; and then Viscount Villiers, being brought in by the Earl of Suffolk and Viscount Lisle, in a surcoat of scarlet velvet, Norris carrying the robes of state of the same velvet before him, and Compton the crown [coronet]; the King sitting upon his throne, and the Queen and Prince being there present³."

On the 28th, the King knighted, at Woodstock, Sir John Burgh⁴, of Ireland ;

first settled by King James on Prince Henry;—after his death on the Queen. Aubrey says she began to build a new house here, which was finished by Sir James Fullerton, a Courtier (mentioned in p. 106). What remains of this palace forms a good farm-house, standing on a knoll, at the foot of which runs the river Wey. History of Surrey, vol. III. p. 183. — In 1617 Sir Edward Howard received "for keeping Bifleet Park and Lodge, 8d. by the day, £12. 3s. 4d. *per annum*."

¹ Harl. MSS. 6986. The following billet, from the same volume, was addressed by the Royal writer "to the Viscount Villiers," between the above date of August 27, and the following fifth of January, when he was created Earl of Buckingham: "My kind Dog; I have receaved your letter, which is verie wellcom to me; yow doe verie well in lugging the sowes [the King's] eare, and I thank yow for it, and would have yow doe so still, upon condition that yow continue a watchfull dog to him, and be alwaies true to him. So wishing you all happines, ANNA R.

² Mr. Chamberlain should have said, "Viscount Villiers the day after to-morrow."

³ Camden's Annals.—The first draft is in the MS. volume of Camden, in Harl. MSS. 5176, where he has added this memorandum: "Ego non interfui, sed ex fideli relatione accepi."

⁴ Sir John Bourke was fifth son of Ulick third Earl of Clanricarde, and brother to Richard fourth

Sir Francis Rogers, of Somersetshire; Sir William Pope¹, of Oxfordshire; and Sir Richard Cecil², of Northamptonshire.

On the same day we find Prince Charles at Oxford, whither he “came honourably attended; and having deliberately visited the University, the Schools, Colleges, and Libraries, and after he had been entertained with ceremonies and feasting suitable to his dignity and merit, he was pleased with his own hand-writing to matriculate himself a Member of the University, August 28, with this symbole or sentence: ‘Si vis omnia subjicere, subijce te rationi. CAROLUS P.’ To say no more, he was afterwards a King of great religion and learning, but unfortunate³.”

While the King was at Woodstock “this year in the month of August, the Vice-chancellor of Oxford, certain Heads of Houses, Proctors, and others, went to do their obedience to him. The King receiving them graciously, the Orator made a Speech; which being done, the King gave them his hand to kiss, with a promise that he would continue favourable to the University, and see that learning and learned men be encouraged. Afterward they presented to him and certain of the Nobles very rich gloves, which is all I find of that solemnity⁴.”

On the 29th of August the King knighted, at Rycot⁵, Sir John Denham⁶; and on the 30th, at Bisham, Sir Andrew Grey, *Scotus*.

Earl, noticed in vol. II. p. 124. In 1629 he was created Viscount Bourke of Clanmories. He died Nov. 16, 1635, and was succeeded by his son Thomas. See Archdall's Irish Peerage, vol. I. p. 131.

¹ Son of Sir William Pope, Baronet, afterwards Earl of Downe (of whom see vol. I. pp. 224, 527), and father of William the third Earl. The present Sir William was born at Wroxton in Oxfordshire in 1596, and dying v. p. was buried there Aug. 29, 1624. See Warton's Life of Sir Thos. Pope, 443.

² Second son of Thomas first Earl of Exeter, father of David the third Earl, and ancestor of the present Marquess. He was born in 1570, was M. P. for Peterborough in 1597 and 1603, and afterwards for Stamford. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. II. p. 604.

³ Wood's Annals of Oxford, by Gutch, vol. II. p. 325; and Fasti Oxonienses, by Bliss, vol. I. col. 369. In the latter work, the following note by Bishop Kennet is attached: “I have now by me a small fair silver medal, having on the one side the arms of the Prince of Wales, and on the reverse, in a double circle with a rose in the centre, the motto, ‘Si vis omnia subjicere, subijce te rationi.’”

⁴ From Wood's Annals of Oxford (by Gutch), vol. II. p. 322. It is there printed under the year 1615, which is undoubtedly wrong, for during all the month of August that year the King was far in the West of England; see pp. 97—99. I conceive it to belong to 1614; and, having omitted it under that date, place it here, because Wood says that a similar deputation waited on the King and presented him with gloves “the next year [1616] at the same place.” ⁵ See vol. II. *462.

⁶ Father of the eminent Poet of the same names. He had been for some time Chief Baron of

On the 3d of September, Mr. Chamberlain, mentioning new troubles in France, tells Sir D. Carleton: "The alarm doth not greatly disturb the King's hunting sports, who since his coming from the Progress keeps much about Windsor, though he has not yet been there, nor will not they say till Thursday, when the Council are appointed to meet him. On Saturday he is expected here; on Monday to Havering; and after some time spent in Waltham Forest, to Theobalds, till when the Christening of the Earl of Montgomery's young son is deferred, and will then be solemnly performed at Endvile [Enfield], where the Lady lies in ¹.

"The 27th of last month, towards the evening, Sir George Villiers was, at Woodstock, created Baron of Whaddon and Viscount Villiers. The Queen and Prince were present, and all the company seemed jolly and well apaid ². It is generally thought and spoken that he is not to continue so long, but shall shortly be made Earl of Leicester and of the Council, together with the Bishop of Winchester [Dr. James Montagu] and Sir John Deckham ³; as likewise that the Lord Coke shall surrender his place to the Recorder Sir Henry Montagu, and he be made a Baron ⁴. Which is the more probable in that there is a bruit the Earl of Somerset should have leave to traverse his indictment, a thing seldom or never heard of in the like case ⁵."

On the 6th, George Lord Audley "was created Earl of Castlehaven in Ireland; that he being an ancient Baron of England, now settled in Ireland ⁶, should have an higher place than the Irish Barons ⁷."

the Exchequer in Ireland, and one of the Lord Commissioners of that Kingdom; and his poetical son was born at Dublin in 1615. He was constituted one of the Barons of the English Exchequer, May 2, 1617. He possessed the manors of West Bergholt and Little Horkesley in Essex; and Morant, vol. II. p. 229, erroneously gives May 28, 1617, as the date of his knighthood. He died at his seat at Egham, Jan. 6, 1638, and has a magnificent, but singular monument, in the Church, which is finely engraved in the History of Surrey, vol. III. p. 258.

¹ The Earl's residence was Elsynge Hall or Enfield House, let to him by the Crown, of which see vol. II. p. 101. The infant was the Earl's eldest son, James (doubtless so named from the King his Godfather), who was buried at Enfield, Aug. 29, 1619.

² *i. e.* satisfied. See in Nares's Glossary examples from Spenser, Fairfax, and Shakspeare.

³ Dacombe; see p. 170.

⁴ Sir Henry Montagu was made Chief Justice in Coke's place November 18 this year, but was not raised to the Peerage till Dec. 19, 1620.

⁵ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁶ He was some time Governor of Utrecht in the Netherlands, and was sorely wounded at the battle of Kinsale in Ireland, Dec. 24, 1601. He died in 1617. See Brydges's Peerage, VI. 554.

⁷ Camden's Annals.

On the 7th of September, the King knighted at Windsor, Sir Edward Villiers¹, of Leicestershire; Sir Henry Butler², of Hertfordshire; and Sir John Drake, of Devonshire; and on the 17th, at Theobalds, Sir Giles Brydges³, of Gloucestershire.

On the 23d his Majesty knighted, at Enfield⁴, Sir Francis Coningsby⁵, of Hertfordshire; and Sir William Plomer, of Surrey; on the 28th, at Hampton Court, Sir Richard St. George, Norroy King at Arms⁶.

On the 29th, Dr. Lancelot Andrews, Bishop of Ely, was admitted into the King's Privy Council⁷.

On the 1st of October, the eldest son of Sir John Egerton, K. B.⁸ and grand-

¹ Half brother to the Favourite, being second son of Sir George Villiers, by his first wife Audrey, daughter of William Sanders, Esq. Sir Edward was sent Ambassador to Bohemia in 1620, and made President of Munster in 1622. He lived there, says Sir Henry Wotton, in singular estimation for his justice and hospitality, and died Sept. 7, 1626. His wife was Barbara, niece of Sir Oliver St. John, who was created Viscount Grandison with limitation to her posterity. Three of her sons successively bore the title, and her descendants still enjoy it, George the present and fifth Earl of Jersey being the seventh Viscount.

² Second son of Sir John (afterwards Lord) Boteler, of Brantfield, Hertfordshire, by Elizabeth, own sister of Sir Edward Villiers, the subject of the last note. In 1610, on the death of his grandfather Sir Henry (noticed in vol. I. p. 112), this Sir Henry was heir apparent to his father; but he died v. p. s. p. See Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. II. pp. 46, 47.—The third Knight of this trio was probably also a relation, since Elizabeth, sister of this Sir Henry Boteler, married Sir Francis Drake, of Ashe, co. Devon.

³ Grandson of John first Baron Chandos, and grandfather of James eighth Baron. He was born in 1580; being seated at Wilton Castle near Ross, was Sheriff of Herefordshire in 1625; and whilst M. P. for that county, was created a Baronet May 17, 1627. He was succeeded in his title by his son John. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 727.

⁴ The King was at Enfield the same day in 1617 and 1624: see vol. II. p. 101.

⁵ Of an ancient family at South Mims, and son of Sir Ralph Coningsby, knighted at Grimston, April 18, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 84). Sir Francis married Mary, sister of Dudley third Lord North, but died s. p. in 1630. See Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. I. p. 445.

⁶ Afterwards Clarencieux, and progenitor of a family that became eminent in the College of Arms. He was appointed Windsor Herald in 1602, Norroy 1603, Clarencieux 1623, and died May 17, 1635. He was an able and inquisitive officer, not only learned, but the friend and companion of the greatest Antiquaries his contemporaries—Sir Robert Cotton, Camden, and Spelman. See further in Noble's College of Arms, pp. 236—238.

⁷ Camden's Annals.—“This honour,” says Mr. Chamberlain, Oct. 12, “was done the Bishop, to put him in heart upon the distaste he had in missing the Bishopric of Winchester;” to which he was afterwards preferred in 1619.

⁸ Afterwards Earl of Bridgewater, see vol. I. p. 222. His son now baptized died an infant.

son of the Lord Chancellor Ellesmere, was Christened at Durham House, the King being Godfather, and giving his name to the infant ¹.

October 2, Sir Robert Tracy ², of Gloucestershire, was knighted at Theobalds.

"On the fifth and seventh, a Committee, delegated for creating Charles, son of the King, Prince of Wales, assembled for the nomination of the Knights of the Bath, *viz.* the [Earl of Suffolk] Treasurer, the Duke of Lenox, the [Earl of Pembroke] Chamberlain, and the Earl of Arundel ³."

On the 11th, the King knighted, at Royston, Sir George Sexton ⁴; on the 22d, at Hinchinbrook ⁵, Sir George Hamilton ⁶, *Scotus*.

On the 12th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The Lord Hay is returned out of France, and by reason of a blow on his eye at tennis hath tarried two or three days at Waltham, but goes this day to Royston.

"The Prince's Creation is appointed to be the 4th of the next month; with much solemnity of Tilting, Barriers, and a Masque by the Inns of Court.

"There shall be twenty-five Knights of the Bath made; but they must be all Noblemen or Noblemen's sons.

"The Lord Chancellor, as is thought, shall be made a Viscount, though he aim at an Earldom now he hath got a young grandchild to leave it to. But he that was last made a Viscount [Villiers] will hardly suffer any to leap over his head.

"Your cousin Sir William Cope hath been long in speech with Mr. Secretary to be made a Baron; but he hath dallied and delayed, that now at last he hath fully concluded with Sir Philip Stanhope ⁷. The agreement is £.2000 presently, £.4000 at Midsummer, and £.4000 at this time twelvemonth.

¹ Malcolm's London, vol. IV. p. 275 (where for Denham read Durham), and Camden's Annals. The date given by the latter authority is Oct. 2, but this is probably wrong, if the King was at Theobalds on that day.

² Son of Sir John, afterwards Viscount, Tracy, whom he succeeded in that title. He was M. P. for Gloucestershire in several Parliaments. Of his family see Archdall's Irish Peerage, vol. V. p. 10.

³ Camden's Annals.—The Earl of Arundel was made Earl Marshal for the occasion; see p. 223.

⁴ Or rather, it is probable, Thekeston; see vol. I. p. 88. ⁵ See vol. I. p. 98; vol. II. p. 370.

⁶ Son of Claud Lord Paisley (third son of James second Earl of Arran and first Duke of Chatelherault), and brother to James first Earl of Abercorn. He was styled of Greenlaw and Roscrea, co. Tipperary, and behaved with great bravery in the service of Charles I. Of his family see Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. I. p. 2.

⁷ See under Nov. 7. — The family of Cope still enjoys a Baronetcy only (which is not extinct as stated in vol. II. p. 425, but now enjoyed by Sir John, the tenth Baronet).

"The Lord of Somerset's lands are all in a manner given away and bestowed. The Prince hath all those in the North. The Lord Villiers had Sherburne; but, resigning it, he hath a book granted, that they say by Sir John Deckham's means will rise to the value of near £.80,000¹. In the mean time Sherburne is bestowed upon Sir John Digby, which besides the goodly house and other commodities, is presently worth £.800 a year, and in reasonable time will be double. I cannot yet learn how or why this fortune is befallen him; but sure it is somewhat extraordinary².

"The week before last the Lord Coke was called before the Lord Chancellor and Mr. Attorney, who delivered him the King's pleasure, that he must forbear sitting in Westminster Hall till further commandment; but in the mean time he might execute and perform what pertained to his place in his chamber. The next week we shall have the business of the Præmunire canvassed in the Star-chamber, where no doubt he will be glanced at, if not nearly pinched.

"Justice Warburton³ was in some disfavour for hanging a Scottish falconer of the King's at Oxford, contrary, they say, to express commandment of the King's that he should be reprieved. It was generally said that he should be displaced, and have a writ of ease, as they call it; but howsoever it comes to pass, he sits still in the Court of Common Pleas.

"Justice Winch⁴ likewise, and Serjeant Crew⁵, are somewhat discountenanced for hanging certain Witches in their circuit at Leicester; whereas the King, coming that way, found out the juggling and imposture of the boy, that counterfeited

¹ On the 26th of October Mr. John Castle told Mr. James Milles: "The Lord Villiers hath refused the offer of Sherburne in a most noble fashion, praying the King that the building of his fortunes may not to be founded on the ruins of another. In regard of the refusal, I hear there is intended to him a purchase of £.32,000 value in fee-farm." Birch's MSS. 4176.

² Sherburne, after frequent exchanges between the Crown and the Royal Favourites, as has been before shewn in vol. II. p. 416, was Nov. 17 this year confirmed to Sir John Digby, in whose family it has ever since remained. Mr. Chamberlain is at a loss to account for the direction the Royal favour now took; he did not know, as we do (from Hutchins's Dorsetshire, vol. IV. p. 83), that Sir John Digby paid down £.10,000.—He took his title of Baron from Sherburne, Nov. 25, 1618.

³ Of whom see vol. I. p. 207.

⁴ Sir Humphrey Winch was sent to Ireland in 1606, where he was first Chief Baron and afterwards Chief Justice and Councillor of State. He was made a Judge of the Common Pleas in England November 7, 1611; and died of apoplexy in Chancery-lane, Feb. 4, 1624, aged 71. His epitaph (from what Church does not appear) is preserved in Harl. MS. 6121, and describes his family.

⁵ Sir Ranulph Crew, noticed in p. 5.

to be bewitched¹. It seems some ill planet hangs over our Judges' heads here as in other places, that so many in so short time fall into disgrace.

"The Lord Chancellor hath resigned the Lieutenantcy of Buckinghamshire to the Lord Villiers, whom he observes many ways.

"The Lord Roos² is gone for Spain very gallant, having six footmen, whose apparelling stood him in £.50 a man; eight pages at £.80 a piece; twelve Gentlemen, to each of whom he gave £.100 to provide themselves; some twenty ordinary servants, who were likewise very well appointed; and twelve sumpter-cloths, that stood him in better than £.1500. All his other provisions were suitable, and he went in a very good and fair ship of the King's, called the Dreadnought³. He is grown very great with Secretary Winwood⁴, insomuch that all the world say, he relies more upon him than his father Lake⁵. At parting he sent him a very fair present of plate better worth than £.200. It seems he

¹ Incredible as it may appear, no less than nine women had been hung as witches at Leicester on the 18th of July. The boy who affected to be bewitched by them was son of one Mr. Smythe, of Husband's Bosworth; see under that parish in my History of Leicestershire, vol. II. p. *471. To the interference of the King may be attributed the preservation of five other unfortunate females, who, having been imprisoned under a similar charge, were liberated on the 15th of October, a sixth having died in gaol. Such persecutions were too frequent in this century; see the work before referred to, *ubi supra*.

² From Mr. Chamberlain's letter of Nov. 14 we learn that Lord Roos did not sail from Portsmouth till the 3d of that month; but had had "ever since as fair a wind as ever blew, so that it is certainly held that he is before this time arrived at Lisbon."

³ "At his parting he sent Secretary Winwood a diamond worth £.40." Ibid.

⁴ William, only son of William Cecil, second Earl of Exeter, by Elizabeth, sole daughter and heir of Edward Manners, third Earl of Rutland, succeeded to the Barony of Roos in 1591 on the death of his mother. His father was inclined to Popery, and the son, during his travels in Italy, being greatly courted by the Romish party, was easily induced to embrace their faith. It was not, however, till after his return from his Spanish embassy, which took place in March 1616-17 (see hereafter), that, finally leaving his native shore, he declared his apostacy. He died in the suburbs of Naples, June 27, 1618. A memoir of him, from Birch's Life of Prince Henry, is copied in Brydges's Peers of James I. pp. 470 *et seq.*

⁵ Lord Roos had in Feb. this year married Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Secretary Lake. He soon "fell into some neglect of this Lady and her kindred," which Lady Lake, the irritated mother, attempted to revenge by accusing his Lordship of criminal intercourse with the young Countess of his grandfather the Earl of Rutland. Prompted by her malicious jealousy, she was induced to forge some documents, the detection of which involved in ruin the Lake family, including the innocent Secretary. A circumstantial detail of this affair is quoted in Brydges's Peers of James I. from the Life of King James by Sanderson, who was Secretary to Lord Roos.

is very desirous to buy friends; for he gave the Earl of Arundel all the statues he brought out of Italy at one clap; and repositeth such confidence in him, that he hath left in his hands all the intails of his land and other writings of the greatest moment¹."

On the 26th of October, Mr. Chamberlain again addressed Sir D. Carleton :

" Lord Coke hath been called twice or thrice this Term before the Lord Chancellor and the King's learned Council, to give a reason of divers things delivered in his ' Reports.' The objections at first were eight-and-twenty, which either were so weak in themselves, or so well answered, that they are now reduced to five; wherein they are not sufficiently satisfied, but have referred his answers over to the King. It is not the least part of his humiliations to be convented in these points before such Judges as Serjeant Crew, Serjeant Montagu, and Serjeant Finch, the Attorney [Bacon], and Solicitor [Yelverton], whereof the greater part, except the Solicitor, are held no great men in law; and withall to find so coarse usage, as not to be once offered to sit down, and so unrespective and uncivil carriage from the Lord Chancellor's men, that not one of them did move a hat, or make any other sign of regard towards him. Whereof the Queen taking notice, his Majesty hath since sent word that he would have him well used. The King hath said he doth this *ad correctionem*, not *ad destructionem*.

" The King comes this day to Theobalds; and is looked for here on Wednesday. His stay will be no longer than the Prince's Creation, and the pricking of the Sheriffs²."

On the 29th, Mr. John Leman³ was sworn Lord Mayor of the City of London; for which occasion Anthony Munday prepared the following Pageant :

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Ibid.

³ Who, says Fuller in his " Worthies," was son of John Leman, of Gillingham in Norfolk; and who was knighted in his Mayoralty, March 9, 1616-17. He is mentioned in the History of Surrey, vol. III. p. 635, as a Benefactor to the Almshouses in his time founded by his Company at Newington Butts.



**CHRYSANALEIA, THE GOLDEN FISHING;
OR, HONOUR OF FISHMONGERS;
APPLAUDING THE ADVANCEMENT OF MR. JOHN LEMAN, ALDERMAN,
TO THE DIGNITIE OF LORD MAIOR OF LONDON,
TAKING HIS OATH IN THE SAME AUTHORITY AT WESTMINSTER,
ON TUESDAY, BEING THE 29TH DAY OF OCTOBER 1616.**

PERFORMED IN HEARTY LOVE TO HIM, AND AT THE CHARGES OF HIS WORTHY BRETHREN,
THE ANCIENT AND RIGHT WORSHIPFULL COMPANY OF FISHMONGERS.



Devised and written by A[NTHONY] M[UNDAY], Citizen and Draper of London¹.

To the right worshipfull, judicious, and truly generous Gentlemen, the
MASTER, WARDENS, and ASSISTANTS of the auncient and worthie
COMPANIE OF FISHMONGERS.

It were a mightie injury (in my poore opinion) that you, being the main Occan,
feeding all the Rivolets of this painfull employment, and directing the course of
any current that way tending, should not receive the just retribution and dutie,

¹ "Printed at London by George Purslowe, 1616." Of this Pageant I have traced three copies. One is in the Library at Longleat; another was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, August 6, 1820, for £.7. 7s. to Mr. Knell, and is now in the possession of Thomas Jolley, Esq.; and a third, bound up with Dekker's Entertainment through the City, 1603, Roberts's Farewell to the King of Denmark, 1606, (both reprinted in vol. I.) and other tracts, was sold at Mr. Garrick's sale, May 3, 1823. The lot was purchased by Mr. Thorpe for £.20. 10s. N.

which by instinct of nature all Rivers send duly to their nursing mother the Sea. Therefore, Gentlemen, I doe but send you that which in right and equity belongs unto you, the patronage and protection of this orphan childe, begotten in your service, bredde up hitherto by your favour and kind cherishing, and not despayring now to dye through your want of regard. It is your owne; welcome it in love and acceptance, and I have as much as I desire, and will studie hereafter to deserve. Yours in any service,

AN. MUNDY.

CHRYSANALEIA, THE GOLDEN FISHING; OR, HONOUR OF FISHMONGERS.

I finde it faithfully recorded in Authors of reverend antiquity, that when Godfrey Duke of Boloigne was chosen Generall of the Christian Army for the freedome and deliverance of Jerusalem from Saladine and all his other heathen miscreants, every Christian Kingdome did ayde him with their best assistance, because it was a businesse to God's high honour and generall comfort of poore distressed Christians. As from all other Kingdomes, so from England (among other bands of worthy men) went the Merchants trading in fish, oyle, flaxe, silkes, and other commodities, most frequently then termed Fishmongers, and the Goldsmithes, then in a late-begun league of love and amity, by many friendly helpes and furtherances each to other in divers dangerous adventures, as well on the seas as the land, no men being more forward in those affaires and in those times then they. After the most glorious victory obtained against the Pagans, and Jerusalem regained, they joyned together in as glorious an action of helping to build the ruined wall againe, from the Water-gate of Comfort to the Sheepegate of Innocencie or Holinesse. And so much the rather, because there was then much necessity of their paines and endeavour, not only by fishing and shipping to supply the daily wants of the souldiours, but also for bringing gold and silver thither for beautifying God's City and Temple.

And as this league of love and fellowship began upon so good an occasion, so they continued, and declared it in England's Jerusalem, our famous Metropolis, London, building the wall and two North-gates therein, Moore-gate and Criplesgate, as yet their armes and memories on them doe sufficiently testifie, the one performed by Thomas Faulconer, Fishmonger, and the other by William Shaw, Goldsmith.

Moreover, fish and oyle, as well as gold, spices, silks, &c. were first brought in by those fore-named Merchants, that the golden lampe might not want holy and

precious oyle, nor rich and orient pearles (first found in shelles by painfull and industrious Fishermen,) faile to be set in jewels and rings of gold, as beeing the purest mettall that the earth can affoord. And, hereupon, honourable Antiquity thought meete to bestow such armory on them, as for ever might continue their brotherly affection. First, Peter's Keies, he being called from the condition of a poore Fisherman to be the prime Apostle, and those supposed keyes the Fishmongers beare in their ensignes of armes, not superstitiously any way, but to declare an earnest zeale of entring into Heaven's Kingdome; next, David's Cup of Saving Health, which the Goldsmiths also beare in their banners. So much briefly in approving their long-continued love and amity.

THE REASON OF OUR PRESENT SHEWE.

Time having turned his yearely glasse for election of a Magistrate, a brother of the Fishmongers' Societie comming (by right of place and general suffrages of the Citizens) to the high dignitie of Lord Maior of this Citie for the yeere ensuing, our devices for that solemne and joviall day were and are accordingly proportioned by the discreete and well-advised judgement of the Gentlemen thereto chosen and deputed, in manner and forme as followeth: First, therefore, because Fishing is the absolute embleme of our present intendement, and Fishmongers having beene such worthy Merchants in those reverend and authentique times, leaving their matter of commerce and merchandise, and ayming at their true hieroglyphical impresse for the daye's intended honour, thus we marshall the order of proceeding.

Our first device that ushers and leades the way is a very goodly and beautifull Fishing-busse¹, called, the Fishmongers' Esperanza, or Hope of London; being in her true old shape, forme, and proportion, yet dispensed withall in some beautie for the daye's honour. It may passe (by generall sufferance) for the same Fishing-busse wherein Saint Peter sate mending his nets when his best Master called him from that humble and lowly condition, and made him a Fisher of Men. If not so, take her for one of those Fishing-busses, which not only enricheth our Kingdome with all variety of fish the sea can yeelde, but helpeth also (in that kind) all other lands. Fishermen in this Fishing-busse are seriously

¹ *Busse*, signifying a fishing-boat, is a word of German origin. N.

at labour, drawing up their nets laden with living fish, and bestowing them bountifully among the people.

Next followed a crowned Dolphin, alluding somway to the Lord Maior's coate of armes¹, but more properly to the Company's, and therefore may serve indifferently for both. But because it is a fish inclined much by nature to musique, Arion, a famous Musicion and Poet, rideth on his backe, being saved so from death, when robbers and pirates on the seas would maliciously have drowned him.

Then commeth the King of Moores², gallantly mounted on a Golden Leopard, he hurling gold and silver every way about him. Before, on either side, and behinde him, ride sixe other his Tributarie Kings on horsebacke, gorgeously attired in faire guilt armours, and apt furniture thereto belonging; they carry ingots of golde and silver, and each one his dart; and in this order they attend on him, shewing thereby, that the Fishmongers are not unmindfull of their combined Brethren, the worthy Company of Goldsmithes, in this solemne day of triumph.

We next present a singular embleme, corresponding with the creast and cognizance of the Lord Maior, and bearing an especiall morality beside;—a Leman-tree in full and ample forme, richly laden with the fruite and flowers it beareth¹. Neere to the stocke or roote thereof, a godly Pellicane hath built her nest with all her tender brood about her; and because her love and care (according to the opinion of Aristotle, Plinie, Gesner, and divers other good writers,) makes her extraordinarily jealous of them, as never daring to be absent from them (the sustenance she receiveth from the male bird being insufficient for their nourishing); with her beake she launceth her breast, and so supplieth that want with her owne blood. Our cited authors variously affirme, that this love and cherishing of them lasteth the space of a whole yeare, by which time they become strong and able for flight; and then, though they survive, the damme dyeth; an excellent type of government in a Magistrate, who, at his meere entrance into his yeare's office becommeth a nursing father of the family; which, though hee breed not, yet by his best endeavour hee must labour to bring up. If his love and delight be such

¹ From "Heylyn's Help" by Wright we find that Sir John Leman's arms were Azure, a fess between three dolphins embowed Argent. That his crest was a lemon-tree is fresh information. N.

² This King of the Moors was probably not a new pageant, but the same as appeared in 1613 (see vol. II. p. 688); Munday shews some ingenuity in his manner of introducing it into the present Shew. N.

to the Commonwealth as that of the Pellican to her young ones, by broken sleeps, daily and nightly cares, that the very least harm should happen to his charge, then doth he justly answer to our embleme; and, as of her, so of him, it may well be sayd, his brest and bowels of true zeale and affection are alwaies open to feed and cherish them (even with his best endeavor and diligence), to the expiration of his yeare; and then, though the maine authoritie of governement in him may be sayd to dye, yet it surviveth in other Pellicans of the same brood, and so it reacheth to them in the same manner. And because the Leman-tree (by the affirmation of Julius Solinus, Polyhistor, Dioscorides, Pomponius Mela, Petrus Mexius, and Antonius Verdierus,) both in fruite, flowers, rinde, pith, and juyce, are admirable preservers of the sences in man, restoring, comforting, and relieving any the least decay in them, wee seated the Five Sences¹ about the Tree, in their best and liviest representations, as fitly jumping with our morall methode.

Our next device, before it be marshalled in due ranke and order, is a goodly Bower, shaped in forme of a flowrie arbour, and adorned with all the scutchions of armes of so many worthy men of the Fishmongers' Company as have beene Lord Maiors, and each man's name truely set downe on them. It is appointed first to stand in Paule's Church-yard; and [afterwards] at such a place as is thought most convenient. In this Bower is a faire Tombe, whereon in armour lyeth the imaginary body of Sir William Walworth, sometime twice Lord Maior of London, and a famous brother of the Fishmongers' Company². The reason of this conceit aimeth at that tempestuous and troublesome time of King Richard the Second, and the fourth yeare of his raigne, whose life, crowne, and dignitie (next under God's omnipotent power,) were manfully defended and preserved by that worthy man, Walworth. Suppose his marble statue (after the manner of knightly buriall) to lye upon the Tombe, and both it and the Bower to be worthily attended by those five Knights in armour, and mounted on horsebacke, that were knighted with Sir William in the field, after he had slaine the proud insulting rebell, capitaine and ring-leader to all the rest. Sixe Trumpetters well-

¹ Of the introduction of the Five Senses into the London Pageants see vol. II. p. 688. N.

² Sir William Walworth always made his appearance when a Fishmonger was sworn Lord Mayor. In 1700, when Sir Thomas Abney, one of the Company, entered his Mayoralty, "there were in Cheap-side five fine Pageants, and a person rode before the cavalcade in armour, with a dagger in his hand, representing Sir William Walworth, the head of the rebel Watt Tyler being carried on a pole before him. This was the more remarkable, by reason that story has not been represented these 40 years, none of the Fishmongers' Company hapning to be Lord Mayor since." *Post Boy*, Oct. 21, 1700. N.

mounted and appointed, with trumpet-banners of the Companie's armes, and a gallant guard of Halberdiers, being 24 in number, with watchet-silke coats, having the Fishmongers' armes on the brest, Sir William Walworth's on the backe, and the Cittie's on the left arme, white hats and feathers, and goodly halbards in their hands; these likewise have their rancke and place neere to the Tombe and Bower. London's Genius, a comely youth, attired in the shape of an angell, with a golden crowne on his head, golden wings at his backe, bearing a golden wand in his hand, sits mounted on horsebacke by the Bower, with an officer at armes, bearing the rebel's head on Walworth's dagger. So soone as the Lord Maior is come neere, and way made for his better attention, the Genius speaketh, the trumpets sound their severall surden flourishes, Walworth ariseth, and he is convaied on horsebacke from the Bower, as you may better perceive by the Speeches apted for the purpose. The Bower and Tombe are likewise borne along before him for his more convenient returne to rest againe.

Wee come now to our last invention in this our Triumphall Progresse, memorizing London's great day of deliverance and the Fishmongers' fame for ever, in anno 1381, and on Corpus Christi-day in West Smithfield, where the like number of rebels as then were never assembled. Leaving the matter a case of desperate rebellion, the manner a most base and barbarous kinde of proceeding, to the great disturbance of the King and State, and unavoydable ruine of this Citie, but for the good Angell of defence then guarding it, and the worthy Lord Maior made the second instrument, let us imagine (though not in the magnificent forme as then it was done, yet according to our compasse of performance,) that whatsoever hath formerly been sayd concerning Walworth's reviving at the Tombe, his Royall attending, and the beautifull monument following, is all but a shaddow of that triumphant victorie in our aptest allusion.

Our Pageant-chariot is drawne by two Mare-men [Mermen] and two Maremayds, as being supporters to the Companie's coate of armes. In the highest seate of eminence sits the triumphing Angell, who that day smote the enemy by Walworth's hand, and laid all his proud presuming in the dust. With one hand, King Richard sitting in a degree beneath her, she holds his crowne on fast, that neither forraine hostilitie nor home-bred trecherie should ever more shake it. In the other hand hee holds his striking rodde, inferring thus much thereby: "By mee Kings reigne, and their enemies are scattered." All the fore front is beautified with Royall Vertues, as Truth, Vertue, Honor, Temperance, Fortitude,

Zeale, Equity, Conscience, beating downe Treason and Mutinie. Behind, and on the sides, sit Justice, Authority, Lawe, Vigilancy, Peace, Plentie, and Discipline, as best props and pillars to any Kingly Estate. These, as all the rest, are best observed by their severall emblems and properties, borne by each one, and their adornement answerable to them in like manner.

Having thus briefly described the order of the daie's service, insomuch as appertaineth to my charge and place, not omitting the Fishing-busse, Dolphine, Merman and Mermaid, upon the water first, and afterward marshalled in such forme as you have heard on land, wee come to set downe the Speeches according as they are appointed to be spoken; beginning first at the Bower and Tombe in Paule's Church-yard, after my Lorde's returne from Westminster, where the Cittie's Genius thus beginneth:

GENIUS. By vertue of this powerfull wand,
Which in a minute can command
Graves, vaults, and deepes yeeld up their dead,
How late or long time buried,—
Thou image of that worthy man,
That London's Knighthood first began,
In office of the Mayoraltie,
(A high and gracefull dignitie,)—
Though yet thou sleep'st in shade of death,
By me take power of life and breath!

Here the GENIUS strikes on him with his wand, whereat he begins to stir, and, comming off the Tombe, looks strangely about him. The first sound of surden¹ trumpets.

London's Genius gives thee leave,
An ayrie substance to receive;
Speech like to spirits raysde from rest,
Triumphs and pleasures to digest
By power of sacred poesie.

The second sound.

And seeing this daye's solemnitie
Honours thine own Societie
Of Fishmongers, a worthy band,
Fam'd both to Citie and the Land,

¹ From the Latin *surdus* and French *sourd*, here meaning either *low-toned* (for the word *surd* is explained by *unheard* in Todd's Johnson), or, as seems more probable, *deafening*. N.

By the rare deed of loyaltie,
 Upon the King's proud enemy;
 Sir William Walworth, doe what may
 Remaine in thee to crowne this day
 With generall fullnesse of content,
 For thereto all our hopes are bent.

A full flourish without surdens ; after which SIR WILLIAM WALWORTH, standing before the Tombe, and doing reverence to the GENIUS, speaks this Speech :

WALWORTH. He that above two hundred years,
 Free from disturbance, cares, and feares,
 Hath silent slept, and rays'd this day,
 To doe what gracefull helpe I may
 Unto that band of worthy men,
 That were and are my Brethren.
 And you, grave Fathers of this State,
 Which I myselfe did propagate
 Twice, as Lord Maior. Oh! yet to see
 This ancient famous dignity
 Flourish so fairely ; and, as then,
 Blest with as wise and worthy men ;
 Mooves teares of joy, and bids me call,
 God's benison light on you all !

Here he doth reverence to them all.

Your character, office, and place,
 Well wot I by that Sword and Mace,
 With such a difference, as before
 This day once happened, and no more ;
 The Genius speakes you in mine eare,
 A mayden-man, a batcheler ;
 You being the second¹, let me say,
 This is a blessed marriage-day
 Of you to that great dignity
 Of your dread Sovereigne's Deputie.
 No doubt but your chaste thoughts and life
 Will be as chaste to such a wife.
 All happy blessings crowne, I pray,
 London's and Leman's wedding-day ! *Another full flourish.*
 Observing that faire Liverie ;
 You are of mine owne Company.
 How can I then but joy to see

¹ Never any Lord Mayor a bachelor before Mr. John Leman, and that was Sir Hugh Clopton, Mercer, in 1491.

Such emiaence and high degree,
 Grace still our grave Society?
 And see, my Lord, this bower relates,
 How many famous Magistrates,
 From the Fishmongers' ancient name,
 Successively to honour came
 In London's Maioraltie; these faire coats
 Their severall armes and titles note,—

Pointing to the scutchions of armes as they hang in order on the bower.

Turke, Lovekin, Wroth, Pechie, Mordon,
 These before me were every one.
 Then I; next Exton, Ascham, Faulconer,
 Michel, Parneis, Reinwall, Foster,
 Hulin, Hampton, Ostridge, Remington,
 Kneisworth, Coppinger. These being gon,
 Succeeded Amcotes, Curteis, Allot¹,
 And now John Leman, who well I wot,
 Welcome as any to this place,
 With our kinde Brethren's love and grace.
 Aldermen we have had many more
 That never this high office bore,
 And therefore are not ranked heere,
 But only such as Lord Maiors were.

The GENIUS, as charming him againe with his wand, proceedeth thus :

GENIUS. Walworth, here stay; we may doe wrong,
 And hold this worthy man too long
 From those great States, that at this Feast
 Are every one a welcome guest.
 Those Aldermen that, on the day
 When the proud rebel thou didst slay,

¹ Walter or Wyllyam Turke was Lord Mayor in 1349; Johan Lovekyn in 1348, 1358, 1365, and 1366 (M. P. for London in 1346, 1347, 1348, and 1365); Johan Wroth in 1360 (M. P. in 1373); Johan Pecke in 1361 (M. P. in 1370 and 1373); Symon Mordon in 1368 (M. P. 1365); Sir Wyllyam Walworth in 1374 and 1380 (M. P. in 1377 and 1383); Sir Nycholas Exton in 1386 and 1387 (M. P. in 1385); Sir William Askam in 1403 (M. P. in 1394, 1406, and 1413); Sir Thomas Falconer in 1414 (M. P. in 1415, 1420, 1421, and 1422); Sir Johan Michel in 1424 (M. P. in 1420, 1422, 1425, 1426, 1427, and 1434); Sir John Parneys in 1432; Sir John Raynwell in 1426 (M. P. in 1445); Sir Stephen Foster in 1454 (M. P. in 1434); Sir William Huly in 1459; Sir William Hampton in 1472 (M. P. in 1478); Sir Rauf Astry in 1493; Sir Johan or William Reymington in 1500; Sir Thomas Knesworth in 1505; Sir William Copinger in 1512; Sir Henry Amcotes in 1548; Sir Thomas Curteis in 1557 (M. P. in 1547); John Allot in 1590. N.

Were knighted with thee in the field,
 Are raysde by me their love to yeelde
 With this faire guard, and tend on thee
 In honouring this solemnity,
 Mount then thy courser, that we may
 (In the remainder of this day),
 Doe more than time will now afford.—
 Set on then, honourable Lord.

*In the afternoone, when the Lord Mayor returneth to Paule's, all the devices
 being aptly placed in order, neere to the Little Conduit, they are by SIR
 WILLIAM WALWORTH described to him in this manner :*

WALWORTH. Now, worthy Lord, there is impos'd on me,
 A brieve narration of each severall Shew
 Provided for this Triumph, as you see,
 In order to describe them as they goe.
 The Fishing-busse instructs you first to know
 The toylsome travell of poore Fishermen,
 Subjected to all weathers, where and when.

In stormy tempests they omit no paine,
 To blesse all lands with the sea's bounteous store;
 Their labour doth returne rich golden gaine,
 Whereof themselves taste least by sea or shore,
 But like good soules, contented evermore
 With any benefit their toyle can bring,
 The Fisher well is termed Content's true King.

This Embleme of the Dolphine, is the armorie
 Belonging to our Brethren, and beside
 Speakes somewhat of that creature's qualitie,
 By nature musicall, as hath been tryde;
 Poesie and Musique therefore thus do ride
 Upon his back, in sweete Arion's shape,
 Who by a Dolphine thus did death escape.

The King of Moores thus mounted, and his Traine,
 Shewes your affection to that Company,
 Which league with you in love, and doth containe
 The aptness of your correspondency
 On either side, to hold inseparably.
 His Indian treasure liberally is throwne,
 To make his bounteous heart the better knowne.

This Leman-tree your honour may conceit
 More than I speake, because mysteriously
 Some hidden secret thereon doth awayte
 Knowne to yourselfe; it speaks ingeniously
 The character of your authoritie,
 Figur'd in that faire bird fostring her brood,
 Though with the deare expence of her owne blood.

Continuall cares and many broken sleepes,
 Hearte-killing feares, which waite on eminence
 Hard at the heeles, and tortingly still keeps
 Within the soule imperious residence,
 As whippes t' afflict both hope and patience,—
 These in the Pellicane are figur'd heere,
 And these you hardly will avoide this yeere.

But as the Sences sit about the tree,
 And shew you how their vertues are supplied
 Still with fresh vigor; so, no doubt, will be
 Your busiest-troubles sweetly qualified,
 By those five helpes that hold up dignitie,
 Discretion, Policie, and Providence,
 Courage, Correction;—these barre all offence.

Lastly, looke on a figure of that day,
 When by Heaven's helpe and Walworth's happy hand,
 That swarme of rebels, who sought all to sway,
 And have both King and Country at command;
 E'en in their height of pride I made them stand,
 And, in my Sovereign's sight, there I stroke dead
 Their chieffest Captaine and commanding head.

The rest of that base rout, dismayed thereby,
 And all tumultuous troubles calmely reast,
 King Richard, to requite true loyaltie,
 His gracious favour presently exprest
 In Royall manner, knighting me and the rest
 Of Aldermen¹, that were in field with me:—
 London till then had not that dignitie.

As I, so these do represent the men
 Knighted in field on Corpus Christi-day;

¹ Sir Nicholas Brember, Sir John Philpot, Sir Nicholas Twiford, Sir John Standish, Sir Robert Launde.

And as my dagger slew the rebell then,
 So to renowne the deede, and I dare say,
 To honor London more, if more it may,
 The red-crosse in a silver fiede before,
 Had Walworth's dagger added to it more ¹.

And now, my Lord, this goodly monument,
 Or Chariot of Triumphall Victory,
 Some shape of that daie's honour doth present,
 By Heaven's protection of true Majestie,
 And beating downe Treason and Mutinie,
 Adorning all the Throne with those faire Graces,
 That ought about a King to have best places.

Truth, Vertue, Honour, sober Temperance,
 Fortitude, Zeale, Equitie, Conscience,
 Justice, Authoritie, carefull Vigilance,
 Peace, Plenty, Law, Councell, Obedience,
 And Discipline, that whips all errors hence;
 These, as best pillars, do support this State,
 And every Kingdome else doth propagate.

A blessed bachelor are you my Lord,
 By being your sacred Soveraigne's Deputie
 In such a State, where all these doe concord,
 And truely do protect his Majestie,
 Figur'd in Richard's great authoritie.
 As Walworth then, so Lemman now may say,
 "Never had man a happier wedding-day!"

SIR WILLIAM WALWORTH *his Speech at night as a farewell to my Lord:*

Phœbus hath hid his golden head
 In Thetis' lappe; and now are spread
 The sable curtaines of the night,
 Our evening's purpose to delight.
 The twinkling tapers of the skie
 Are turn'd to Torches; and apply
 Their clearest radiance to convey
 Our Mayden Bridegroome on his way
 Home to his owne abiding place.
 Our Triumph's pompe shortens apace,

¹ This vulgar error, as there is good reason to suppose it is, thus appears to be of no modern origin. The best Antiquaries have, however, agreed, that it is the sword of St. Paul which is represented in the City arms, as in those of the Bishop of London and Dean of St. Paul's. N.

That could affoord more time to spend,
 But gladly would no way offend.
 Your marriage rites solemnized,
 Bequeath you to the bridall bed,
 Where you and your chaste wife must rest.
 London it seems did like you best,
 (Although you are a bachelor,)
 To be her husband for a yeere;
 Love her, delight her. Shee's a Bride,
 Nere slept by such a husband's side
 But once before. She hath had many,
 And may you prove as good as any
 Have gone before you in this place;
 'Twill be your Brethren's joy and grace
 That Fishmongers live still in fame,
 And still renowned by your name.
 Their hearty love by me they send yee,
 And pray the hand of Heaven defend yee
 In all your actions; may your fame
 Crowne still their ancient worthie name
 To all posteritie! So, London's Lord
 And Virgin Husband, in a word,
 Old Walworth must to rest againe;—
 Good night to you, and all your Trayne!

“Thursday the last of October, *viz.* All Saint's Eve, Prince Charles came in great state by barge from Barne Elmes to Whitehall, accompanied and attended by divers great Lords and others of honourable rank and quality, besides his own Train, and was most joyfully met at Chelsea by the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Citizens of London; each Company in a several barge, and distinguished by their several arms on their rich banners and stately streamers, besides the royal sound of drum and trumpet, and a great variety of excellent musick; besides all which, and the infinite number of people upon the shore and in boats and barges to behold this joyfull day, there was also at the Citie's charge, in honour of his Highness' Creation, more particular pleasant trophies and ingenious devices met him upon the water then ever was at any former Creation of any Prince of Wales¹.”—The Speeches delivered on the Thames were composed by the Civic Poet, Thomas Middleton, and are contained in the ensuing Tract:

¹ Howes' Chronicle, edit. 1631.

CIVITATIS AMOR, THE CITIE'S LOVE;

AN ENTERTAINMENT BY WATER,

AT CHELSEY AND WHITEHALL,

AT THE JOYFULL RECEIVING OF THAT ILLUSTRIOUS HOPE OF GREAT BRITAIN,

THE HIGH AND MIGHTY CHARLES,

TO BEE CREATED PRINCE OF WALES, DUKE OF CORNWALL, EARLE OF CHESTER, &c.

TOGETHER WITH THE AMPLE ORDER AND SOLEMNITY OF HIS HIGHNESS' CREATION,
AS IT WAS CELEBRATED IN HIS MAJESTIE'S PALACE AT WHITEHALL,
ON MONDAY THE FOURTH OF NOVEMBER 1616.

AS ALSO THE CEREMONIES OF THAT ANCIENT AND HONOURABLE

ORDER OF THE KNIGHTS OF THE BATH;

AND ALL THE TRIUMPHS SHOWNE IN HONOUR OF HIS ROYALL CREATION¹.

THE AMPLE ORDER AND SOLEMNITY OF PRINCE CHARLES HIS CREATION.

His Majestie, as well to shew the bountie of his affection towards his Royall Sonne, as to settle in the hearts of his loving subjects a lively impression of his Kingly care for continuance of the happy and peaceable government of his Land in his issue and posteritie, having determined to invest his Princely Highnesse with those titles and solemnities with which the former Princes of his Realme have usually beene adorned, it seemed fittest, both in regard of his Highnesse' yeares, shewing the rare proofes of promising heroicall vertues, and also that it would bee a gladnesse most gratefull and acceptable to the Commonwealth, to have the Solemnities thereof Royally performed. To the effecting of which the Lord Maior and Aldermen of the Citie of London, with the severall Companies, honourably furnished and appointed, and marshalled in faire and comely order, (both by the care and industry of Mr. Nicholas Leate, Citizen and Marchant of London, and one of the chiefe Captaines for the Citie, as also by

¹ "London: Printed by Nicholas Okes, for Thomas Archer, and are to be sold at his shop in Pope's-head-pallace, 1616." This Tract combines in its plan the subjects of the two Tracts on Prince Henry's Creation, printed under 1610,—“London's Love,” and “The Order and Solemnitie of the Creation,” &c. At the sale of the White Knights Collection this rare pamphlet produced four guineas; at that of the Library of W. B. Rhodes, Esq. a copy was sold for five guineas to Messrs. Harding and Co.; and in Thorpe's Catalogue for 1824 a copy, with a fine portrait of Prince Charles, by Delaram, inserted, was priced at eight guineas. N.

the well observed and deserving paines of Maister Thomas Sparro, Water-Bayly, made for that day Marshall for the Water Triumphs) were ready attending, with a great Traine, and costly entertainment, to receive his Highnesse at Chelsie, their Barges richly deckt with banners, streamers, and ensignes, and sundry sorts of lowd-sounding instruments aptly placed amongst them. And for his Grace's first entertainment, which was neere Chelsie, a personage figuring London, sitting upon a Sea-unicorne, with sixe Tritons sounding before her, accompanied both Neptune and the two Rivers Thamesis and Dee, at his first appearing, speakes as followeth :

LONDON. Neptune! since thou hast beene at all this paines,
 Not onely with thy Tritons to supply mee,
 But art thyselfe come from thy utmost maines,
 To feast upon that joy that 's now so nigh mee,
 To make our loves the better understood,
 Silence thy watry subject, this small Floud.

NEPTUNE *gives action toward THAMESIS and speakes :*

NEPTUNE. By the timely ebbes and flowes,
 That make thee famous to all those
 That must observe thy pretious tides
 That issue from our wealthy sides,
 Not a murmure, not a sound,
 That may this Ladie's voyce confound!
 And, Tritons, who by our commanding power
 Attend upon the glory of this hower,
 To do it service, and the Citie grace,
 Be silent till wee wave our silver mace.

LONDON. And you, our honour'd Sonnes, whose loyalty,
 Service, and zeale, shall bee exprest of mee,
 Let not your loving, over-greedy noyse,
 Beguile you of the sweetnesse of your joyes.—
 My wish has tooke effect, for neere was knowne
 A greater joy, and a more silent one!

Then turning to the Prince, she speakes thus :

Treasure of hope, and jewell of mankind
 Richer no Kingdome's peace did ever see;
 Adorn'd in titles, but much more in minde,
 The loves of many thousands speake in mee;

Who from that blessing of our peacefull store,
 Thy Royall Father, hast receiv'd most free
 Honours that wooed thy vertues long before,
 And ere thy time were capable of thee;
 Thou, whose most earely goodnesse fixt in youth
 Does promise comfort to the length of Time.
 As wee on earth measure heaven's workes by truth,
 And things which naturall reason cannot clime,
 So, when wee looke into the vertuous aime
 Of thy divine addiction, wee may deeme
 By rules of grace, and principles of fame,
 What worth will bee, now in so high esteeme,
 And so betimes pursued; which thought upon,
 Never more cause this land had to rejoyce,
 But chiefly I, the Citie, that has known
 More of this good then any, and more choise.
 What a faire glorious peace, for many yeares,
 Has sung her sweete calmes to the hearts of men,
 Enricht our homes, extinguisht forraine feares,
 And at this houre beginnes her hymnes agen.
 Live long and happy, glory of our dayes!
 And thy sweete time markt with all fair presages,
 Since Heaven is pleasde in thy blest life to raise
 The hope of these, and joy of after ages.
 Sound, Tritons, lift our loves up with his fame,
 Proclaim'd as far as honour has a name.
 Neptune, sound on.—

THE ENTERTAINMENT AT WHITEHALL.

The Personage figuring LONDON, (with the sixe Tritons sounding before NEPTUNE, and the two Rivers,) being arriv'd at Whitehall, where attend the Prince's landing the figures of two sacred Deities, HOPE and PEACE, thus speaks:

LONDON. Hope! now behold the fulnesse of thy good,
 Which thy sicke comforts have expected long;
 And thou, sweete Peace, the harmony of this Floud,
 Looke up, and see the glory of thy song.

HOPE, leaning her breast upon a silver anchor, attended with four Virgins all in white, having silver oares in their hands, thus answers:

HOPE. Faire and most famous Citie, thou hast wak't me
 From the sad slumber of disconsolate feare,
 Which at the musick of thy voyce forsak't me,
 And now begin to see my comforts cleare ;
 Now has my anchor her firme hold agen,
 And in my blest and calme securitie
 The expectations of all faithfull men
 Have their full fruites, being satisfied in mee.
 This is the place that I'll cast anchor in,
 This, Honour's Haven, the King's Royall Court,
 Heere will I fasten all my joyes agen,
 Where all deservers and deserts resort ;
 And may I never change this happy shoare,
 Till all be changed never to alter more.

*Then PEACE, sitting on a dolphin, with her sacred Quire sings
 this Song following :*

THE SONG OF PEACE.

*Welcome, oh welcome, Spring of Joy and Peace !
 Borne to be honour'd, and to give encrease
 To those that waite upon thy graces,
 Behold the many thousand faces,
 That make this amorous Floud,
 Looke like a moving wood,
 Usurping all her cristall spaces.
 'Mongst which "The Citie's Love" is first,
 Whose expectation's sacred thirst
 Nothing truely could allay,
 But such a Prince and such a day.
 Welcome, oh welcome, all faire joyes attend thee,
 Glorie of life, to safety we commend thee !*

THO. MIDDLETON.

[The Prince landed att the Comon Staires att White Hall, the Nobilitie and his Officers præceeding. In the Hall he was receaved by the Duke of Lennox, Lord Steward of the Household, the Contrroller and Officers of the Household ; in the Great Chamber, by the Lord Chamberlane, and Vicount Fenton, Capitaine of the Garde. He proceeded no further than to the dore of the Præsence¹."]

[¹ Camden's MS. volume, in Harl. MSS. 5176, whence other extracts are given between crotchets in the following pages.]

PRINCE CHARLES HIS CREATION.

The dayes Triumph ended, to the great honour of the City, and content of his Highnesse, who out of the goodnesse of his love gave the Lord Maior and Aldermen many thankes, on Monday following, the Lords and Peeres of the Realme being all assembled at Whitehall¹, his Highnesse then proceeded in this maner to his Creation².

First went [the Prince's Gentlemen according to their degrees; his Learned Counsell; the Drummes;] the Trumpets; then the Heralds and Officers of Armes in their coates; [the Earle Marshall with his vierge; the Lord Chamberlaine with his white staffe;] next followed the Knights of the Bath, beeing sixe-and-twentie in number, apparelled in long robes of purple sattin, lined with white taffata; then Sir William Segar, Knight, alias Garter Principall King of Armes, bearing the Letters Patents; the Earle of Sussex the Purple Robes; the Traine borne by the Earle of Huntington; the Sword by the Earle of Rutland; the Ring by the Earle of Derby; the Rodde by the Earle of Shrewsbury; the Cappe and Coronet by the Duke of Lenox, Lord Steward; his PRINCELY HIGHNESSE, supported by the Earles of Suffolke and Nottingham, came bare-headed, [followed by the principall Gentlemen of his Chamber,] and so entred the great Hall, where the King was set in his Royal Throane, and the whole State of the Realme in their order.

The Prince made lowe obeisance to his Majestie three times; and after the third time, when hee was come neere to the King, hee kneeled downe on a rich pillow or cushion, whilst Sir Ralph Winwood, Principall Secretarie, read his Letters Patents; then his Majestie, at the reading of the words of investment, put the Robes upon him, and girded on the Sword, invested him with the Rodde and Ring, and set the Cappe and Coronet on his head. [When the Patent was fully read, it was delivered to the King, who delivered it to the Prince, kissing him once or twice. At the putting on of the Mantle, and delivering of the Patent, the trumpetts and drummes sounded.]

¹ Where, we learn from Camden and Howes, the Archbishop of Canterbury was present, the Barons and Bishops were placed on the West side in their ordinary apparell, and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London, in their scarlet robes, with the Judges and King's Learned Counsell on the East side. N.

² The Ringers at St. Margaret's, Westminster, were "paid for ringing at the King's coming to Whitehall the 3d day of November, and at the Prince his Creation on the 4th of November, 5s." N.

With which ceremonie the Creation being accomplished, the King arose, and went up to dinner; but the Prince with his Lords dined in the Hall, and was served with great state and magnificence, accompanied at his table with divers great Lords, as the Earle of Suffolke, Lord Treasurer; the Earle of Arundell, Lord Marshall; the Earle of Nottingham, Lord Admirall; the Duke of Lenox, Lord Steward; the Earle of Pembroke, Lord Chamberlaine; the Erles of Shrewsbury, Darby, [Huntingdon,] Rutland, and Sussex, the Prince sitting in a chaire at the upper end, and the rest in distance about foure yards from him, one over against another, in their degrees, all which were those that were employed in severall offices of honour about his Royall Creation. [The Earl of Southampton acted as Cupbearer, the Earl of Dorset as Carver, the Lord Compton as Sewer, and Dr. Sinhowse, the Prince's Chaplain, sayd grace.] At another table in the same rowme, on the left-hand of the Prince, sate the Knights of the Bath, all on one side, and had likewise great service and attendance. [After some musique the Song of forty parts was song by the Gentlemen of the Chappell and others, sitting upon degrees over the Screene at the north end of the Hall, which was sung agayne by the King's commandment, who stood as a spectatour in the roome over the stayres, ascending to the Great Chamber.] About the middest of dinner, Sir William Segar, Knight, alias Garter Principall King of Armes, with the rest of the King's Heralds and Pursuivants of Armes, approached the Prince's table, and with a lowde and audible voyce, proclaimed the King's Stile, in Latine, French, and English thrice, and the Prince's in like manner twice; then the trumpets sounding, the second course came in; and dinner done, that dayes solemnitie ceased.

At night, to crowne it with more heroicall honour, fortie worthie Gentlemen of the Noble Societies of Innes of Court, being tenne of each House, every one appoynted in way of honourable combate to breake three staves, three swords, and exchange ten blowes apeece, (whose names for their worthinesse I commend to fame,) beganne thus each to encounter the other¹. And not to wrong the sacred antiquitie of anie of the Houses, their names are heere set downe in the same order as they were presented to his Majestie; *viz.* of the

¹ At the Middle Temple the charges incurred on this occasion were defrayed by a contribution of thirty shillings from each Bench; every Student of seven years standing fifteen shillings; and all other Gentlemen in Commons ten shillings apeece. Dugdale's *Origines Juridiciales*, p. 150. N.

Middle Temple,	MASTER STROWD ¹ .	MAISTER IZORD.
Grayes Inne,	MAISTER COURTHOP.	MAISTER CALTON.
Lincolnes Inne,	MASTER SKINNER.	MASTER WINDHAM.
Inner Temple,	MASTER CROW.	MASTER VERNON ² .
Middle Temple,	MASTER ARGENT.	MASTER GLASCOCKE.
Grayes Inne,	MAISTER WADDING.	MAISTER ST. JOHN.
Lincolnes Inne,	MASTER GRIFFIN.	MASTER FLETCHER ³ .
Inner Temple,	MAISTER PARSONS.	MAISTER BROCKE ⁴ .
Middle Temple,	M. BENTLEY, SENIOR.	MAISTER PEERE ⁵ .
Grayes Inne,	MAISTER SELWYN.	MAISTER PASTON.
Lincolnes Inne,	MASTER SELWYN ⁶ .	MASTER CLINCH.
Inner Temple,	MASTER CHETWOOD.	MASTER SMALMAN.
Middle Temple,	MASTER BENTLEY, JUN.	MASTER BRIDGES.
Grayes Inne,	MAISTER COVERT.	MAISTER FULKES.
Lincolnes Inne,	MAISTER JONES ⁷ .	MAISTER GOOGE.
Inner Temple,	MAISTER WILDE ⁸ .	MAISTER CHAVE.
Middle Temple,	MASTER WANSTED.	MASTER GOODYEERE.
Grayes Inne,	MAISTER BURTON.	MAISTER BENNET.
Lincolnes Inne,	MASTER HITCHCOCKE ⁹ .	MASTER NEVILL.
Inner Temple,	MASTER LITTLETON ¹⁰ .	MASTER TREUR.

¹ John Strode was Autumn Reader of the Middle Temple in 1611, and Treasurer in 1613. A Sir John Strode, of Chantmavell, Dorset, was knighted Dec. 1, 1623. N.

² George Vernon, Autumn Reader at the Inner Temple in 1621, a Serjeant-at-Law and Baron of the Exchequer 1627, Justice of the King's Bench 1631. N.

³ Thomas Fletcher was Lent Reader at Lincoln's Inn in 1640. N.

⁴ William Brooke was Autumn Reader at the Inner Temple in 1608, as was Thomas Brooke in 1611. N.

⁵ George Beare was Lent Reader at the Middle Temple in 1632. N.

⁶ Jasper Selwyn, Autumn Reader at Lincoln's Inn 1611. N.

⁷ William Jones, Lent Reader at Lincoln's Inn 1615; Serjeant-at-Law 1616-17; Justice of the King's Bench 1621; of the Common Pleas 1624; and knighted. N.

⁸ John Wilde was Lent Reader at the Inner Temple 1630. N.

⁹ Thomas Hitchcock was Autumn Reader at Lincoln's Inn in 1605, and Lent Reader in 1614. N.

¹⁰ The great Sir Edward Littleton, Autumn Reader at the Inner Temple 1632; Treasurer 1634; made Solicitor General the same year; Chief Justice of the King's Bench 1639; Lord Keeper 1640; and in the same year a Baron of the Realm. N.

[During the fifth of November, the Anniversary of the Gunpowder Treason, the festivities were suspended. On that day Bishop Andrews preached before the King at Whitehall, on Psalm xxvii. 3¹; and his Majesty knighted Sir William Segar², Garter King at Arms.]

On Wednesday the sixth day of November, to give greater lustre and honour to this Triumph and Solemnitie, in the presence of the King, Queene, Prince, and Lords, fourteene right honorable and noble personages, whose names hereafter follow, graced this daye's magnificence with Running at the Ring³; viz.

THE DUKE OF LENOX.	EARLE OF PEMBROKE.
EARLE OF RUTLAND.	EARLE OF DORSET.
EARLE OF MONTGOMERY.	VISCOUNT VILLIERS ⁴ .
LORD CLIFFORD.	LORD WALDEN.
LORD MORDANT ⁵ .	SIR THOMAS HOWARD.
SIR ROBERT RICH.	SIR GILBERT GERRARD ⁶ .
SIR WILLIAM CAVENDISH ⁶ .	SIR HENRY RICH.

Having thus briefly described the manner of his Highnesse' Creation, with the honourable service shewne to the solemnitie, both by the Lords and by the Gentlemen of the Innes of Court, I should have set a period, but that the Knights of the Bath, being a principall part and ornament of this sacred Triumph, I cannot passe them over without some remembrance; therefore thus much out of the note of directions from the principall Officers of Armes, and some observation of credite concerning the Order and Ceremonies of the Knighthood⁷.

[¹ The Discourse is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Eighth on the occasion.]

[² Appointed Somerset Herald in 1589; Norroy 1593; Garter 1603; and died in December 1633. See an account of his services in Noble's College of Arms, pp. 230—233. There is a fine portrait of him engraved by Delaram.]

³ Most of these were the usual partakers in the Tilt: see p. 135; and vol. II. p. 609.—Lord Hadington and Lord Hay are inserted among them in Camden's MS. volume so often quoted. N.

⁴ This is the first time we have found the Favourite in the Tilt-yard. N.

⁵ His first appearance also. He was now made K. B.; see p. 220. N.

⁶ Sir Gilbert Gerrard and Sir William Cavendish were two of the young Noblemen who had been made Knights of the Bath at Prince Henry's Creation; see vol. II. pp. 343, 344. The former will appear in the Tilts on the King's-day in 1615-16 (in Appendix) and 1618-19. N.

⁷ The next three pages will be found to have been adopted by the Compiler, with the necessary alterations and some slight embellishments, from the description of the Creation of Knights of the Bath in 1610, printed in vol. II. pp. 336—341. N.

The Lords and others that were to receive the honourable Order of the Bath, repayed on Satterday the second of November to the Parliament House at Westminster¹, and there in the afternoone heard Evening Prayer, observing no other Ceremonie at that time, but only the Heralds going before them in their ordinarie habites from thence to King Henrie the Seaventh's Chappell at Westminster, there to beginne their warrefare, as if they would employ their service for God especially; from whence, after Service ended, they returned into the chamber they were to suppe in. Their Supper was prepared all at one table, and all sate upon one side of the same, every man having an escutcheon of his armes placed over his head, and certaine of the King's Officers being appoynted to attend them. In this manner, having taken their repast, severall beds were made ready for their lodging in another rowme hard by, after the same manner, all on one side; their beddes were pallats, with coverings, testers, or canopies of red say, but they used no curtaines.

The Knights in the meane while were withdrawne into the Bathing-chamber, which was the next rowme to that which they supped in; where, for each of them was provided a severall Bathing-tubbe, which was lined both within and without with white linnen, and covered with red say; wherein, after they have said their prayers, and commended themselves to God, they bathe themselves, that thereby they might be put in minde, to be pure in body and soule from thenceforth; and after the Bath they betook themselves to their rest².

Earely the next morning they were awakened with musicke, and at their uprising invested in their hermites' habites, which was a gowne of gray cloth girded close, and a hooode of the same, and a linnen coife underneath, and an hankercher hanging at the girdle, cloth-stockings soaled with leather, but no shoes; and thus apparelled, their Esquiers Governors, with the Heralds wearing the coates of armes, and sundry sorts of winde instruments before them, they proceeded from their lodging, the meanest in order formost, as the night before, untill they came to the Chappell, where, after Service ended, their oath was immistred unto them by the Earle of Arundell Lord Marshall, and the Earle of Pembroke Lord Chamberlaine, in a solemne and ceremonious manner, all of them standing foorth

¹ In 1610 Durham House in the Strand had been employed for the purpose. N.

² It was (says Camden, Harl. MS. 5176) in "the Higher House of the Parliament, where the Bathing-tubbes were prepared, and so few beddes, as they were to lie two and two together, chosing their own bedfellows, whereas *ever heretofore each man had his severall bedd.*" N.

before their stalles, and at their coming out making low reverence towards the altar, by which the Commissioners sate; then were they brought up by the Heralds, by two at once, the chieftest first, and so the rest, till all successively had received their Oath¹, which in effect was this: That above all things they should seek the honour of God and maintenance of true Religion, love their Sovereigne, serve their Countrie, helpe maydens, widdowes, and orphans, and (to the utmost of their power) cause equity and justice to be observed.

This day, whilst they were yet in the Chappell, wine and sweet-meates were brought them, and they departed to their chamber to be disrobed of their hermites' weedes, and were revested in roabes of crimson taffata, implying they should be martial men, the robes lined with white sarcenet, in token of sincerity, having white hattes on their heads, with white feathers, white bootes on their legges, and white gloves tied unto the strings of their mantles. All which performed, they mount on horsebacke, the saddle of blacke leather, the arson white, stirrop-leathers blacke gilt, the pectorall of blacke leather, with a crosse paty of silver theron, and without a crupper, the bridle likewise blacke, with a crosse paty on the forehead or frontlet; each Knight between his two Esquiers well apparelled, his footemen attending, and his Page riding before him, carrying his Sword with the hilte upward, in a white leather belt without buckles or studdes, and his spurres hanging thereon. In this order, ranked every man according to his degree, the best or chieftest first, they rode faire and softly towards the Court, the trumpets sounding, and the Heralds all the way riding before them. Being come to the King's Hall the Marshall meetes them, who is to have their horses or else 100s. in money for his fee; then conducted by the Heralds, and others appoynted for that purpose, his Majestie, sitting under his Cloth of Estate, gave them their Knighthood in this manner:

First, the principall Lord that is to receive the Order, comes, led by his two Esquiers, and his Page before him, bearing his Sword and Spurs, and kneeleth downe before his Majestie; the Lord Chamberlaine takes the Sword of the Page,

¹ Of "this ancient exhortation or well-wishing, which," says Camden, "is commonly called, but improperly, an oathe, see some curious particulars in vol. II. p. 337. It was read, continues Camden, first to the Lord Maltravers, by the Earl of Arundel his father, in the character of Earl Marshal, and then to the other Knights either by the Earl or by the Lord Chamberlain, who then went with the Dean to read the same to the Lord Percy, who had been forced to withdraw himself from indisposition. N.

and delivers it to the King, who puts the belt over the necke of the Knight aslope his breast, placing the Sword under his left arme; the second Nobleman of the chiefe about the King puts on his Spurres, the right Spurre first; and so is the ceremony performed. In this sort Lord Maltravers, sonne and heire to the Erle of Arundell, Lord Marshall, which was the principall of this number, being first created, the rest were all consequently knighted alike; and when the solemnitie thereof was fully finished, they all returned in order as they came, saving some small difference, in that the youngest or meanest Knight went now foremost, and their Pages behinde them.

Coming backe to the Parliament House, their Dinner was ready prepared in the same rowme, and after the fashion as their Supper was the night before; but being set, they were not to taste of any thing that stood before them, but, with a modest carriage and gracefull abstinence, to refraine; divers kindes of sweet musicke sounding the while; and after a convenient time of sitting to arise, and withdrawe themselves, leaving the table so furnished to their Esquiers and Pages.

About five of the clocke in the afternoone, they rode againe to Court, to heare Service in the King's Chappell, keeping the same order they did at their returne from thence in the morning, every Knight riding betweene his two Esquiers, and his Page following him. At their entrance into the Chappell, the Heralds conducting them, they make a solemne reverence, the yongest Knight beginning, the rest orderly ensuing, and so one after another take their standing before their stalls; where all being placed, the eldest Knight maketh a second reverence, which is followed to the yongest, and then all ascend into their stalls, and take their accustomed places. Service then beginneth, and is very solemnly celebrated with singing of divers anthemes to the organs; and when the time of their offertorie is come, the yongest Knights are summoned forth of their stalls by the Heralds, doing reverence first within their stalls, and againe after they are descended, which is likewise imitated by all the rest; and being all thus come forth, standing before their stalls as at first, the two eldest Knights, with their swords in their hands, are brought up by the Heralds to the altar, where they offer their swords, and the Deane receives them, of whom they presently redeeme them with an angell in gold, and then come downe to their former places, whilst two other are led up in like manner. The Ceremonie performed, and Service ended, they depart againe in such order as they came, with accustomed reverence. At the Chappell doore as they came forth, they were encountered by the King's

Maister Cooke, who stood there with his white apron and sleeves, and a chopping knife in his hand, and challenged their spurres, which were likewise redeemed with a noble in money, threatning them neverthelesse, that if they proved not true and loyall to the King his Lord and Maister, it must be his office to hew them from their heeles.

On Monday morning they all met together nigh at the Court, where in a private roome appointed for them, they were cloathed in long robes of purple sattin, with hoods of the same, all lined and edged about with white taffata; and thus appareled, they gave their attendance upon the Prince at his Creation, and dined that day in his presence at a sideboord, as is already declared.

THE NAMES OF SUCH LORDS AND GENTLEMEN AS WERE MADE KNIGHTS OF
THE BATH IN HONOUR OF HIS HIGHNESSE' CREATION.

James Lord Maltravers ¹, son and heir to the Earl of Arundel.

Algernon Lord Percy ², son and heir to the Earle of Northumberland.

James Lord Wriothesley ³, son to the Earle of Southampton.

Theophilus Lord Clinton ⁴, sonne to the Earle of Lincolne.

Edward Lord Beauchamp ⁵, grandchild to the Earle of Hartford.

[George] Lord Barkley ⁶.

¹ One of the King's Godsons, and now only nine years old; see vol. II. p. 143.

² Now fourteen. He was summoned to Parliament as Lord Percy in 1625; succeeded his father as tenth Earl in 1632; was installed K. G. in 1635; was constituted Lord High Admiral in 1637; Captain General of the Army 1639; and was at that time at the head of affairs. He died Oct. 13, 1668, aged 66, and was succeeded by his only son Josceline. See a long memoir of this eminent statesman in Brydges's Peerage, vol. II. pp. 346—354.

³ Who died v. p. in the service of the States General, in which the Earl himself died in 1624. Brydges's Peers of James I., p. 327.

⁴ Now about eighteen. He succeeded his father as fourth Earl of Lincoln in 1618-19. He lived till after the Restoration; performed the office of Carver at the Coronation of Charles II.; and dying in 1667 was succeeded by his son Edward. Brydges's Peerage, vol. II. p. 209.

⁵ Who died *viduavi* in Aug. 1618; and his only son dying an infant, the Earldom of Hertford descended to his brother William, who afterwards occurs in this list. — "The Lord Beauchampe and his brother William Seimour were thus ranked by the King's expresse commandement." Camden, in Harl. MS. 5176.

⁶ Who had succeeded his grandfather Henry as thirteenth Lord Berkeley in 1613, and dying Aug. 10, 1658, left the title to his son George. He seems to have led a private life. Of his family see Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 616

[John] Lord Mordant¹.

Sir Alexander Erskin², son to the Viscount Fenton.

Sir Henry Howard³, second sonne to the Earle of Arundell.

Sir Robert Howard⁴, fourth [fifth] sonne to the Earle of Suffolke.

Sir Edward Sackvil⁵, brother to the Earle of Dorset.

Sir William Howard⁴, fifth [sixth] sonne to the Earle of Suffolke.

Sir Edward Howard⁶, sixth [seventh] sonne to the Earle of Suffolke.

¹ The fifth Baron, having succeeded his father Henry in 1608. His father suffered imprisonment as a Papist (vol. I. p. 523), and the son was brought up in the religion of his ancestors, but converted by a disputation at his house between a Jesuit and Archbishop Usher, of which see the lives of that great divine. He was advanced to the Earldom of Peterborough in 1627-8; was General of the Ordnance and Colonel of a regiment of foot in the Parliament army; and dying June 18, 1659, was succeeded by his son Henry. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 319.

² His only son, commonly called Lord Dirleton, and, after his father's elevation to the Earldom of Kellie, Viscount Fenton. He died v. p. in Feb. 1633, and was father to the second and third Earls of Kellie. See Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 18.

³ Henry-Frederic, his elder brother before noticed being dead, was summoned to Parliament as Lord Mowbray in 1639; succeeded his father as Earl of Arundel, Surrey, and Norfolk, in 1646; and died in 1652. He distinguished himself by his loyalty to Charles I. See Brydges's Peerage, I. 128.

⁴ Sir Robert and Sir William Howard were the fifth and sixth sons of the Earl of Suffolk. (Of the four eldest see vol. II. p. 629.) They are barely mentioned in the Peerage, and probably died young.

⁵ Who had made himself notorious by his fatal quarrel with Lord Bruce, which has been frequently alluded to in volume II.; particularly in pp. 516, 676, 704. His antagonist had been made a Knight of the Bath at the Creation of Prince Henry in 1610, vide *ibid.* p. 343. Sir Edward Sackville was now twenty-six. He soon became M. P. for Sussex, and a leading Member in the House of Commons. He was one of the chief commanders of the forces sent in 1620 to assist the King of Bohemia, and was at the battle of Prague. In 1621 he was sent Ambassador to France, and on his return sworn of the Privy Council. In 1624 he succeeded his brother as fourth Earl of Dorset; in 1625 was installed K. G.; at the Coronation of Charles I. he bore the Sword; on the King's marriage was instituted Lord Chamberlain to Queen Henrietta-Maria; and till the Rebellion was one of the principal members of the Government, unremitting in his efforts for the King, on which account the greatest part of his estate was sequestrated. He died June 17, 1652, at Dorset House in London, leaving his titles to his son Richard. See a circumstantial memoir of the Earl in Brydges's Peerage, vol. I. pp. 151—165.—“Mr. Edward Sackvill was thus placed by the Lord Treasurer before his sonnes William Howard and Edward Howard, albeit he was the younger sonne of a younger Earle, but Edw. Sackvill disclaimed it.” Camden, in Harl. MS. 5176.

⁶ Created in 1628 Baron Howard of Escrick, a Lordship which came from his mother as heir to her uncle, Lord Knevit of Escrick. He died in 1675. The title became extinct with his grandson Charles, the fourth Baron, in 1714.

Sir Montague Bartue¹, eldest sonne to the Lord Willoughby of Ersby.

Sir William Stourton², sonne to the Lord Stourton.

Sir Henry Parker³, sonne to the Lord Mounteagle.

Sir Dudley North⁴, eldest sonne to the Lord North.

Sir Spencer Compton⁵, sonne and heire to Lord Compton.

Sir William Spencer⁶, sonne to the Lord Spencer.

Sir William Seymour⁷, brother to the Lord Beauchampe.

Sir Rowland St. John, third son⁸ to the Lord Saint John.

Sir John Cavendish⁹, second sonne to the Lord Cavendish.

¹ Who became second Earl of Lindsey on the fall of his father at Edge-hill, at which battle he was himself taken prisoner. Being exchanged, he afterwards commanded the King's forces at the battles of Newbury, Cropredy, Lestwithiel, and other places, and was wounded in the fatal field of Naseby. Upon the Restoration, he was sworn of the Privy Council, installed K. G. and executed at the Coronation his hereditary office of Lord High Chamberlain. He died July 25, 1666, and was succeeded by his son Robert. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. II. p. 16.

² He succeeded his father as tenth Lord Stourton in 1632, and was succeeded by his grandson William about 1672. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 639.

³ He succeeded his father as thirteenth Lord Morley and fifth Lord Monteagle in 1622, and was succeeded by his son Thomas in 1655. See Brydges's Peers of James I., p. 290.

⁴ A learned man and an author, and father of the Lord Keeper Guildford. He succeeded his father as fourth Lord North, but not till 1666, appearing in the House of Lords, at sixty-three, in the same rank as he now held,—the eldest son of a Baron. He died in 1677, and was succeeded by his eldest son Charles. See a pleasing memoir of him in Brydges's Peerage, vol. IV. p. 466.

⁵ Now fifteen. He has been noticed in p. 51.

⁶ Now twenty-five. He was M. P. for Northamptonshire in five Parliaments, and succeeded his father as second Lord Spencer in 1627. He died Dec. 19, 1636, and was succeeded by his son Henry, afterwards Earl of Sunderland. Brydges's Peerage, vol. I. p. 393.

⁷ The husband of the unfortunate Lady Arbella Stuart (see vol. II. pp. 284, 363). He succeeded his grandfather as Earl of Hertford in 1621; in 1641 was advanced to the title of Marquis of Hertford and made Governor to the Prince of Wales; was made Lieutenant-General of all the King's forces in the counties of Wilts, Southampton, Dorset, &c.; Chancellor of the University of Oxford in 1643; Groom of the Stole the same year; and highly distinguished himself in the King's service throughout the Civil War, particularly in the defence of Sherburne Castle and in the battle of Lansdown. On the Restoration he was made K. G. and restored to the Dukedom of Somerset, forfeited by his great-grandfather; but died soon after, Oct. 24, 1660. He was succeeded by his grandson William. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. I. pp. 174—182.

⁸ Fifth son, according to Brydges. He was M. P. for Bedfordshire in five Parliaments, and died in August 1645. On the death of Paulet Earl of Bolingbroke in 1688 the Barony of St. John devolved on Sir Rowland's descendants, by whom it is now enjoyed. See Brydges's Peerage, VI. 745, 747.

⁹ Who died s. p. Jan. 18, 1617. Brydges, vol. I. p. 323.

Sir Thomas Nevill¹, grandchild to the Lord Aburgavenny.

Sir John Roper², grandchild to the Lord Tenham.

Sir John North³, brother to the Lord North.

Sir Henry Carey⁴, sonne to Sir Robert Carey.

And for an honourable conclusion of the King's Royall grace and bounty shewne to this Solemnitie, his Majesty created Thomas Lord Ellesmere, Lord Chancelour of England, Vicount Brackley⁵; the Lord Knolles, Vicount Wallingford⁶; and Sir Phillip Stanhope, Lord Stanhope of Shelford in Nottinghamshire⁷.

[“On the 7th of November, about five of the clock in the afternoon, they mett in the Counsell-chamber, where they and the Lords appoynted to carry their ornaments and the assistants putt on their roabes, the Earles and Viscounts their surcotes of crimson velvett with close sleeves having short flappes hanging upon their shoulders, then their hoods and afterward their mantles and roabes, fastned upon the shoulder and pucking out the capuchio to hang over behinde, with their cappes of estate and coronetts, or rather circulettis for the Viscounts. They passed from thence over the Tarras [Terrace] into the Privie Gallery, the Heralds, Kings of Armes, Garter carying the Patent, the Lord Compton in his Parliament roabes, carying the Mantle, the Lord Wentworth the Capp of estate and Circulet, the Lord Chancellour Lord Ellesmere in his surcote and hood with his sword by his syde in a usuall hatt, assisted by the Earle of Montgomery and Viscount Villers, with their cappes of estat on. At the Gallory-dore, the Lord Chamberlaine mett them, and placing himself after the Kings of Armes, presented them to the King who satt there with the Queen and the Prince. Garter

¹ He died s. p. in 1628. Of his family see Brydges, vol. V. p. 169.

² Who succeeded his father as third Lord Teynham in 1622, and dying Feb. 27, 1627, was succeeded by his son Christopher. Brydges, vol. VII. p. 84.

³ He was a Gentleman Usher of the Privy-chamber. Brydges, vol. IV. p. 465.—“Mr. John North, younger sonne of the eldest sonne of Roger Lord North, created by Marie, was præferred befor Mr. H. Carie, eldest sonne to Sir Rob. Carie, younger sonne of H. Lord Hunsdon created by Q. Elizabeth.” Camden, in Harl. MS. 6176.

⁴ Now aged about 20. He succeeded his father as second Earl of Monmouth in 1630, and died June 13, 1661, when the title became extinct. He was, says Anthony Wood, “a person well skilled in the modern languages, and a generous scholar.” Of his voluminous works see Walpole's Royal and Noble Authors, and Brydges's Peers of James I., p. 435.

⁵ See vol. II. p. 334.

⁶ Ibid. p. 629.

⁷ See vol. I. p. 589.

presented the Patent to the Lord Chamberlaine, he to the King; the King delivered the same to Sir Ralph Winwood the Secretary, who [read the same;] at the words *fecimus et creavimus* the Roabes were delivered to the King, who delivered the same to the Assistants, who invested him therewith, and the like with the Capp of estate and the Circulett theruppon, and then the Earles Assistants putt on their cappes of estate. When the Patent was fully read, and he thus created Viscount Brackley, the trumpetts and drummes standing without sounded.

"Then was brought in the Lord Knolles, the Lord Carew carying the Mantle, the Lord Davers the Capp of Estate, assisted by the Earle of Suffolk Lord Treasurer and Viscount Lisle, and in like manner created Viscount Wallingford¹.

"Afterward Sir Philipp Stanhop was brought in his surcote of scarlett, the Lord Daring carying his Roabe, the Lord Compton and the Lord Norris assisting him, and was created Lord Stanhop of Shelford. Then they retourned that way they came to the Counsell-chamber, first, Viscount Brackley, then Viscount Wallingford and the Lord Stanhop, in such order as they went, the trumpetts and drummes sounding²."]]

¹ Of this title Camden remarks in his Annals, that it was conferred on Lord Knollys "notwithstanding the Honour of Wallingford belongs to the Duchy of Cornwall."

² From the manuscript volume in Camden's autograph in Harl. MSS. 5176, where follows this memorandum:—"Received the 16th of November, uppon a partition of the fees for the Knights of the Bath, ten other Knights, the Creation of Viscount Brackley and Lord Stanhop £.67 5 0

And for six Knights' fees received by Mr. Somersett - - - - 4 16 0

To Clarenceux his part.

Summa totalis - £.72 1 0



"In honour of this joyfull Creation," says Howes in his Chronicle, "there were solemn Triumphs performed at Ludlow in the county of Salop, and published by Master Daniell Powell, gent. 1"

On the 9th of November Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"Our gallants flaunt it out in their greatest bravery at the Prince's Creation; which was performed on Monday at Whitehall, with all solemnity within doors; for the sharpness of the weather and the Prince's craziness [ill health] did not permit any public shew. I have not the list of the Knights of the Bath, that were made at the time; but it may suffice that they were all of noble Houses; and the Lords Maltravers, Percy, and Wriothesley were the ringleaders, and young Seymour that married Lady Arbella, did *claudere agmen*, and was the last ².

"Tom Carew ³ and Phil. Lytton ⁴, as I hear, were 'Squires of high degree for cost and bravery; the one to the Lord Beauchamp, the other to his cousin Rowland St. John. There is little else to be said touching this troop, but that it was generally observed that the least became themselves best. It was meant that the Prince with his band of Knights should on Thursday have gone to supper

¹ On the Creation of Prince Henry similar festivities had taken place at Chester, as described in the Tract, entitled, "Chester's Triumph in honour of her Prince," which is re-printed in vol. II. pp. 291—306. If any copy of the Ludlow Pageant be in existence, all knowledge of it has entirely escaped me. The Triumphs themselves are not, however, forgotten, as they are mentioned in the Beauties of England and Wales, with an erroneous assertion that they were performed in the presence of the Prince, and that he "there entered on the Principality of Wales and Earldom of Chester." Though this is an error, yet it appears from a manuscript quoted in Price's Ludlow Guide, that Charles did afterwards, when King, visit Ludlow Castle, but in what year it is not recorded. "He entered the Castle among the discharges of the great guns and firelocks of the soldiers, attended by all the other officers magnificently dressed and mounted; and so great was the pomp, that the like thereof was never before seen in these parts." — Ludlow Castle from an early period was the Palace of the Prince of Wales, and its Welsh name had that signification. Arthur, eldest son of Henry VII. held a splendid Court there on his marriage with Catherine of Arragon, and died there in 1502. From the reign of Henry VIII. to that of William and Mary it was the residence of the Lords Presidents. During the Presidency of the Earl of Bridgewater in 1634, Milton's Masque of Comus was produced at Ludlow Castle.

² Not the last created; but perhaps the last selected for creation.

³ Of the family of Carew in Gloucestershire. He was Gentleman of the Privy-chamber, and Sewer in Ordinary to Charles I.; and eminent for his talents in poetry. — He was now about twenty-seven. Of his history see the Biographical Dictionary, or the British Poets; and there is a valuable Paper on his Poems and their editions, by the accurate contributor of "Fly-leaves," in the Gentleman's Magazine for January 1826.

⁴ Third son of Sir Rowland Lytton, of Knebworth, Hertfordshire (of whom in vol. I. p. 111). See the pedigree in Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. II. p. 377.

through London to the Lord Mayor's. But, how it was mistaken or shifted, they went not; but the matter will not be so put off; but is appointed for this night. The Earl of Arundel was made Earl Marshal for the festival, and his friends hope he may continue on; but all are not of that opinion¹.

"The King came to town on Allhallows-eve, and stood in the Gallery-stairs at Whitehall, to see the Prince come along from Richmond, attended by the Lord Mayor and all the Companies of London in their barges in very good order, which made a goodly shew. The Queen would not be present at the Creation, least she should renew her grief by the memory of the last Prince, who runs still so much in some men's minds that on Tuesday I heard the Bishop of Ely [Dr. Andrews] preaching at Court upon the third verse of the 37th of Isaiah², *venerunt filii ad partum, et non erant vires parienti*, pray solemnly for Prince Henry without re-calling himself.

"The King was minded to be gone on Wednesday; but the multiplicity of business prolongs his stay till Monday, specially the matter of Clothing and of the new Company of Merchants, which the King will have go forward, as it were, *invitâ Minervâ*³.

"The Lord Coke hangs still in suspense, and his friends fear he will be totally eclipsed. Yet the Queen is said to stand firm for him, and to have been very earnest in his behalf, as likewise the Prince. And withall I hear his answers to all objections allowed by them that have seen them, with indifferency. But somewhat *manet altâ mente repostum*, that cannot easily be removed. Yet there was a flying tale the other day, that the Lord Villiers's brother about the Prince should marry his daughter, with £.900 land from him, and £.2100 land

¹ On the 16th of January 1615-16, by brief of Privy Seal, on account of the "divers errors committed by certain Heraldes now deceased," the office of Earl Marshal of England, having been some time vacant, had been committed to six of the Council: the Earl of Suffolk, High Treasurer; the Earl of Worcester, Lord Privy Seal; the Duke of Lenox, Lord Steward of the Household; the Earl of Nottingham, High Admiral of England; the Earl of Pembroke, Chamberlain; and the Earl of Shrewsbury, Justice in Eyre North of Trent. See the commission in Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. XVI. p. 776.—The Earl of Arundel was constituted Earl Marshal for life, with a pension of £.1000 *per annum*, Aug. 29, 1621.

² This text, it may be observed, is not the same as that given in p. 215 from the Bishop's Sermons.

³ There is more on this subject in Mr. Chamberlain's letters. During the month of January 1616-17, there happened, says Camden in his *Annals*, "sharp disputes and consultation about re-instituting the Company of Merchant Adventurers, lately put down, which is re-established accordingly."

from his Lady ¹, together with the Lord Roper's office, and so there should be a pacification. In the mean time he is, as it were, in an ague, having a good day and a bad by fits.

"I had almost forgot, that our Inns of Court Gentlemen carried themselves but indifferently at the Barriers the night of the Prince's Creation, but specially in their compliments, wherein they were not so graceful as was to be wished and expected, but in requital they played the man at the Banquet ²."

On the 11th of November, the King, having knighted Sir Richard Robartes ³, of Cornwall, left Whitehall for Theobalds; where, on the 12th, he conferred the honour of knighthood on Sir George Newman ⁴, of Kent; and Sir Charles Bowles; as he did, on the 14th, at Royston, on Sir John Lenthall.

On the 14th, Mr. Chamberlain again addressed Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King went to Theobalds on Monday, and so towards Royston and Newmarket. The Queen continues at Somerset House till his return.

"The Lord Coke is now quite off the hooks, and order given to send him a *supersedeas* from executing his place. The common speech is, that four Ps have overthrown and put him down,—that is Pride, Prohibitions, Præmunire, and Prerogative.

"On Saturday night the Knights of the Bath were entertained by the Lord Mayor at Drapers' Hall with a Supper and Play, wherein some of them were so rude and unruly, and carried themselves so insolently divers ways, but specially in putting Citizens' wives to the squeak, so far forth, that one of the Sheriffs broke open a door upon Sir Edward Sackville, which gave such scandal that they went away without the Banquet, though it was ready and prepared for them. Neither did they forbear these disorders among themselves; for there were divers piques and quarrels at their several meetings, but especially at the Mitre in Fleet-street, insomuch that young Parker, son of the Lord Monteagle, and Will. Howard, the Lord Treasurer's youngest [sixth] son, went into the field, but were there prevented and reconciled. There was a greater business of the kind betwixt the Earl of Dorset and the Lord Clifford; upon notice whereof the King and Council have taken

¹ Sir Edward Coke was afterwards obliged to submit to conditions not very dissimilar to these.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

³ Of whom see p. 230.

⁴ LL. D. Commissary of Canterbury; Judge of the Cinque Ports for nearly 30 years; M. P. for Dover in 1601; and for New Romney in 1614. He died in 1627, aged 65, and has a handsome monument in St. Margaret's Church, Canterbury. Of his family see Hasted's Kent, vol. IV. p. 472.

order that they forbear one another, and try out their controversies by wars in Westminster Hall¹."

For a full month after this date the King spent his time entirely at Newmarket, where, on the 18th, he knighted Sir Giles Mompesson², of Wiltshire; and on the 20th, Sir William Pelham; on the 25th, Sir Moses Hill; on the 28th, Sir Huntington Colby³, of Suffolk; and Sir Ferdinando Knightley⁴, of Northamptonshire; on the 29th, Sir Robert Oxenbridge, of Hampshire; and Sir Robert Brown; on the 6th of December, Sir Charles Grosse, Sir Henry Radley, Sir Samuel Somester, and Sir Richard Sandford; on the 12th, Sir Richard Waldron; and on the 14th, Sir Patrick Money Penny.

On the 23d of November Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to Sir D. Carleton:

"The Lord Coke, after so long suspense, is at last displaced, and Sir Henry Montagu⁵ sworn in his place upon Monday, who went the next day with great pomp to the Hall, accompanied with some Earls, Lords, and others of great quality, to the number of fifty horse, besides the whole fry of the Middle Temple, and swarms of lawyers and officers⁶. The Lord Chancellor [Ellesmere], though he were crazy [unwell], and had not come to Westminster for five or six days nor since, yet made shift to give him the oath, and withall many admonitions how to carry himself in the place, wherein he glanced, not obscurely, but in plain terms

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Of Salisbury. This Knight was connected with Sir Francis Michel in farming the monopolies styled the patents of innes and osteries, and of gold and silver thread, their abuse of which incurred the censure of Parliament in 1621. Sir Francis Michel underwent the singular punishment of degradation from his knighthood (see under June 1621), and Sir Giles escaped only by flight from the kingdom. See Bacon's Works, vol. III. p. 572, and Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 627.

³ Who has been mentioned in vol. II. p. 676, as a friend of Mr. Henry Howard engaged as his second in an intended duel with the Earl of Essex.

⁴ Fifth son of Sir Richard Knightley, of Fawsley, and brother to Sir Valentine and Sir Seymour noticed in vol. II. p. 207. Sir Ferdinand was a Captain of Foot in Holland, and living in 1645, but died unmarried. See the long pedigree of this ancient and numerous family in Baker's Northamptonshire, vol. I. p. 383.

⁵ Of whom in vol. I. p. 208. He was now placed in the same office as his grandfather, Sir Henry Montagu, had enjoyed in the reign of Henry VIII.

⁶ "This morning," writes Mr. John Castle to Mr. Milles, "Sir Henry Montagu was brought with a gallant and very honourable troop to his seat, consisting of the bravest Courtiers and other noble Gentlemen, besides the Students of both Temples. The Earl of Huntingdon and Lord Willoughby accompanied him at the head, set forth in all splendour." Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

at his predecessor for many errors and vanities, but especially for his ambitious popularity. The new Chief Justice made a modest answer, that seeing it had pleased his Majesty to cast his eye upon him for this place, he would do his best to make good his choice, and would promise thus far for himself, that he would neither be idle nor corrupt, neither a coward nor heady.

"If Sir Edward Coke could bear his misfortune constantly, it were no disgrace to him, for he goes away with a general applause and good opinion. And the King himself when he told his resolution at the Council-table to remove him, yet gave this character, that he thought him no way corrupt, but a good justicer, with so many other good words, as if he meant to hang them with a silken halter. Hitherto he bears himself well, but specially towards his Lady, without any complaint of her demeanor towards him, though her own friends are grieved at it, and her father sent to him to know all the truth, and to shew him how much he disallowed her courses, having divided herself from him, and disfurnished his house in Holbourn, and at Stoke¹, of whatsoever was in them, and carried all the moveables and plate she could come by, God knows where, and retiring herself into obscure places, both in town and country. He gave a good answer likewise to the new Chief Justice, who sending to him to buy his collar of SS, he said he would not part with it, but leave it unto his posterity that they might one day know they had a Chief Justice to their ancestor. He is now retired to his daughter Sadler's² in Hertfordshire, and from thence, it is thought, into Norfolk. He hath dealt bountifully with his servants; and such as had places under him, he hath willed them to set down truly what they gained, and he will make it good to them, if they be willing to tarry and continue about him³."

On the third of December the King, who, as these pages amply demonstrate, was continually exercising his Royal Prerogative in interfering with inferior jurisdictions, dispatched, by the hand of Dr. Montagu, the Bishop of Winchester,

¹ Stoke Pogeis, in Buckinghamshire, where Queen Elizabeth in 1601 visited Sir Edward Coke when Attorney General; see her "Progresses," vol. III. p. 568. This estate he was in 1617 obliged to give in dowry with his daughter to Sir John Villiers, who took his title of Baron from it in 1619. Sir Edward, however, still occasionally resided there, and it was 1634 the scene of his last moments. See Lysons's Buckinghamshire, p. 636.

² Anne, married to Ralph Sadler, Esq. son and heir of Sir Thomas Sadler.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

the following epistle¹: "To the right worshipfull Master Dr. Hill, Master of Katherine Hall, and Vice-chancellor of Cambridge.

"Good Mr. Vice-chancellor; I have sent you his Majestye's hand to his owne directions. I thinke you have noe president [precedent] that ever a Kinge, first with his own mouth, then with his owne hand, ever gave such directions; and therefore you shall doe very well to keep the writing curiously, and the directions relligiously, and to give his Majestye a good accompte of them carefully, which I pray God you may doe. And soe with my love to yourselfe and the rest of the Heads, I comitt you to God. From Court this 12th of December 1616.

"Your lovinge freind,

JA. WINTON."

On the 7th of December, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir D. Carleton:

"The King and Queen's absence, together with the ending of the Term, hath made this Town [London] as barren of news as it is of good company. Most of the Council are likewise dispersed, the Lord Treasurer [the Earl of Suffolk] gone to Audley End, as much to avoid the importunate clamours for money as for recreation.

"The Lord Coke continues at his daughter Sadler's, and hath been twice within these two months at Newmarket. The first time he had good access, and kissed the King's hand. What success he had the second time I cannot yet learn, for the news is as new as most certain and true. The motive of his first journey was the report of some of his friends to the King, how much he was dismayed and dejected, whereupon the King answered that, if he came to him, he should find that he owed him no further displeasure, and indeed has given order before to dash certain suits commenced in the Star-chamber against him. And Mr. Attorney [Bacon] committed two of his own men to the Fleet for presuming to give order for process against him in his name, or as by his direction. His friends are in hope that he shall very shortly be restored to the Council-table. His Lady hath somewhat changed her copy, and finding how sharply her former carriage sounded as well with friends as foes, hath reclaimed herself and a little mollified

¹ From Harl. MSS. 7050 (Baker's Collections), where follow "his Majestie's directions," which are for the regulation of the University Students, "given by himself to Dr. Hilles, Vice-chan.; to Dr. Richardson, Master of Trin. Coll.; to Dr. Careye, Deane of Paule's; Dr. Davenant, Master of Queene's; Dr. Guyn, Master of St. John's, on the 3d of December 1616, at Newmarkett." In a following page are some similar injunctions, given by Charles I. at Newmarket, March 4, 1629-30.—King James's present directions are also preserved in the Lansdown MSS. 157.

the matter, as if she had no such meaning as was conceived, though her trunks by mischance were stayed, and so her course interrupted; but yet she affords him no manner of comfort either by her counsel or company.

"There is a surd bruit¹ as if the Blazing Star [Villiers] at last were toward an eclipse, and that there is some glimpse or sparkling of a less Comet of the Lord of Montgomery's lighting. There hath been of late both big words and looks from him and the Lord Hay towards the present Favourite, which is taken for ominous, and withall he hath been crazy [unwell] ever since he came to Newmarket.

"The Speech of the King's journey into Scotland continues still, though it be said to be somewhat deferred, and not to begin so soon as was at first intended. We hear they make great preparations there to be in their best equipage; and from hence many things are sent, but especially a pair of organs that cost above £.400, besides all manner of furniture for a Chapel, which Inigo Jones tells me he hath the charge of, with pictures of the apostles, Faith, Hope and Charity, and such other religious representations; which how welcome they will be thither God knows².

"But all the difficulty will be for money to bear the Journey, which how to compass all projects must be employed, and every man fears where it will light, being not a little terrified by a precedent of dangerous consequence, of one Robartes of Cornwall or Devonshire³, whose father, an obscure fellow, dying exceedingly rich, they say, by long use of interest, there was a Privy Seal sent to him for £.20,000, with intimation that, whereas by law the King could seize on all gotten by these usurious courses, he was of his clemency content to borrow but this sum without interest. In conclusion the man was brought to lend £.12,000, and to be re-paid by £.1200 a year⁴."

¹ That is, either a whispering, or a loud rumour; see p. 201. It was certainly an idle one.

² See hereafter, under the King's stay at Edinburgh.

³ Richard, son of John Robartes, of Truro, had been Sheriff of Cornwall in 1614. The story of unjust extortion here related is scarcely credible. We cannot but imagine some palliative circumstances are omitted. Sir Richard, however, had been recently knighted on the 11th of November (see p. 226); on the third of July 1621 he was created a Baronet; and Jan. 26, 1624-5 a Baron; and he doubtless paid handsomely for each of those honours. He died in 1634, and was succeeded by his son John, made Lord Lieutenant of Ireland in 1669, and in 1679 created Viscount Bodmin, and Earl of Radnor. All these titles became extinct with John, the fourth Earl, in 1764. Of the family see Collins's Peerage, 1735, vol. II. p. 358.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

On the 16th of December, the King knighted Sir George Lamplugh¹, and Sir Thomas Wentworth.

Again on the 21st, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“The Lord Coke was twice with the King at Newmarket so well and graciously used, that he is as jocund and jovial as ever he was. It is generally said he shall shortly be made a Baron; but some interpret this kindness to be but for the compassing of a match for the Lord Villiers’s brother with one of his daughters².

“It is generally bruited that the Lord of Somerset shall have his Pardon, and all his jewels restored to him, together with allowance of £.4000 a year for his maintenance.

“The King’s journey into Scotland is every day more fresh in speech than other; and Sir Thomas Lake upon suit hath gotten a grant to go that voyage; wherein he had no competitor, for our good friend [Mr. Secretary Winwood] is willing enough to forbear it for more reasons than one.

“The Queen came from Greenwich on Tuesday to Somerset House, and on Thursday removed to Whitehall, where the King is expected this afternoon from Theobalds³.”

Before leaving that place, on this day, the King knighted Sir Henry Martin⁴. On arriving at Whitehall he conferred the same honour on Sir Thomas Leigh; and also “presented Sir Thomas Edmonds⁵, returning from his Embassy in France, with the staff of the Comptroller of the King’s Household, (Lord Wotton being constituted Treasurer to the Household,) and the next day, being Sunday, being sworn, took his place at the Council-board above the Vice-chamberlain. The same day the Bishop of Spalato⁶ went to the King, and accompanied him to Divine Service.

¹ This family, of which a Sir Thomas has appeared in p. 82, originated from Lamplugh in Cumberland.

² See under Sept. 29, 1617.

³ Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁴ D. C. L. of whom see vol. I. p. 535.

⁵ Of whom *ibid.* p. 156.

⁶ Mark Anthony de Dominis, Archbishop of Spalato in Dalmatia, “detesting the abuses of the Papists,” had arrived at Lambeth Palace on the 16th of this month, and, by the King’s special command, as Camden affirms, was hospitably and honourably entertained by the Archbishop of Canterbury, “with whom,” says Howes, “he remained, and writ a brief declaration of his reasons for leaving that prelacy, and forsaking his native country, which book was presently published in eight languages and dispersed through Europe. And in the following summer he printed in London the first four of his ten books, intituled, ‘Of the Commonweale of the Church.’” On the 18th of January 1616-17, Mr. Chamberlain tells Sir Dudley Carleton: “Your Archbishop of Spalato is still at Lam-

"On Christmas-day Thomas Earl of Arundel¹, who was educated from his youth in the Popish Religion, and had lately travelled all over Italy detesting the abuses of the Papists, embraced the Protestant Religion, and received the Sacrament in the King's Chapel at Whitehall²," where Bishop Andrews preached, as was customary, a Sermon suited to the Festival of the Nativity³.

On the 31st, says Camden, there were "great consultations concerning the King's Progress into Scotland."

On the 4th of January 1616-17, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton: "The Queen removed yesterday to Whitehall from Somerset House, where she had lain this fortnight sick of the gout, or somewhat else, it being suspected she dreams and aims at a Regency during the King's absence in Scotland⁴.

beth, very well used and esteemed. He hath been at our service in St. Paul's, at the Bishop's of London, at Westminster, at the Printing-house, at Sutton's Hospital [the Charter-house], at the Exchange twice both above and beneath, and all about where any thing is to be seen." Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173. De Dominis was educated among the Jesuits, but left that society to be Bishop of Segni, and was promoted to the Archbishoprick of Spalato, but his preferments did not attach him to his Church. He became acquainted at Venice with Mr. Bedell, then Chaplain to Sir Henry Wotton the English Ambassador there, and afterwards Bishop of Kilmore, and is said to have accompanied that Divine to England (but this is doubtful, as Sir Henry Wotton returned from Venice in 1611, see vol. II. p. 460). King James received him with open arms, gave him the Deanery of Windsor, the Mastership of the Savoy, and the rich Rectory of West Ildesley in Berkshire. But in 1622, on the accession of Pope Gregory the Fourteenth, who had been his old friend and school-fellow, he returned to Rome, tempted, it is said, by the hope of obtaining a Cardinal's hat; but certainly entertaining the more pure, but as vain, idea of becoming a great instrument in a reformation of the Romish Church. The jealousy of that Church, however, soon perceived how imperfectly he had renounced his heresies; he was thrown into prison, where he died in 1625, and shortly after his interment, the corpse was dug up, and burnt with his writings in Flora's Field, by a decree of the Inquisition. See more fully, particularly of his Works, in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

¹ See p. 182. Mr. Chamberlain in his letter of January 4, says: "Yesterday there fell a great mischance to the Earl of Arundel by the burning of his house, built and left him by the Earl of Northampton, at Greenwich, where he likewise lost a great deal of household stuff and rich furniture, the fury of the fire being such that nothing could be saved. No doubt the Papists will ascribe and publish it as a punishment for his dissembling or falling from them." ² Camden's Annals.

³ Printed in his "XCVI Sermons," the Eleventh on the occasion. "On Christmas-day," says Mr. Chamberlain in his letter of the fourth of January, "there were two excellent Sermons made in the King's Chapel, by the Bishop of Winchester [Dr. Montagu] and Bishop of Ely [Dr. Andrews], and a third that afternoon in Paul's by the Bishop of London [Dr. King], and I heard the Bishop of Rochester [Dr. Buckeridge] as much commended at his own parish of St. Giles without Cripplegate."

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

On the fifth, after dinner, "Sir George Villars, Vicount Villars, Baron of Whaddon, Justice in Oire of all the Forrests and Parks beyond Trent, Master of the Horse, Knight of the Garter, and Gentleman of the Bed-chamber, was created Earl of Buckingham to him and the heires masles of his body uppon short notice¹, both to the Attorney Generall and the Lord Chancellour. Hee was brought out of the Counsell-chamber over the Tarras through the Great-chamber into the Chamber of Presence. The Drummes and Trumpetts were not there; who should have been present, but not have sounded. First went the Officers of Armes; then Clarenceux and Norrey; Garter carying the Patent; the Earle of Montgomery carying the Mantle; the Earle of Dorsett the Sword with the hilt upward; the Duke of Lennox the Capp of Estate; the Lord Admirall the Coronett, in their roabes and cappes of estate, collers, and swordes; the Viscount Villars in his surcote and hood in an ordinarie hatt with his rapier², assisted by the Earle of Suffolke, Lord Treasurer, and the Earle of Worcester, Lord Privie Seale, in their roabes and coronetts. At the Presence-chamber doare the Lord Chamberlaine mett them, and the Assistants presented him to the King (sitting in state with the Queene and Prince), doing their due reverences. Garter delivered the Patent to the Lord Chamberlaine, he to the King, the King to Sir Ralph Winwood, one of the Principall Secretaries, who read it, the Lords holding their cappes of estate in their hands; at the words '*investivimus per circum Gladii et impositionem Cappe et Circuli*,' they were put on accordingly by the King, and then the Earles did putt on their cappes of estate. After thancks rendered by the Earle created and some short speeche of the King to him, the Drummes and Trumpetts sownded, and soe retourned to the Counsell-chamber, where they devested themselves. Supper ther was none, and therefore no style with larges proclaimed³."

On Twelfth Night, Ben Jonson's "Masque of Christmas" was first exhibited at Whitehall:

¹ He was advanced to the title of Marquis upon New-year's Day 1618-19, without any notice at all. See under that date.

² "No collar, which was used at the Creation of the Earl of Leicester, when he was brought in his surcote and hood."

³ MS. volume in Camden's autograph, Harl. MS. 5176.

CHRISTMAS HIS MASQUE,

AS IT WAS PRESENTED AT COURT,

JANUARY 6, AND JANUARY 19, 1616-17¹.

Written by BEN JONSON.

Enter CHRISTMAS, with two or three of the Guard, attired in round hose, long stockings, a close doublet, a high-crowned hat, with a brooch, a long thin beard, a truncheon, little ruffs, white shoes, his scarfs and garters tied cross, and his drum beaten before him.

CHRISTMAS. Why, Gentlemen, do you know what you do? ha! would you have kept me out? Christmas, old Christmas, Christmas of London, and Captain Christmas? Pray you, let me be brought before my Lord Chamberlain, I'll not be answered else; *'Tis merry in hall, when beards wag all.* I have seen the time you have wish'd for me, for a merry Christmas; and now you have me, they would not let me in: 'I must come another time!' a good jest, as if I could come more than once a year. Why, I am no dangerous person, and so I told my friends of the Guard. I am old Gregory Christmas still, and though I come out of Pope's-head-alley², as good a Protestant as any in my parish. The truth is, I have brought a Masque here, out o' the City, of my own making, and do present it by a set of my sons, that come out of the lanes of London, good dancing boys all. It was intended, I confess, for Curriers' Hall; but the weather has been open, and the Livery were not at leisuse to see it till a frost came, that they cannot work, I thought it convenient, with some little alterations, and the Groom of the Revels' hand to't, to fit it for a higher place; which I have done, and, though I say it, another manner of device than your New-year's-night. Bones o' bread, the King! Son Rowland! son Clem! be ready there in a trice; quick, boys!

¹ From the second folio edition of Jonson's Works, 1641. Mr. Gifford characterizes this Masque as "a humourous trifle, calculated for the season; an innocent Christmas gambol, written with no higher end than producing a hearty laugh from the good-natured James, and the holyday spectators of the Show." N.

² An allusion to Pope Gregory's alteration of the Calendar, not long before the accession of James. G.

*Enter his Sons and Daughters, (ten in number,) led in, in a string, by CUPID, who is attired in a flat-cap, and a prentice's coat, with wings at his shoulders*¹.

*MISRULE, in a velvet cap, with a sprig, a short cloak, great yellow ruff, like a reveller, his Torch-bearer*² *bearing a rope, a cheese, and a basket.*

CAROL, a long tawney coat, with a red cap, and a flute at his girdle, his Torch-bearer carrying a song-book open.

MINCED-PIE, like a fine cook's wife, drest neat ; her Man carrying a pie, dish, and spoons.

*GAMBOL, like a tumbler, with a hoop and bells ; his Torch-bearer arm'd with a colt-stuff*³ *and a binding cloth.*

*POST-AND-PAIR, with a pair-royal of aces in his hat ; his garment all done over with pairs and purs ; his Squire carrying his box, cards, and counters*⁴.

*NEW-YEAR'S-GIFT, in a blue-coat, serving-man like, with an orange and a sprig of rosemary gilt on his head, his hat full of brooches, with a collar of gingerbread, his Torch-bearer carrying a marchpane with a bottle of wine on either arm*⁵.

MUMMING, in a masquing pied suit, with a vizard, his Torch-bearer carrying the box, and ringing it.

WASSEL, like a neat sempster and songster ; her Page bearing a brown-bowl, drest with ribands and rosemary before her.

*OFFERING, in a short gown, with a porter's staff in his hand, a wyth*⁶ *born before him, and a bason by his Torch-bearer.*

*BABY-CAKE, drest like a boy, in a fine long coat, biggin, bib, muckender, and a little dagger ; his Usher bearing a great cake, with a bean and a pease*⁷.

They enter singing.

¹ "This Cupid is worthy of Bunbury himself." G.

² Though not always mentioned, each Masquer was always attended by his Torch-bearer ; see vol. I. p. 481. N.

³ See vol. II. p. 739. N.

⁴ The game of Post-and-Pair, which has been before mentioned in Ben Jonson's "Masque of Love Restored," vol. II. p. 403, is illustrated at some length in Archdeacon Nares's Glossary under the words Post and Pair, Pair Royal, and Pur. N.

⁵ All these articles were made use of as New-year's presents ; see the marchpane particularly in the roll of New-year's Gifts in vol. I. p. 597. N.

⁶ A name particularly applied to a child's cap, but also frequently to that of a man. See Nares's Glossary. N.

⁷ The old method of choosing King and Queen on Twelfth-day, was by having a bean and a pea mixed up in the composition of the cake, when they who found these in their portion, were con-

*Now God preserve, as you well deserve,
 Your Majesties all, two there ;
 Your Highness small, with my good Lords all,
 And Ladies, how do you do there ?
 Give me leave to ask, for I bring you a Masque
 From little, little, little, little London ;
 Which say the King likes, I have passed the pikes,
 If not, old Christmas is undone.* Noise without.

CHRISTMAS. A' peace ! what's the matter there ?

GAMBOL. Here's one o' Friday-street would come in.

CHRISTMAS. By no means, nor out of either of the Fish-streets, admit not a man ; they are not Christmas creatures ; fish and fasting days, foh ! Sons, said I well ? look to't.

GAMBOL. No body out o' Friday-street, nor the two Fish-streets there, do you hear ?

CAROL. Shall John Butter o' Milk-street come in ? ask him.

GAMBOL. Yes, he may slip in for a Torch-bearer, so he melt not too fast, that he will last till the Masque be done.

CHRISTMAS. Right, Son. Sing again.

*Our dance's freight is a matter of eight,
 And two, the which are wenches ;
 In all they be ten, four cocks to a hen,
 And will swim to the tune like tenches.
 Each hath his Knight for to carry his light,
 Which some would say are torches ;
 To bring them here and to lead them there,
 And home again to their own porches.
 Now their intent——*

*Enter VENUS, a deaf Tire-woman*¹.

stituted King and Queen for the evening ;—a custom derived from the Romans. The following lines are from Herrick's *Hesperides* :

*Now the mirth comes, with the cake full of plums
 Where beane's the King of the sport here,
 Besides we must know, the pea also
 Must revell as the Queen of the Court here.*

This subject is particularly discussed in Brand's *Popular Antiquities*, Hone's *Every-day Book* for 1825 and 1826, Fosbroke's *Encyclopedia of Antiquities*, and Nares's *Glossary*. N.

¹ "This tire-woman is a prototype of 'The Deaf Lover.' The author, however, must be acquitted of any depredations on Jonson, of whose works he probably never heard." G.

VENUS. Now, all the Lords bless me! where am I, trow? where is Cupid? "Serve the King!" they may serve the cobbler well enough, some of 'em, for any courtesy they may have, I wisse; they have need o' mending; unrude people they are, your Courtiers; here was thrust upon thrust indeed! was it ever so hard to get in before, trow?

CHRISTMAS. How now? what's the matter?

VENUS. A place, forsooth, I do want a place; I would have a good place, to see my child act in before the King and Queen's Majesties, God bless 'em! to-night.

CHRISTMAS. Why, here is no place for you.

VENUS. Right, forsooth, I am Cupid's Mother, Cupid's own Mother, forsooth; yes, forsooth; I dwell in Pudding-lane; — ay, forsooth, he is prentice in Love-lane, with a bugle-maker, that makes of your bobs, and bird-bolts for ladies.

CHRISTMAS. Good Lady Venus of Pudding-lane, you must go out, for all this.

VENUS. Yes, forsooth, I can sit any where, so I may see Cupid act. He is a pretty child, though I say it, that perhaps should not, you will say. I had him by my first husband; he was a smith, forsooth; we dwelt in Do-little-lane then; he came a month before his time, and that may make him somewhat imperfect; but I was a fishmonger's daughter¹.

CHRISTMAS. No matter for your pedigree or your house; good Venus, will you depart?

VENUS. Ay, forsooth, he'll say his part, I warrant him, as well as e'er a play-boy of 'em all. I could have had money enough for him, an I would have been tempted, and have let him out by the week to the King's Players. Master Burbadge² has been about and about with me, and so has old Master Hemings³

¹ "This alludes to the prolific nature of fish. The jest, which, such as it is, is not unfrequent in our old dramatists, needs no further illustration." G.

² Richard Burbadge, the original performer of several of Shakspeare's tragic characters. An elegy on his death, from a volume of manuscript poems in the possession of Joseph Haslewood, Esq. is printed in the Gentleman's Magazine for June 1825. N.

³ John Heminge, another popular actor in his day, signed the Dedication and Address to the Reader, prefixed to the folio edition of Shakspeare's Works. His son John, M. A. of Christ Church, Oxford, was the Author of some tragedies noticed in the Biographia Dramatica. To judge from the manner in which Burbadge and Heminge are here mentioned, it seems probable that they were Managers of two different Theatres. N.

too, they have need of him. Where is he, trow, ha? I would fain see him—pray God they have given him some drink since he came!

CHRISTMAS. Are you ready, boys? Strike up, nothing will drown this noise but a drum; a' peace, yet! I have not done. Sing—

Now their intent, is above to present—

CAROL. Why, here be half of the Properties forgotten, father.

OFFERING. Post and Pair wants his pur-chops and his pur-dogs¹.

CAROL. Have you ne'er a son at the Groom-porter's, to beg or borrow a pair² of cards quickly.

GAMBOL. It shall not need, here's your son Cheater without, has cards in his pocket.

OFFERING. Ods so! speak to the Guards to let him in under the name of a Property.

GAMBOL. And here's New-year's-gift has an orange and rosemary, but not a clove to stick in 't.

NEW-YEAR'S-GIFT. Why, let one go to the Spicery.

CHRISTMAS. Fie, fie, fie! it's naught, it's naught, boys!

VENUS. Why, I have cloves, if it be cloves you want, I have cloves in my purse, I never go without one in mouth.

CAROL. And Mumming has not his vizard neither.

CHRISTMAS. No matter! his own face shall serve, for a punishment, and 'tis bad enough; has Wassel her bowl, and Minced-pie her spoons?

OFFERING. Aye, aye? but Misrule doth not like his suit; he says, the Players have lent him one too little, on purpose to disgrace him.

CHRISTMAS. Let him hold his peace, and his disgrace will be the less; what!

¹ "Here I am fairly at fault. None of the prose descriptions of this game which I have perused make any mention of either of these terms; and Mr. Douce, on whose assistance I mainly relied in this difficulty, fails me altogether. He has never encountered the words; and all chance of explaining them must, therefore, I fear, be looked upon as desperate. This is a confirmation of what was suggested on a former occasion, (Gifford's Jonson, vol. I. p. 78.) that the 'simple games of our ancestors,' as the commentators call them, were complicated in a very extraordinary degree." G.

² i. e. a pack. This term is common to all the writers of our author's time. Thus Heywood, in his "Woman Killed with Kindness:"

"A pair of cards, Nicolas, and a carpet to cover the table."

But they seem to have used *pair* in a very loose sense, for an aggregate of any kind, and as synonymous with *set*; thus we read of 'a pair of chesmen,' 'a pair of beads,' &c." G.

shall we proclaim where we were furnish'd? Mum! mum! a' peace! be ready, good boys.

*Now their intent, is above to present,
With all their appurtenances,
A right Christmas, as of old it was,
To be gathered out of the dances.*

*Which they do bring, and afore the King,
The Queen and Prince, as it were now
Drawn here by Love; who over and above,
Doth draw himself in the geer too.*

Here the drum and fife sound, and they march about once. In the second coming up, CHRISTMAS proceeds in his Song:

*Hum drum, sauce for a coney;
No more of your martial music;
E'en for the sake o' the next new Stake,
For there I do mean to use it.*

*And now to ye, who in place are to see,
With roll and farthingale hooped;
I pray you know, though he want his bow,
By the wings that this is CUPID.*

*He might go back, for to cry 'What you lack'¹?
But that were not so witty;
His cap and coat are enough to note,
That he is the Love o' the City.*

*And he leads on, though he now be gone,
For that was only his rule;
But now comes in, Tom of Bosoms-inn²,
And he presenteth³ MISRULE.*

*Which you may know, by the very show,
Albeit you never ask it;
For there you may see, what his ensigns be,
The rope, the cheese, and the basket.*

¹ At this time the constant cry of London apprentices. N.

² "Blossoms-inn," says Stowe, "but corruptly Bosoms-inn, is in Laurence-lane, and hath to sign St. Laurence the Deacon, in a border of blossoms or flowers." WHALLEY.

³ i. e. representeth. The ridiculous names which follow, Kit Cobler of Philpot-lane, &c. are all intended as the performers' real designations in private life. All, as Christmas promises in the exordium, are from the City of London. N.

*This CAROL plays, and has been in his days
A chirping boy, and a kill-pot ;
Kit Cobler it is, I'm a father of his,
And he dwells in the lane call'd Fill-pot¹.*

*But who is this ? O, my daughter Cis,
MINCED-PIE ; with her do not dally
On pain o' your life ; she's an honest cook's wife,
And comes out of Scalding-alley.*

*Next in the trace, comes GAMBOL in place ;
And, to make my tale the shorter,
My son Hercules, ta'en out of Distaff-lane,
But an active man, and a porter.*

*Now POST-AND-PAIR, old Christmas's heir,
Doth make, and a gingling sally ;
And wot you who, 'tis one of my two
Sons, card-makers in Pur-alley.*

*Next in a trice, with his box and his dice,
Mac'-pippin my son, but younger,
Brings MUMMING in ; and the knave will win,
For all he is a costermonger².*

*But NEW-YEAR'S-GIFT, of himself makes shift,
To tell you what his name is ;
With orange on head, and his ginger-bread,
Clem Waspe of Honey-lane 'tis.*

*This, I you tell, is our jolly WASSEL,
And for Twelfth-night more meet too ;
She works by the ell, and her name is Nell,
And she dwells in Threadneedle-street too.*

*Then OFFERING, he, with his dish and his tree,
That in every great house keepeth,
Is by my son, young Littleworth, done,
And in Penny-rich street he sleepeth.*

*Last, BABY-CAKE, that an end doth make
Of Christmas' merry, merry vein-a,
Is child Rowlan, and a straight young man,
Though he come out of Crooked-lane-a.*

¹ Philpot Lane. All these are places actually existing in the City. N.

² "The costermongers were then, as now, chiefly from Ireland." GIFFORD.

*There should have been, and a dozen I ween,
But I could find but one more
Child of Christmas, and a Log it was,
When I them all had gone o'er.*

*I prayed him, in a time so trim,
That he would make one to prance it ;
And I myself would have been the twelfth,
Oh ! but Log was too heavy to dance it¹.*

Now, Cupid, come you on.

CUPID. *You worthy wights, King, Lords, and Knights,
Or Queen and Ladies bright ;
Cupid invites you to the sights
He shall present to-night.*

VENUS. 'Tis a good child, speak out ; hold up your head, Love.

CUPID. *And which Cupid—and which Cupid—*

VENUS. Do not shake so, Robin ; if thou be'st a-cold, I have some warm waters for thee here.

CHRISTMAS. Come, you put Robin Cupid out with your waters, and your fissing ; will you be gone ?

VENUS. Ay, forsooth, he's a child, you must conceive, and must be used tenderly ; he was never in such an assembly before, forsooth, but once at the Warmoll Quest, forsooth, where he said grace as prettily as any of the Sheriff's Hinchboys, forsooth.

CHRISTMAS. Will you peace, forsooth ?

CUPID. *And which Cupid,—and which Cupid,—*

VENUS. Ay, that's a good boy, speak plain, Robin ; how does his Majesty like him, I pray ? will he give eight-pence a day, think you ? Speak out, Robin.

CHRISTMAS. Nay he is out enough, you may take him away, and begin your Dance ; this it is to have Speeches.

VENUS. You wrong the child, you do wrong the infant ; I 'peal to his Majesty. *Here they dance.*

CHRISTMAS. Well done, boys, my fine boys, my bully boys !

¹ "This alludes to the huge log of wood which was placed in the kitchen chimney—a chimney, be it remembered, that would contain "twelve starveling chimneys of these degenerate days,"—on Christmas eve with appropriate ceremonies, and which it was *a matter of religion*, as Jonson calls it, to preserve from being wholly consumed till the conclusion of the festival." GIFFORD.

THE EPILOGUE.

Sings.

*Nor do you think that their legs is all
The commendation of my sons,
For at the Artillery Garden they shall
As well forsooth use their guns.*

*And march as fine as the Muses Nine,
Along the streets of London ;
And in their brave tires, to give their false fires,
Especially Tom my son.*

*Now if the lanes and the allies afford,
Such an ac-ativity as this ;
At Christmas next, if they keep their word,
Can the children of Cheapside miss ?*

*Though, put the case, when they come in place,
They should not dance, but hop :
Their very gold lace, with their silk, would 'em grace,
Having so many Knights o' the Shop.*

*But were I so wise, I might seem to advise
So great a Potentate as yourself ;
They should, Sir, I tell ye, spare't out of their belly,
And this way spend some of their pelf.*

*Ay, and come to the Court, for to make you some sport,
At the least once every year ;
As Christmas hath done, with his seventh or eighth Son,
And his couple of Daughters dear.*



On the 16th of January Sir William Martin was knighted at Hampton Court.

On the 18th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"On Twelfth Night there was a Masque, wherein the new-made Earl [of Buckingham] and the Earl of Montgomery danced with the Queen. I have heard no great speech nor commendations of the Masque, neither before nor since. But it is appointed to be represented again to-morrow night, and the Spanish Ambassador invited.

"Yesterday the Middle Temple entertained the Earl of Buckingham with a Supper and Masque; whether it be that he was of their Society, or that they would pre-occupy all his favour.

"The King spent all the last week at Theobalds, and the former part of this at Hampton Court, whence he came upon Thursday to receive answer of our Aldermen about the loan of £.100,000 upon jewels, as for the like sum of the Farmers of the Customs, in both which I hear there will be difficulties; but some way must be found or made before the Journey for Scotland can proceed or set forward.

"The Lord Treasurer made account to have done a great piece of service in bringing the King's revenues to surmount his ordinary expenses more than £.1000 a year!

"The Virginia Woman Poca-huntas¹, with her father Counsellor, have been with the King, and graciously used; and both she and her assistant well placed at the Masque. She is upon her return, though sore against her will², if the wind would about to send them away³."

¹ On the 22d of June Mr. Chamberlain had informed his Correspondent: "Sir Thomas Dale [knighted at Richmond, June 19, 1606, see vol. II. p. 51,] is arrived from Virginia, and brought with him some ten or twelve old and young of that Country, among whom the most remarkable person is Poca-huntas, daughter to Powatan, a King or Cacique of that Country, married to one Rolfe, an Englishman. I hear not of any other riches or matter of worth, but only some quantity of sassafras, tobacco, pitch, and clapboard, things of no great value, unless there were more plenty and nearer hand. All I can hear of it is that the Country is good to live in, if it were stored with people, and might in time become commodious. But there is no present profit to be expected. But you may understand more by himself, when he comes into those parts, which he pretends to do within a month or little more."

² On the 29th of March following, Mr. Chamberlain writes: "The Virginian woman died at Gravesend as she was returning homeward;" a melancholy fate not without several parallel instances among those remarkable foreigners of newly-discovered nations which have visited England, among whom will be remembered the King and Queen of the Sandwich Islands in 1824.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

On the 31st of January the King knighted Sir John Harbert at Theobalds; on the first of February, Sir John Gresham; and on the 8th, at Hampton Court, Sir Owen Smith.

On the latter day Mr. Chamberlain again wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Baron de la Tour arrived here on Sunday last, having had a hard and dangerous passage, and driven to land at Deal Castle in the Downs, where there lie at this present above 300 sail, more than ever were heard of to lie there so long. The Ambassador had audience on Tuesday [February 4]; the Queen and Prince being present. He is but meanly accompanied, and lodgeth in part of the Earl of Surrey's [Arundel's] House¹. He should have been feasted at Court tomorrow, but it is deferred till Sunday next, lest we should seem to be weary of him and the charge too soon. The Lord Hay doth apply him with all offices of courtesy and respect, as he hath reason; for that he was the man that first preferred him to the King's service.

"After the audience the Earl of Buckingham was that afternoon sworn of the Council, being, they say, the youngest that hath been seen sit at the Board². He is become somewhat crazy [in ill-health] of late, and takes much physic. His brother Christopher is come to be one of the Bed-chamber; but whether in quality of a Gentleman or Groom I cannot yet learn. I cannot but commend that Lord's good disposition in doing good to his kindred and friends; though some rhiming companions do not forbear to tax him for it, as one by way of a prognostication says:

"Above in the skies shall Gemini rise;
And twins the Courts shall pester;
George shall back his brother Jack,
And Jack his brother Kester.

with more of that stamp.

¹ This mansion, on the site of which stand the present Howard, Norfolk, Arundel, and Surrey Streets, had entertained the Duc de Sully when he came to congratulate the King's Accession, and he in his Memoirs affirms it to have been one of the finest and most commodious of any in London, from its great number of apartments on the same floor. In the extensive gardens the Earl of Arundel first assembled his marbles. See further of its history in Pennant's London, p. 132.

² "The Earl of Buckingham is admitted into the Privy Council. He presently perswades the King not to go into Scotland, whereupon the King was somewhat angry, but was soon pacified." Camden's Annals.—The Earl afterwards accompanied the King to Scotland.

"The Journey into Scotland stands firm, though money comes not in very currently. Divers of our Aldermen and Citizens are sent for, and dealt withall to lend £.3000 apiece; and if they can speed that way for £.100,000 it is well ¹."

On the 16th of February the King knighted Sir Francis Howard; on the 19th, at Theobalds, Sir Neteof ———, a Dutchman; on the 22d, Sir Thomas Norcliffe ¹, of Yorkshire.

Again, on the latter day, Mr. Chamberlain addressed Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King went to the Star-chamber the day after the Term, and there in a case of challenge betwixt two youths of Inns of Court, Christmas and Bellingham, took occasion to make a Speech about duels, wherein he was observed to bestow many good words on the Spanish nation, and to gall the French more; which he since interprets to be only touching that point. I hear no certainty whether we shall see it in print ². The issue of all was, that the Gentlemen, who could say little or nothing for themselves, were fined at £.1000 a piece, and imprisonment in the Tower during pleasure.

"It was thought there would have been somewhat spoken touching the Journey into Scotland; but there was *altum silentium* in that and other things that were expected. Methinks it is somewhat strange, the time drawing on so near, and the King so *certus eundi*, that there is no more certainty of those that are to accompany him; for besides some few of the Household appointed by the Lord Steward [the Duke of Lennox], some of the Chapel by the Dean [Bishop Montagu], some of the Stable by the Master of the Horse [the Earl of Buckingham], I hear not of any of mark, more than some Pensioners, but the three Bishops of Ely [Dr. Andrews], Winchester [Dr. Montagu], and Lincoln [Dr. Neile], the Earls of Buckingham, Arundel, Pembroke, Montgomery, and Southampton; and yet some of these make so slow and slender provision, that I shall hardly believe they go, till I see them gone. It is generally given out that it is like to prove a hard journey, in regard they shall come before there be grass or other provision for horses or for cattle to be in any good plight or fit to eat. And the Scots themselves, though they do their *ultimo fforzo*, and furnish themselves all that possibly they can, yet do intimate so much both there and from thence, and could be content to hear it were deferred.

¹ Sir Thomas Norcliffe, of Manythorp, was Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1626.

² It was not printed, I believe. Minutes of it are in the Lansdown MSS. 513.

"The French Ambassador and his Company were feasted at Whitehall on Sunday, and yesterday at Theobalds; and last night had a great supper at the Lord Mayor [Sir John Leman]'s, who, poor man! had been at death's door these six or seven weeks. The Duke of Lennox feasted him before the King; and this night he is solemnly invited by the Lord Hay to the Wardrobe to a supper and a Masque, where the Countess of Bedford is to be Lady and Mistress of the Feast, as she is of the managing of his love to the Earl of Northumberland's youngest daughter, with whom he is far engaged in affection, and finds such acceptance both at her hands and her mother's that it is thought it will prove a match¹. But, *pour retourner à mes moutons*, this feasting begins to grow to an excessive rate, the very provision of cates for this Supper arising to more than £.600, wherein we are too apish to imitate the French monkies in such monstrous waste. For Sir Thomas Edmondes told me, that the Lord Hay at his last being in France, among many other great Banquets made him, had three, whereof the least cost £.1000 sterling; the rest £.1300 and £.1500. Sir Edward Sackville², Sir Henry Rich, Sir George Goring, and Sir Thomas Badger³, are the principal persons in the Masque.

"The Queen's Musicians (whereof she hath more than a good many) made her a kind of Masque or Antick at Somerset House on Monday night last⁴."

¹ Of Lord Hay's Marriage to this Lady see under November 6, 1617.

² See p. 220.

³ These three Knights had all accompanied Lord Hay to France: as mentioned in p. 177. Of Sir George Goring see more particularly in p. 255.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.



A MASQUE

PRESENTED IN THE HOUSE OF THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE LORD HAY,

BY DIVERS OF NOBLE QUALITY HIS FRIENDS ;

FOR THE ENTERTAINMENT OF

MONSIEUR LE BARON DE TOUR,

EXTRAORDINARY AMBASSADOR FOR THE FRENCH KING,

ON SATURDAY, FEBRUARY 22, 1616-17.

“Quid titulum poscis? ¹ versus duo tresve legantur. MART.”

Written by BEN JONSON.

The front before the scene was an arch-triumphal, on the top of which, Humanity, placed in figure, sat with her lap of flowers, scattering them with her right hand; and holding a golden chain in her left hand; to shew both the freedom and the bond of courtesy, with this inscription: SUPER OMNIA VULTUS. On the two sides of the arch, Cheerfulness and Readiness, her Servants. Cheerfulness, in a loose flowing garment, filling out wine from an antique piece of plate with this word, ADSIT LÆTITIÆ DATOR. Readiness, a winged Maid, with two flaming bright lights in her hands; and her word, AMOR ADDIDIT ALAS.

The Scene discovered, is, on the one side, the head of a boat, and in it Charon putting off from the shore, having landed certain imagined ghosts, whom MERCURY there receives, and encourageth to come on towards the river LETHE, who appears lying in the person of an old man. The FATES sitting by him on his bank; a grove of myrtles behind them, presented in perspective, and growing thicker to the outer side of the scene. MERCURY, perceiving them to faint, calls them on, and shews them his golden rod. The whole Masque was sung after the Italian manner, stylo recitativo, by Master Nicholas Lanier ²; who ordered and made both the scene and the music.

MERCURY. Nay, faint not now, so near the fields of rest,
Here no more Furies, no more torments dwell,

¹ “I have called this little drama ‘The Masque of Lethe.’ It is written with all the ease and elegance of Pope, who is not without some petty obligations to it, in his ‘Rape of the Lock.’” GIFFORD.

² Of whom in vol. II. pp. 710, 748. N.

Than each hath felt already in his breast ;
 Who hath been once in love, hath proved his hell.

Up then, and follow this my golden rod,
 That points you next to aged Lethe's shore,
 Who pours his waters from his urn abroad,
 Of which but tasting, you shall faint no more.

LETHE. Stay ; who or what fantastic shades are these
 That Hermes leads ?

MERCURY. They are the gentle forms
 Of lovers, tost upon those frantic seas,
 Whence Venus sprung.

LETHE. And have rid out her storms ?

MERCURY. No.

LETHE. Did they perish ?

MERCURY. Yes.

LETHE. How ?

MERCURY. Drown'd by Love,
 That drew them forth with hopes as smooth as were
 Th' unfaithful waters he desired them prove.

LETHE. And turn'd a tempest when he had them there ?

MERCURY. He did, and on the billow would he roll,
 And laugh to see one throw his heart away ;
 Another sighing, vapour forth his soul ;
 A third, to melt himself in tears, and say,
 ' O Love, I now to salter water turn
 Than that I die in ;' then a fourth, to cry
 Amid the surges, ' Oh ! I burn, I burn.'
 A fifth laugh out, ' It is my ghost, not I.'

And thus in pairs I found them. Onely one
 There is, that walks, and stops, and shakes his head,
 And shuns the rest, as glad to be alone,
 And whispers to himself, *he is not dead.*

FATES. No more are all the rest.

MERCURY. No !

FIRST FATE. No.

MERCURY. But why
 Proceeds this doubtful voice from destiny ?

FATES. It is too sure.

MERCURY. Sure!

SECOND FATE. Aye, thinks Mercury,
That any things or names on earth do die,
That are obscured from knowledge of the Fates,
Who keep all rolls,—

THIRD FATE. And know all Nature's dates?

MERCURY. They say themselves, *they are dead*.

FIRST FATE. It not appears,
Or by our rock,

SECOND FATE. Our spindle,

THIRD FATE. Or our shears.

FATES. Here all their threads are growing yet, none cut.

MERCURY. I'gin to doubt, that Love with charms hath put
This phant'sie in them; and they only think
That they are ghosts.

FIRST FATE. If so, then let them drink
Of Lethe's stream.

SECOND FATE. 'Twill make them to forget
Love's name.

THIRD FATE. And so, they may recover yet.

MERCURY. Go, bow unto the reverend Lake; *To the Shades.*
And having touch'd there; up and shake
The shadows off, which yet do make
Us you, and you yourselves mistake.

Here they all stoop to the water, and dance forth their Antimasque in several gestures, as they lived in love; and retiring into the grove, before the last person be off the stage, the first couple appear in their posture between the trees, ready to come forth, changed.

MERCURY. See! see! they are themselves again.

FIRST FATE. Yes, now they're substances and men.

SECOND FATE. Love at the name of Lethe flies.

LETHE. For, in oblivion drown'd, he dies.

THIRD FATE. He must not hope, though other states
He oft subdue, he can the Fates.

FATES. 'Twere insolence to think his powers
Can work on us, or equal ours.

Chorus.

*Return, return,
Like lights to burn
On earth
For others' good ;
Your second birth
Will fame old Lethe's flood ;
And warn a world,
That now are hurl'd
About in tempest, how they prove
Shadows for Love.
Leap forth ; your light it is the nobler made,
By being struck out of a shade.*

*Here they dance forth their entry, or FIRST DANCE ; after which
CUPID, appearing, meets them.*

CUPID.

Why, now you take me ! these are rites
That grace Love's days, and crown his nights !
These are the motions I would see,
And praise in them that follow me !
Not sighs, nor tears, nor wounded hearts,
Nor flames, nor ghosts ; but airy parts
Tried and refined as yours have been,
And such they are I glory in.

MERCURY.

Look, look unto this snaky rod,
And stop your ears against the charming God ;
His every word falls from him is a snare ;
Who have so lately known him, should beware.

Here they dance their MAIN DANCE.

CUPID.

Come, do not call it Cupid's crime,
You were thought dead before your time ;
If thus you move to Hermes' will
Alone, you will be thought so still.
Go, take the Ladies forth, and talk,
And touch, and taste too ; ghosts can walk.
'Twixt eyes, tongues, hands, the mutual strife
Is bred that tries the truth of life.
They do, indeed, like dead men move,
That think they live, and not in love !

Here they take forth the Ladies, and the Revels follow¹ ; after which :

MERCURY. Nay, you should never have left off;
But staid, and heard your Cupid scoff,
To find you in the line you were.

CUPID. Your too much wit breeds too much fear.

MERCURY. Good Fly, good night.

CUPID. But will you go?
Can you leave Love, and he entreat you so?
Here, take my quiver and my bow,
My torches too; that you, by all, may know
I mean no danger to your stay;
This night, I will create my holiday,
And be yours naked and entire.

MERCURY. As if that Love disarm'd werè less a fire!
Away, away!

They dance their going out; which done,

MERCURY. Yet lest that Venus' wanton Son
Should with the world be quite undone,
For your fair sakes (you brighter stars,
Who have beheld these civil wars,) Fate is content these lovers here
Remain still such; so Love will swear
Never to force them act to do,
But what he will call Hermes to.

CUPID. I swear; and with like cause thank Mercury,
As these have to thank him and Destiny.

Chorus. *All then take cause of joy; for who hatk not,
Old Lethe, that their follies are forgot?
We, that their lives unto their fates they fit;
They, that they still shall love, and love with wit.*

¹ "The Revels were dances of a more free and general nature, that is, not immediately connected with the story of the piece under representation. In these, many of the Nobility of both sexes took part, who had previously been spectators. The Revels, it appears from other passages, were usually composed of galliards and corantos. Their introduction was no less desirable than judicious, as it gave fullness and majesty to the show, and enabled the Court to gratify numbers who were not qualified to appear in it as performers." GIFFORD.

On the 23d of February, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Philip Cartwright; on the 28th, Sir John Smith¹; on the first of March, at Theobalds, Sir John Howland and Sir William Achlam.

“On the third of March, the King gives a Visit to the Chancellor [Egerton], who was very weak, and desirous to resign his office by reason of his infirm old age, and he delivered the Seal into the hands of the King, who wept².”

On the sixth, Sir Thomas Savile and Sir George Blundell³ were knighted at Whitehall.

On the 8th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“The Frenchmen are gone after their great Entertainment, which was too great for such petty companions, specially that of the Lord Hay, which stood him in more than £.2200, being rather a profusion and spoil than reasonable or honourable provision, as you may guess at the rest by this scantling,—of seven score pheasants, twelve partridges in a dish throughout, twelve whole salmons, and whatever else that cost and curiosity could procure, in like superfluity; besides the workmanship and inventions of thirty cooks for twelve days. But the ill luck was that the chief and most desired guest was away, for the young Lady Sidney⁴ with her sister Lady Lucy Percy, going some two or three days before the Feast to visit their father in the Tower, after some few caresses he dismissed his daughter Sydney to go home to her husband, and to send her sister's maids to attend her, for that he meant not to part with her, but that she should keep him company, adding withall that he was a Percy, and could not endure that his daughter should dance any *Scottish jigs*. And there she continues, for aught I hear⁵.

“Yesterday morning the King, after he had been abroad at Marybone Park⁶,

¹ “Young Sir John Smith, Sir Richard's son, [vol. I. p. 214] was lately knighted, being bound to it before he could marry one Franklin's daughter, of Middlesex, with whom he had £.4000 portion.” Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, March 15.

² Camden's Annals.—The Lord Chancellor died on the 15th, see p. 266.

³ Ancestor of the Irish Viscounts Blundell, which title became extinct in 1756.

⁴ Dorothy, eldest daughter of the Earl of Northumberland, married to Sir Robert Sydney, afterwards Earl of Leicester. Collins dates her marriage in 1618, which must be erroneous.

⁵ Her marriage with Lord Hay was consummated November 6 this year, much against the Earl her father's will. Of this more hereafter.

⁶ Marybone Park was Crown land, King Henry VIII. having obtained it in 1544 from Thomas Hobson in exchange for some church lands. The Manor of Tybourn, with all its appurtenances, excepting the Park, King James had granted in 1611 to Edward Forset, Esq. for £.829. 3s. 4d.—an

and before going to Theobalds, delivered the Great Seal to Sir Francis Bacon, and made him Lord Keeper¹.

"The King's Journey into Scotland holds on this day se'ennight, though money comes slowly in; and much ado there is and will be to raise £.100,000 in this town. Yet there is much urging, and in the end it must be done, though men be never so much discouraged.

"The King dined on Shrove-tuesday with the Queen at Somerset House, which was then new christened, and must henceforward be called Denmark House²."

On the 9th of March, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir John Leman³, the Lord Mayor; on the 12th, Sir Robert Hatton⁴, Sir Thomas Fisher⁵, Sir John Wolstenholme, Sir Francis Jones, Sir Nicholas Salter⁶, and Sir William Jones; and, on the 14th, Sir Rowland Egerton⁷.

estate which has since produced £.12,000 *per annum* in ground rents only! In the "Abstract of his Majestie's Revenew," attached to "Truth brought to light by Time," it appears that in 1617 Sir Edward Cary received for keeping Marybone Park 8*d.* by the day. Pennant says that on one occasion, in Queen Elizabeth's time, the Russian Ambassadors were entertained by hunting here. A curious view of the Manor-house and neighbourhood from a drawing made by Gasselin in 1700, is among the CXX Illustrations of Pennant. See further of the history of the mansion in Lysons's *Environs*.

¹ March 7, the Great Seal is delivered to Sir Francis Bacon, the King's Attorney, in the 54th year year of his age, whom the King admonished not to seal any thing till after mature deliberation, to give righteous judgment between parties, and that he should not extend the Regal Prerogative too far." Camden's *Annals*.

² Birch's MSS. 4173.—The history of this palace has been noticed in vol. II. pp. 69, 466, 749. "The Queen," says Arthur Wilson, "would fain have given it the name of Denmark House, which name continued her time among her people, but it was afterwards left out of the common Calendar, like the dead Emperor's new-named Month." Kennet's *Complete History of England*, II. 685.

³ See pp. 194, 254.

⁴ "Robin Hatton," says Mr. Chamberlain, Oct. 15, was "my Lord of Canterbury's Steward."

⁵ An opulent Citizen resident at Islington; see Nelson's *History of that place*, and Lysons's *Environs of London*. He was created a Baronet in 1627, and the title is presumed to have become extinct with Sir Richard Fisher in 1707.

⁶ "The same day," continues Mr. Chamberlain, "were dubbed Sir John Wolstenholme, Alderman Jones, and Sir Nicholas Salter, three of the prime Farmers [of the Customs]." Sir John Wolstenholme acquired a large fortune, purchased Nostell Abbey in Yorkshire, and re-built the Church at Stanmore in Middlesex, in which he was buried under a monument, the work of Nicholas Stone, which cost £.200. He died Nov. 25, 1639, aged 77, leaving a son John, also a Farmer of the Customs, first a Knight, and afterwards created a Baronet Jan. 10, 1664. Of his family see Wotton's

On the 15th, Mr. Chamberlain again addressed Sir Dudley Carleton:

"On Tuesday Sir Robert Mansell¹ married his old mistress Roper, one of the Queen's antient Maids of Honour. The Wedding was kept at Denmark House at the Queen's charge, who gave them a fair cupboard of plate, besides many other good and rich presents from other friends.

"On Sunday the Lord Mayor went to Court to be knighted, where, among many other good words the King gave them thanks for their forwardness in this loan of £.100,000 which he borrowed of the City, though it be not yet raised; but it must be done *nolens volens*, and they called in very mean men to bear the burden. Sir Noel Caron [Ambassador of the United Provinces] hath made offer of £.200,000 from the Strangers of the Netherlands; £.60,000 there is made under-hand of jewels; and the Farmers [of the Customs] are engaged for £.50,000. Other provisions there be; and yet it is feared all will scant serve.

"There were two Christenings in the Chapel at Whitehall this week; the first on Tuesday [March 11], of a son² of the Lord Hadington's, where the King, the Earl of Southampton³, and the Countess of Bedford, were gossips. The other on Thursday, [March 13], of a son⁴ of the Lady Fielding, sister of the Baronetage, 1741, vol. IV. p. 441.—Sir Francis Jones was of the Haberdashers' Company, Alderman, and Lord Mayor of London in 1620.—Sir Nicholas Salter probable resided at Enfield; see Lysons's Environs, vol. II. pp. 314, 331.

¹ Sir Rowland Egerton, descended from the same ancestor as the Lord Chancellor, was son of Sir John Egerton, of Egerton and Oulton, Cheshire, and named Rowland from his maternal grandfather, Sir Rowland Stanley, of Horton. Being a large landed proprietor, he was now knighted previously to purchasing a Baronetcy; see p. 267. He died at his seat at Farthinghoe, co. Northampton, Oct. 3, 1646.—His wife was Bridget, sister and coheiress to Thomas sixteenth Lord Grey de Wilton (who forfeited that title in 1604); and his descendant Sir Thomas Egerton, sixth Baronet, was in 1784 created Baron Grey de Wilton, and in 1801 Earl of Wilton.

² The Treasurer of the Navy; knighted in 1596.

³ Named James after his Royal Godfather, as appears by Malcolm's London, vol. IV. p. 275 (where, for "Harrington" read Hadington). He died an infant, as did Lord Hadington's only other son Charles, whose Christening will be noticed under May 17, 1618. The fees paid at the Chapel Royal on the present occasion were £.40.

⁴ Malcolm says Sussex, and in this instance is probably right, for that Earl was the infant's maternal grandfather (see vol. II. p. 176), whilst Southampton does not appear to have been at all connected with the family.

⁵ Who was likewise named James after the King, and likewise died young, and is not even mentioned in Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 271. Dr. Montagu, the Bishop of Winchester, performed the service, and the fees paid were, as in the former case, £.40. Malcolm's London, *ubi supra*.—Sir William Fielding, the father, has been noticed in vol. I. p. 93.

Earl of Buckingham, who was partner with the King and the same Lady of Bedford in that business.

"This day was appointed to set forward for Scotland; but because it falls out this year, forsooth, to be a dismal day, the King, Queen, and Prince removed yesterday to Theobalds. On Monday the Queen accompanies him to Ware, and then returns. The Prince, Lord Treasurer, and Secretary, go so far as Huntingdon. The King tarries nine nights at Lincoln, four at York, and twelve at Newcastle, besides other places. Half the Pensioners are gone with him; and twenty-four of the Chapel to follow by sea. It is like to prove a very costly voyage every way. The Bishop of Winchester [Dr. Montagu] carries with him, besides other provision, 2000 Jacobus pieces in specie. And you may think the rest do what they can in that kind. I never knew a journey so generally disliked both here and there.

"The Lord Coke is left in the suds; but sure it is God's doing, according to the old saying, *Perdere quos vult Jupiter, prius dementat*. For if he had had the grace to have taken hold of the Match offered by Sir John Villiers, it is assuredly thought that before this day he had been Lord Chancellor. But standing upon terms to give but 10,000 marks with his daughter, when £.10,000 were demanded, and sticking at £.1000 a year during his life, together with some idle words that he would not buy the King's favour too dear, being so uncertain and variable, he hath let slip the occasion, and brought himself to danger, besides the disgrace of paying double that sum, if he be convicted in the Star-chamber of somewhat that is thought will be proved against him¹."

We are now arrived at that memorable period in the Annals of King James, when he set forward on his journey to re-visit, after an absence of fourteen years, his Scottish Dominions. "He began the Journey with the Spring," says Wilson, "warming the Country as he went with the glories of the Court; taking such recreations by the way, as might best beguile the days and cut them shorter, but lengthen the nights (contrary to the Seasons); for what with hawking, hunting, and horse-racing, the days quickly ran away, and the nights with feasting, masquing, and dancing were the more extended. And the King had fit instruments for these sports about his person, as Sir George Goring², Sir Edward

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Wilson took the names of these Knights from Weldon, whose testimony to their fooleries is quoted in vol. II. p. 38. — Sir George Goring, of Hurst Pierrepont in Sussex, representative of a

Zouch ¹, Sir John Finett ², and others, that could fit and obtemperate the King's humour; for he loved such representations and disguises in their masqueradoes, as were witty and sudden, the more ridiculous the more pleasant.

"And his new Favourite being an excellent dancer brought that pastime into the greater request. To speak of his advancement by degrees were to lessen the King's love; for titles were heaped upon him; they came rather like showers than drops. For as soon as Somerset declined, he mounted;—such is the Court motion! Knighthood and the place of Gentleman of the Bed-chamber were the first sprinklings; and then the old Earl of Worcester (who had been Master of the Horse to the late Queen, and continued in it to this time,) was made Lord Privy Seal, in exchange of his place, and a good sum of money put into the seale, and Sir George Villiers, Baron of Whaddon, Viscount Villiers, and Earl of Buckingham, is made Master of the Horse. In this glory he visited Scotland with the King, and is made Privy Councillor there. Favourites are not complete figures, if the Prince's bounty be not circular, as well in his northerly motion as his southerly. He now reigns sole monarch in the King's affection; every thing he doth is admired for the doer's sake. No man dances better, no man runs or jumps better; and, indeed, he jumps higher than ever Englishman did in so short time,—from a private Gentleman to a Dukedom. But the King is not well without him, his company is his solace; and the Court Grandees cannot be well but by him; so that all addresses are made to him, either for place or office, in Court or Commonwealth ³."

junior line of the respectable family of Goring which still maintains its importance in that county, was bred in the Court, under the care of his father, one of Elizabeth's Gentlemen Pensioners; was knighted May 29, 1608; in 1610 occurs as a Gentleman in Ordinary of the Bed-chamber to Prince Henry; and now accompanied the King to Scotland as Lieutenant of his Gentlemen Pensioners. He was recommended to James equally by his sagacity and by a peculiar jocularity of humour, and became the King's familiar companion, and a sort of minor Favourite. He had lately accompanied Lord Hay into France, as noticed in p. 177. In 1629, through the interest of Buckingham, he was created Baron Goring of Hurst Pierrepont, and in 1645 he was advanced to the Earldom of Norwich, which had in 1630 become extinct on the death of his maternal uncle Edward Denny, the first and last of his name by whom it was borne. George Goring, Earl of Norwich, died in 1662, leaving his titles to his son George, who like his father was eminent as a Courtier, a Wit, a Warrior, and a Loyalist. Their histories have been confused by many writers, but are properly distinguished by Mr. Lodge in his *Illustrious Portraits*. The features immortalized in that work are those of the second Earl, with whom his titles became extinct in 1672.

¹ See vol. II. p. 38.

² See p. 133.

³ Kennett's *Complete History of England*, vol. II. p. 708.

The following is a table of the Gests ¹ of

“THE KING’S MAJESTIE’S PROGRESSE INTO SCOTLAND 1616-17.”

				Nights.	Miles.
March	15.	From London to Theobaldes	- - -	2	12
	17.	From thence to Royston	- - -	2	21
	19.	From thence to Huntingdon	- - -	2	16
	21.	From thence to Apthorpe	- - -	1	14
	22.	From thence to Burleigh-on-the-Hill	- - -	4	11
1617.	26.	From thence to Sir Henry Pakenham’s, near Grantham	- - -	1	13
	27.	From thence to Lincolne, att the Palace	- - -	9	18
Aprill	5.	From thence to Newerke	- - -	2	12
	7.	From thence to Worsope	- - -	1	16
	8.	From thence to Dancaster, at Mr. Gargrave’s	- - -	1	12
	9.	From thence to Pomfret, at the Erle of Shrewsbury’s	- - -	2	10
	11.	From thence to York, at the Lord Presydent’s	- - -	4	17
	15.	From thence to Rypon	- - -	1	16
	16.	From thence to Aske	- - -	1	16
	17.	From thence to Awcklande	- - -	2	16
	19.	From thence to Durham, att the Castle	- - -	4	17
	23.	From thence to Newcastle, att Sir George Selbye’s	- - -	12	12
Maye	5.	From thence to Bothe Castle	- - -	2	13
	7.	From thence to Anwicke, att the Abbey	- - -	2	12
	9.	From thence to Chillingham	- - -	1	10
	10.	From thence to Barwicke, att the Pallaice	- - -	5	14

On the 16th of March the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Thomas Coventry, then recently appointed Solicitor General² to his Majesty, and Sir Philip

¹ From Cole’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) vol. XLVI.; transcribed by him, together with the Gestes of 1605 (printed in vol. I. p. 517) from original drafts found among the papers of Mr. Martin, the Suffolk Antiquary.—Another copy of these Gestes is among the MSS. of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge, No. 123.

² And afterwards Lord Keeper. This great man was born at Croome d’Abitot in Worcestershire in 1578, the son of Thomas Coventry, Judge of the Common Pleas. He was educated at Baliol College, Oxford, and the Inner Temple, where he was Autumn Reader in 1616. In November of the same year he was elected Recorder of London, on the 23d of which month Mr. Chamberlain told Sir Dudley Carleton: “The King is nothing pleased with the Solicitor [Sir Henry Yelverton] for refusing the Recordership; and the rather for that the City in the interim took the advantage to

Pakenham¹. "In the King's Progresse," soon after, Sir Francis Moore and Sir John Poyntz² received that honour.

On the 18th of March, Sir Edward Fiennes and Sir Francis Swift³ were knighted at Royston. From thence the King, on the following day, proceeded to Sir Oliver Cromwell's, at Hinchinbrook by Huntingdon, whence, on the 20th, he dated a dispatch to the States General⁴, and where, before leaving the mansion, he dubbed Sir Thomas Hutchinson, of Nottinghamshire⁵; and Sir William Bird⁶.

From thence the Gests lead his Majesty to pass a single night at Sir Anthony Mildmay's at Apthorp⁷.

FREE GIFTS FROM THE EXCHEQUER, 1616-17.

To Adam Valett and John	£.	The King of Denmark's ser-	£.
Tetart, Frenchmen - -	80	vants, for bringing deer -	100
John Garratt ⁸ - - -	20	Sir William Broncker ⁹ , out of	
		the bounty money - - -	2000

choose one Coventry, no confident of the Court, before any other should be nominated to them, and that two or three days before the place was vacant [by the promotion of Sir Henry Montagu to be Chief Justice of the King's Bench, *vice* Coke, disgraced]. That Sir Thomas was not, however, destitute of Court interest, or that he speedily acquired it, is proved by his present promotion to the Solicitorship (which had become vacant by the promotion of Sir Henry Yelverton to the place of Attorney General, Sir Francis Bacon to that of Lord Keeper, the Lord Chancellor Egerton having resigned the Seals). In 1620 he was made Attorney General; in 1625 Lord Keeper; in 1628 created Baron Coventry of Aylesborough, Worcestershire; and he died at Durham House in the Strand, Jan. 10, 1639-40. His life has been more particularly related in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary, and Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 746, and he is one of the Worthies immortalized in Lodge's Illustrious Portraits.

¹ Eldest son of Edmond, second son of Robert Pakenham, Clerk of the Green Cloth; and first cousin to Sir Henry Pakenham, whom the King soon after visited at Belton. This Sir Philip died s. p. From Robert his younger brother the present Earl of Longford is descended.

² Sir John Poyntz was one of the Chamberlains of the Exchequer with the yearly fee of £52.3s. 4d.

³ Who is mentioned in a document bearing date June 28, 1619, as a servant to Mary Countess Dowager of Shrewsbury. See Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 97, where his family connections are also noticed.

⁴ Printed in the Letters to and from Sir Dudley Carleton, p. 122.

⁵ Sir Thomas Hutchinson, of Owthorp, was Sheriff of Nottinghamshire in 1620, and also M. P. for that County. "What others sought he could not shun, being pressed by the whole County to be their Representative, to which he was several times elected." He died in 1643, aged 55. See the "Memoirs" of his son, Col. Hutchinson, 2 vols. 8vo, 1810, where is a pedigree of the family.

⁶ D. C. L. and a Disputant before the King at Oxford in 1605; see vol. I. p. 535.

⁷ See vol. I. p. 97; vol. II. p. 457; and this Volume, pp. 18, 165. ⁸ See p. 136. ⁹ See p. 122.

The Officers (in recompense of their places) in Flushing, upon surrender of the Town ¹	£. 1915	More to him for surrendering his pension of £.200 -	£. 600
The like to the Officers at Brill	1785	Sir Thomas Cornewallis ⁵ -	300
To Clement Edmonds ² , of a grant made unto him of the reversion of Muster-master of Brill - - - -	400	Lawrence Dundas - - -	50
George Thoresby, Commissary of the Muster in Brill, in recompense of his place -	400	Sir James Sandilands ⁶ - -	150
Sir James Simple and Thomas Leighe ³ , out of Recusants' lands and goods - -	310	Barnard Lindsey - - -	1000
Morgan Colman - - -	20	Sir William Cornewallis ⁷ , out of bounty - - - -	2000
Captain Barnaby Rich - -	100	Master Coppier - - -	100
Sir James Hamilton, for surrendering his grant of the customs and imposts in the ports of Lough Coyne and Bay of Knockfergus in Ireland - - - -	1300	The Earl of Nottingham ⁸ -	1500
Archibald Napper ⁴ , out of the bounty money - - -	180	The Lord Viscount Hadington ⁹	6000
		Christian Steward, the dwarf -	20
		Richard D'Olive - - -	160
		James Maxwell - - -	150
		Sir James Oughterlony ¹⁰ , out of bounty - - - -	800
		Walter Balconquall - - -	200
		Sir Cary Raleigh ¹¹ - - -	100
		Richard Connock - - -	666
		James Chambers, the King's Physician ¹² - - - -	250
		The Lord Obigney ¹³ - - -	5000
		Jehan de Tour ¹⁵ , Frenchman	100
		The total sum is -	<u>£.29,376</u>

From Apthorp the King departed on the 22d of March for Burley-on-the-Hill¹⁵, where he rested for four nights. Here, on the 23d, the King signed the

¹ See p. 170. ² One of the Clerks of the Council, with a fee of £50. ³ See vol. II. p. 760.

⁴ See this volume, p. 181. ⁵ Knighted at Greenwich, April 9, 1605; see vol. II. p. 506.

⁶ See this volume, p. 78. ⁷ See vol. II. p. 760. ⁸ See this volume, pp. 77, 136.

⁹ See vol. II. p. 160.

¹⁰ Ibid. p. 288.

¹¹ Sir Carew Raleigh was an elder brother of the unfortunate Sir Walter, whose son was also named Carew. Whilst the King was giving and selling alternately the rich inheritance of Sherburne (see p. 192), this miserable pittance was probably obtained for relief of the instant wants of the Raleigh family; Sir Walter had at this time sailed on his voyage to Guiana.

¹² He accompanied the King to Scotland in that capacity.

¹³ See vol. II. p. 247.

¹⁴ De Tour was the name of the French Ambassador; see p. 247.

¹⁵ See pp. 20, 165.

Letters Patent by which Sir Edward Noel, Baronet, was without the ceremony of investiture, created Baron Noel of Ridlington¹. On the 26th, Sir James Evington of Lincolnshire, and Sir Richard Conway, High Sheriff of Rutland, were there knighted.

To Belton, the seat of Sir Henry Pakenham², near Grantham, was the next Royal Visit; where having spent a night, his Majesty on the following day proceeded towards Lincoln.

THE MANNER OF KING JAMES'S FIRST COMING TO LINCOLN, MARCH 27, 1617³.

Memorandum, that his Majesty being to come to this City, the Mace-bearer was sent to the Lord Chamberlane at Grantham, for directions when, where, and in what manner Mr. Mayor and the Citizens should meet his Majesty; who

¹ See vol. II. p. 426. — He is there, from Wotton's Baronetage, styled Baronet of Brooke (at which neighbouring mansion the King had been entertained in 1614, see vol. II. p. 457), but by Camden in his Annals he is styled Baronet of Dalby, which, his "ancient inheritance, having sold to the Earl of Buckingham, for its full worth," he now took his title of Peerage from Ridlington. — "Sir Edward Noel," says Mr. Chamberlain, March 29, "is newly made a Baron by patent, which being a more easy way than by Creation or Investiture, it is doubted that in time we shall have more than enough. He hath sold his maner of Dalby in Leicestershire, being his patrimony and dwelling, to the Earl of Buckingham for £29,000, and lies in wait to buy Burley of the Lady of Bedford [one of the coheirs of Lord Harington], whereon he hath lent money already, and so plant himself altogether in Rutlandshire." Burley was, however, soon after also purchased by the all-powerful Favourite. See Wright's Rutland, 1684, p. 30.

² Belton House, two miles and a half distant from Grantham and twenty-four from Lincoln, now the seat of Earl Brownlow, stands on a fine lawn in the midst of a spacious and well-wooded Park, through which flows the river Witham, under a range of hills, which form a pleasing termination to the landscape. The reversion of the lordship had in 1591 been purchased by Robert Pakenham, of North Witham, Lincolnshire, son of Robert Pakenham, Clerk of the Green-cloth. Robert was succeeded by his son Sir Henry (knighted at Belvoir Castle, April 23, 1603, see vol. I. p. 92). He died s. p. in 1620, having sold the reversion of Belton, after the death of his wife (who lived till 1640), to Richard Brownlow, Esq. His great-grandson, Sir John Brownlow, Bart. destroyed the old mansion, of which the entrance pillars, with the date 1609, only now remain, the present conservatory being built on its site; and, from a design of Sir Christopher Wren, built a new edifice, in which he was honoured by a Visit from King William the Third, October 29, 1695. Of the history of Belton see further in Mr. Turnor's elegant History of the Soke of Grantham; there is a distant view of the mansion in Howlett's Lincolnshire Views, and a nearer one in Neale's Seats.

³ Communicated by the Rev. Dr. Bliss, from a MS. formerly Mr. Gough's, and now in the Bodleian Library, entitled "Adversaria, or Collections for an History of Lincoln, 1737."

returned answer, 'That his Majesty was intended that night to rest at St. Catherine's¹, and the day following to come into the City; and that therefore the Sheriffs, with some number of Citizens in gownes, should meet his Highness at the skirts of the County; and so the day following, the Mayor and his Brethren, with convenient company of Citizens, to meet him at the Barr-gate, and then, and not before, to have some Speech to his Majesty, for that his Highness did not love long Speeches.'

The King comes to St. Katharine's.

Whereupon, the 27th day of March 1617, anno 15 Regis Jacobi, King James did come from Grantham to Lincoln, but the appointed place for meeting his Majesty at the skirts of the County² was not observed by reason his Majesty hunted along the heath, and came not the high-way, and so the Sheriffs [William Solomon and Roger Beck] and Citizens removed from that place. And they, with either of them a white staff in his hand, clad in cloth gownes of purple in grayne, and on horseback with foot-cloths, together with all of note which had been Sheriffs on horseback, with foot-cloths and black gowns all of the antientest fashion; and all that had been Chamberlains of note on horseback in their gownes of one fashion of violet colour without foot-cloths; and divers other Citizens in cloaks of like colour, booted and spurred, on horseback, with new javelings in their hands fringed with red and white, (being set in order by one of his Majesty's Officers, who came before his Majesty's coming to that end,) two and two a rank, were appointed to stand in the highway near the Cross of the cliffe³, where his Majesty could not misse of them, the Sheriffs being hindmost. And when his Majesty drew neare them, the two Sherffis only lighted, and way made for them, they both went to his Majesty in his caroche, and kneeling, the elder Sheriff delivered his Staff first, and the King delivered it him again, and the other Sheriff did the like; and so both took horse again, and rid both bare-

¹ The Priory of St. Catherine's, near the Bar-gate at the south entrance of Lincoln, was founded by Bishop Chesney temp. Hen. II. We may presume that the monastic buildings were in good repair when King James lodged in them. They were once the residence of the Grantham family.

² That is the County of the City, which extends five miles south of Bar-gate.

³ Just without Bargate at Lincoln was situated one of the Crosses erected by Edward the First where the corpse of his Queen Eleanor had rested. She died at Harby, in Nottinghamshire, seven miles from Lincoln, and this was the first halting-place. This Cross was demolished in 1643. "The cliffe" is the steep hill which runs from east to west on the south side of Lincoln.

headed before the caroche. The High Sheriff of the County¹ and his men by the King's Officers then were put by, and the other Citizens in their degrees before the Sheriffs rid all bare-headed before his Majesty, conducting and attending him to his lodging at St. Catharine's.

The King's Entrance into the City, the Second Day.

On the next day his Majesty coming to the Bar-gate in his caroche, he there lighted, and took his horse caparisoned of state, being most rich, where the Mayor [Robert Mason], the Recorder, and his Brethren, the Sheriffs, and other Citizens aforesaid, in their rank and attire aforesaid, attended him on horseback and foot-cloths; the Mayor and Aldermen in their scarlet robes, with every of them a man to attend him on foot in civil liveries much-what² all alike. His Majesty came toward the Mayor and Recorder, who were both lighted and on foot, hard under the houses on the West side of the street within the Barr-gates; and the Mayor readily on his knee kneeling tendered the Sword to deliver it to his Majesty, but his Majesty put the Sword back with the back of his hand with all grace, refused to take it from the Mayor. Then the King's Majesty asked the Mayor if he had any Speech to deliver, who answered 'No, but this Gentleman, who is our Recorder³, hath one;' and the King willed, 'Say on.' So the Recorder, kneeling all the time on his knees, uttered his Speech, which his Majesty heard willingly and with great commendations. Which ended, the Mayor delivered his Majesty a goodly enamelled and gilt silver Cup of a full elne in height, in weight a c marks in silver, or thereabouts, which the King took with great delight and content, and moving his hat thanked them, and delivered it to one of his footmen to carry openly in his hand all the way to the Minster, and thence conveyed it to his lodging.

The Cavalcade up the Town to the Minster.

After the Cup delivered, the Mayor mounted, with the Sword in his hand, and placed betwixt the two Serjeants at Mace, did bear the Sword before the King to the Minster, and the Earl of Rutland, being Lieutenant of the County⁴, did

¹ Sir Francis South, of Kelsterne, knighted with the majority of the country gentlemen, previously to the Coronation, at Whitehall, July 23, 1603 (erroneously styled of Wiltshire, in vol. I. p. 213).

² *Much-what* and *most-what* were used for "the most part;" Archdeacon Nares gives an example from Locke.

³ Who this was does not appear.

⁴ See vol. I. p. 476.

bear the King's Sword, all the said Aldermen, Sheriffs, and other Citizens in their ranks, youngest first, did ride, two and two together, up the High-street, through the Baile unto the Minster-gates at the west end thereof, where the King kneeled down on a cushion, which was there prepared, and prayed a short prayer, and so, under a canopy which was held over him by four or six Prebends in surplices, went into the Quire, the Mayor still bearing the Sword, the Aldermen and other Citizens in their gowns going before him into the Quire, and there sate by the Bishop's pue hanged about with rich hangings in a Chair all prayer-time; Mr. Dean¹ saying prayers, the Mayor holding up the Sword before him all prayer-time.

The King views the Church.

After Prayers done, his Majesty went about the Church to see the antient monuments thereof, and so went into the Chapter-house to see it, and from thence to his caroché, and therein went towards his lodging at St. Catharine's down Potter's-gate Head; Mr. Mayor bearing the Sword until he took caroché as well through Baile-close as church; when he took caroché, his own sword and all ornaments were put up. The Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens in their ranks as aforesaid, rid all before the caroché, and attended his Majesty on horseback to St. Catherine's House, where his Majesty at the door put off his hat and dismissed them.

The King goes to the Minster again, and heals fifty Persons of the Evil.

On Sunday, being the 30th of March, his Majesty went to the Minster in his caroché, and at the West door met him three Bishops² and the Deane and Chapter, who made a short Speech. Mr. Mayor and his Brethren, Sheriffs, and other Citizens in their gownes, did then (as was directed them by the Lord Chamberlayne and his Officers, from whom they had directions for all their carriage and doings,) go in their degrees before his Majesty by two and two in a rank untill the foremost came to the Quire door; then they did divide their rank, and one stood still of one side, and another turned and stood still on the other, and so made a fair lane and way for his Majesty, to keep him from the presse of the

¹ Roger Parker, D. D. had been appointed Dean in 1613, after having been 14 years Precentor in the Cathedral. He died Aug. 29, 1629, aged 71, and was buried in his Church, where is a monument with his effigies; the inscription is given in Willis's Lincoln, p. 80. His initials, with the date 1616, appear on the front of the Deanery.

² Andrews, Montagu, and Neile, who accompanied the King on his Progress; see p. 245.

people. And for order sake, first the Town Clerke, then the two Sheriffs, and after them the Aldermen in their rank by twos went along (betwixt the Citizens in the way they made) before his Majesty into the Quire, where the Bishop of Lincoln¹ preached; after which Sermon ended, the King healed to the number of fifty persons of the King's Evil. When he had so done, the Citizens went before him in order as aforesaid unto the Bishop's Palace², whear he dined, and after dynner his Majesty went in his caroch in private unto St. Catherine's again.

Chancellor Eland preached before the King at St. Catherine's. Fifty-three Persons healed.

On Tuesday, being the first of April, Mr. Ealand, one of the Masters in the Church³, preached before his Majesty in his Chamber of Presence; whear after Sermon his Majestie did heal fifty-three of the King's Evil.

The King goes to a cocking, and to see a stage prize plaied.

On Wednesday, being the second of April, his Majesty did come in his caroch

¹ Dr. Richard Neile, one of the King's favourite Divines. He accompanied his Majesty into Scotland, and on his return was promoted to the See of Durham; and to 1631 to York. See II. 190.

² The Episcopal Palace at Lincoln, which, from being situated on the summit of the hill, Leland described as "*hanging in declivio*," was built by Bishop Chesney, to whom the site was granted by King Henry the Second, and enlarged by succeeding Prelates. When entire, it was a noble structure, and scarcely exceeded in grandeur by any of our ancient castles. It was completely repaired by Bishop Williams, prior to the Civil War, during which unhappy contest it was demolished. The gateway, the work of Bishop Alnwick, whose arms are on the spandrels and wooden door, was left entire. The shell of the magnificent hall, begun by Hugh of Burgundy, and finished by Hugh the Second, who also built its famous kitchen, is 84 feet by 50, supported by two rows of pillars, with three arches opening into the South end, and communicating, by a bridge of one lofty pointed arch, with the kitchen, and other principal apartments. It had four double windows on each side. Part of the kitchen wall, with seven chimnies in it, is yet standing, and the front exhibits three stout buttresses. Dr. Nelthorpe, obtaining a lease of the site, built of the old materials a handsome stone house, in which the Bishop is at present accommodated when he visits the City. The venerable remains, the gloomy vaults, broken arches, and ruined towers, commanding a prospect over the lower town and five neighbouring counties, render the Palace garden one of the most delightful, as well as picturesque spots, that can be found in a range over the whole extensive county of Lincoln.—A view of the ruins was published in Grose's *Antiquities*, four views of different parts in the *Antiquarian Cabinet*, and another of the Gateway in *Gent. Mag.* for Feb. 1826.

³ George Eland, S. T. B. Rector of Kettlethorp, co. Lincoln, was collated to the Chancellorship of Lincoln in 1605. He was also Archdeacon of Bedford, Rector of Irtlingborough, co. Northampton, and Tensford, Beds. He died in 1631. See Willis's *Survey of Lincoln Cathedral*, *supra*.

to the sign of the George by the Stanbowe¹, to see a cocking thear, where he appointed four cocks to be put on the pit together, which made his Majestie very merrie.

And from thence he went to the Spread Eagle to see a prise plaid thear, by a fensor of the City and a servant to some Attendant in the Court, who made the challenge, where the fensor and schollers of the City had the better; on which his Majesty called for his porter, who called for the sword and buckler, and gave and received a broken paite, and others had hurts.

The Mayor and Aldermen petition the King about the Scouring the Fosse².

The King then entered his caroché at the inner-gate, where the Mayor and Aldermen did crave answer to the Petition they delivered at the King's coming from the cocking, to whom the King turning, gave his hand to Mr. Maior and Mr. Hollingworth³, Alderman, who kissed the same, and so rid forwards to St. Catherine's.

A great Horse-race, a Hunting and a Race by the Hunters.

On Thursday thear was a great Horse-race on the Heath for a Cupp, where his Majesty was present, and stood on a scaffold the Citie had caused to be set up, and withall caused the Race a quarter of a mile longe to be raled and corded with rope and hoopes on both sides, whereby the people were kept out, and the horses that ronned were seen faire.

On Friday there was a great Hunting, and a Race by the horses which rid the seat for a golden snaffle; and a Race by three Irishmen and an Englishman, all which his Majesty did behold. The Englishman wonne the Race.

[On the same day the King knighted, at Lincoln, Sir Henry Bretton, of Surrey; Sir Thomas Willoughby⁴; Sir John Buck⁵, of Lincolnshire; and Sir William Wilmer⁶, of Northamptonshire.]

¹ The Stone Bow is a beautiful gateway in the High-street, of pointed architecture, said to be built in the reign of Richard the Second, but probably later. It is engraved in Drury's Lincoln.

² A navigable canal, 11 miles in length, from Lincoln to the Trent near Torksey, made or enlarged temp. Henry I., and most essential to the trade of the Town.

³ L. Hollingworth was Sheriff 1591, Mayor 1594 and 1604; E. Hollingworth Sheriff 1594.

⁴ Grandson of Charles second Baron Willoughby of Parham, and brother to William the third Lord. Sir William and Sir Thomas Willoughby, knighted at Belvoir Castle, April 23, 1603, and Sir Ambrose, knighted at the Charter-house May 11 in that year (see vol. I. pp. 91, 114), were his father and uncles. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 612.

⁵ Perhaps the Sheriff of Lincolnshire in 1619; see vol. I. p. 215.

⁶ Of Sywell, the first Pensioner admitted upon the foundation of Sydney Sussex College, and

The King goes to Newarke.

On Saturday, after dynner, his Majesty went from St. Katherine's to Newarke, at whose departure from St. Catherine's Mr. Maior and his Brethren did give attendance at his coming forth of the Presence, and when he took his caroehe in the inner courte at St. Catherine's, he gave forth his hand to the Maior, all the Aldermen, and the Towne Clarke, who all kissed the same; then he thanked them all, saying, 'That if God lent him life, he would see them oftner¹,' and so took his caroehe and went forward that night to Newarke, Mr. Sheriffs riding before his caroehe in their gownes with their white staves and ffoot-cloths, and men with jafflings [javelins], (but no Citizens,) untill the hither end of Bracebridge bridge², whear they likewise took their leaves, and he moved his hat to them; and then the High Sheriff and his men received him at the further end of the Bridge, beyond the water, and so conducted him on his journey.

Whilst such were the festivities in the Country, Mr. Chamberlain, on the 29th of March, thus wrote from London to his friend Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The 15th of this present the late Lord Chancellor [Egerton] left this world, being visited *in articulo mortis*, or not full half an hour before, by the new Lord Keeper with a message from his Majesty that he meant presently to bestow upon him the title of Earl of Bridgewater, to make him President of the Council, and give him a pension of £.3000 a year during his life. But he was so far past, that no words or worldly comfort could work with him, but only thanking his Majesty for his gracious favour, said 'these things were all to him but vanities.' But his son, though he lay then (and doth still) as it were bound hand and foot with the gout, did not neglect this fair offer of the Earldom, but hath solicited it ever since, with hopeful success at first, the King having given order for the warrant; yet it sticks I know not where, unless it be that he must give down more milk; though, if all be true that is said, £.20,000 was a fair sop before. His father left a great estate both in wealth and lands; £.15,000 a year is the least that is talked of, and some speak of much more.

who became a considerable benefactor to it. He served Sheriff of Northamptonshire in 1615, and died in 1631. See Bridges's History of that County, vol. II. p. 148.

¹ See what Mr. Chamberlain says in his letter of April 19, p. 276.

² The extent of the County of the City westward.

"The Lord Hay was the last week sworn of the Council at Royston, as I take it.

"The Lord Roos is come home ¹ and gone to the King. The King of Spain gave him a jewel of £.5000, and yet he will not gain by the bargain. The business with Spain ² goes on, as they say, the King, Queen, and Prince being very well affected to it; and Commissioners appointed to consider of it.

"On Monday the 24th of March, being the King's day, the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Keeper, the Lord Privy Seal, the Earl of Arundel, the Earl of Southampton, the Lord Hay, the Comptroller, Secretary Winwood, the new Master of the Rolls, with divers other great men, were at Paul's Cross, and heard Dr. Donne, who made there a dainty Sermon upon Proverbs xxii. 11, and was exceedingly well liked generally, the rather for that he did Queen Elizabeth right, and held himself close to the text without flattering the time too much ³."

Again, on the 5th of April, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to his friend:

"This day the King goes to Newark. The Lord Hay is yet here, plotting where to get his two Barons the King has bestowed on him, whereof Sir Edward Carr, of Lincolnshire, is named to be one ⁴. Abercrombie, a Scottish dancing Courtier ⁵, hath gotten likewise the making of two Irish Barons; and the dignity of Baronets is not yet become so bare, but that are lately come in one Egerton, of Cheshire ⁶, and Townshend, of Norfolk ⁷. The speech goes that the the Lord Compton is in a fair way to be made Earl of Northampton ⁸."

¹ From his Spanish embassy; see p. 193.

² The contemplated alliance for Prince Charles.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁴ This family was never raised above a Baronetcy; see vol. II. p. 427. For genealogical information respecting it, the History of Sleaford, 8vo, 1825, may be well referred to; and it contains a fine engraving of the sumptuous monument of Sir Edward Carr, in Sleaford Church. He was Sheriff of Lincolnshire in 1615.

⁵ See vol. II. p. 725.

⁶ Sir Rowland Egerton, of Egerton, Cheshire, who has been noticed in p. 254. The patent of his Baronetcy bears the same date as this letter, and he became the ninety-sixth Baronet in order of creation. — The Baronetcy is now enjoyed by the Rev. Sir Philip Egerton, the ninth who has borne the title. See the Gentleman's Magazine, vol. XCV. ii. 84.

⁷ Roger Townshend, of Rainham, Norfolk, Esq. was the next day made the ninety-seventh on the roll of the Order. He was son of Sir John Townshend, knighted at the siege of Calais in 1596-7, and slain in a duel in 1603; and nephew to Sir Robert (in vol. I. p. 115). He was now about twenty-two years of age; in 1627 he was elected M. P. for Norfolk, and in 1629 served Sheriff for that county. "He resided for the most part in the country, an eminent example of all Christian virtues, and is mentioned with honour by Sir Henry Spelman in his History of Sacrilege,

On the 7th of April, the King, having knighted at Newark¹, Sir George Peckham, of Derbyshire; and Sir Henry Herbert, a Captain; left that place for Worksop², where he rested one night; and whence, on the following morning, a Proclamation was issued, "commanding the departure of the Noblemen and Country Gentlemen from London during his absence," which is here inserted, both on account of its singularity, and because what relates to the general manners and hospitality of the period is far from irrelevant to our subject. It is not composed with the ordinary formality, and it may have been a production of the Royal pen:

"The Princelie care which wee ever beare towards the good governement and reliefe of our people, suffereth noe occasion to passe whereby wee maie exercise and manyfeste the same. Neither is it unknowen to our loving subjects, by former Proclamations of this nature, howe desirous wee have alwaies beene to renewe and revive the aunciente and lawdable custome of this our Kingdome, whereby Noblemen and persons of qualitie were used rather to dwell and reside in the several counties of this Realme, wheare their principal Seates and Mansions weare, than to gather to London, and theare to remayn to the decaye of hospitalitie and the disservice of the Country. Wherefore, taking into our Princelie consideration that, wee being now in our Journey towards our Realme of Scotland, resorte of such persons unto our Citie will bee lesse needfull, but rather that it is farre more convenient that they abide and contynewe in their several dwel-

and other writers of those times, being universally esteemed for his piety and charity, having nobly endowed several churches with impropriations, to the yearly value of some hundred pounds." He also built from the ground a stately mansion at Rainham, from a design of Inigo Jones. Dying Jan. 1, 1636, aged 41, he was succeeded by his son Roger, who was a ward to the King, and died a minor. Sir Horatio, his second son, became third Baronet, and was in 1661 created Baron, and in 1682 Viscount Townshend. George fourth Viscount, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, was created Marquess Townshend in 1786; and George, his son, having inherited from his mother in 1770 the Baronies of Ferrers of Chartley and Compton, and being descended through her from both the Saxon and Norman Earls of Leicester, was honoured with that Earldom in 1784.—His son George-Ferrers, the present and third Marquess, is the eighth Baronet.

¹ This took place August 2, 1618; see under that date.

² Of the King's other Visits to Newark see vol. II. p. 459.

³ Since the King had been entertained here in April 1603, and the Queen and Royal Children in June that year (see vol. I. pp. 85, 170), this mansion had devolved, on the death of Gilbert Earl of Shrewsbury in 1616, on his son-in-law the Earl of Arundel; see vol. I. p. 87.—Charles the First was at Worksop in his Scottish Progress in 1633, and there knighted Sir George Douglas, a Scot.

lings in the countrey, to perfourme the duties and charge of their places and service, and likewise by house-keeping to be a comforte unto their neighbours; we doe hereby straightlie charge and comaunde all our Lewetenaunts, except such as be of our Privie Councell or are commanded to attende upon us in our Journey, and alsoe all Noblemen, Deputie Lewetenaunts, Knights, and other Gentlemen of qualitie, which have Mansion-houses in the Countrie, that within twentie daies after this our Proclamation published, they departe with their wives and famylies oute of our saide Cittie of London and the suburbs thereof, and retourne to their severall habitations in the countrey, and there continewe and abide untill the ende of the sommer vacation; wherein neverthesse wee would have this our commandement to be understood that such as have necessarie occasion to attende heere in oure Cittie of London for Tearme buisynes concerninge their estate, or such as shall have other speciall and urgent occasions, which they shall signifie and approve unto our Privie Councell, maie during the twoe next Termes, or during such other times as their occasions, soe to bee signified and approved as aforesaide, shall require, come uppe and remaine within our Cittie of London or the suburbs thereof, this our Proclamation notwithstanding; and because wee have heretofore founde much remissnes and neglect in obeyinge our Proclamations, which are ever published for juste and polliticque causes, and for the publicque good, we doe therefore admonishe all those whom theis presents may concerne, to beware that wee have no jusste cause to make them an example of contempte for disobeyinge this oure Royall commaundement. Given at our Courte at Worksoppe the eighte day of Aprill. *Per ipsum Regem.*"

On the same day, the 8th of April, the King proceeded to Doncaster, where the Gests place him for one night "at Mr. Gargrave's¹."

¹ When the King rested at Doncaster in 1603 (see vol. I. p. 84), he slept at an inn, called in one account the White Bear, and in another the Sun and Bear. Of the present visit Dr. Miller in his History of Doncaster only records that the King lodged in the Town, as he does of King Charles in 1631. In 1644, he says, "King Charles attended divine service at Doncaster Church." In 1678, "the Duke of York lodged at Mr. Squires', at Doncaster, on his way to Scotland." In 1761, "the Duke of York lodged at the Angel in Doncaster." I do not find Mr. Gargrave mentioned in the History, and, judging from the above extracts, and from a rumour that the King had knighted "a host at Doncaster" (Mr. Chamberlain's letter of June 4), think it nearly certain that he was an inn-keeper. Mr. Hunter, the future historian of the Deanery of Doncaster, informs me that he finds no trace of this Mr. Gargrave in his extracts from the parish register, or from the records of the Corporation; neither do the latter contain any notice of the King's visit, either on this occasion or in 1603.—Gargrave, however, was an ancient name, derived from Gargrave in Craven; a Sir Cotton Gargrave was knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1585; and a Sir Richard by King James at York in 1603 (see I. 82).

On the 9th of April, his Majesty arrived at Pontefract, where he was lodged for two nights at the New Hall¹, a mansion of Edward Earl of Shrewsbury². During his stay, we are told, he inspected the College then lately established in the Castle, for a Dean and three Prebendaries³.

On the 11th of April, the King entered the City of York, "accompanied with many Earls, Barons, Knights, Esquires, both Scotch and English. The Sheriffs of the City, clad in their scarlet gowns, attended with one hundred young Citizens on horseback in suitable habits, met the King on Tadcaster Bridge⁴, and carried their white rods before him till they came to Micklegate-bar. Here the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Twenty-four, with many other Citizens, standing on the North within the rails, did welcome his Majesty to his City of York. The Lord Mayor on his knees presented the Sword with all the keys of the gates and posterns, and likewise presented a Standing-cup with a cover of silver double gilt, which cost £.30. 5s. 7d., a purse of £.3 price, with one hundred double sovereigns in it; and, adds my authority, made a very worthy and witty Speech at the delivery of each particular to the King. After him Serjeant Hutton, Recorder, made a long Oration; which ended, the King delivered the City's Sword to the Earl of Cumberland, the City's Chief Captain⁵, as he is here called, who carried the sword, and the Lord Mayor the Mace before his Majesty. On the top of Ouse Bridge

¹ The Talbots possessed a mansion at Pontefract, called the New Hall, situate a little distance from the Castle near the road to Ferribridge. It had been the residence of Earl Edward during the life-time of his brother Earl Gilbert. The arms and quarterings of Talbot impaling Manners (Edward's father and mother) with the date 1591 are still to be seen carved in stone over the entrance. —George Earl of Shrewsbury who died in 1590 left a benefaction to poor artificers of the Town.

² Edward Talbot, eighth Earl of Shrewsbury, had succeeded his brother, the celebrated Earl Gilbert, in May 1616. He enjoyed the title but a short time, dying in London, Feb. 8, 1617-18. He has a very costly monument, with effigies of himself, his Lady, and a female child, in Westminster Abbey; and has a high character for integrity and piety given him in his epitaph. See Brayley's Westminster Abbey, vol. II. p. 155. The title devolved on his cousin George.

³ To this far-famed Castle the King had paid a morning visit in 1602-3 (see vol. I. p. 84). It was the property of the Crown, and had been repaired and beautified in the latter part of Elizabeth's reign, and, on the accession of James, granted to Queen Anne as part of her jointure, with power to make leases for twenty-one years. See Lodge's Illustrations of English History, vol. III. p. 207. The Chapel of St. Clement, within the Castle, was first built by Ilbert de Lacy in the reign of William II., and had been re-built at the time of the Castle's repair under Elizabeth.

⁴ The termination of the City liberties; see vol. I. p. 81.

⁵ His Hereditary Office. In 1602-3 the Earl had a contest with Lord Burleigh, the President of the Council, about carrying the sword at York, which was decided in his favour; see vol. I. p. 78.

another Speech was made to the King by one Sands Percvine, a London Poet, concerning the cutting of the river and making it more navigable. From thence his Majesty rode to the Minster, where he heard Divine Service, and so to the Manor, where he kept his Court ¹.

"The next day he dined with the Lord Sheffield, Lord President ², at Sir George Young's ³ house in the Minster-yard, where he lay during the King's abode at the Manor. After dinner and banquet he made eight Knights,

Sir William Ellis ⁴, of Lincolnshire.

Sir William Ingram ⁵.

¹ "The King's Manor," which had been the rich and noble Abbey of St. Mary, was chiefly appropriated to the use of the Lord President and Council of the North. King James, on lodging in it in 1603, (see vol. I. p. 78,) ordered it to be repaired and enlarged, intending to make use of it as a half-way Palace in his journeys to and from Scotland, which he at that time imagined would be frequent. Dr. Drake affirms that many testimonials of his design appeared "in arms and other decorations about the several portals of the building." It continued to be the residence of the Lord President of the North during the continuance of the office, but was always considered as a Royal Palace, in proof of which it may be mentioned that one of the articles against the unfortunate Earl of Strafford was, that he, when Lord President, "had the arrogance to put up his own arms in one of the King's Palaces,"—where they still remain carved in stone. After the Restoration the military Governors of the City also resided here. James II. put the place into the possession of a Popish Bishop; in 1696 the King's Mint was erected in it; and it has since been let upon leases from the Crown, the present lessee being Lord Grantham. His ancestor, Tancred Robinson, Esq. resided in one division of the building; but the greater part of the Palace has, for several generations, been occupied by a Ladies' boarding-school. A room called the Council-chamber is now their school-room; the adjoining gallery is the workshop of a carver and gilder; the reputed Banqueting-room, a spacious apartment, twenty-seven yards long and nine broad, which tradition points out as the Court of the Parliaments held at York, and which was used in James the Second's time as the Popish Chapel, and when Dr. Drake wrote, as an assembly-room and for great public dinners, is now converted into a national-school. See Hargrove's History of York.

² See vol. II. p. 334, and this volume, p. 77.

³ Sir George was son of Dr. Thomas Younge, a former Archbishop of York and Lord President of the North. He was a Captain under the Earl of Essex in Ireland, and died July 10, 1620, aged 52. See his epitaph in the Cathedral, with those of other members of his family, in Drake's York, p. 510.

⁴ Sir William Ellys occurs as one of the King's learned Council of the North in 1619 and 1629. Drake, p. 370.

⁵ Elder brother of Sir Arthur Ingram, noticed in p. 273. Sir William was LL. D., one of the Council of the North, a Master in Chancery, and Commissary of the Prerogative Court of York. He died July 24, 1625, and has a monument in York Cathedral, with kneeling effigies of himself and wife, on which he is recorded to have been "*eques auratus a Jacobo Rege insignitus, inter illius ordinis Eboracenses ætate maximus.*" A representation of it is engraved in Drake, p. 517.

Sir William Sheffield¹, of Yorkshire. Sir John Hotham⁴, of Yorkshire.
 Sir William Hungate², of Yorkshire. Sir Richard Darly⁵, of York.
 Sir Peter Middleton³, of Yorkshire. Sir Walter Bethell⁶, of York.

His Majesty also walked into the Cathedral, and viewed the Chapter-house and Church, which he much commended for its elegant workmanship.

“The day after his Majesty rode in his coach through the City with all his Train to Bishopthorp⁷, where he dined with Toby Mathew, Archbishop⁸.

“On the 13th, being Sunday, his Majesty went to the Cathedral, where the Archbishop preached a learned Sermon before him. After Sermon ended he

¹ Sir William Sheffield, probably one of the sons of the Lord President, in his life-time erected an alabaster monument, with busts of himself and wife, in St. Martin's, Coney-street. It bears an inscription to the Lady only, who died in 1633. See it printed in Drake, p. 328.

² Sir William Hungate was of Saxton in the West Riding, and died without issue in 1634.—The Hungate family, which probably arose from Hungate near Ripon, was of some consequence among the Citizens of York, and perhaps gave their name to a street called Hungate, which indeed Dr. Drake thought had given its name to them. See several conjectures on this name in Hargrove's York, vol. II. p. 338. Some epitaphs on the family are printed in Drake, p. 314.

³ Son of Sir John and father of Sir William Midelton, Knights, and Sheriff of the City of York in 1618. A pedigree of this ancient family, of Midelton, Stupham, and Stockheld, is printed in Whitaker's Craven, p. 217.

⁴ Sir John Hotham, of a family who had enjoyed knighthood for several generations, was created a Baronet Jan. 4, 1621; was High Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1634; and a Member of Parliament. At the commencement of the Civil War he was made Governor of Hull, an office of too great responsibility for a man who proved so destitute of decision. He irrevocably offended the King by refusing him entry to the town, but afterwards being detected by the Parliament in holding correspondence with the Royal party, suffered with his eldest son by the hands of the executioner in 1643. This transaction, one of the most interesting during the war, is related at some length in Wotton's Baronetage, 1741, vol. I. pp. 472—484.

⁵ Of Buttercrambe in the East Riding.

⁶ Son of Sir Hugh Bethel, of Alne (knighted at Whitehall, May, 30, 1604, and Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1608). See some epitaphs of his descendants in Drake, p. 252.

⁷ The Palace of Bishopthorpe, three miles from York, was originally built by Bishop Walter de Grey temp. Hen. III. whose Chapel is still standing. Of the state of the Palace at the time of King James's Visit we have no account. Drake tells us it was materially altered by Archbishop Dawes temp. Geo. I. and it has been so remodelled in the late reign by Archbishop Drummond and by the present Primate, Archbishop Vernon, that it now offers, though in the pointed style, quite a modern appearance. See two plates published by Rooker in 1773, and another in Neale's Seats.—Charles the First was at Bishopthorpe in his way to Scotland, May 27, 1633, when he knighted there Sir Paul Neile, son of Dr. Neile, then Archbishop.

⁸ Of whom, and his good entertainment of the King at Durham in 1603, see vol. I. pp. 64, 74.

touched about seventy persons for the King's Evil¹. This day he dined with the Lord Mayor with his whole Court; and, after dinner, knighted Sir Robert Ascough, the Lord Mayor, and Sir Richard Hutton², the Recorder.

"On Monday, April 14, the King rode to Sheriff-hutton Park³, and there knighted Sir Richard Harper, of Derbyshire; Sir John Hepsly; and Sir William Bellasis, of Durham⁴.

¹ When King Charles was at York in 1639, he touched on Good Friday no less than *two hundred* persons for the Evil.

² Second son of Anthony Hutton, of a genteel family at Penrith in Cumberland. He was educated at Jesus College, Cambridge, and afterwards (though inclined to divinity) at Gray's Inn; was made Recorder of York; Serjeant-at-law in 1603 (see vol. I. p. 157); and in 1617 a Judge of the Common Pleas (not of the King's Bench as Dugdale says in his *Origines*). He died in London, and was buried in St. Dunstan's in the West, Feb. 17, 1638, leaving a fair estate at Goldesborough in Yorkshire. His "*Reports*" were published in 1656 and 1682. His son Sir Richard was a Loyalist slain at the battle of Sherburne. Of his family see further in Wood's *Ath. Ox.* by Bliss, III. col. 27.

³ At Sheriff Hutton, ten miles from York, was an ancient Castle of the Nevills, in which the Princess Elizabeth, daughter of Edward the Fourth (and afterwards Queen of Henry the Seventh), and her cousin Edward Earl of Warwick, son of the Duke of Clarence, were confined by their uncle Richard the Third; and which was for ten years the principal residence of Thomas second Duke of Norfolk, and afterwards of the Duke of Richmond, natural son of Henry the Eighth. It had been some years in ruins when King James visited the Park, which being part of the possessions of the Prince of Wales, was let to Sir Arthur Ingram, Cofferer of his Majesty's Household, of whom see vol. II. p. 288, *et alibi*; who purchased several other large estates in Yorkshire, particularly Temple Newsome, and was Sheriff of the county in 1619; M. P. for York in 1623, 1625, and 1627; and for many years one of the Secretaries of the Council of the North. He also had a large house in the Minster-yard at York, at which, instead of the Manor, Charles the First kept his Court in 1642. Nor should his Hospital at York for ten poor widows pass unmentioned. When he died does not appear; — his son Sir Arthur served Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1630.—It appears by a Survey of the place made by the celebrated Norden in 1624, that Sir Arthur Ingram had covenanted to keep 300 deer in the Park, and had "raised a very fayre new lodge with brick, [where the King, perhaps, took refreshment,] with a fayre new garden enclosed with a brick wall, with mount walkes and fayre ornaments." This is now the property and residence of George Lowther Thompson, M. P. See a very elegant little History of Sheriff Hutton, by Mr. George Todd, published in 8vo, 1824, which contains two good views of the still venerable castle, and a portrait of the Princess Elizabeth of York.

⁴ Sir William Belasyse, of Morton House, was High Sheriff of the County Palatine, under Bishops Neile, Montaigne, Howson, and Morton, from 1625 to 1640; and in that character received King Charles on his Scottish Progress in 1633, at the head of the Gentry, who all wore his livery, "ash colour, lined with blue bayes." He died Dec. 3, 1641, aged 48. See the pedigree of the family in Surtees's *Durham*, vol. I. p. 203.

"On Tuesday, April 15, Dr. Hodgson¹, Chancellor of the Church, and Chaplain to his Majesty, preached before him at the Manor. After Sermon, the King took coach in the Manor-yard, where the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Sheriffs took their leave of his Majesty," who before his departure, knighted Sir William Charem [Chaytor²], of Yorkshire; Sir Thomas Ellis³, of Grantham in Lincolnshire; and Sir George Reresby, of Yorkshire⁴. "The City was charged with £.117 in fees to the King's Officers⁵."

His Majesty proceeded on that day to Ripon, where he was lodged at the house of Mr. George Dawson⁶, and was presented by the Mayor, in the name of the Corporation, with a gilt bowl, and a pair of Ripon spurs, which cost £.57. The next morning, before leaving the Town, the King knighted Sir John Valvasor⁷, of Yorkshire; and Sir Michael Warton⁸, the High Sheriff of that County.

¹ Phineas Hodson, D. D. incorporated at Oxford in 1602, was collated to the Chancellorship of York in 1611. He published a Sermon preached at the King's Funeral (see under 1625), and in 1628, another, entitled "The King's Request, or David's Desire." In 1632 he was enthroned at York as proxy for Archbishop Neile, lately appointed to that See. He died at or near York in 1646. See Wood's *Fasti Ox.* by Bliss, vol. I. col. 298. His brother Eleazar was an eminent physician; *ibid.* col. 365.

² Charem in Philipot; but, remarks Mr. Surtees, the Historian of Durham, "there is no such name. I suspect the person intended to be Sir William Chaytor, of Croft, of whose family there is a Pedigree in Whitaker's *Richmondshire*, vol. I. p. 241."

³ Admitted of Gray's Inn 1589; Ancient Barrister in 1608; and Bencher in 1617. His eldest son was Sir Thomas Ellis, of Wyham, created a Baronet June 30, 1660; and his second son Sir William was Cromwell's Solicitor General; M. P. for Grantham in 1656; and in 1670 appointed Judge of the Common Pleas.

⁴ Of Thriberg in the West Riding, son of Sir Thomas Reresby (knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1598), and father of Sir John, Governor of Hull, created a Baronet, May 16, 1642. One of his daughters was married, thirdly, to William Viscount Monson. See Wotton's *Baronetage*, 1741, vol. II. p. 290.

⁵ Dr. Drake in his *History of York*, from a MS. in his possession.

⁶ Who had married one of the daughters and coheirs of Sir Stephen Proctor, of Fountains Abbey, (noticed in vol. II. p. 288). See her epitaph in *Gent's Ripon*, p. 125.

⁷ *Gent's History of Ripon*, p. 149. — "The best spurs of England," says Dr. Fuller in his "Worthies" under Yorkshire, "are made at Ripon, a famous Town in the County, whose rowels may be enforced to strike through a shilling, and will sooner bend than bow;"—whence the proverb, "As true steel as Ripon Rowels."

⁸ Of Spaldington in the East Riding; buried at Babwith, Nov. 17, 1641.

⁹ Of Beverley Park. He died Oct. 8, 1655, in his 82d year; see his epitaph in *Gent's Ripon*, p. 94.

His Majesty was next entertained for one night, the 16th of April, at Aske Hall¹, the seat of Talbot Bowes, Esquire, who was a few days after knighted at Durham².

On the 17th of April, the King was received by Bishop James³, at his Palace of Bishop Auckland⁴, whence, on the 18th, the Earl of Buckingham wrote to

¹ Aske, in the parish of Easby, "gave a local name to a long line of descendants from one of the earliest grantees and favourites of the first Earls of Richmond. Aske was indeed one of those gems of which even these mighty Lords had not many to bestow. On the skirts of the high country, and looking down on the fertile vale of Gilling, with swelling lawns in front and a long sweep of rising woods beyond, Richmondshire has not perhaps a single residence which surpasses Aske in point of situation. The present house has a centre and two deep wings, from one of which rises an old border tower, the only remnant of the Askes." Sir Talbot Bowes sold Aske to Lord Wharton; and it has been since twice sold, by Philip Duke of Wharton to Sir Conyers D'Arcy, and by his nephew the last Earl of Holderness to Sir Lawrence Dundas. Thomas Lord Dundas, son of Sir Lawrence, is the present possessor of this noble domain, of which a beautiful view forms a folio plate in Whitaker's Richmondshire.

² He was a son of Sir George Bowes, Knight Marshal North of Trent; was Head Burgess of the Town of Richmond; M. P. for that Borough in 1602, 1620, and 1625, and died s. p. His nephew of the same names is, it is presumed, erroneously styled Knight in a pedigree printed in Hutchinson's Durham, vol. III. p. 252.

³ William, son of John James, of Little Ore, co. Stafford, was educated at Christ Church, Oxford, elected Master of University College in 1572, and was thrice Vice-chancellor; he was appointed Archdeacon of Coventry in 1577; Dean of Christ Church 1584; and Dean of Durham 1596. He was Chaplain to Dudley Earl of Leicester, and, says Hutchinson, had once the honour to entertain Queen Elizabeth at a public Banquet. He was promoted to the See of Durham in 1606, and died in the present year; see p. 279. — He was buried in Durham Cathedral, and represented on a monumental brass now removed. See more fully in Surtees's History of Durham, vol. I. p. lxxxvii.

⁴ The Palace at Bishop Auckland, in which King James was entertained, was almost entirely destroyed by Sir Arthur Hazlerigge, on whom it was bestowed by the Parliament at the Rebellion. The Bishops of Durham had a manor-house at Auckland in very early times; and it was first encastellated by Bishop Bek, who died in 1311. He, says Leland, "made the great Hauille, where be divers pillars of black marble spekeled with white; and the exceeding faire Gret Chambre, with other there. He made also an exceeding goodly Chapelle ther, of ston well squarid, and a College with Dene and Prebends yn it, and a quadrant on the south-west side of the Castelle for Ministers of the College. Ther is a fair Park by the Castelle, having fallow-deer, wild bulles, and kin." Sir Arthur Hazlerigge, having determined to make this a mansion suitable for his own residence, destroyed the Chapel and great part of the building, and when he was turned out at the Restoration, left, says Dugdale, "a most magnificent house." The pious and munificent Bishop Cosin, however, on being restored to his See, declined making use of a Palace so sacrilegiously founded. He pulled down Hazlerigge's work, reared almost from the ground the present noble pile, and restoring the materials to their ancient use, re-built the Chapel. The Palace has since received various additions

the Lord Keeper Bacon, that "his Majesty, though he were a little troubled with a little pain in his back which hindered his hunting, is now, God be thanked, very well, and as merry as he ever was, and we have all held out well ¹."

On the 18th, the King knighted, at Bishop's Auckland ², Sir John Stanhope, of Yorkshire³; and Sir Thomas Merry, Chief Controller; and on the 19th, before his departure, Sir Arthur Grey ⁴, of Northumberland; and Sir Marmaduke Wyvell ⁵, of Yorkshire.

April 19, Mr. Chamberlain, in London, wrote as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King is this day at Durham, and if their weather be agreeable to ours here, as they say it is worse, they have but a comfortless journey; more than the King himself goes on very cheerfully, and is very much fallen in love with the country about Lincoln; so that he means henceforward to spend the best part of the winter there.

"At Worksope he dated a Proclamation that came forth this week, that all Gentlemen of quality should leave this town, and to repair to their own habitations. The greatest part of the prime Scots are here still, and make no great haste homeward, which perhaps may be for want of *moyens* (as they term it) to carry them along, and shew themselves in equipage among their country folks. Indeed for all those sums of money that have been borrowed, we are in great straits, and payments are made very slowly, even where there is great need.

"One Drope, of Magdalen College in Oxford, is called in question for a Sermon at Paul's Cross on Sunday was fortnight, wherein out of Proverbs, among other things, he would prove that Kings might steal as well as meaner men, both

in the pointed style. There is a comprehensive general view in Pennant's *Tour in Scotland*, vol. III. p. 341, and a more modern one in folio is in Surtees's *Durham*, presented to the work by Bishop Barrington.

¹ Bacon's Works, vol. III. p. 517.

² Philipot erroneously says at "Achlam," an error the more likely to mislead, from there being a seat of that name in Yorkshire, though thirty miles from the capital.

³ Also of Melwood Park in the Isle of Axholme.

⁴ Uncle to William Lord Grey of Warke (see p. 298). He was seated at Spindleton in Northumberland. Of his marriage and family see Brydges's *Peerage*, vol. V. p. 684.

⁵ Grandson of Sir Marmaduke Wyvell, of Constable Burton, Baronet, whom he succeeded in his title Jan. 9, 1617-18. He was Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1633, and suffered greatly for his loyalty to King Charles, being twice plundered by Cromwell's troops, and obliged to pay £.1343 composition for his estates. He died in 1648, leaving the Baronetcy to his son Christopher. See Collins's *Baronetage*, 1741, vol. I. p. 236. There is a pedigree of the family in Whitaker's *Richmondshire*, vol. I. p. 322.

by borrowing and not paying, and by laying unreasonable and undue impositions on their subjects¹."

From Auckland, on the 19th of April, the King rode to Durham. The manner of his reception in that City was as follows²:

"Upon Good Fridaie, being the 18th daie of Aprill, Mr. Heaborne, one of his Majestie's Gentlemen Ushers, spoke unto George Walton, Maior, that it was his Majestie's pleasure to come in state to the Cittie; and that it was fitting that the Maior and Aldermen should be readie uppon the next daie following, being Satterdaie, to give their attendance upon his Majestie in some convenient place within the Cittie; and the said Maior to have his foot-cloth horse there ready to attend, which likewise was done upon Elvet Bridge neare the towre thereof, being new rayled with pales of wood for that purpose.

"At which time, his Majestie's said Gentleman Usher standing by the said Maior and Aldermen till his Majestie's coming, when there was a Speech delivered by the said Maior together with presenting of the Maces and Staffe, and at time fitting in the same Speech, a silver Bowle guilt with a cover, was presented by the said Maior to his Majestie:

"Most gracious Sovrayne; what unspeakable joy is this your Highness presents unto us your loving subjects, our tongues are not able to utter, nor our meanes to shew your welcome! Your gracious Majestie, at your happie comeing hither with much peace and plentie, found this Cittie enabled with divers liberties and priviledges; all Sovrayne dignitie and power, spirituall and temporall, being in yourselfe, gave unto us the same againe, and afterwards of your gracious bountie confirmed them under your Great Seale of England. We humblie beseech your Majestie, contynue your favour towards this Cittie, and, in token of our love and loyaltie, craves the acceptance of this myte [here he presented the

¹ Probably Thomas Drope, B. D. Vicar of Cumnor, Berks, and Rector of Ardley, Oxfordshire, whose sons Francis and John both became Fellows of Magdalen College (see their Memoirs in the *Athenæ Oxonienses*, by Bliss, vol. III. col. 941, and *Fasti*, II. 228); and whose daughter Mary was married to Robert brother to Anthony à Wood. Edward Drope, of Magdalen College, (perhaps a brother to Thomas,) "was a good Preacher, and therefore put upon preaching before the King and Parliament at Oxon, in the time of the Rebellion, and upon that account had the degree of D. D. conferred on him in 1661;" but as he died in 1683, aged 84, he was at the present date scarcely 18, and therefore not likely to be the person mentioned by Mr. Chamberlain. See *Fasti*, II. 256.

² Communicated by Robert Surtees, Esq. the elegant Historian of Durham, from the MSS. collected by Mr. Mickleton, for a History of that County.

Bowle], and we shall be ready to the uttermost expence of our dearest bloud to defend you and your Royall Progeny here on earth, or with our prayers to God to blesse you and all yours in all eternitie.

“After the Speech, the Maior was called by the said Gentleman Usher to ride before his Majestie; immediately upon which commandement made, there was at the same place, about forty yards distance, certeyn verses spoken by an Apprentice of this Cittie to his Majestie :

“Durham’s old Cittie thus salutes our Kinge
 With entertainments she doth homelie bring,
 And cannot smyle upon his Majestie
 With shewe of greatness; but humilitie
 Makes her express herselfe in modest guise
 Dejected to this North, bare to your eyes;
 For the great Prelate, which of late adored
 Her dignities, and for which we implore
 Your Highnesse’ aide to have continuance,
 And so confirmed by your dread guidance.
 Yet what our Royall James did grant herein,
 William our Byshop hath repugnant been,
 Small taske to sway down smallness, where man’s mighte
 Hath greater force than equitie or righte;
 But these are onely in your breast included,
 Your subjects knew them not, but are secluded
 From your most gracious grant; therefore we pray
 That the faire sunshine of your brightest day
 Would smyle upon this Cittie with clear beames,
 T’ exhale the tempest of insueing streames.
 Suffer not, great Prince, our ancient State
 By one forced will to be depopulate!
 ’Tis one seeks our undoeing, but to you
 Ten thousand harts shall pray and knees shall bow;
 And this dull cell of earth wherein we live,
 Unto your name immortall praise shall give.
 Confirme our grant, good King, Durham’s old Citty
 Would be more powerfull so it had James’s pittie.”

“After which ended, the Maior was placed in rank next the Sword, and, bearing the City Mace, rode before the King to the Cathedral Church.

“Note, that no ale was brewed for the King at Durham Castle till the fifth of April¹, and on Saturday the nineteenth the King came to the Castle.”

¹ “Was it on this account,” asks Mr. Surtees, “*pro quodam neglectu*, that the King scolded

On the 20th of April, it being Easter Sunday, Bishop Andrews, who was accompanying the King on the Progress¹, delivered before him in Durham Cathedral, a Sermon on Matth. xii. 39, 40².

The next day "the King travelled from the Castle to Woodham-moor, to a Horse-race³, which was run by the horses of William Salvin and Master Madocks⁴, for a gold purse, which was intended to have been on the 8th of April, but on account of the King's coming, was put off till the 21st, which Match the King saw⁵."

Before leaving Durham, on the 23d of April, the King knighted Sir George Tonge, Sir William Blakiston⁶, Sir Talbot Bowes⁷, Sir Ralph Conyers⁸, Sir Matthew Forster, Sir John Calverley⁹, and Sir William Wray¹⁰, all of the

Bishop James to death?" This jocular accusation alludes to the following passage in Mickleton's MSS. "N. B. quod pro quodam neglectu vel pro aliâ causâ dictus Rex secretò et acriter dictum Episc. objurgavit, qui in tanto turbatus fuit quòd paullulo tempore postea, sc. die Lune 12 Maii prox. maximè cruciatus cum lapide et stranguriâ obiit apud Aukland predictum." The Historian in another place with great reason conjectures that "the cause of this Royal objurgation was probably Bishop James's contest with the Citizens of Durham, relative to their Borough Privileges and to Parliamentary Representation. Bishop James was a *little* inclined to hoard his money and save an estate for his family, but bating this, as kindly and quiet a Bishop as ever lived, hurting nobody, thwarting nobody, jostling nobody off the King's high road, but quietly ambling along on his Episcopal pad, with *rather shabby lack-lustre* purple housings." History of Durham, vol. II. p. 41.

¹ See before at Burley-on-the-Hill and Lincoln, and hereafter at Holyrood House.

² Printed in Bishop Andrews's "XCVI Sermons," the twelfth on the Resurrection.

³ Woodham-moor appears to have been the usual place for the County Races in the reign of James. A recognizance respecting them, of the date of 1613, is printed in Surtees, vol. III. p. 332. It stipulates for the yearly provision of £50, for "a peece of gold and silver plate in the forme of a bowle or cupp, or such like, to be ridden for at Woodham Stowpes yearely, upon the Tuesday next before Palm Sunday." The first races on the present Course at Durham were in the reign of Charles II.

⁴ Rowland Madokes, of Skirmingham. Surtees.

⁵ Mickleton's MSS. quoted in Surtees, *ubi supra*.

⁶ Of Gibside. He died in 1641, and his son Ralph was created a Baronet in the following year. The title became extinct with his son Francis the third Baronet in 1713, whose sole heiress was married to Sir William Bowes, great-nephew of the next Knight. See the Blakiston pedigree in Surtees's Durham, vol. II. p. 255.

⁷ See p. 275.

⁸ Of Layton, a younger branch of the House of Sockburne. He was grandson of Cuthbert Conyers, High Sheriff of the Bishoprick, and father of Cuthbert, slain in the service of Charles I. See his pedigree in Surtees, vol. III. p. 37.

⁹ Of Littleburne.

¹⁰ Of Beamish, nephew of Sir Christopher Wray, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, and cousin of Sir William Wray, Baronet (of whom in vol. II. p. 491). See the pedigree in Surtees, vol. II. 226.

Bishoprick; and Sir William Kennet, of Newcastle¹, whither his Majesty next proceeded. The Ringers at Chester-le-street on his Majesty passing through or near that Town, welcomed him with a merry peal².

"On the 23d of April, King James came to Newcastle-upon-Tyne. He was met upon the Sand Hill by the Mayor [Lionel Maddison³], Aldermen, and Sheriff [William Bonner], and after an Oration made by the Town Clerk, was presented by the Mayor in the name of the whole Corporation, with a great standing Bowl, to the value of an hundred Jacobuses, and an hundred marks in gold; the Mayor carrying the Sword before him, accompanied by his Brethren on their foot-cloths⁴."

The Royal lodgings at Newcastle were in the mansion of Sir George Selby⁵, whence, on the day of the King's arrival, the Earl of Buckingham wrote to the

¹ It is probable that he was knighted at Newcastle, but did not reside there. Sir William Kennet, of Sellenge, Kent, a servant of the Queen, had purchased an estate at Coxhoe in the County Palatine; he died in 1630. See his pedigree in Surtees, vol. I. p. 72. "

² "April 26. Paid to the Ringers for his Majestie's comeinge by Chester, the 23d of April instant 3s. 4d.—1618. Pd. to John Rutter, for one of the King's Majestie's carriages from Newcastle to Bushop Awkland, 20s." Churchwardens' Accompts.

³ Who having been thrice Mayor, died December 6, 1624, at the good old age of 94. It is remarkable that his grandson, of the same names, was Mayor when King Charles made his Scottish Progress in 1633; when he entertained his Majesty at dinner, and was knighted June 4.

⁴ Brand's History of Newcastle, from an account remaining in the archives of the Corporation.

⁵ Whom Mr. Brand erroneously supposed to have entertained the King at Newcastle in 1603, and to have been probably knighted on that occasion (see vol. I. pp. 70, 210).—Sir George Selby, of a family which for three previous generations had furnished Newcastle with some of its principal merchants, and derived its descent from the Selbys of Selby in Yorkshire, was Sheriff of Newcastle in 1594; four times Mayor, in 1600, 1606, 1611, and 1622; M. P. for the Town in 1601 and 1603; and Sheriff of Northumberland in 1609. He was knighted at Whitehall, with the majority of the rich land-owners, July 23, 1603; and died March 30, 1625, aged 68. He was always distinguished by his splendid hospitality, and acquired such credit by his present noble entertainment of the King, that he was afterwards generally known by the title of "THE KING'S HOST." Nor was this remarkable event in his history forgotten in his epitaph in St. Nicholas' Church, in which he was described as "*serenissimi Regis Jacobi hospitio et servitio nobilitatus. Ob lautum certè et affluentem perpetuè apparatus, et liberissimæ mensæ communicationem meritò passim celebratissimus;*" and again, "*per totum vitæ cursum lautissimâ usus fortunâ.*" His splendid monument, which he describes in his will as "*alredie erected,*" bore recumbent effigies of himself and wife, and kneeling figures of his six daughters and coheirresses. Though he provided in his will for its repair, it was permitted to go to decay, (see the engraving in Brand's Newcastle,) and was wholly removed in

Lord Keeper Bacon, "that his Majesty, God be thanked, is in very good health, and so well pleased with his Journey, that I never saw him better, nor merrier¹."

On the first of May the King paid a visit to Heaton Hall², in the parish of All Saints, Newcastle, the seat of Henry Babbington, Esquire, whom he then knighted³.

On the same day Simon Clarke⁴, of Salford in Warwickshire, was created a Baronet, being the 98th so honoured.

On Sunday the 4th of May, his Majesty, with all his Nobles, dined with the Mayor of Newcastle, when it pleased him to be served by the Mayor and Aldermen⁵."

1777, a fate no worse than it merited, since Sir George himself destroyed for its erection a still more illustrious memorial, the cenotaph of Henry Percy, fourth Earl of Northumberland. — From an Inventory of this wealthy Knight Mr. Surtees has extracted the following exact account of the furniture of his Royal Guest's apartment: "*In the King's Chambre*: three bedsteads with their accompaniments; a great chaire; one large quission [cushion] covered with taffaty; one ciprusse-cabinet; one trunkè gilded; one cabinett of chiney work with a case; two water-boxes; one seeinge-glasse; and an iron chimney; total £.29. 2s." A pedigree of the Selbys is printed in Surtees's History, vol. II. p. 275.—King James conferred the honour of knighthood on five of the race: Sir William, of Biddleston, at Berwick, April 6, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 63); Sir William, of Kent, at Greenwich, June 10, 1603 (p. 160); Sir George (the subject of the preceding notices); Sir John, of Twisel, at Greenwich, May 4, 1605 (see vol. I. p. 510, where for "Northamptonshire" read Northumberland); and Sir William, of Winlaton, co. Durham, brother to Sir George, at Royston, Nov. 26, 1613 (see vol. II. p. 705, where also for "Northamptonshire" read Northumberland;—Sir William being sometime described of Bolam and Shortflatt Tower in the latter County). Surtees, *ubi supra*.

¹ Bacon's Works, vol. III. p. 518.

² Heaton Hall is one of the many mansions which bear the credit of having been retreats of King John; and here there was a Chapel at which Edward the First, December 7, 1299, attended to hear a Bishop of Boys perform the vespers of St. Nicholas. (Wardrobe Account, published by Soc. Ant.) The edifice which received King James was probably that which Bourne describes as fortified on the north, but in ruins, and commonly denominated King John's Palace. The present mansion, delightfully situated upon the steep and woody banks of Ousebourn, was built in 1713, and is the seat of Sir Matthew White Ridley, Bart. M. P. for Newcastle.

³ A descendant of this family in a low situation, recovered a share of Heaton Colliery in 1796.

⁴ Of an ancient family, derived from Woodchurch in Kent, and originally thence denominated, but which took the name of Clarke from marrying the heiress of that family, temp. Hen. III. Sir Simon was Sheriff of Warwickshire in 1631, and compounded for his estate to the Parliament at £.800. He is memorable as the friend of Sir William Dugdale, and "great encourager of him in his writing the Antiquities of Warwickshire; and on the importunity of this Sir Simon and his lady he came to London, accompanying them in their journey in Easter Term 1638; who afterwards

On the same day, either at or before the Banquet, he conferred knighthood on Sir Peter Ridell¹, and Sir John Delaval², of Northumberland.

Here we shall leave the well-pleased Monarch in the enjoyment of his favourite pleasures, the chace and banquet,—whilst a few pages are employed in describing an Entertainment given to the Queen at Deptford, by the young Ladies of what was probably one of the principal Schools of the period:

introduced him to Sir Henry Spelman."—This Baronetcy is now enjoyed by Sir Simon-Houghton Clarke, of Shirland, Notts, the ninth Baronet.

¹ Son of Mr. William Ridell, of Newcastle, Merchant Adventurer, and half brother of Sir Thomas, mentioned in p. 165. Sir Peter was Sheriff of Newcastle 1604; Mayor 1619 and 1635; and M. P. for the town in 1623, 1626, 1628, and 1640. He died in April of the latter year. See the pedigree of the family in Surtees's Durham, vol. II. p. 128.

² Second son of Sir Robert Delaval, of Seton Delaval, knighted at Newcastle April 13, 1608 (see vol. I. p. 71), and Sheriff of Northumberland in 1574 and 1582; and brother of Sir Ralph, knighted at Whitehall, Feb. 1, 1607-8 (and duly noticed in vol. II. p. 175, though his name is in the text erroneously printed James). Sir John was seated at Dishington, and was Sheriff of Northumberland in 1610 and 1624. His grandson, on the failure of the elder branch, succeeded to the estate at Seton Delaval; whose son John-Hussey was created a Baronet in 1761, an Irish Baron in 1783, and advanced to the English Peerage by the title of Lord Delaval, of Seton Delaval, in 1786; but his titles became extinct with him in 1808, as had a Baronetcy conferred in 1660 on the elder branch of the family.



CUPID'S BANISHMENT,
A MASQUE PRESENTED TO HER MAJESTY¹,

BY YOUNGE GENTLEWOMEN OF THE LADIES' HALL,

IN DEPTFORD AT GREENNWICH,

THE 4TH OF MAY 1617.

By ROBERT WHITE.

To the honorable and right worthy Lady, LUCY Countesse of BEDFORDE².

Madame; In regarde of the honorable furtherance and noble encouragement your Ladyship gave us in presentinge our Maske to hir Majesty, I am bound (yf our modull of labor may attayne to that happynes of deserte,) to comitt this Shew to your worthy protection, deeming none more worthy then your Honor to bee Patronesse thereof; for worth is best discerned by the worthy; base and dejected mindes are destitute of that true influence which should [give] vigor to virtue. It is not from affected singularity or from any conceite of worth in my labors, that they durst aspire soe hye, but a confident opinion of your favorable acceptation, and an absolute resolution of your milde and gracious censure. I confesse a lower Patronage would have served a hyer worke, but duty herein onely excuses mee from presumption. I thought it injustice to devote the fruits which your Honor first sowed to any but yourselfe. Then, from your honorable acceptance, lett this draw a perpetuall priviledge, that it may still flourish in the fayre Sumer of your gentle favor, and triumph in despight of Envie's raging Winter; butt lett the envious spitt their veneme, and tipp their tounques with gall, it matters not!

¹ Now first printed, by the kind permission of Mr. William Upcott, of the London Institution, from the original MS. in his possession, purchased from the Library of the learned and amiable John Evelyn, of Wotton, whose writing is on the outside cover, and also on the page opposite the title: "twelve yeare old, Richard Browne, 1617, acted herein before Queen Anne." Evelyn married Mary, sole daughter and heir of Sir Richard Browne, and succeeded him in Sayes-court, the manor-house of the parish of St. Nicholas, Deptford. N.

² The well-known Patroness of every Poet of the day. She was generally attendant on the Queen (see vol. I. p. 174), and performed with her Majesty in Ben Jonson's Masques of Blackness, of Beauty, and of Queens (vide *ibid.* p. 488; vol. II. pp. 174, 245). N.

This is my comforte; — Envie barketh onely at the starrs, and Spight spurnes at that shee cannot reach. I heare some curious Criticke allready, whose hungry eares feede still on other men's provision, and perchance his teeth on other mens' tables, hath spied an error; and, as his perspective informes him, a grosse one too. Hee abruptly demands what should Hymen have to doe where Diana is? or why there should bee a Marriage solemnised by the Queene of Chastity? Yf his refined witt would bee confined with reason, I can awnswear him, but I thinke hardly satisfie him. The ground of our plott is choosinge of a Kinge and Queene by Fortune's doome; which is a sporte our litle Ladies use on Candlemasse night; againe, it was no marriage, but a forme of unitinge chaste harts, to shew a defiance to Cupid and his contracts, and that there could bee a chast combination without his powers. Yf this will not satisfie, I referre him to the Speeches. And thus, Madame, holding you no longer with preambles and superfluous apologies, especially to them that rightly understand mee, I rest,

Your Honour's humbly devoted, ROBERT WHITE.

A NOTE OF ALL THE MASKERS' NAMES.

MRIS. ANN WATKINS acted Fortune.

MRIS. ANN CHALENOR¹.

MRIS. ELIZABETH MADISON².

MRIS. ANN LIBB.

MRIS. ELIZABETH CRAMFIELD.

MRIS. ALICE WATKINS.

MRIS. ELIZABETH BOLTON.

MRIS. FRANCES GRAUNT.

MRIS. MARY CHAMBRE.

MRIS. KATHERINE GODSCHALK.

MRIS. CLASIE PAGE.

MRIS. KATHERINE PARKINSON.

MRIS. LUCIE MANE.

MRIS. MARY DRAPER.

MRIS. ANN SANDELAND³.

¹ Very probably Anne, daughter of Sir Thomas Chaloner, Chamberlain to Prince Henry, which Anne is mentioned as one of Sir Thomas's children in his epitaph at Chiswick. See Lysons's *Envi-rons*, vol. II. p. 199. N.

² Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Maddison, Esq. was the wife of William Davies, Mercer, who died in 1678, and has a monument in Leyton Church, Essex. N.

³ Doubtless a daughter of Sir James Sandilands, noticed in vol. I. p. 604, and this Volume, p. 78, and perhaps the child whose Christening is mentioned in the former page, to whom the Queen and Prince appear to have been sponsors. That two of the young performers in the Masque were God-daughters of her Majesty, is expressly stated in it (p. 295), and suitable notice was taken of the circumstance. Richard, son of Sir James, was baptized at St. Nicholas, Deptford, July 20, 1615 (Lysons, vol. IV. p. 376); and he was himself buried at Greenwich, June 7, 1618 (*ibid.* p. 473). N.

THE WOOD NIMPHS.

MRIS. JACAMOTE BRUSSELLS.

MRIS. MARY CRAMFIELD.

MRIS. MARY ALS.

MRIS. ELIZABETH JEFFS.

MRIS. ANN TINDALL.

MRIS. SUSAN HARVEY.

MRIS. OUNGEOLO.

MRIS. LEA WADSON.

MR. HENRY FENNOR acted the Kinge.

MR. RICH. BROWNE acted Diana².

MRIS. DEBORA DRAPER the Queene.

MR. CHARLES COLEMAN acted Hymen.

MR. R. W.¹ acted Ocasion.

GEORGE LIPPETT Bacchus.

JOHN BURRESAN acted Cupid.

PAULE HARBART acted Mercury.

OCASION, *in a rich garment, embroderd with silver, a crimson mantle and a shorte cloake of rich tinsie ; with a white wand, to signifie hir hast ; with a longe locke before and bald behind, alluding to the difficulty of recalling hir yf shee bee once past ; hir Speech to the Queene :*

OCASION. Gracious and great Soveraignesse,
 Yf confidence and Royall resolution
 Of female worth, and free acceptance
 Of noble favor, had not arm'd my breast
 With that stronge temper of resisting prooffe
 Against Envie's hissing adders,
 Tyme's hand-mayd had beene dumbe,
 Despayre and feare had overcome our weake designes ;
 But, bright Spheare of Greatnes, thy faire beames,
 Which shoote with splendor from thy Majesty,
 Revive our faintinge Muse with sweete reflection,
 And cheare our drooping spiritts with unacquainted light ;
 Thy presence frees each thinge that lives in doubt,
 No harmeles thought now feares the banefull stinge
 Of fell detraction ; nor here no carpinge God
 Bereaves True Meaninge of her worth ;

¹ Robert White, the Author of the Masque. N.

² Richard Browne was son of Christopher Browne, Esq. of Deptford, and grandson of Richard Browne, who died Clerk of the Green Cloth in 1604. He was now only twelve years old, but became very eminent as an Ambassador to foreign Courts and as a faithful attendant on Charles the Second, by whom he was created a Baronet by patent dated St. Germaine's in France, Sept. 1, 1649. He died at a good old age, Feb. 12, 1681, and was buried at Deptford. His only daughter, as before noticed, was married to the celebrated John Evelyn. See many particulars of him in Wood's Fasti, (by Bliss,) vol. I. p. 439. N.

Within the circle of this sacred spheare
 Occasion doth repose,
 And to this bright audience shewes
 Shee was addrest with full intention
 Longe before this to offer up Time's sacrifice,
 Fleting houres to this faire company.
 But worthier objects then they could produce
 Diverted theire slight purposes,
 And yet Ocasion cannot shake them off;
 Againe shee is summon'd by that lovely crew
 Of Ladies' Hall, an academy
 Where Modesty doth onely sway as Governesse.
 These pretty Nymphs, devoted to your Excellence,
 Present a sport which they yearely celebrate
 On Candlemas-night, with due solemnity
 And with greate applause.
 They have a Kinge and a Queene of Fortune's choice;
 These bee the revells they intend,
 Which yf your Grace will deigne to see the ende,
 Occasion thinkes hirselve most fortunate.

*OCCASION retiringe from the Presence, CUPID meetes
 hir and snatches hir by the locke.*

CUPID. Come, come, Occasion, cease thy old complaints,
 Referre thy wrongs unto an equall judge,
 Summon younge spirritts to a jubile,
 Invite fresch youth to some amorous sceane,
 Banish base dullnes, for this night
 Revells must bee the center of delight;
 With Masks, and musicke, and sweet harmony,
 Each Courte doth eccho forth her melody,
 With Hymenæll joyes and love devine.
 Now Kinges and Queenes doe crowne the houres of time,
 And shall wee then bee sylent where such excellence
 Of worth and bewty will give audience,
 And where such a chorus
 Of lovely Nymphs as these shall stand before us.

OCCASION. Peace, foolish Boy, thy blind intrusion
 Will not be here admitted; this sacred place
 Is only dedicated to chast Diana and hir lovely Nymphs;
 No wanton subject or immodest straine
 Can enter in, for here they doe proclame
 Chastity theire Queene, and to hir sacrifice

Pure thoughts with lust-abhorringe eyes.
 This is no tyme nor place for Cupid's wiles,
 Thy plotts and subtle shifts are all delusions
 To mocke mortality, and idle fictions
 Forg'd by some Poet's fruiteles brayne.
 Away, lett goe, thou dost deprave my houres
 With lust, and rape, and fowle incestuous acts
 Under pretence of love; begone! OCCASION shakes him off.
 I'le lende thee not a minuite to produce
 Thy wanton subjects and lacivious Muse;
 See, thou hast incenst the Goddesse,
 And Fortune with lowringe bewty frownes.

DIANA, *in her arbor, attired all in white to shew the purity of Chastity, richly deckt with jewells, hir kirtle imbrodered with gold, hir mantle of silver tinsie, a very rich girdle aboute call'd the Zone of Chastity, to shew hir defiance to CUPID, and to signify theire chast meetinge, with a silver wand in her hand, hir arbor also adorn'd with flowers, encompassed round with hir Nymphs, like the Moone amonge the lesser Starrs, shee shewes herselfe whilst the Mount opens, the lowde musicke playes; shee speakes to CUPID:*

DIANA. Cupid, know thy daringe presence doth offend us,
 And thy presumption hath incur'd our anger;
 We are displeas'd, and doe much distast
 Thy rash accesse without our high comand.
 Blind Archer, know wee are not subject to thy tyranny,
 Thy darts and chaines are of noe power with us,
 Nor are wee in the compasse of thy bow.
 We are free from thy bewitching philters,
 Thy charmes, and thy alluringe baytes;
 Our voves are heare entire,
 And are not subject to thy lustfull fire.

CUPID. What are wee Goddes, and beare no greater sway?
 Is Cupid dead and Venus quite forgott?
 Are all my dartes growne dull?
 My bow so weake that none will stand in awe,
 But contradict what wee comand?
 Why, dull Tyme, and you, Lady Chastity,
 You know full well that Cupid's conquests
 Ringe round about the world, and will do still
 As long as there are thinges call'd women.

OCCASION. Boye, leave your waggish wit;
 Putt up your arrowes in your quiver and bee gone.

Fortune is the subject of our Sceane,
And chast Diana the Mistresse of the place,
To which fond fancy-may not have accesse.

CUPID. And will all these Ladies banish Cupid thus?
Is there never a tender hart that will relent?
To thus disgrace me doe you all consent?

DIANA. Cease, fond idoll, thy presence heare is tedious;
Steale to some amorous court, and tutor
Wanton Ladies how to woo [woo],
And ketch their servants with a nimble glance,
Invent some anticke fashion how to please
His mistris' eye with vowes and endles protestations,
Make him sweare hee loves hir dearly,
Though indeede affecteth nothing lesse;
These are your practises and cheife exploits;
Worthy atchievements for a God!
Hence, fond Boy,—
Thy very breath corrupts a Virgin's vow.

CUPID. By all the powers that Cupid can comand,
I'll vexe you women yf I ketch you
In my pittfall.

DIANA. Occasion, post away, and shake this copesmate¹ off;
Allot him not a minute space to breath here longer.

OCCASION hasteth away and CUPID after him.

CUPID. Occasion, sweete Occasion, stay,
Grant me but a paire of minutes
To rayle with bitter exclamations
Against these milke-sopp Ladies.

DIANA. Mercury, with wings of execution,
Finish our comand,
Take thy caduseus in thy hand,
And sumon Hymen to our festivall,
But not his fires, despatch.

MERCURY. With swiftest expedicion I am gone.

Two of DIANA's Nymphes from the Mounte singe call for HYMEN; HYMEN enters singinge, OCCASION and MERCURY before him, the KINGE and QUEENE after him, his followers attendinge him, with lutes and theorbos and excellent voices, the musicions all in greene taffaty robes.

¹ A companion; thus Shakspeare in his Rape of Lucrece: "Mishapen Time, copesmate of ugly Night." See Todd's Johnson and Nares's Glossary. N.

THE SONG.

*Hymen, Hymen, sacred Hymen, that our harts unite,
Come and crowne our sports with sweete delight ;
Banish Cupid, that proud Boy,
That filles our harts with deepe annoy ;
Lett us chase him forth our gentle harts,
His deadly bow, and cruell darts.*

HYMEN. *No spightfull God shall here remaine
To cross our sports and breed our paine.*

The Song beinge ended, DIANA speaks :

DIANA. Wee thanke you all with wellcome to our Court,
Our free acceptance shall declare our hart's affection,
And our joy shall testify your presence acceptable.
See, Fortune congratulates your coming,
And smiles with cheerfull countenance at your approach.

FORTUNE, *at the bottom of the Mount, in a rich mantle wrought with changeable
coulours to expresse hir incertainty, with a vaile before hir face to shew hir
blindnes and inæquality in disposinge of hir guifts, hir wheele in hir hand
to signify hir momentary favor :*

FORTUNE. Wee are engaged to Tyme for this occasion
That meetes our wishes with such good successe.
For this great curtesie I will create
Some unexpected joy to crowne thy howers ;
Thy minutes I'll soe turne uppon this wheele of mine,
That men hereafter shall call thee happy Tyme.
Hymen, Mercury, how wellcome you are hither,
Wee can no more expresse then wee already have.

HYMEN. Chast and glorious Goddesses,
With chastest resolution wee are come
To further your intentions, clad all in purity,
To shew the blessed chaine of amity.

*Enter BACCHUS, in a chariott hunge all with vine-leaves and grapes draune by a
goate, ridinge on a barrell, with a truncheon in one hand and a bole of wine
in the other ; two Boyes, Bacchanalians, with wreaths of ivy, red fiery faces
and swell'd cheekes, with torches in one hand and boles of wine in another ;
CUPID with him disarmed by Jupiter. BACCHUS comes to reconcile the God-
desse CINTHIA and the GOD OF LOVE, and to make a league with the House
of Jove.*

OCCASION. What have wee here more disturbers yet ?

BACCHUS. Come, Boy, wee'll make you all friends with a boile of nectar crown'd to the brim.

CUPID. By Venus' apron-strings, Bacchus, methinkes I am nobody now I am disarm'd; I have a spight to these squeamish Ladies yet for disgracing mee; would I had my arrowes here!

BACCHUS. Come, you'll never leave your wrangling; I thinke on my conscience some lawier was thy father, and some scoldinge butter-wife thy mother; thou would'st sett all the world together by the eare, yf thou hadst thy will. Come, Boy, subinit your selfe.

CUPID. Bacchus, I am too stout to yeeld; bee thou my Orator, good Lyeus, and I'll walke by like a sheep-biter. Oh, here is fine sport for these scornfull Ladies, they will laugh me out of my skinn.

BACCHUS. Come, take courage Boy, and I'll repayre unto the throne;—
From the spacious Court of great commanding Jove,
Wee here arrive, the anger to appease
Of these incenced Goddesses against this little Boy.

CUPID. You are too familiar Bacchus.

BACCHUS. Come, you are without your weapons now, Boy,
My Father Jupiter, who may comand,
Intreats a league amongst his progeny.
A truce, a truce, my little rover,
You know you are confined to use no treachery
Against Cinthia and her trayne;
Come, lett's conclude with love,
And drinke carowes to the House of Jove.

DIANA. Well, on these conditions wee admitt you both,
So you continue within the bounds of modesty,
And not disturbe our sports with rude disorder.

BACCHUS. Wee do obey,
Yet graunt, chaste Cinthia, that Bacchus may,
In a Castalean boile full fraught with wine,
Squees'd in abundance from the swelling vine,
Carouse a health unto these Ladies round.

DIANA. Wee are content. Now, Fortune, it remaynes
That you do perfitt what's by us begunn;
Descend, blind Goddess, and with some worthy favour,
Drawne from the abundance of thy large lottery,
Grace the happy league of this thy choice.

FORTUNE and HYMEN to the Coronation, the KINGE and QUEENE seated at the foote of the Mount, under FORTUNE, the KINGE on hir right-hand and the QUEENE on hir left, the QUEENE attir'd all in silver tinsie, showing that shee was one of DIANA's traine, and that their revells did wholly tend to chastity, beeing a sporte the Goddesses and hir Nymphs did use in bowers and retir'd places wthout any prejudice to virginity or scandall to any entire vow.

OCCASION. Perpetuall joy and true delight
Crowne the howre with sweete content.

CUPID in a white loose garment girt close to him, with a garlande of white and red roses, disarm'd of his bow and darts, falls into a passion because hee was excluded from their revells; hee stamps and stormes:

CUPID. What a marriage, and Cupid no actor in it?
What humane power can brooke the shame?
Shall wee that bee immortall then containe
And suffer this disgrace?
Wee that made Apollo rage with love,
Mars madd with dotinge fancy, and great Jove
A captive with the conquering dart of love,
Are wee now confin'd, disarm'd, and scorn'd
With vilest imputations? Yee coy dames,
I'll make you rave like belldames, teare your hayre,
And curse your coyness, your squamish affected nicenes
Shall feele the fury of my vengeance;
I'll torment you all!

The Goddesses, being moved with his insolency, calleth to her Wood-nymphs to assist hir:

DIANA. Insolence, thou dost profane our presence;
Thou shalt find and see
Lust can never conquer Chastity;
Come, all yee that love chaste Vesta,
And chase this Bedlame forth.

Enter the Driades, or eight Wood-nymphs rush out of a grove adjoyninge to the Mount, four of one side and four of another, with darts in their hands to shew they had a dart [that] could conquer CUPID, attired all in greene garments, the upper part close to their bodies, the lower full and loose with silver and carnation lace from the brest to the foote, their armes halfe naked with braceletts of berries about them, [on] their heads garlands with greate variety of flowers, their hayre dissheveled hanginge careles aboute their shoulders bare, with puffs of tiffany round aboute, greene pumps and gloves. After the musick play'd over the first strayne, they fall into their daunce, they environ CUPID in a figure, and putt Acteon's head uppon him; they

fall off threatninge him with their darts, when hee offers to resist; after many pretty figures they chase him forth into the woods by violence, and banish him that presence.

THE NYMPH'S SONG, IN JOY CUPID IS GONE.

*Harke, harke, how Philomell,
Whose notes no ayre can paralell;
Marke, marke hir melody,
Shee descants still on chastity;
The diapason of hir song is 'Cupid's gone!'
Hee is gone, hee is gone, is quite exil'd,
Venus' bratt, peevish ape, fancie's child.
Lett him goe, with his quiver and his bow,
Lett him know, wee are not subject to him, though
Hee can command, yet wee are free
From Cupid and his tyranny.*

After this, OCCASION speakes to BACCHUS, awakens him with his wand, and enioynes him to commit no disorder :

OCCASION. Bacchus, looke to it, see you do containe,
Least you bee branded with Acteon's shame.
Come, leave your rovinge, this joviall vaine [vein]
Delights not Ladies, methinkes your vine
Should yeeld some quicke invention
To grace these Ladies' revells; come, bee not dull,
Nor brayne-sicke now, rouse upp thy spirites.

BACCHUS. By Jove, Occasion, I am horrible sleepey; I could sleepe now with Endimion, and snore with Epiminedes; but at thy intreaty I will awake and show thee some of my delightfull sports. Come, bullies, my brave Bacchanalians, make the welkin rore with some reeling vayne.

Enter a grand Bacchus, skipinge in with a belly as bigg as a kinderkin, in a flesh-coulor'd buckram, with a wreath of vine-leaves aboute his head, a red swolne face full of pimples, with a base lute in his hand, singing and describing the Ante-maske, all of BACCHUS' children. He describes them particularly as they come forth :

THE SONG.

*Bacchus, at thy call,
They here come marchinge roundly,
That will not flinch at all,
But take their liquor soundly;*

*They'll do their parts, they'll drinke whole quarts,
 A pinte with them is but a swallow;
 They'll nere give ore till the welkin rore,
 The house runn round, and the sky looke yellow.*

Enter four Bacchanalians.

*Bacchus' children come,
 And at theire backs they've barrells,
 With bellies like a tunn,
 Mull'd sacke shall end all quarrells.*

The drunke Fencer.

*Next Swash appeares, who stormes and sweares,
 If that they bring not better wine,
 The potts he'll maule against the wall,
 He'll beate my host and breake his signe.*

The Ape Drunkard.

*Another drunkard skipps,
 Whose head is like a feather,
 He'll show as many trickes
 As your ape [and] baboone together.*

The drunke Fidler.

*The Fidler's croud¹ now squeakes aloud,
 His fidlinge stringes begin to trole;
 Hee loves a wake and a wedding-cake,
 A bride-house² and a brave may-pole.*

The drunke Tinker.

*Next the roringe Tinker,
 As furious as a dragon;
 He sweares he'll be no flincher,
 His carowse is but a flagon;
 Hee loves his punke, but when hee's drunke,
 His muddy braynes well mull'd with liquor,
 Hee then will rore and call hir whore,
 And out of doores hee sweares hee'll kicke hir*

The Weeping drunk.

*Armed all with claret
 The Weeping Drunkard next,
 Hee's very sorry for it,
 His soule is sore perplex.*

¹ A crowd, from which Butler named the fiddler Crowdero in his *Hudibras*, was an old name for a fiddle from the Welsh *crwth*. N.

² A wedding feast. N.

*These are the crew of drunkards trew,
That do belong to Bacchus' Court ;
Soon see you shall their humors all,
Yf you marke awhile their drunken sporte.*

*Bacchus, at thy call,
They here come marching roundly,
That will not flinch at all,
But take their liquor soundly ;
They'll do their parts, they'll drinke whole quarts,
A pint with them is but a swallow ;
They'll nere give ore till the welkin rore,
The house runn round, and the sky looke yellow¹.*

The Song beeing ended, the Bacchanalians begin to daunce ; four of them in flesh-coulor'd buckram, wreaths of ivy in their heads, and girdles with twists of ivy, barrells at their backs, with red fiery faces, longe hayre, great bellies, and red pumps ; the Fencer, with a sword and dagger, great slopps garded² with yellow and blew cotton, a roring band and a broad-brim'd hat, with a low crowne, butten'd up in the fashion ; the Ape drunkard, in red and white cotten, his breeches one side a slopp, the other side a trunke, with stockings of the same, his short cloake reaching halfe way to his backe, his hatt garded with yellow and white cotten ; the Fidler, with a blew coate with hanging sleeves, on the left sleeve a ratt for his cullisan³, playing on a fidle, with a great nosegay in his hatt ; the Tinker, in a leather pelt⁴, with a hammer and an old kettle, keeping time with the musicke, his face all besmear'd, his trull with a pare of leather bodies, his neather coate of yellow cotten, a blacke hatt with five wax-lights in it, a posie pin'd to his breast ; the Weeping drunkard, in blew and yellow cotten, his breeches close, dauncinge a melancholy measure and bemoaning his faults ; they shew the severall humers of drunkards, and many pretty figures befitting that vayne. The Daunce beeing ended, DIANA speakes :

DIANA. *So now let these sacred sisters with their chast scene begin ;
Advance this howre with some sweete passage,
And with some whisperinge measure,
Charme harts and eyes with never-ending pleasure.*

Twelve Nymphs descend from the Mount, attir'd all in white tinsie, to shew their

¹ These last eight lines are in the MS. accompanied with musical notes. N.

² On this word see vol. II. p. 464. N.

³ A badge or cognizance, like those still worn by firemen. See Nares's Glossary. N.

⁴ A skin or hide, from the Latin *pellis*. N.

defiance to CUPID, and to signify their chaste meeting, with rich mantles, six of watchet, the other six of crimson; their hayre dishevel'd, their breasts naked, with rich jewels and pearles, necklaces on their heads, coronetts of artificiall flowers, with a puff of tinsie risinge in the midst, white pumps and roses, and white gloves. FORTUNE descends with them to daunce to grace this hir choice, and to signify shee is pleased with this chaste festivall; shee is attir'd in rich garments of divers coulers, a wastcote embroadered with gold, many curious flowers wrought with silver and silke, with pleasant coulors, a rich mantle, a vaile before hir face, hir wheele in hir hand; they pace with majesty towards the Presence, and after the first strayne of the violins they daunce ANNA REGINA in letters; their second masking-daunce JACOBUS REX; their departinge daunce is CAROLUS P.; with many excelent figures fallinge off, by Mr. Ounslo, Tutor to the Ladies' Hall. Having ended their Daunces, and fallinge off, halfe of one side and halfe of another, DIANA descends from the Mount, with two of the Queene's Goddaughters¹, and presents them to hir Majesty with this Speech:

DIANA. From our chaste throne we condescende
 To greete your Majesty with this my Trayne;
 My Nymphs, retir'd from the leavy woods,
 Have left their wonted habitts all of greene,
 Their sportive quivers, and their hunting weeds,
 Their loose-girt garment which they use to weare,
 The hills and dales, the brookes and fountanes cleare;
 Deckt all in virgins' hue they come to see
 Faire Albion's Queene enthron'd in Majesty.
 And see, two of all the rest do seeme to show
 A devine duty which they owe
 Unto your Highnes' Grace,
 Who to intimate their loves above the rest,
 Presente the timely fruits of their chaste labors,
 Of which, bright shininge Lampe, that in humane shape
 Show'st Heaven's perfection, vouchsafe to accept;
 And Phæbe with hir trayne,
 Devoted to your Grace for ever will remayne.

This Speech beeing ended, the Goddaughters presenting their needle-worke gifts, one an Acorne, the other Rosemary, beginning with the first letters of the Queene's name², they retire all two by two, makinge their honors; they ascend the Mount with this Songe:

¹ Doubtless two of the four young Ladies among the performers who were named Ann, and probably Anne Chalenor and Anne Sandilands; see p. 284. N.

² Anna Regina. N.

THE LAST SONG.

*Thus Cinthia's triumphs begin to cease,
 With true love and joyfull peace ;
 Yf worth and honor have content
 Time's fleeting minutes are well spent ;
 And wee shall thinke what here wee do bestow,
 Are things of duty which wee still do owe.
 But cruell Time doth slide so swift away,
 That wee must home unto our shady bowers ;
 Where wee will ever for your Highnes pray,
 That you in joy may spend your happy howers.*

The Songe being ended, OCCASION speakes to the Queene :

OCCASION. Bright Pallas and Royal Mistris of our Muse,
 Occasion hath adventur'd to bestow
 Some nimble minutes, which yf they have runn
 Soe happily that they have wonne
 The Olimpian prise,—your gracious favor,
 Wee have atcheiv'd a peece of worke
 Far richer then the golden fleece
 Which Jeson strove to purchase.
 But yf vaine oportunity
 Hath ought profan'd your reverent dignity
 With tedious tyme, and hath utter'd ought
 In prejudice of your most noble sex,
 Pardon, you glorious Company, you starrs of women,
 And let the sylent rhetoricke of that gracious looke,
 That workes a league betwixt the state of harts,
 Vouchsafe to shine uppon our childish sports ;
 Wee professe no stage, no Helicon,
 Our Muse is home-spunn, our action is our owne ;
 Then, bright Goddesse, with thy sweete smile grace all,
 Our Nymphs' Occasion, and our LADIES' HALL.



On the 5th of May, the King, after having rested twelve days at Newcastle, proceeded to Bothall Castle¹, the seat of Sir Charles Cavendish², where he remained two nights.

On the 7th, the King removed to Alnwick Abbey³, the seat of Francis Brandling, Esquire⁴, where also his Majesty stayed two nights.

On the 9th, the Royal Traveller rode to Chillingham⁵, the seat of either Sir Ralph Grey⁶, or of his son Sir William, afterwards Lord Grey of Warke⁷; and there knighted Sir Edmond [Edward] Grey⁸ the same afternoon.

¹ The remains of Bothall Castle, now the property of the Duke of Portland, are situated about three miles east of Morpeth, upon a commanding eminence, which rises in a deep valley, from the north bank of the river Wansbeck. The surrounding scenery is of the most beautiful description; the lofty banks of the river, on the southern side, are clothed with fine hanging woods, through which bold promontories and rocky precipices break forth to the eye in romantic grandeur; while the stream flows with vivacity below, and animates a variety of sweet sylvan prospects. There is a view of Bothall Castle in the *Beauties of England and Wales*, two in the *Antiquarian Itinerary*, a very superior one in *Woolnoth's Castles*, and a small vignette in *Hutchinson's Northumberland*.

² Younger brother of the first Earl of Devonshire, and father of the first Duke of Newcastle. He had obtained Bothall Castle by his second wife Catherine, daughter and eventually sole heir of Cuthbert seventh and last Lord Ogle, which Barony was confirmed to her and her heirs by letters patent in 1628. Sir Charles Cavendish was knighted in 1583, and died in this year 1617.

³ This mansion, built on the site of the first Abbey of the Præmonstratensian Order founded in England, is described as a sweet though deep retirement, on the banks of the Aln, defended by the lofty hills to the north and west. The only remains of the monastic buildings are a gateway and tower, of which see a view in *Hutchinson's Northumberland*. The estate has been purchased by the Duke of Northumberland, whose noble Castle at Alnwick is familiar to fame. It was in ruins at the period of King James's visit to the Abbey, and was not restored till on the accession of the late Duke of Northumberland to the title.

⁴ Also of Felling, near Newcastle. He was knighted on the King's return, at Brougham Castle on the 6th of August. He was M. P. for Northumberland in 1623 and 1625, and died in 1641, aged 46. See his pedigree in *Surtrees's Durham*, vol. II. p. 90.

⁵ Chillingham Castle, now the property of the Earl of Tankerville, was re-built in Queen Elizabeth's reign, and is a heavy square structure of four stories in the wings, and three in the centre. "The apartments are small, and the communications irregular. Here are several good portraits,—a full-length of Lord Chancellor Bacon; another of Lord Treasurer Burleigh; a gaudy painting of Buckingham, in a white satin gilded vest, gold and white striped breeches, effeminate and fantastical; a good portrait of King Charles; and a good picture of James II. of the most unhappy countenance." *Hutchinson's History of Northumberland*, p. 237.

⁶ Sir Ralph Grey, whom the King knighted at Berwick, April 8, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 67), was living in 1615.

⁷ See under June 15, 1619.

⁸ Philipot says Edmond, but the Knight was probably Sir Edward, brother of Sir Ralph, and two

On the following day the King arrived at the Palace of Berwick, to remain there five nights; and on the same date Mr. Chamberlain thus described to Sir Dudley Carleton the events of the Metropolis:

"The first day of Term the new Lord Keeper [Sir Francis Bacon] rode in pomp to Westminster, accompanied by most of the Council and Nobility about town, with other gallants to the number of more than 200 horse, besides the Judges and Inns of Court. There was a great deal more bravery and better shew than was expected in the King's absence; but both Queen and Prince sent him all their followers; and his other friends did their best to honour him¹.

"The greater part of his Train dined with him that day, which cost him, as is reported, £.700, wherein he followed not his pattern he seemed much to approve;—for, dining the week before with the rest of the Council at Secretary Winwood's, before all other good words and commendations of that entertainment, both he and the Earl of Worcester, whose turn came to feast next, sent to intreat to have the bill of cates, and to have the same cooks. But sure, for ought I can learn since I came, the expence of that dinner was in no sort proportionable to that sum. And one thing was then well remembered,—to invite the Archbishop of Spalato², which hath so continued ever since. But now the founder

of whose brothers, Roger and Arthur, the King knighted at Bishop Auckland and Edinburgh in this Progress.—Sir Edward was seated at Howick in Northumberland, and died in 1632. From him is descended the present Earl Grey, whose father was created Baron Grey de Howick in 1801, Viscount Howick and Earl Grey in 1806.

¹ Camden, in his Annals, gives the following Order of "the solemn Procession: 1. Clerks and inferior Officers in Chancery; 2. Students in Law; 3. Gentlemen, Servants to the Keeper, Serjeants-at-Arms, and the Seal-bearer, all on foot; 4. Himself on horseback, in a gown of purple sattin, between the Treasurer and the Keeper of the Privy Seal; 5. Earls, Barons, Privy Councillors; 6. Noblemen of all ranks; 7. Judges, to whom the next place to the Privy-councillors was assigned."—The satirical Weldon gives the following exaggerated but amusing account of Bacon's conduct during the King's absence: "Now he instantly begins to believe himself King, lyes in the King's lodgings, gives audience in the great Banqueting-house, makes all other Councillors attend his motions, with the same state the King used to come out to give audience to Embassadors; when any other Councillor sate with him about the King's affaires, would, if they sate neere him, bid them know their distance; (upon which Winwood the Secretary rose, went away, and would never sit more, but instantly dispatcht one to the King, to desire him to make haste back, for his seat was already usurped, at which I remember the King reading it to us, both the King and we were very merry;) and if Buckingham had sent him any letter, would not vouchsafe the opening or reading in publicke, though it was said it required speedy dispatch, nor would vouchsafe him any answer!"

* See p. 231. In his letter of June 4, Mr. Chamberlain thanks Sir Dudley for the Archbishop's

or *primus motor* of this feasting, Mr. Comptroller [Sir Thomas Edmonds], is taking his leave of this town, and sets out this day towards France with letters of congratulation from the King for the good issue of the late blow there¹. The French King was hampered by his Mother and her instruments, and there was no other way to untie the knot but to cut it; and so dispatch all *en un coup*. I must confess it is *de mauvais exemple*, but necessity hath no law. If *salus populi* be *suprema lex*, in this case *salus regis* was included too; and we see that the success hitherto doth even as it were visibly crown this work, since Mr. Comptroller hath order to tell Mons. Vitri that he hath a happy hand.

"On Easter Monday the Council went all to the Spital Sermon, and dined with the Lord Mayor. Dr. Page², who made the Sermon, was committed for speaking too broadly against the Spanish match.

"The King is now at Berwick, and the next week will be at Edinburgh³."

At Berwick, on the 11th of May, the King knighted Sir Anthony Weldon, of Kent⁴; and Sir William Muschamp, of Northumberland; on the 13th, Sir Robert Jackson, of the same county.

picture, "which doth so far surpass those that were made here, that there is no comparison, and it is the more to be esteemed for being done but by a picture, whereas ours were (or might have been) done by the life."

¹ The Marquis d'Ancre, Marshal of France, and Favourite of the Queen Mother, had been slain on entering the King's Court, by Monsieur de Vitri.

² Samuel Page, D. D. an eminent preacher, and in his time esteemed a good Poet. He was Vicar of Deptford, where he died in 1630. See a memoir of him and a list of his works in Wood's *Ath. Ox.* by Bliss, vol. II. p. 486.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁴ Notorious as the libellous Author of "The Court and Character of King James," and of a family very remarkable for its long continuance in office about the Court, his great-great-grandfather Hugh (second son of Simon Weltden, of Weltden, Northumberland) having been Sewer to Henry VII.; his great-grandfather Edward, Master of the Household to Henry VIII.; his grandfather Anthony, Clerk of the Spicery and Clerk of the Green Cloth to Queen Elizabeth; his father Sir Ralph (knighted July 24, 1603; see vol. I. p. 227), Clerk of the Green Cloth; and his uncle Anthony, Clerk of the Kitchen. Sir Anthony himself succeeded the latter in his office on his resignation in 1604, and his father in his office on his death in 1609. As Clerk of the Green-cloth, says the author of "Aulicus Coquinariæ" (the answer to his work), he now attended the King into Scotland, and "there practised to libel that nation. Which [libel] at his return home was found wrapt up in a record of the Board of Green-cloth; and by the hand being known to be his, he was deservedly removed from his place, as unworthy to eat his bread whose birth-right he had so vilely defamed. Yet by favour of the King, with a piece of money in his purse and a pension to boot, to preserve him loyal during his life, though a bad creditor, he took this course [of writing the 'Court and Character']

Having staid three¹ nights at Berwick, the King entered Scotland on the 13th of May. At the Castle of Dunglass², the seat of Alexander Earl Home³, he was welcomed by Alexander Hume⁴ with the following Speech⁵:

to repay to the purpose." The libel here mentioned is a humorous and *now* perfectly harmless production, which will be introduced hereafter under the King's stay at Edinburgh. Wood goes on to say that Weldon was dissuaded from publishing his work, and that he "did intend it for the fire, and died repentant, though since stolen for the press from a Lady's closet." See *Ath. Oxon.* by Bliss, vol. II. col. 868. It is remarkable that Sir Anthony was knighted in Northumberland, whence his family derived their origin. A demoniac-looking portrait of him, apparently intended for a caricature, was published in the *Antiquarian Repertory*, from an original drawing in the Collection of Lord Cardiff (afterwards Marquess of Bute).

¹ Not five, as suggested in the *Gests*.

² Dunglass, as is alluded to in the conclusion of the Speech which follows, was the last roof in Scotland the King slept under before entering England in 1602-3; see vol. I. p. 62. This fort was by accident or treachery blown up in 1640, when Thomas Hamilton, second Earl of Haddington, and many of his family and the neighbouring gentry, were destroyed. See *Douglas's Peerage*, by Wood, I. 680. (The Earl's body was found among the rubbish, his clothes so intermixed with his flesh, that he was put into a coffin with them on, and buried in the Church of Tynninghame, near his fine seat in the county of Haddington. On opening a grave there lately some pieces of ribbon were found, supposed to be part of his Lordship's dress. Information of the present Earl of Haddington, 1823.) The present mansion, erected on the same spot as the antient castle, is a modern building, of which there is a view in *Neale's Seats*. It is the seat of Sir James Hall, Bart. Near it stands a chapel, built by Sir Thomas Hume about the middle of the fourteenth century, which though not now used for its original purpose is still kept in repair. *Beauties of Scotland*, vol. I. p. 482.

³ Alexander sixth Lord Home had been created Earl Home and Baron Dunglass in 1604-5; his history has been noticed in vol. I. p. 35, and the King's Free Gifts to him enumerated in II. 247.

⁴ Two Poems by Alexander Hume were amongst those presented to the King after the conclusion of the Speech. This was probably Alexander Hume, Rector of Logie, and second son of Patrick, Laird of Polworth. From an "Epistle to Maister Gilbert Mont-Crail, Medicinus to the King Majestie, wherein is set down the inexperience of the Author's youth," it appears that he was destined for the Bar, and that, being disgusted with the Law, he afterwards endeavoured without success, to obtain preferment at Court, equally disgusted with which, he at length directed his views towards the Church. His Poems were printed by Robert Waldegrave in 1599, under the title of "Hymnes, or Sacred Songs, wherein the right use of poesie may be copied; whereunto are added the experience of the Author's youth and certain precepts," &c. He died before 1633, see *Irving's Scottish Poets*, vol. II. p. 29. — There was another Alexander Hume, who having been 40 years Master of the High School at Edinburgh, resigned that office in 1606; but he was probably dead at this date.

⁵ This Speech, as others which follow, is here printed from a scarce volume, of which it is necessary to give some description. It consists of two portions, the one entitled: "ΤΑ ΤΩΝ ΜΟΥΣΩΝ ΕΙΣΕΝΔΙΑ, The Muses' Welcome to the high and mighty Prince James, by the Grace of God, King of Great Britaine, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. at his Majestie's happie Returne to

“Salve, Rex Regum illustrissime, homo hominum suavissime, et rerum optabilem tuis optatissime. Tuis inquam, non quòd alii non sint etiam tui; sed quòd nos debemus, et volumus esse (ut ita dicam) tuissimi. Et tamen, ne verum dolorem taceamus, dolemus sanè ullos præter nos esse tuos, aut te esse ullorum. Sed hunc dolorem malumus æquis animis ferre; quàm ut non sint etiam tui, quicunque te verè et ex animo amare velint; non sit tuum quicquid nomen ornet, ditionem augeat, opes amplificet. Priami fertur quinquaginta fuisse filios; ad hos ille communi, ad illum hi suo quisque jure pertinebant. Unde studuisse unumquemque, ut ipse esset patris, pater esset ipsius; neque contra naturam, neque ab æquo et bono alienum fuit. Quis unquam Hectori vitio vertit, quòd pro patre et patriâ plùs sudavit, aut pugnavit fortius? Tu nobis Priamus; nos tibi Priamidæ; Hectorem, quàm Paridem imitari quantò magis pium, tantò Priamidis laudabilius, Priamo gratius, et salutaris. Si quibus ergo placet certare, utri amemus sincerius, obsequamur paratius, hostes oderimus infestius, facillè patimur; sed non ut facillè vincamur. Unum est nostrum proprium, quòd licet omnes omnia agant, nunquam efficient, ut non sit nostrum. Nos hactenus per duo ferè millia annorum soli fuimus majorum tuorum; illique nos respiciebant solos. Si labores et sudores, si frigus et famem, si incommoda et pericula, quæ illi pro nobis, nos pro illis hausimus, enumerare velim, dies me—quid diem dico? imò annus, imò et ætas deficiet priùs quàm oratio. Hoc summatim dicam, ac verè dicam, nullam esse gentem in quâ illustriora exempla videas, in Regibus vir-

his old and native Kingdome of Scotland, after fourteene yeeres absence, in anno 1617, digested according to the Order of his Majestie's Progresse. By I. A. [John Adamson, of whom hereafter];” and the other portion: “TA ΤΩΝ ΜΟΥΣΩΝ ΕΞΟΔΙΑ, Planctus et Vota Musarum in augustissimi Monarchæ Jacobi Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Regis, &c. Recessu à Scotiâ, in Angliam, Augusti 4, anno 1617.” These two series of Poems, the first consisting of 296, the other of 18 pages, were printed in folio in 1618, by Andrew Hart at Edinburgh, “cum privilegio et gratiâ Regiæ Majestatis.” There are probably several copies of this curious volume preserved in Scotland; the British Museum and Bodleian Libraries each possess one, and one is in my own Library. Mr. Bindley's copy was sold at his sale Jan, 15, 1819, for £6. 2s. 6d. Though this work is too long and would be tedious to re-print intire, it is so much connected with the King's Progress through Scotland, that I shall give a strict analysis of its contents. In illustrating the names of the several Poets with biographical notes, I have been much assisted by the kind contributions of John Philip Wood, Esquire, Auditor of the Excise at Edinburgh, to whom the public are indebted for the valuable History of Cramond, a Life of John Law of Lauriston, and a much improved edition of Douglas's Scotch Peerage. — The first eight pages of “The Muses' Welcome” are occupied with a Dedication to the King and some introductory Poems; and then follows the Speech at Dunglass.

tutis et consilii, in populo pietatis et officii. Ita in principio convenerat; ita à duobus ferè millibus annorum pactis et conventis statum est; quod haud scio, an ulla gens, ex Europæis scio nulla, gloriari potest. Cùm Scoti in vacuum hujus insulæ ex Hiberniâ et Æbudis primas colonias deduxerunt, Picti qui ad eos maternum genus referebant, imprimis læti excipiebant. Deinde crescente sobole, sive metu, sive invidiâ, indignari, queri, fremere. Brittones utriusque æquè infensi, quòd in sua invasisse existimârunt (quamvis multitudo nondum eò creverat, ut angulum aliquem insulæ plenis colonis occupare possent,) flammam incendiò addunt, et auxilia pollicentur. Hic Scoti, qui tum sine Rege, sine Lege vivebant, oportuni injuriis ad rem desperatam ex Hiberniâ gentilem suum Ferchardi Regis filium accersunt. Ille, convocato voluntario milite, ut suis succurreret continuò advolat. Ut venit, quâ fuit solertia, totum hoc quod fuit periculi à fraude Brittonum ortum esse comperit, et Pictis aperit. Non Scotos tantùm peti; pulsos Scotis eos esse solos; alteros in alteros incendere; ut hos victos, illos fractos, ambos possent perdere. Brittones hâc spe dejecti ex Pictorum agris per furtum prædas agunt; repetentibus respondent, æquiùs esse a Scotis qui latrociniiis vivebant (ita convitiari placuit) quod furtum factum erat, reposcere. Hinc illi, alteri damno, alteri convitio irritati, conjunctis copiis fines Brittonum invadunt, et quicquid ferri, aut agi posset, distrahunt. Isti ut vicem redderent, collectâ manu in fines Scotorum incurrunt. Scoti convocatis etiam sociis de consilio Fergusii (id Regi nomen fuit) servato tempore, castra hostium de nocte invadunt; et Regem (Coilo fuit nomen) cum magnâ parte militum occidunt. Ergo ab auspicio principio Regem creant, jurantque *se nullum unquam Regem*, nisi ex illius stirpe toleraturos. Hoc fœdus Deus divino nutu ita probavit; ut nullis armis, neque Brittonum, neque Saxonum, neque Pictorum, neque Danorum, neque Normanorum, neque Romanorum, qui reliquam Europam domuerunt, rescindi posset. Primus Romanorum impetus in Corbredum Galdum circa centum post Christum annos fuit, duce Agricola, viro non minùs manu quàm consilio prompto. Ille genere armorum et militiæ aliquot præliis inferior, locorum difficultate se suosque tuebatur. Sed revocato Agricola, dici non potest, quantâ celeritate amissa recuperârit, et damna rependerit. Ab hoc principio per trecentos ampliùs annos contra tantum hostem sua defenderunt, et mala illata retulerunt, ut, quod nusquam alibi leguntur fecisse, imprimis Adrianus, deinde Severus, muro, cujus vestigia adhuc visuntur, se suosque ab indomiti hostis pertinaciâ separârint. Simile fuit Danorum odium; sed eventus dissimilis. Nam post octo infelices excen-

siones ducum fortissimorum, militis (ut ipsi putabant) invicti, jurârunt se nunquam iterum infestis animis et armis Scotiam ingressuros. Pictorum amicitia, nunquam satis firma, sæpe in bellum, bis in exitium nostrum exarsit. Quod semel Romanorum, iterum Saxonum copiis freti, tantùm non perfecerunt. Cum Romanis nomen Scoticum tota insula viginti septem annos exegerunt. Cum Saxonibus Alpinum Regem, ad quem jure hæredis illorum sceptrum pertinebat, occidunt; et Abernethi, quod caput gentis fuit, caput illius conto ad ludibrium exponunt. Hâc clade percussos Proceres Kennethus secundus, qui patri successit, cùm nec precibus, nec argumentis in ultionem posset accendere; personato tanquam ex cœlis nuncio, tantam spem victoriæ injectit, ut totam gentem præter paucos, qui ad Osbrethum et Ellam potentissimos eo tempore Anglorum Reges fugerunt, radicitus extirpârît. Sed hæc ut mittam (neque enim animus est, neque tempus patitur omnia persequi), Normanorum odium, an spem dicam, non possum præterire. Nam Gulielmus, qui à devictâ Angliâ nomen sortitus est, rebus succedentibus felicius quàm sperare aut penè optare posset, Milcolumbo (is tum rerum in Scotiâ potiebatur, vir sanctissimus, et fortissimus,) bellum denunciat, ratus armis suis nil posse resistere. Causa prætendebatur, ni Edgarum redderet. Is erat Edwardi ex Agathâ Hungari filius; Edmundi Anglorum Regis nepos; ad quem regnum illud jure pertinebat; quemque Normanorum vim fugientem, et tempestate in Scotiam actum Milcolumbus hospitio acceperat, et conjugio Margaritæ sororis in affinitatem etiam adsumpserat. Verùm tribus exercitibus fuis, et rebus Anglicis nondum satis confirmatis, veritus ne illi arma et animos resumerent, pacem fecit. Edgardo ex pacto in Angliâ amplissimos agros, et Voldosio Sibardi Northumbri filio sororem suam uxorem dedit; unde nata Mathildis Davidis Regis conjunx, cujus jure Northumbria Scotorum facta fuit, quæ res multorum et magnorum bellorum causa exstitit. Ita tum res sopita; sed spe ad suam ditionem addendi Scotiam non tum deleta. Hæc non semel refulsit; sed Edwardo Primo penè emicuit. Omnes enim iste Scotos, præter Vallam et paucos privatos homines, qui à Regis fide nullâ vi possent cogi, armis, et minis, et malis domuit. Nam Ioannem Balliolum regni quàm honoris cupidiorum spe regni in verba sua adegit; et deinde contumeliâ à se alienatum armis vicit, Londinum traxit, et regno exuit. Quis jam putaret unquam fore, ut sceptrum Scotiæ ad legitimas manus rediret?

“Nam Robertus Brusius, qui cum Baliolo regnum petebat, Edwardi sententiâ, cui communi competitorum voluntate iudicium permissum est, victus, omnem

spem regni abjecerat, et Edwardi partes contra Baliolum summo studio sequebatur. Sed hîc divinæ voluntatis consilium, sicubi unquam, luculenter apparuit. Nam primùm à Valla monitus, et post à Cuminio in fraudem illectus, coactus est Edwardum relinquere. Sed contra tantum hostem adeò infirmus, ut primis aliquot annis ad eas redactus esset miserias, unde nemo crederet emersurum; in sylvis salutem quæreret, et tandem apud nescio quem amicum sepultus lateret, usque dum amici simul sperare et inimici metuere desinerent, penitus periisse putaretur. Hinc tanquam ex nebulâ erumpens, aliquot arces securiores quàm tutiores occupavit: et ad famam rei confluyente populo, Cuminio, quem Anglus rebus Scoticis præfecerat, tantum terroris injectit, ut non auderet fortunam experiri. Ad hos motus reprimendos dum Edwardus se parat, moritur. Reliquit Edwardum filium, et regni et belli hæredem. Hic per Angliam, Galliam, Flandriam, quâcunque ejus nomen patebat, edicit se Scotorum nomen deleturum, et sequentibus se eorum agros et opes daturum. Unde ingens ad eum tanquam ad prædam, non ad prælium, multitudo undique confluit. Robertus pro viribus se contrâ comparat. Infirmiæ conscientia cautum facit. Locum ne circumveniatur deligit; adeoque fœliciter pugnat ut ingentem illam multitudinem funderet, Regem fugaret, cogeretque, qui tantas copias duxerat, in cymbâ piscatoriâ salutem petere; Scotis pristinam libertatem restituere, et omni jure, quod pater in eos arrogaverat, cedere.

“ Hæc ego non idèò tantùm commemoro, ut homines videant, quàm ratum Deo fuerit fœdus nostrum cum majoribus tuis; sed etiam, ut, si qui volunt nobiscum de pietate in te contendere, intelligant, nos, qui tantâ fortitudine majoribus tuis operam navavimus, non minorem tibi, cui majorem debemus, navaturos. Illi bella fortissimè gesserunt, et mala minantia optimo consilio, pertinaci labore, et fœlici eventu propulerunt. Tu bona pro quibus illi bellagesserunt, sine bello impertiris. Quantò pax bello, otium negotio, quies labore gratior, tantò plus tibi quàm majores majoribus debemus. Duæ sunt Regum summorum summæ laudes; altera à belli, altera à pacis artibus; utraque necessaria. Pax sine bello injuriis opportuna; bellum sine pace nullo malo non importunum. Qui nisi pacem colit, ut bellum caveat; bellum gerit, ut pacem gignat; nondum didicit quid sit Regem esse. Nam pax per se est bona, bellum propter pacem. Pax, cujus causa bellum bonum, tua, Rex illustrissime, est propria. Tecum nata, et educata unâ cum ætate accrevit simul. Quo primo tempore ex ephebis excessisti, belli incendium (nam bello intestino tum flagrabat Scotia) extinxisti; odio-

rum semina extirpasti; gratiam conciliasti; et (ut verbo dicam) pacem publicè et privatim, domi et foris, etiam invitis obtrusisti. Vicinos, quibuscum nobis antè continenter bella, conjunxisti. Quibus cœlum, solum, vita, lingua, fides communis; quorum mores conveniunt, quorum commercia penitus toto divisit orbe Oceanus, tu (ea nascendi sors fuit) etiam sceptro conjunxisti. Quod Xenophon de Cyro prædicat, ἐκόλῳν ἡγήσατο παμπόλλων ἡμερῶν ἀπεχόλῳν, si verum est, post Cyrum ante te nondum verum fuit. At te ipsi vidimus ita vitam instituisse, ita sceptri auctoritatem temperasse, ut Angli, gens non minus opibus florens quàm numeroso et invicto milite potens, Regem sibi etsi tuo jure, tamen summâ suâ voluntate libentes et lætantes adoptârint. Antè nihil quidquam cuiquam erat proprium. De nocte latrones, de die hostes agebant, et ferebant omnia. Nunc licet per quietem somnum capere; nunc licet ‘suo cuique frui;’ ut qui hæc tibi non accepta ferat, indignus sit te bono tuo. Nos, si qui volunt his officiis nobiscum contendere, non commitemus, ut qui olim fuimus tui soli, nunc inter alios non simus tuissimi. Gratus ergo tuis omnibus reditus tuus, Humiis gratissimus. Quorum gens, quàm lætis animis oculus tuos intueatur; corona, quam vides, monstrat. Quorum Princeps, quàm arctis ulnis Majestatem tuam accipiat, non opus dicto, facto ipse clariùs quàm dici potest, ostendit. In quo si quid aut votis suis, aut Majestati tuæ non responderit, veniam rogat.

“Nam neque chorda sonum reddit, quem vult manus et mens,

Nec semper feriet, quodcunque minabitur arcus.

“Illam tibi summam habet gratiam, quòd ultimò abiens, primò rediens, ædes suas præsentîâ tuâ dignaris illustrare. Quâ fide et constantîâ sceptri tui Majestatem coluerit; quibus officiis, quibus periculis suis et suorum ab occultâ fraude, et apertâ vi perfidorum defenderit; non est opus teste ut probem; tu ipse testis probus. Dixi.”

The King having heard the Speech, several Poesies¹ were delivered to him.

¹ Two of these, one consisting of 100, the other of 18 lines, are signed Adamus Regius; a third of 14 is signed R. C.; and a fourth of 18 Greek lines, Ἰλεῖμ. Στεῦθερος. Next follow “Regi suo Scotiæ Gratulatio,” of 157 Latin hexameters; two epigrams of six and 14 lines on the Hume Family; “Dextræ Oscula,” of 26 lines; and “Scotiæ cum Angliâ Amicum Certamen,” of 18; all followed by the signature of David Humius, Theagrius. “Scotorum Lætitia et Votum,” and “Ad Musas Dunglasides Apostrophe Παραινετική,” two elegiac poems of 14 and 12 lines, by Alexander Hume, conclude the poems presented at Dunglass. — Of Adam King, the first of the Authors, some poems are preserved in the “Delitiæ Poetarum Scotorum hujus ævi illustrium. Amstel. 1637,” vol. II

On the 14th of May, the King visited Cavard¹ in Roxburghshire, and there knighted Sir William Fenwick, of Northumberland.

On the 15th, his Majesty arrived at Seton², the magnificent seat of George third Earl of Wintoun³, where he was presented with two long Poems⁴.

pp. 201—254.—The signature in Greek is probably that of William Struthers, one of the Ministers of the Presbytery of Edinburgh. He contributed to the *Eisodia Edinburgensium*, welcoming King Charles to Edinburgh in 1633, but died in that year. (Craufurd's Univ. of Edinb. pp. 107, 147.)—David Hume was of Godscroft, author of the *History of the House of Douglas and Angus*; and several of his poems are in the *Delitiæ Poet. Scot.* vol. I. pp. 378—438. He presented some poems at Edinburgh on the King's birth-day, and it must be remarked that his loyal effusions were first printed in 4to whilst the King was in Scotland, under the title of "*Regi Suo post bis septennium in patriam ex Angliâ redeunti, Scotiæ Congratulatio. Edinburgi, excudebat Andreas Hart, 1617.*" pp. 12. A copy is in the British Museum, among the Royal Library presented by George III.

¹ Described in the *Gazetteer of Scotland*, printed at Dundee in 1803, as an elegant mansion, the seat of George Douglas, Esq.

² Seton, spelt in "*The Muses' Welcome*" Sea-towne, and signifying "the dwelling by the sea," stands in a recess of the shore, and was long the residence of the family of Seton. This Palace, as it was commonly called, was a strong extensive turreted building, much ornamented after the fashion of the 16th century, though some parts were much older. It was strong enough to afford defence to a party of Highlanders in 1715, but was destroyed about 30 years since, and is now in ruins. Within the walls still stands the Collegiate Church of Seton, a view of which is engraved in Sir Walter Scott's *Provincial Antiquities of Scotland*. The lands adjoining now belong to the Earl of Wemyss and March.

³ The family owed its first elevation to the union of Sir Christopher Seton with a sister of King Robert Bruce. With King James VI. they acquired great favour, who, having created his brother Earl of Dunfermline in 1599, made Robert seventh Lord Seton, Earl of Wintoun in 1600. Before the King's accession to the English throne his Majesty and the Queen were frequently at Seton, where the Earl ever kept a very hospitable table, at which all foreigners of quality were entertained on their visits to Scotland. His Lordship died in 1603, and was buried on the 5th of April on the very day the King left Edinburgh for England. His Majesty, we are told, was pleased to rest himself at the south-west round of the orchard of Seton, on the highway, till the funeral was over, that he might not withdraw the noble company; and he said that he had lost a good, faithful, and loyal subject. The deceased Nobleman's eldest son Robert succeeded as second Earl of Wintoun, but in 1607 resigned the Earldom to his brother George. The third Earl, who was now the host of his Sovereign, lived honourably and kept a great house at Seton, and in 1633 entertained King Charles "with all his retinue both Scots and English," both in his Progress to Edinburgh and on his return. He was one of those who waited on the King after the pacification in 1639; and on the engagement for the rescue of his Majesty in 1648, he gave to the Duke of Hamilton the commander-in-chief, £1,000 sterling for his equipage. When Charles II. came to Scotland, the Earl of Wintoun waited on him, and continued with his Majesty till November 1650, when he went home in order to prepare for the solemnity of the Coronation, but died Dec. 17 following, aged 65, and was

Before the King is conducted into Edinburgh, it will be proper to insert the following official documents¹, put forth to prepare his Majesty's way. The first

buried at Seton, leaving his title to his grandson George. Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, II. 646.—His third son Alexander was created Viscount Kingston in 1650. This nobleman at the age of twelve had the honour of welcoming King Charles at Seton in 1633 with a Latin Oration, and was then knighted. The account of this ceremony may here be appropriately quoted, because it must have been very similar to the manner in which King James was received with Latin Speeches, at the houses of the Scotch nobility, but of which we have no so particular narration. At the iron-gate of Seton his Majesty sat in state with the Nobility sitting around him, when the young Nobleman advanced, "being attended with his Schoolmaster, a pedagogue, and four other Masters of Arts, all grave and learned men, clothed in black cloth and cloaks lined through with velvet, the ground being covered a great way from the throne with a carpet, when he did deliver his Oration boldly, with a gesture suitable to the purpose, for which he had the applause of his Majesty and all present; and before he rose off his knee, his Majesty did him the honour to confer the honour of Knighthood on him, and said to him: 'Now, Sir Alexander, see that this does not spoil your school; by the appearance, you will be a scholar.' Sir Alexander boldly answered: 'No, please your Majesty.' After this he returned to school, and studied with more alacrity and assiduity than formerly, by reason of his promise to the King." Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 39.

¹ One in Latin of 286 hexameters, entitled, "*Scotiæ ad Regem suum feliciter redeuntem fausta Acclamatio*," was composed by John Gellie, of Gellistoun, Philosoph. and M. D. a learned man, and one of the Judges appointed to try the candidates for a Professorship in the University of Edinburgh in 1625 (Craufurd's Univ. of Edinb. p. 101.) The other, of 422 English decasyllabics, entitled, "*Forth Feasting, a Panegyricke to the King*," was written by the celebrated Poet, William Drummond, of Hawthornden. This Poem has always been printed in Drummond's Works, and is included in the English Poets, vol. V. under the title of "*The Wandering Muses, or the River of Forth Feasting*." It is styled by Lord Woodhouselie "one of the most elegant panegyrics ever addressed by a Poet to a Prince."

¹ They are copied from a highly curious thin quarto, printed at Edinburgh in 1822, entitled: "*Documents relative to the Reception at Edinburgh of the Kings and Queens of Scotland, from 1561 to 1650*." The contents are so similar to the subjects of the present work that I shall subjoin a list of them: "*Notices from the Records of the Town-council of Edinburgh relative to the Reception of Mary Queen of Scots, 1561; Ane New Yeir Gift to the Queene Mary, 1562; Notices from the Records of the Town Council preparatory to the Reception of King James the Sixth, 1569; Proclamation of the Privy Council, anent keeping order, Sept. 1579; Reception of the King at Edinburgh, 1579; Letter from the King, for bringing home Queen Anne in Scotch Ships, Oct. 11, 1589; Notices from the Records of the Town Council, relative to the Reception of the King and Queen after their Marriage; Reception of the King and Queen, May 1590; (several articles re-printed in the following pages;) Extracts from the Records of the Town Council relative to the Reception of Charles the First, 1628-1633; Orders of the Privy Council relative to the same; The Order of Kinge Charles entring Edinburgh in Stait, at the West Port, and his marche through the Toune to Halyroudhous, 1633; Notices from the Records of the Town-Council, relative to his Majesty's Welcome and Reception, 1650*." In an Advertisement we are informed that this valuable assemblage

is a Warrant "for repairing his Majestie's Houssis," issued by the Privy Council of Scotland, on the 22d of May 1616:

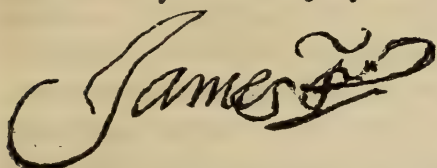
"Forsameikle as the Kinge's Majestie haveing resolvit to honour this his ancient Kingdome with his Royall presence, God willing, in the beginning of the next Spring of the Sex-hundreth-and-sevintene yeir of God, it is verie necessar and expedient for his Majestie's contented reception that his Majestie's Paliceis of Halirudhous and Falkland, and Castell of Striveling be repairit, and all defectis therein mendit, thairfore the Lordis of Secret Counsall gevis commissioun and warrand, be thir presents, to James Murray, Master of his Majestie's Workis, to tak down the haill rooffe and thake of the ludgeing above the Utter Yett, callit the Chancellaries ludging, with sa meikle of the stane worke as is requisite, and to caus the same be buildit up and perfyte of new; and to tak down to the ground the chalmer within the Pallace of Halirudehous, callit the Stewartis Chalmer, and on nawayes to build up the same agayne, in respect of the deformitie and disproportioun that it has with the rest of the building thair; and to tak down the chalmer and garlie in Halirudhous callit Sir Roger Ashtonis Chalmer, and to build up the same of new, in a convenient forme; and to tak down the kitcheing in Halirudhous, callit Chancellair Maitlandis Kitcheing in the end of the transe callit the Dukis Transe, bothe in the rooffe, jeists, and walles, as is necessar, and to build up the same of new; and to tak down the toofalles in the Baikehous Yairde of Halyrudhous, and the haill dykis of the Baikehous Yairde, and not to big up the same agane, sua that of the yairde ane perfyte cloise may be maid.

"And to tak down the auld entree in the Castell of Striviling betwix the Utter Yett and Inner Yett, with the little rowme on the syde of the said entrie, and to bestow and imploy the staines and otheris materiallis therof on some otheris workis within the Castell; and to tak down the haill rooffe and thake of the Kinges Kitchin in the said Castle, with samekle of the stane-worke therof as salbe requisite, and to builde up the same of new; and to tak down the thake of the toure above the Inner Yett, and to thake it of new agane.

"And to tak down the haill thake and rooffis of the King and Quenis Galleries in Falkland, and to help the stane-work thereof, and big ane barteseene about thame, and theik thame with lead; and to tak down the haill thake, and samekle of the rooff as is faulters, of the haill ludgeing of Falkland, and to streke out duris and wondois, and to repair, help, and reforme the same as they is but a sample of a much larger collection of documents relative to the Coronations, Ridings of Parliament, Visits, Progresses, Marriages, and Baptisms of the Scottish Kings.

sall think meet, and to thake the same new if neid beis. For doing quhairof thir presents salbe unto the said Maister of Worke ane Warrant."

The next document is a Letter¹ from the King at Newmarket, December 15, 1616, to the Privy Council of Scotland, "anent the causis of his heir coming;" and evidently of his Majesty's own composition:



" Richt trustie and right wel-beloved Cosen and Counsallor, and right trustie and wel-beloved Counsellours, we greet you well; it could not bot be verie grievous unto us, if the earnest desyre whiche we have long had to visite that our native and ancient Kingdome of Scotland, sould be mett at our arrivall there with ane unwelcome coldnes of a number of our goode subjectis in that Cuntrey, and that by the occasion of a prejudged opinion in manie of our people's heartis, grounded upoun fals rumours ayther maliciouslie or foolischlie spred anent the causes and erandes of our intention to repair thither at this tyme; we have therefore thocht it verie convenient for preventing of this mistaking to make by these presents ane ingenuous and sincere professioun unto you of the motives induceing us to resolve upon our Journey thither at the tyme appointed.

" First, wee ar not achamed to confesse that we have had theise many yeiris a great and naturall longing to see our native soyle and place of our birth and breeding, and this salmonlyke instinct of ours hes restleslie, both when wee wer awake and manie tymes in our sleip, so stirred up our thoghtis and bended our desyris to make a Journay thither that wee can never rest satisfied till it sall pleas God that wee may accomplish it; and this we do upoun our honour declair to be the maine and principall motive of our intended Journey.

" Bot unto this desyre of ouris, proceeding from a naturall man, and the care wee have to discharge our Kinglie office, the tyme of our being there, and so to mak use of our naturall affectioun by [employing] that occasion to the discharge of our calling, wherein [our first] grite care salbe to heare and give redresse to suche of our subjectis (if anie there be) as could not utherwayes be

¹ "It is to be regretted that the volume of the Records of Privy Council from which this Letter is taken is much obliterated in many parts, and has occasioned various blanks."

redrest without our awne presence; and our next care salbe [to remedy] anie suche abuse or disordour (if wee sall find anie) as could not be so weele performed in our absence.

“As for making anie alterations or reformatiouns in the government eyther ecclesiasticall or civile, it is _____ will be glad that by our presence als monie things tending to

onlie you, who by your place ar best acquainted with our intentions, unto all our other goode subjectis of whatsoever degree, to have that settled confidence in our honestie and discretioun, that wee will not so muche as wishe anie thing to be done there which sall not tend to the glorie of God and the weale of that Commonwealt, and all our goode subjectis therein; as also there may be diverse thingis whiche although we might justlie wishe thame, yet may there be so manie impedimentis and lettis to crosse thame, that, although in our conscience and honestie we might avow thame to be goode, yet in our discretioun wee wold be loth to trouble ourselfis and oure good subjectis with thame at this tyme, except they might as weill prove to the generall lyking and applause of our people as to the benefit and weele of the Common wealt; wee ar therefore hereby earnestlie to desyre you, that yee will not onlie for your owne partis harbour no prejudged conceipte of our intentioun upoun the grounds of these idill rumours, but also make this our sincere declaration come to the eares of our other good subjectis, that we may haif comforte of such a joyfull meiting there with our people, as wee for our part sall ever deserve.

“To conclude, wee pray you to rest assured that our intentioun is so to behave our selfe the tyme of our being there, as everie one sall see that our care sall not be wanting to do as muche goode as wee can, and yet so to carie our selfe as our actions salbe accompanied with the applause and hearty consent of all our goode people; and these premisses most affectuouslie recommending to your speciall care, we bid your fairweele. Given at Newmarket, the 15th of December 1616.”

The following “Direction to the Burgh of Edinburgh anent Preparatiounis for his Majestie’s heir coming, Dec. 24, 1616,” is from the Records of the Privy Council:

“Forsameikle as the Kingis Majestie oute of his tender and princelie love and regaird to this his native and ancient Kingdome, haveing this mony yeires bigane had a grite and naturall longing to see the same, as being his native soile and place of his birth, has resolvit, God willing, this approaching sommer to accom-

plishe his intendit Jorney heir, and to honor this Kingdome with his Royall presence, in the quhilk Jorney his Majestie will be accompanyit with divers of his Nobilitie and Counsall, and with some of the reverend Clergie, besides a grite number of other people of all rankis and qualities from the Kingdome of England; and whereas the place of his first rendezvous and langest abode during his stay in this Kingdome, will be at his Majestie's Palace of Halirudhous, it will necessarlie fall oute that his Nobilitie and Gentry, with the grittest pairt of his Tryne and followaris (of whome thair will be a few number of persones of goode rank and qualitie), mon be ludged within the Burgh of Edinburgh, the Cannogait, and suburbs of the said Burgh, being the cheif and principall Toun of this Kingdome, quhair his Majestie's high and soveraine Court of Parliament, his Majestie's honnorable Previe Counsall, and the grand and learned Senatouris of his Colledge of Justice, will ordinarlie sitt; the strangearis and otheris that ar to accompany his Majestie heir will be so much the more carefull narrowlie to remarke upoun and espy the carriage and conversation of the inhabitantes of the said Toun, forme of ther intertynment and ludgeing, and gif thair housis be , and their bedding and naprie clene and neate, and, according as they sall find, they will mak reporte outhir to the credite and , or to the reproche and scandall of this Burgh; and seeing, &c. Thairfore the Lordis of Secreitt Counsall has commandit, and be thir presentis commandis and ordanis the Provost and Baillies of Edinburgh, with the concurrence of the Baillies of the Cannogait within the Cannogait, and of the Baillies of the Potterrow and West Porte within their boundis, to mak a perfyte survey of the haill ludeingis and stabillis, within the said Burgh of Edinburgh, the Cannogait, Leythe Wynde, Pleasance, Potterraw, and Weste Porte, and to foirsee and provide that thair be good ludgeingis within the saidis boundis for fyve thousand men and stablis for fyve thousand horse¹; and yf, by the said survey, they sall

¹ The whole charges of the King and Court during his abode in Scotland, "where his Majesty appeared with as much splendour as in England," were defrayed from the Scottish Treasury, the entire direction of the Revenue of which was under the direction of Sir Gideon Murray, Treasurer-depute. This Knight, the father of Patrick the first Lord Elibank, having been knighted in 1605, was first constituted Treasurer-depute in 1611 under the Earl of Somerset, High Treasurer, and appointed one of the Lords of Session in 1613. "The entire direction of the revenue of Scotland was in Sir Gideon Murray's hands, and he managed it to such advantage, that he repaired the Palaces and Castles of Holyroodhouse, Edinburgh, Linlithgow, Stirling, Dunfermline, Falkland, and Dunbarton, adding to them all new edifices. James had a very high sense of his ser-

not find so manie good stabillis within the saidis boundis as will convenientlie serve for five thowsand horse, that they designe barnis to be stabillis, and caus haikis and mangeiris to be set up in thame; and in this accompt and number of men and horses for whom ludgeingis and stabillis are to be preparit, they ar all to be understoode to be of his Majestie's Tryne and followaris come frome England, who mone be accomodate and easit in ludgeingis and stabillis afoir ony of this Cuntrie people; and ordanis the saidis Provost and Baillies to mak a perfyte and cleir rolle of the haill ludgeingis and stabillis, and of the barnis to be appointit for stabillis within the saidis boundis, designing the particular placeis of the situatioun of the same, the names of the ownaris and possessouris thair of, the number of chalmers and beddis within every house, and how manie strangearis may be commodiouslie ludget in the same, and how mony horse every one of the saide stabillis will hold; and it is heirby recommendit unto the saidis Magistrats to see that the saidis ludgeingis be furnisht with honnest and clene bedding, and weele washin and weele smellit naprie and otheris linningis, and with a sufficient nomber and quantitie of goode veshells, cleane and cleir, and of sufficient lairgenes; and likewayes that they caus the Tynneis Courtis within the saidis boundis to be repairit, and that all their stablairis be furnisht with sufficiencie of corne, strae, and hay; commanding alsua the Magistratis of Edinburgh, the Cannogait, Potterraw, and Weste Porte, that every one of thaime within thair awne boundis, haif a cair and gif directioun for keeping of their strettis cleene, and that no filthe nor middingis be seen upoun the same, and that no beggaris be seene within thair boundis; commanding alsua the saidis Magistratis of the Cannogait, Potterraw, and West Porte, to gif their efauld and honnest concurrence, every ane of thame, within thair awne boundis, to the Provost and

vices; Sir Gideon visiting his Majesty in England, and happening, in the King's Bed-chamber, to let his glove fall, James, although stiff and old, stooped down and gave him his glove again, saying, 'My Predecessor, Queen Elizabeth, thought she did a favour to any man who was speaking to her when she let her glove fall, that he might take it up and give it to her again; but, Sir, you may say a King lifted up your glove.' Yet, for all that, his Majesty was induced to believe an accusation given by James Stewart, Lord Ochiltree, against Sir Gideon Murray, charging him with offences committed in his office of Treasurer-depute against the King and his lieges. He was sent down a prisoner to Scotland, and a day appointed for his trial. This he took so much to heart that he abstained from food for several days, and died on the 28th of June 1621, after he had kept his house twenty days or thereby, stupified and silent, or at least speaking little or to no purpose." See further of his history in Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. I. p. 525.

Baillies of Edinburgh, in everie thing tending to the executioun of this commissioun and directioun, as they will ansueir upoun their obedience, at their heichest perrell; ordaining alsua the Provost and Baillies of Edinburgh to mak thair reporte unto the saidis Lordis of their proceedingis in this bussynes, and to present befor the saidis Lordis the roll foirsaid of the ludgeingis and stabillis within the saidis boundis, upoun the sixtene day of Januar, to the effect forder order may be tane heiranent, as apperteynis."

On the same day was issued the following "Act aganist Beggaris:

"Forsameikle as, albeit thair has bene divers Actis of Parliament maid and publist heirtofore aganis strong and idill personis beggaris, quhairby it is ordanit that every parochine sall intertene thair awne beggaris, and that nane be sufferit to wander athorte the Cuntrey under certane paines mentionat and contenit in the saidis actis, notwithstanding it is of treuth that grite numberis of strong, sturdy, and idill beggaris and vagaboundis daylie travellis athorte the Cuntrey, and from all pairtis ewest to this Burgh of Edinburgh, quhair they pas the tyme in all kynd of ryott and filthie and beistlie litcherie and hooredome, to the offens and displeasor of God; they do lykewise importune his Nobilitie, Counsellouris, and otheris his Majestie's goode subjectis with shamefull exclamationis and outcryis, lyes upon the streitis of the Cannogait and betwix Leythe and Edinburgh; and it is lykeaneugh that when his Majestie comes to this Cuntrey this next sommer that they will follow his Majestie's Courte, to the grite discredite and disgrace of the Cuntrey, without remeid be providit; thairfore the Lordis of Secreit Counsell ordanis lettres to be direct, to command, charge, and inhibite all and sindrie strong sturdie and idill beggaris be oppin proclamatioun at the Mercat Croceis of the Heade Burrowis of this Realme and otheris placeis neidfull, that none of thame presooome nor tak upoun hand to wander athorte the Cuntrey

to contene thame within thair owne parocheis and on nawayes presooome to come furth thair of under the paines contenit in the Actis of Parliament formerlie maid heiranent; and siclyke to command; chaarge, and inhibite all and sindrie his Majestie's lieges, awnaris, here-touris, or lyfe-rentaris of landis within the Burgh of Edinburgh, Leyth, the Cannogait, the Weste Porte, Potterraw, Pleasance, Leythe Wynd, Sanctninians Raw, and otheris suburbis about this Burgh, that thay nor none of thame presooome nor tak upoun hand to lett ony housis to beggaris, nor to suffer ony beggaris to haiff resett or remaining within the same; and siclyke to command,

chairge, and inhibite all and sindrie his Majestie's lieges and subjectis duelland within the boundis foirsaidis, and within the parochies of Haliruidhouse, Leythe, St. Cuthbertis, Dudingstoun, Libertoun, Costorphin, and Crammond, that nane of thame resett or huirde ony beggaris in thair housis, under the pane of tuentie pundis to be incurrit, *toties quoties*, be every persone or personis, settaris of thair housis to beggaris, or ressettaris within thair housis of beggaris; certifieing thame that sall failyie or do in the contrair that thay salbe decernit to haif incurrit and to incur the said pane, and execution sall pas aganis thame for payment thair of in forme as effeiris¹."

On the 13th of February 1616-17, the Privy Council issued the following "Proclamation anent the Ludgeings in the Cannogait:

"Forsameikle as the Magistrates of the Cannogait being commandit to gif in to the Lordis of Secreit Counsall ane roll of the haill ludgeingis and stablis within thair Toun, to the effect the saidis Lordis might knowe and understand how mony of his Majestie's Tryne and followaris as necessarlie mon be ludgeit neir his Majestie's persone dureing his aboade at Haliruidhous, might be commodiouslie accommodat in ludgeingis and stablis within the said Cannogait, the saidis Magestratis has gevin in a roll of their saidis ludgeingis and stablis, reporting and bearing that all thair ludgeings and stablis ar alreddy tane be Noblemen, Baronis, and Gentlemen of this Cuntrey, sua that thair is not ane free house in the Cannogait quhair ony of his Majestie's Tryne may be ludgeit, whilk being a matter verie offensive to his Majestie, and that can nowayis stand with his Majestie's contentment, nor the credite of the Cuntrey, that his Majestie's proper domestiques, and these who more necessarlie attend his Royall person, salbe constrayned to seeke their ludgeings in remote and far pairtis from his Majestie's House and Palice, to the disapointing and neglecting of his Majestie's service; thairfore the Lordis of Secreit Counsall hes thought meete to intimat and declare to all these who he stane or myndis to tak ludgeings and stablis in the Cannogait, that they will be frustrat and disappointet of thair intentis, and that all the saidis ludgeingis and stablis will be tane up and markit for his Majestie's awne Tryne and followaris, by his Majestie's Harbingeiris at their heir-coming; and ordanis lettres to be direct to mak publicatioun heirop, be oppin proclamatioun, at the Mercat Croceis of Edinburgh and the Cannogait; and to warne all personis who hes tane or myndis to tak ludgeings or stablis in the

¹ A Proclamation against Beggars, similar to the above Act, was published by the Privy Council, Feb. 13, 1616-17.

Cannogait, that thay provide thameselffis of ludgeings and stablis otherwayes, assureing thame that thay wil be disapointit of thair intentis in the Cannogait, and that all the ludgeingis and stablis thair wil be markit and tane up for his Majestie's Tryne and followaris, as said is."

On the 30th of April was issued this "Proclamatioun aganis the slaughter of Murefoule:

" Forsamekle as the Kingis Majestie's awne earnest desire and necessair affairs of this Estaite having invited his Majestie this mony yeiris bigane, to visite this his ancient and native Kingdome; and his Majestie having now, by the favour of almightie God, almost accomplished his Jornay and Progress hither with most comfortable and happy succes, being honourable accompanied with divers of the Nobilitie, Counsell, and otheris his goode subjectis of the Kingdome of England, it may fall oute that during the tyme of his Majestie's aboade in this Cuntrey his Majestie mon some tyme haif his recreatioun, exercise, and pastyme in the fields, and thairfore it is necessair that the murefoul, pairtridges, and pouttis, within ten myles of the placeis of his Majestie's aboade heir salbe preservit and cairfullie haynit for his Majestie's pastyme and gayme; for whilk purpos ordains lettres to be direct, to command, chairge, and inhibite all and sindrie his Majestie's lieges and subjectis, be oppin proclamatioun at the Mercat Croce of Edinburgh and otheris placeis neidfull, that nane of thame presooome nor tak upoun hand at ony tyme after the publicatioun heirop, to slay ony murefoull, pairtridgeis, or pouttis, within ten myles of the Burgh of Edinburgh and otheris pairtis of his Majestie's aboade in this Kingdome, during the tyme of his Majestie's being within the same, under the pane of ane hundreth pundis, to be incurrit be every persone or persones contraveening this present Act, sa oft as they sall failyee, quhilk failyee salbe tryed be oathe or be witness as accordis; and whairas the personis contraveening are not able to pay the said sowme, they salbe punisht in thair personis, by wairding and feiding upon breade and watter at the arbitrement of his Majestie's Counsell; and to command and chairge all Magistrates to Burgh and Land, and all Justices of the Peace, every ane of thame within thair awne boundis, to haif a speciall cair and regaird that this present Act be preceislie kept, and that they appoint searcheouris and visitouris to try quhair and be whome the same is violat and brokin, and to notifie thair names to his Majestie's Thesuarair or Thesuarair Depute, to the effect the contraveenirs may be callit and punist accordinglie."

The following extracts from the Records of the Town Council of Edinburgh are relative to the preparations for the King's reception :

" March 19, 1617. The quhilk day, the Provost, Baillies, Deyne of Gild, Thesaurer, and Counsall being conveynit, nominatis David Aikenheid, Deyne of Gild ; George Todrig, Elder ; Alexander Clerk and Nicol Uduart, Merchandis ; Andro Scott, Deane of the Chirurgeanes ; and Edwart Ker, taileur, to conveyne with the Baillies, and Thesaurer, and such of the Counsell as sall or may be convenientlie had and consulted upone the commoun effairis and the ordour to be observed for intertenement of his Majestie within this Burgh, at his Entrie within the same.

" April 2. The quhilk day, the Provost, Baillies, Deyne of Gild, Thesaurer, and Counsell being conveynit, nominatis and appoyntis Joseph Merjoribanks, Baillie, to have cair to caus apperel ane boit [boat] with his furnitur for the Kingis transporting, and to aggrie thairanent, and to mak his report therupone.

" April 9. The quhilk day, the Proveist, Baillies, Deyne of Gild, Thesaurer, and Counsall being conveynit, hes thocht fit and expedient that ane number of the gravest most antient Burgesses and of best rank within this Burgh, sall be warnit to attend his Majestie's Entrie within the samine, the 16th day of May nixt, all apperelit in blak velvot, the ane half in gownis faiced with blak velvot, and the uther half in partisanis, and that nane quhais names sal be inrollit refus to attend in manner prescryvit to him or absent himself the said day under the payne of ane hundreth pundis, to be payit to the Thesaurer of the Burgh in name of the guid Toun.

" April 23. Ordanis Johnne Byris, Thesaurer, to caus to the fourtene officers, ilk man, ane liveray cotte, in sic forme as sal be prescryvit be the Baillies, and als to Robert Stewart, Maisser [Mace-bearer], ane gown of claith, with an stand of clath of figurit satine, with the haill furniter, and the expensis debursed thairupone sal be allowit to him in his comptis.

" Forsameikle as his Majestie, be his Letter direct to the Lordis of his Hienes' Secreit Council, has declairit that it is his will and plesour that an Harrang and Speache be maid to him at his Entrie within this Burgh, thairfore the Counsall nominatis and electis Mr. John Hay thair Clerk Depute, to make the said Harrang, and ordainis him to provyde himselfe to that effect.

" May 7. The quhilk day, the Provost, Baillies, Deyne of Gild, Thesaurer, and Counsell being conveynit, ordanis ane Banquet to be maid to his Majestie

and his Nobles and companie, and Johane Byris, Thesaurer, to build ane Banquating Hous in the Counsell Hous Yaird, for intertenuing his Majestie and his Nobles, and ordanis Joseph Marjoribanks, Baillie, George Todrig, Elder, David Williamsoun, and Nicol Udward, merchands, and Udward Ker, tailyeour, to assist him in the said werk, and the expensis debursit thairthrow sal be allowit to him in his comptis, tegidder with the proffet of the samine.

“ Grants and gives commissioun to Mr. Johane Hay, their Clerk Deput, to pas to Berwick to his Majestie, to know his Majestie's will and pleasour anent the maner of his ressaie at his Entrie within this Burgh, and to give informatioun to his Majestie of the order takin thereanent be the guid Toun, and ordanis the Thesaurer to pay his expensis and the same salbe allowit to him in his comptis.

“ May 12. The quhilk day, Williame Nisbet of the Deyne, Provost, &c. being conveynit, understanding that the Kingis Majestie at his first going to Ingland, was propynit be the haill Tounis throw which his Majestie raid, with ane Coup with certaine quantity of gold according to the estate and rank of the Toun; and, siclyk, that the same Tounis at his Majestie's doun cumming hes remem-berit his Majestie with the lyk propyne, to eschew any imputatioun of neglect of dewtie, this Burgh being the heid and principall of this Kingdome, thocht meet to propyne his Majestie at his Entrie with ten thousand merkis, in dowble angells of gold, and to by ane gilt baissin of the grittest quantitie can be had, to put the same in, and ordanis the Thesaurer to pay for the samine, and to borrow the said soume upon proffit, quhilk with the proffit salbe allowit to him in his comptis.”

From a volume of the Records of the High Court of Justiciary, we have the following account of the King's Entry into his ancient City :

“ The saxtene day of May 1617, the Kingis Majestie enterit at the West Poirt of Edinburgh, quhair the Provost, the four Bailieis, the haill Counsell of the Toun, with ane hundreth honest men and mae, war all assemblit in blak gownes all lynit with plane velvet, and their haill apparrell was plane black velvet. At quhilk tyme first the Proveist, William Nisbet, maid ane Harand, welcoming his Majestie to his awin Citie; thareafter ane Harand was maid be Mr. John Hay in name of the haill Citizens; ane purse contening five hundreth double angellis laid in a silver basing double overgilt, was propynit to his Majestie, quha with ane myld and gracious countenance resavit thayme with thair propyne, come tharefur throw the Citie to the Kirk, quhair ane Sermon was

maid be the Archbishope of St. Androis, Spottiswood¹; tharefter come directlie doun the streit towardis his awin Palice in Halyrudhous, being conveyit be the honest men of the Toun to the Corse callit St. Johne's Croce, quhair be the drawing of ane sword his Majestie knychtit the Proveist."

The Speech of John Hay, the Clerk Deputie², was as follows³:

"How joyfull your Majestie's returne, gracious and dread Soveraine, is to this your Majestie's native Towne, from that kingdome due to your sacred person by Royall descent, the countenances and eyes of these your Majestie's loyall subjects speake for their harts. This is that happie day of our new birth, ever to bee

¹ The learned historian John Spottiswood. He was son of John Spottiswood, one of the Reformers in Scotland; he attended as Chaplain to the Duke of Lennox in his embassy to France in 1601; was made Archbishop of Glasgow and one of the Privy Council in Scotland in 1603; advanced to St. Andrew's in 1615; and in 1635 made Chancellor of Scotland. King Charles, when at Edinburgh in 1633, was crowned by him in the Chapel of Holyrood House. Archbishop Spottiswood was remarkable in his day for having made no less than fifty journeys to London, chiefly in the cause of Episcopacy. He died there Nov. 26, 1639, aged 74, and was buried in Westminster Abbey. See further in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary, several works there quoted, and Craufurd's Lives of the Officers of State.

² Appointed Clerk Register and a Lord of Session in 1632 and 1633. He is noticed in Scotstarvet's Staggering State of Scots Statesmen, p. 124.—His Speech contains some of the grossest flattery that has fallen within the scope of these volumes.

³ The following Speech, the Author of which was disappointed of its adoption, was prepared for the occasion by William Drummond, of Hawthornden. It is erroneously placed in the English Poets, among the poetical speeches he wrote for King Charles's entertainment at Edinburgh in 1633; but in the Memorials of State printed at the end of Drummond's History of Scotland, edit. 1681, it is expressly entitled, "An intended Speech at the West Gate of Edinburgh to King James, written by William Drummond, of Hawthornden: Sir; If Nature could suffer rocks to move and abandon their natural places, this Town, founded on the strength of rocks, (now, by the chearing rays of your Majestie's presence, taking not only motion but life,) had with her castles, temples, and houses, moved towards you, and besought you to acknowledge her yours and her indwellers your most humble and affectionate Subjects, and to believe how many souls are within her circuits, so many lives are devoted to your sacred Person and Crown. And here, Sir, she offers by me to the altar of your glory whole Hecatombs of most happy desires; praying all things may prove prosperous unto you; that every virtue and heroic grace which make a Prince eminent may with a long and blessed Government attend you; your Kingdom still flourishing abroad with bays, at home with olives; presenting you, Sir, who act the strong key of this little world of Great Britain, with those keys which cast up the gates of her affection, and design you power to open all the springs of the hearts of those her most loyal Citizens. Yet all this almost not necessary, for, as the rose at the fair appearing of the morning sun displayeth and spreadeth her purples, so at the very noise of your happy return to this your native Countrey, their hearts (if they could have shined through their breasts) were with joy

retained in fresh memorie, with consideration of the goodnesse of the Almighty God, considered with acknowledgement of the same, acknowledged with admiration, admired with love, and loved with joy; wherein our eyes behold the greatest humane felicitie our harts could wish, which is to feide upon the Royall countenance of our true Phœnix, the bright Starre of our Northerne Firmament, the ornament of our age, wherein wee are refreshed, yea revived with the heat and bright beames of our sunne (the powerfull adamant of our wealth), by whose removing from our hemisphære we were darkned, deepe sorrow and feare possessing our harts (without envying of your Majestie's happines and felicitie), our places of solace ever giving a newe heat to the fever of the languishing remembrance of our happinesse; the verie hilles and groves, accustomed of before to be refreshed with the dewe of your Majestie's presence, not putting on their wounted apparrell; but with pale lookes representing their miserie for the departure of their Royal King.

"I most humbly begge pardon of your sacred Majestie, who most unworthie and ungarnished by Art or Nature with rhetoricall coloures, have presumed to deliver to your sacred Majestie, formed by Nature and framed by Education to the perfection of all eloquence, the publike message of your Majestie's loyall subjectes heere convened; upon the verie knees of mine hart beseeching your sacred Majestie that mine obedience to my Superior's command may bee a sacrifice acceptable to expiate my presumption; your Majestie's wounted clemencie may give strength and vigour to my distrustfull spirites, in gracious acceptance of that which shall bee delivered, and pardoning myne escapes.

"Receive then, dread Sovereine, from your Majestie's faithfull and loyall subjectes, the Magistrats and Citizens of your Highness's good Towne of Edin-

and fair hopes made spacious. Nor did they ever in all parts feel a more comfortable heat than the glory of your presence at this time darteth upon them. The old forget their age, and look fresh and young at the appearance of so gracious a Prince; the young bear a part in your welcome, desiring many years of life, that they may serve you long; all have more joys than tongues. For, as the words of other nations go far beyond and surpass the affection of their hearts, so in this nation the affection of their hearts is far above all they can express by words. Daign then, Sir, from the highest of Majesty, to look down on their lowness and imbrace it; accept the homage of their humble minds, accept their grateful zeal; and for deeds accept that great good-will which they have ever carried to the high deserts of your ancestors, and shall ever to your own and your Royall Race, whilst those rocks shall be overshadowed with buildings, buildings inhabited by men, and while men be indued either with counsel or courage, or enjoy any piece of reason, sense, or life."

burgh, such welcome as is due from these, who with thankfull harts doe acknowledge the infinite blessinges plenteoslie flowing to them from the paradise of your Majestie's unspotted goodnes and vertue, wishing your Majestie's eyes might pearce into their verie hartes, there to behold the excessive joye inwardlie conceived of the first messenger of your Majestie's princelie resolution to visite this your Majestie's good Towne, increased by your Majestie's constancie in prosecuting what was so happilie intended, and nowe accomplished by your Majestie's fortunate and safe returne, which no tongue, howe liberall so ever, is able to expresse.

“Who shall consider with an unpartiall eye the continuall carefulnesse your Majestie hath had over us from your tender yeeres; the settled temper of your Majestie's government, wherein the nycest eye could find no spot, your selfe as the life of the Countrey, as the father of the people, instructing not so much by precept, as by example, your Majestie's Court, the mariage-place of wisdom and godlinesse; without impietie hee cannot refuse to avouch but, as your Majestie's prudence hath wonne the pryze from all Kings and Emperours which standeth in degrie of comparison, so hath your Majestie's government beene such, that everie man's eye may bee a messenger to his minde, that in your Majestie standeth the quintessence in ruling skill, of all prosperous and peaceable government,—much wished by our forefathers, but most abundantlie, praised be God, enjoyed by us, under your sacred Majestie. For if wee shall in a view lay before us the times past, even since the first foundation of this Kingdome, and therein consider your Majestie's most noble progenitours, they were indeede all Princes renowned for their vertues; not inferior to any Emperours or Kinges of their time, they maintained and delivered their virgine scepters unconquered, from age to age, from the inundation of the most violent floods of conquering sworde, which overwhelmed the rest of the whole earth, and carried the Crowns of all other Kings of this terrestrial globe captives unto thraldome; but farre short of your Majestie, nature having placed in your sacred person alone, what in everie one of them was excellent, the senate-house of the planets being, as it would seeme, convened at your Majestie's birth, for decreeing of all perfections in your Royall person; the Heavens and Earth witnessing your heroicall frame, none influence whatsoever being able to bring the same to any higher degree. If wee shall call to minde the tumultuous dayes of your Majestie's more tender yeeres, and therein your Majestie's prudence, wisdom, and constancie in uniting the disjoynted mem-

bers of this Commonwealth, who will not with the Queene of Sheba confesse hee hath seene more wisdom in your Royall person, than report hath brought to forraine eares. There is not of any estate or age within this your Majestie's Kingdome who hath not had particular experience of the same, and, as it were, sensiblie felt the fruites thereof. The fire of civile discorde, which as a flame had devoured us, was thereby quenched, everie man possessed his owne vineyard in peace, reaping that which hee had sowne, and enjoying the fruites of his owne labours. Your Majestie's great vigilancie and godlie zeale in propagating the Gospell, defacing the monuments of idolatrie, banishing that Romane and Antichristian hierarchie, and establishing of our Church, repairing the ruines thereof, protecting us from foraine invasion. The rich trophees of your Majestie's victories, more powerfullie atchieved by your sacred wisdom, and deserved more worthelie by your vertue than those of the Cæsars, so much extolled by the ancients, all ages shall recorde; and even our posteritie shall blesse the Almighty our God, for giving to us their forefathers a King, in hart upright as David, wise as Solomon, and godlie as Josias.

“And who can better wnesse your Majestie's Royal favour and beneficence then this your good Towne of Edinburgh, which being founded in the dayes of that worthie King Fergus the First builder of this Kingdome, and famous for her unspotted fidelitie to your Majestie's most noble progenitours, was by them enriched with manie freedoms, priviledges, and dignities, which all your Majestie hath not onlie confirmed, but also with accession of many more enlarged, beautifying her also with a new erected Colledge, famous for profession of all liberall sciences; so that shee justlie doeth acknowledge your Majestie as the author and conservor of her peace, her sacred Phisition, who bound up the woundes of her distracted Commonwealth, the only *magnes* of her prosperitie, and the true fountaine from whence, under God, all her happinesse and felicitie floweth, and doeth in all humilitie record your Majestie's Royall favours extended towards her at all tymes.

“Wee should proove most ungratefull, if wee should passe over in silence your Majestie's sacred wisdom in disposing of the government of this your Majestie's native Kingdome, during your Highness's absence, and placing such subalterne Magistrates and Officers of the Crowne, within the same, who have shined as cleare starres in this firmament, keeping ever the prescript of your Majestie's Royall commands, watching for the good of your Highness's subjects, and squar-

ing al their actions to your Majestie's frame, as their paterne; and returning al their springes to the same fountaine from whence they themselves received influence of vertue; being vigilant in nothing more than in procuring the good and peace of this Church and Commonwealth, to approve their loyaltie to your Majestie, and to knit us your Highnesse' subjects in a more firme knot of obedience to your sacred authoritie. Neither hath the oceane of your Majestie's vertues contained itselfe within the precinct of this Isle. What eare is so barbarous, that hath not heard of the same? What forraine Prince is not indebted to sacred wisdom? What reformed Church doeth not blesse your Majestie's birth-day, and is not protected under the wings of your Majestie's sacred authoritie from that beast of Rome and his Antichristian locustes, whose walles your Majestie, by the Sovereigne wisdom wherewith the Lord hath endewed your sacred person, hath battred and shaken more than did the Goths and Vandales the old frame of the same by their sworde. Would God, as your Majestie hath made happie beginnings in drying up their Euphrates, laying the nakednesse of that whoore open to the view of the world, and ruining of that Lernæan Hydra, so your Majestie's dayes may be prolonged to see the accomplishment of the same! All this your Majestie's Royall store-house of vertues, perpetuall vigilancie in managing of the publicke affaires, your prudence in your actions, your vertue in your life, and your felicitie in all, the Lord hath crowned, not onelie with continuance of your Majestie's peaceable government over us your native subjects, more yeeres nor anie of your predicessours' reignes attained unto; but also with accession of three great Kingdoms, and made your name famous thorow the whole earth above all the Princes of your time.

“ And therefore, wee your Majestie's most humble subjects doe in all submission of minds acknowledge your Majestie not only for our just and lawfull Prince, but also for the first founder of the United Monarchie of this famous Isle, borne for the good of the same, who during the whole time of your Majestie's most happie reigne hath so in publicke carried your selfe towards us your subjects (as if yee had been private), that no man could lay any imputation to your unspotted life; yee never more desiring to bee above us than for us, nor to bee accounted the great than good; joyning ever to power modestie and true pietie. And as for your sacred vertue your Majestie deserveth to bee Monarch of the world, so for your pietie and unfained zeale in propagating and mainteining of the Gospell, doeth of due apperteine to your Majestie the true titles of the most Christian and Catholicke King.

“For all which your Majestie’s Royall favours, having nothing to render but that which is due, wee your Majestie’s humble subjectes, prostrate at your Majestie’s sacred feete, lay downe our lives, goods, liberties, and whatsoever else is most deare unto us; and doe vow to keepe unto your sacred Majestie’s unspotted loyalty and subjection, and ever to bee readie to sacrifice our selves for maintenance of your Royall person and estate; praying th’ Eternall our God, that peace may bee within your Majestie’s walles, prosperitie within your Majestie’s palaces, length of dayes to your sacred person, one from your Majestie’s loynes never wanting to sway the scepter of these your Majestie’s kingdomes, and that mercie may bee to your selfe and seede for ever. Amen ¹.”

“After the deliverie of this præceding Speech, his Majestie made foorthward towards the great Church, and there having heard Sermon made by the Archbishop of Saint Androes, came to his Palace of Holyrude House; where, at the gate of the Inner Court, was presented one Booke of Verses ² from the Colledge

¹ The Muses’ Welcome, pp. 39—43.

² This was a quarto volume entitled: “ΝΟΣΤΩΔΙΑ. In serenissimi, potentissimi, et invictissimi Monarchæ Jacobi, Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Regis, Fidei Defensoris, &c. felicem in Scotiam Reditum Academiæ Edinburgensis Congratulatio. Edinburgi, excudebat Andreas Hart, anno 1617,” pp. 96. A copy of this, beautifully bound in crimson velvet and superbly gilt, is in the British Museum, and was probably the identical copy presented to the King. The Poems are all re-printed in “The Muses’ Welcome,” (though partially divided,) and therein occupy about 45 pages. Those printed in this place in that work, occupying 32 pages, consist of numerous short Latin Poems, and a few in Greek, by the following Authors: Tho. Hopæus, Henricus Charteris, Patricius Nisbetus, Patricius Sandæus, Jacobus Sandilandius, Thom. Synserfius, Thom. Nicolsonus, David Prymrosius, Alexander Peirsoun, Nicolaus Udward, Andreas Junius, Jacobus Reidus, Joannes Rayus, Jacobus Fairlie, Γάρεμος Βασιλειος, Andreas Stephanides, Robertus Stephanus, Alexander Douglasius, Gulielmus Scotus, Joannes Nimmo, Robertus Smithus, Jacobus Loganus, Georgius Synserfius, Robertus Balcanquall, and Jacobus Scotus.—The first of these was the great Sir Thomas Hope, of Craighall in Fife, ancestor of the Earl of Hopetoun. He was created a Baronet, Feb. 11, 1628, and was King’s Advocate from 1626 till his death, Nov. 1, 1646. See Douglas’s Peerage, by Wood, I. 741. — Henry Charteris was the eldest son of a wealthy Citizen, sundry times Bailie of Edinburgh, descended from the house of Kinfauns in Perthshire. He laureated in 1587; was elected one of the Regents or Professors of the University of Edinburgh 1589, Principal of the University 1599. He resigned that office in 1620, on being called to be Minister of North Leith, from whence he removed to the office of Professor of Divinity in 1627, and died in 1629, aged about 63. “He was certainly one of the most learned men of his time, both in the languages and in Philosophy and Divinity, but he had too low thoughts of himself, a fault (if a fault) known to few beside; was naturally adverse from public shows, which led him to decline presiding at the Disputation before the King at Stirling (see p. 370). Craufurd’s Univ. of Edinburgh, *passim*.—Patrick Nisbet is noticed in p. 324; of Patrick Sands see p. 368.—James Sandilands, son of Patrick Sandilands, Burgess of Edinburgh, was admitted

of Edinburgh, with this little Speech in their name, made by Mr. Patrick Nisbet¹:

"In effusissimâ hâc omnis ætatis, sexûs, et ordinum gratulatione, Augustissime, Invictissime Monarcha, Musasne dias tuas nutrices infami silentio obmutescere?

a Member of the Faculty of Advocates in 1604.—Thomas Synserf was Bishop, first of Brechin, then of Galloway, from which he was removed on the downfall of Episcopacy in 1638. He was the only Scotch Bishop that survived the Restoration, when he was reposed into his see. (Keith's Catalogue.) —Thomas Nicolson was either a learned Advocate of that name, admitted into the Faculty in 1612, or Sir Thomas Nicolson, of Carnock, Advocate, extolled by Sir George Mackenzie in his *Characteres Advocatorum*, who was admitted into the Faculty in 1594.—David Primrose was son of Archibald, ancestor of the Earls of Rosebery, and nephew of Gilbert Primrose, King James's Physician. He was a Member of the Faculty of Advocates, and acquired lands at Whitehouse, co. Edinburgh. Of his family see Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 401. He wrote in 1633 an English Poem of 554 lines, entitled, "Scotland's Welcome to her dread Sovereigne, King Charles," printed in 4to, pp. 10, of which there is a copy in the British Museum, bound with the "*Eisodia Edinburgensium*," which is the collection of the verses of Edinburgh College on King Charles the First's visit in 1633. —Nicol Udward was an Edinburgh Merchant; see pp. 316, 371.—Of Andrew Young and James Reid see at the Stirling Disputation, p. 368.—John Ray, born in the county of Forfar, was educated in the University of Edinburgh, where he laureated in 1597. Having been employed in divers private charges before his coming to the College, and thereby well seen in Humanity, he was elected Professor thereof in the same year. He was removed to be Master of the High School of Edinburgh in 1606, and died in that charge in February 1630, aged 62. (Crauf. Univ. Edinb. pp. 41, 64, 116.)—Of James Fairlie and William King see hereafter at the Stirling Disputation, p. 368.—Andrew Stephenson was of a Senatorian family, and son of an honest Burgess of the same names. He was educated at the University of Edinburgh, where he laureated 1609, was chosen to fill the chair of Professor Andrew Young during his illness in 1611, on the recovery of that Gentleman was appointed Professor of Humanity, but finally succeeded him on his resignation in 1623. In 1639 he was called to the Deanery of Dunbar. Craufurd, *passim*.—Alexander Douglas laureated at the University of Edinburgh, 1607; was appointed Porter of the College there 1608; and called to the ministry of Whittingham, co. Haddington, 1612. Craufurd, pp. 68, 70, 78. He was a contributor to the *Eisodia*, 1633. —So was Robert Smith. —Robert Balcanqual was probably the same as is mentioned by Craufurd, pp. 51, 94, as Minister of Tranent, co. Haddington.—I have met with a distinct publication of an Edinburgh Poet, entitled: "*Carmen Gratulatorium, ad serenissimum, potentissimum, et invictissimum Monarcham, Jacobum, id nominis sextum, Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Regem, Fidei Defensorem, &c. Authore Samuele Kello, Scoto, Academiæ Edinburgensis Alumno. Edinburgi, excudebat Andreas Hart, anno Dom. 1617.*" 4to, pp. 12. A copy is in the British Museum, presented by George III. Some anagrammatic devices, &c. instead of being printed from wood-cuts, are very neatly inserted with a pen.

¹ Probably the same as Patrick Nisbet, of Eastbank, appointed a Lord of Session in 1636, and father of Sir John Nisbet, of Derleton, Lord of Session and King's Advocate. He was the author of seven small pieces of Latin poetry in the "*Book of Verses*" above mentioned, and was also a contributor to the *Eisodia*, 1633.

“Vacuos Numini sistere se nefas. Quo munere Sacratissimam tuam Majestatem, affluentissimam jugis munificentiae scaturiginem, colamus? Anticyram able-gandum sentias, qui guttulâ Oceanum auctare, faculâ Soli prælucere conetur. Oceanus tamen patulo sinu emissitios suos rivulos undique in se refluxentes accipit. Quin ad suam quoque Augustissimam Majestatem, unicam Musarum almam parentem, benignissimam fautricem, acerrimam promotricem, quicquid pectoribus nostris Castalii humoris infudisti, gratâ reciprocatione redundare debeat.

“Si enim, monitu exactissimi munificentiae finitoris, Munera accipientium ingeniis et studiis prudenter accommodanda sunt, quid illustrissimæ tuæ Majestati, peritissimæ Carminum Artifici, imò commentitio illo Apolline multò Vatribus præsentiori Deo, Carminibus gratius, acceptius, opportuniusve offerre Philomusi queant?

“Hæc itaque, Rex Ter-maxime, rarissimum pietatis, prudentiæ, mansuetudinis, et felicitatis exemplar, hæc, inquam, Poëmatiae quæ Serenissimæ tuæ Majestati Academia Edinburgena, devotissimi sui obsequii, flammatisissimi studii, humillimæ venerationis pignora exhibet, placidissimo illo tuo aspectu dignare, quotot millium corda hodierno die lætitiâ incredibili, indelebili perfudisti. Quodque unicum tenuitati nostræ præstabile officium superest, Deum Opt. Max. obstinatissimis precibus fatigabimus, Sacram tuam Majestatem fidissimo providentiæ suæ munimine cingat, mitissimâ favoris umbrâ protegat, omnia vota et incæpta tua cumulatissemè secundet, clarissimisque Regnorum coronis ultimam, auctissimam, immarcescibilem sempiternæ gloriæ (Nestoreos annos supergresso) in cœlis Coronam accumulet ¹.”

The Citizens of Edinburgh entertained the King with a sumptuous Banquet ².

On the King's entry into the Town of Linlithgow ³, on what day we are not informed, the following Speech, preserved among the Poems of Drummond,

¹ The Muses' Welcome, p. 44.

² Maitland's History of Edinburgh.

³ The Royal Burgh of Linlithgow, 16 miles from Edinburgh, is an ancient town now in decay. The Palace is one of the most interesting ruins in this part of the country. It stands on a rising ground running into a lake. A fort was first founded on the spot by King Edward the First, who resided in it for a whole winter. After changing owners more than once, on the accession of the Stuart family, it became a fixed Royal residence, and the Queens of Scotland had it in several instances assigned to them as a jointure house. James the Fourth was more attached to it than any of his Palaces, and he ornamented it greatly, as did James the Fifth. Here was born, Dec. 8, 1542, the unfortunate Queen Mary. One side of the magnificent square was built by our King James, and was kept in good repair till 1746, when, being used as a barrack, it was accidentally set on fire by the King's

was pronounced by Mr. James Wiseman, School-master there, enclosed in a plaster made in the figure of a Lion :

“Thrice Royal Sir, here I do you beseech,
Who art a Lion, to hear a Lion’s Speech,
A miracle,—for since the days of *Æsop*,
No Lion till these times his voice dared raise up
To such a Majesty ; then, King of Men,
The King of Beasts speaks to thee from his den ;
Who, though he now enclosed be in plaster,
When he was free, was Lithgow’s wise Schoolmaster.”

Another intermediate stage of the King’s, between Edinburgh and Falkland, was probably the Queen’s Palace of Dunfermline¹, a place to which the King is traditionally said to have resorted on this visit to “his ancient Kingdom.”

“There is a tradition that James the Sixth, revisiting his native country, and hunting in the neighbourhood of Dunfermline, invited the company then attending him to dine along with him at a Collier’s House, meaning the Abbey of Culross², then belonging to Sir George Bruce³. The works at Culross appear to

troops. The pediments over the windows are dated 1619. The Church, a fine building, adorned with a handsome spire, on the top of which is an imperial crown, is still used for parochial service. Four beautiful plates in the Provincial Antiquities of Scotland represent views of the Town, of the interior square of the Palace, of the interior of the hall, and of the gateway and Church. There is also a view of the Palace in the Beauties of Scotland, and another in Pennant’s Tour in Scotland.

¹ Dunfermline was at a very early period the residence of the Scottish monarchs. Malcolm Canmore usually lived there in a castle, built on a peninsulated hill, in a valley near the town. The Palace was afterwards built, not far from the tower, in a most romantic situation. It was repaired and partly re-built by Queen Anne in 1600, the monastic buildings being probably converted into part of it. Here Charles the First was born November 19 that year. There is a view of the magnificent ruins of this Abbey and Palace in Pennant’s Tour in Scotland, and another, in a different point of view, in Paul Sandby’s *Virtuosi’s Museum*.

² The Abbey of Culross, now the seat of the Earl of Dundonald, built on the site of a Cistercian Abbey, founded in 1217 by Malcolm Thane of Fife, the ruins of which are now but small. The princely mansion is said to have been built about 1590, by Edward Bruce, first Lord Kinloss.—The Barony of Culross, however, did not belong to the Bruce family, having been granted to the family of Colvill at the dissolution. Sir James Colvill had in 1609 been created a Peer by the title of Lord Colvill of Culross, and his grandson James, afterwards second Lord, had a charter of the Lordship and Barony as near the date of the King’s visit as Oct. 9, 1616.

³ Sir George Bruce was a younger brother of the first Lord Kinloss. He was a man well acquainted with the trade and manufactures of his country, and by his spirited exertions attained to great wealth. He settled at Culross, and not only established there these extensive coal-works, but

have been in their most flourishing state a little before and some time after James's Accession to the throne of England. They were then wrought a considerable way under the sea, or at least where the sea overflowed at full tide, and the coals were carried out to be shipped by a moat within the sea-mark, which had a subterraneous communication with the coal-pit. Being conducted by his own desire to see the works below ground, he was led insensibly by his host and guide to the moat above-mentioned, it being then high-water. Having ascended from the coal-pit, and seeing himself, without any previous intimation, surrounded by the sea, he was seized with an immediate apprehension of some plot against his liberty or life, and called out 'Treason!' but his faithful guide quickly dispelled his fears, by assuring him that he was in perfect safety, and pointing to an elegant pinnace that was made fast to the moat, desired to know whether it was most agreeable to his Majesty to be carried ashore in it, or to return by the same way he came; upon which the King, preferring the shortest way back, was carried directly ashore, expressing much satisfaction at what he had seen¹."

In due provision for his Majesty's sports at Falkland, the Privy Council issued, on the 14th of January 1617, the following "Proclamation againis the slaying of his Majestie's Buckis" in that Park:

"Forsamekle as the Kingis Majestie has geven directioun and command to brek and mak oppin the park and dyke of his Majestie's Park of Falkland in some pairtis thair of, to the effect that the buckis and beastes within the same may sometymes raik further thair of, that so being acquentit with the voyde and oppin pairtis of the dykes his Majestie, at his coming heir, God willing, to the hunting this approtcheing sommer, may haif the better occasioun of his sporte and gayme; and whereas his Majestie doubtis not bot that all honnest and dewtifull subjectis, oute of that reverent respect and regaird whilk they carye to his Majestie, will forbear to hunt or slay one of the beastis that sall raik further of the said Park

also carried on the manufacture of salt to a great extent, and was engaged in a considerable foreign trade. He had two charters under the Great Seal, to George Bruce, Burgess of Culross, of all the coal within the lordship of Culross, dated Dec. 20, 1598, and Oct. 17, 1600. He was styled of Carnock, of which barony he had a charter, May 4, 1602. He was knighted by King James before his accession to the English Crown; was representative in Parliament of the Burgh of Culross; and was one of the Scottish Commissioners appointed in 1604 to treat of the intended Union. He died May 6, 1625. His grandson Edward was created Earl of Kincardine in 1647, and his descendant Thomas the present and seventh Earl of Elgin is the eleventh Earl of Kincardine.

¹ Beauties of Scotland, vol. IV. p. 293; and Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. I. p. 517.

this present yeir, or to do any other thing whilk may be a latt or hinder to his Majestie's sporte and gayme, yett becaus it is like aneugh that some undeutifull personis, in contempt of his Majestie and misregaird of his Majestie's pleasor and contentment, will hunt or slay suche of the beastis of the said Park as thay sall find straigling and raking through the cuntrey; his Majestie thairfoir, with advise of the Lordis of his Secreit Counsall, ordanis letteris to be direct, to command, chaarge, and inhibite all and sindrie his Majestie's liegis and subjectis, of quhat estate, qualitie, degree, or conditioun soevir thay be, that nane of thame presooome nor take upoun hand to hurt or slay ony of the buckis or beastis that sall raik furthe of the said Park this present yeir, under the panes following, to be incurrit be the persone or persones quhatsomever that sall violat or contraveene this present Act or Proclamatioun, that is to say: — everie Erll, fyve hundreth markis; everie Lord, foure hundreth markis; everie Baron, three hundreth markis; every Landit Gentilman, one hundreth markis; and everie common man, fourty pundis; certifieing thame that failyies or dois in the contrair that the saidis panes sall be upliftit of thame, and they sall be otherwayes punist in thair personis at the arbitrement of his Majestie's Counsall¹."

On the 19th of May, the King's Majesty came to his Palace of Falkland², where, in the name of the Town of Aberdeen, a long Latin Poem³ was pre-

¹ "Documents relative to the Reception at Edinburgh of the Kings and Queen of Scotland," p. 55.—On the same day there is an "Agreement with the tennentis of the Park of Halirudhouse, That the said Park may be keepit and hayned for the pasturing and feeding of some wedderis and otheris bestiall for the furnishing of his Majestie's House," &c.

² The Royal Palace of Falkland, like that of Linlithgow, is now in ruins. It was originally one of the Seats of the Macduffs, Earls of Fife, and was forfeited to the Crown in 1424. It was greatly enlarged and ornamented by James the Fifth, and from the pleasantness of its situation, and the conveniency of the adjacent country for hunting, was made a Royal residence. It was also on that account a favourite place of James the Sixth. The South front, of which there is a view in Cardonnel's Picturesque Antiquities of Scotland, and another in Pennant's Tour, is yet remarkably entire, and partly inhabited. The east wing was accidentally burnt in the time of Charles the Second, and of it a great part of the naked and mouldering walls still remain. Of the rest few vestiges are now to be seen. The Park which surrounded the Palace abounded with oaks, which were cut down by Cromwell's army to build barracks at Perth. In the neighbourhood, says Pennant, are several houses, marks of the munificence of our King James, who built and bestowed them on his attendants. His bounty is acknowledged by grateful inscriptions on the walls, mostly in this style: "Al praise to God, and thankis to the most excellent Monarche of Great Britane, of whose liberalitie this is my portioune. Nicol Moncrief. 1610."

³ Of 319 hexameters; it is printed in "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 77—85, re-printed in "Delitiae

sented to him, which had been composed by David Wedderburn, Rector of the Grammar School, at the request of the Corporation, and for which that person received from the Treasurer a present of fifty marks in money¹.

It was expected that the King would have honoured Aberdeen with his presence, and with reason, for "the Magistrates received early intelligence, by letter from the Privy Council, of his Majesty's intentions to remain for some time in Scotland for his 'sport and game;' and they were, at the same time, advised that he proposed, 'to pay a visit to the chief Boroughs of the Kingdom, particularly Aberdeen; which, being among the best, his Majesty was so much the more anxious that all things be so orderly provided there, that there appear no marks of incivility, or token of penury or scant; and, therefore recommending that lodgings be prepared in the most handsome, civil, and courtly manner with good bedding, well washed and well smelled napperie, clear and clean vessels, of sufficient largeness, plenty of provisions and vivers; the streets to be kept clear of 'beggars and middings.' This minutely detailed dispatch being communicated to the Citizens, assembled in their Head Court, they most cheerfully promised the strictest observance of the injunctions which had been given, and arranged matters accordingly. However well prepared they may have been for the Royal party, they were extremely mortified by the disappointment which they met with in not being honoured with a visit from his Majesty. The King, although he was in the neighbourhood², did not gratify the Citizens with his presence; but many of his attendants repaired to the Town, where they were received with the *Poetorum Scotorum*," 1637, and copied in Kennedy's *Annals of Aberdeen*, 4to, 1818. In the same volumes will be found a farewell Poem by the same author copied from the "*Exodia*," and entitled "*Charitum Abredonensium Propempticon Regiæ Majestati extremis Scotiæ finibus excedenti*." This in the original consists of 271 hexameters, with an introductory ode of 24 lines.—"David Wedderburn, the friend of Dr. Arthur Johnston, and a Grammarian of considerable eminence, was, says Mr. Irving in his *Scottish Poets*, "a successful cultivator of Latin poetry. His *Elegy* addressed to Johnston is one of the modern Poems particularized by Mr. Wasse. His posthumous edition of *Persius* which by the care of his brother Alexander, was published at Amsterdam, ought to have secured him a respectable place among our Philologists." He produced a "*Lessus*" on the death of Prince Henry (see vol. II. p. 511);—it is, with several of his Poems, re-printed in *Delitiæ Poetarum Scotorum*. He was elected Rector of the Grammar School at Aberdeen in 1602; and resigned in 1640 with a pension of 200 marks. He was not popular with his pupils, and in 1612 experienced an uncommonly determined rebellion from them. Of this and other incidents of his life see Kennedy's *Annals of Aberdeen*, vol. II. pp. 126, 127.

¹ Ibid. vol. I. p. 187.

² The present Editor has not ascertained his being nearer than Dundee—a distance of more than 60 miles from Aberdeen, and not half way thither from Edinburgh.

greatest marks of attention and respect. Here they remained for some time, and were hospitably entertained at the expence of the community. The following attendants of the King were admitted Burgesses of the Guild on this occasion:—Sir Thomas Gerard, Baronet, Gentleman of his Majesty's Privy Chamber¹; Sir Thomas Puiridok², one of his Majesty's Sellers; Sir Edward Zutche, one of the Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber³; Sir George Goring, Lieutenant of his Majesty's Pensioners³; Sir John Leid, Sir Theobald Gorges⁴, Gentlemen Ushers of his Majesty's Privy Chamber; Dr. Chalmers, Physician to his Majesty⁵; George Spence, Esquire, one of his Carvers⁶; Francis Knightlie, one of his Cup-bearers⁷; Thomas Stephaine, Cup-bearer Extraordinary; David Ray, one of his Majesty's Body Guard; James Auchmuty, Patrick Abercrombie⁸, Richard Caulvele, Grooms of the Privy Chamber; Adam Hill, Page to his Majesty's Privy Chamber⁹; John Freyand, Serjeant-at-Arms; Duncan Primrose, Serjeant Surgeon¹⁰; John Wolfrumla, Apothecary¹¹; and Archibald Armstrong¹². Before James returned to England he granted a renovation of the ancient charters of the Borough, by which he confirmed, in the most ample manner, all the former rights, privileges, and immunities of the Citizens. The charter of confirmation is dated at Falkland, 17th July¹³."

On the 22d of May, the King came to Kinnaird¹⁴, the seat of Sir John Livingston¹⁵, where were presented to his Majesty a very long Latin Poem, entitled,

¹ See vol. II. p. 423. ² Penruddock. ³ See p. 255. ⁴ See p. 176. ⁵ See p. 259.

⁶ See a David and a John Spence in the Free Gifts of 1606 and 1607, vol. II. pp. 124, 191.

⁷ See under Aug. 9 this year.

⁸ See p. 267; and vol. II. p. 725.

⁹ See p. 334.

¹⁰ He received £.40 *per annum* when Surgeon in Ordinary. He was probably a son of Gilbert Primrose, who was Serjeant Surgeon (see vol. II. pp. 41, 151), and whose father's name was Duncan. See Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 401, under the title of Earl of Rosebery, which noble family were descended from Archibald brother to Gilbert.

¹¹ The same person as John Wolfgang Rumlero, Apothecary to the King, with a yearly fee of £.40. Abstract of his Majesty's Revenew, attached to the First fourteen years of King James.

¹² The celebrated Fool of the King and his son Charles.—David Wedderburn introduced nearly all these names (those of Dr. Chalmers, Auchmuty, Abercromby, and Archy, alone excepted), with suitable compliments, into his farewell verses to the King. This is the more worthy of notice here, as the passage (of 21 lines) is omitted in the *Delitiæ Poetarum Scotorum*, and consequently, in the *Annals of Aberdeen*. ¹³ Kennedy's *Annals of Aberdeen*, from the Council Register, vol. xlviii.

¹⁴ A charter of the Barony of Kinnaird in Fife was granted to Sir John Livingston, of Kinnaird, in 1618. It was now a romantic ruin, a view of which may be seen in the *Beauties of Scotland*.

¹⁵ Sir John was descended from Robert, second son of Sir John Livingston, of Calendar, ancestor of the Earls of Linlithgow. He was created a Baronet of Scotland in 1627, and dying in March

"Nemo¹," and signed Joannes Leochæus²; and a "Welcome" in English verse³, by Alexander Craig; of Rose-craig⁴.

On the 24th of May, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote, from London, to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Queen would not let Mr. Comptroller [Sir Thomas Edmonds] depart for France till she had feasted him [on May 11]. Most of the Council keep at Greenwich about her, saving such as have necessary attendance at the Term; and these come still on Saturday night, and tarry Sunday. The rest are only absent on Star-chamber days, which have been few or none this Term, by reason of the Lord Keeper's indisposition, which hath greatly hindered both the Court and the Chancery. In truth the general opinion is that he hath so tender a constitution both of body and mind, that he will hardly be able to undergo the burthen of so much business as his place requires.

"The Lord Coke and his Lady have great wars at the Council-table. The first time she came accompanied with the Lord Burghley and his Lady, the Lord Danvers, the Lord Denny, Sir Thomas Howard and his Lady, with I knew not how many more; and declaimed so bitterly against him, or so carried herself that divers said Burbage⁵ could not have acted better. Indeed it seems he hath carried himself very simply (to say no more) in divers matters; and no doubt he shall be sifted thoroughly, for the King is much incensed against him, and by his own weakness he hath lost those few friends he had.

"We have little out of Scotland since the King's being there; only here is an idle report⁶ that the King of Denmark should be come thither.

1628, left a son and heir James, Gentleman of the Bed-chamber to Charles the First, created Viscount of Newburgh in 1647, and Earl in 1660. See Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 308.

¹ Of 474 hexameters, printed, with a prose Latin introduction, in pp. 86—98 of "The Muses' Welcome."

² John Leech is noticed by Irving (I. 103), among the many other Scotchmen of this period that have been commended for their Latin poetry. He was a friend of Sir John Balfour, and Sir John Scot, of Scotstarvet, themselves also Poets. Irving (II. 300) mentions a Poem of his to the former; and in the Delitiæ Poet. Scot. vol. II. p. 483, is one dated Paris to the latter, signed "Joannes Leochæus, D. S. P. Edinburgum," followed by an answer by Sir John.

³ Of 172 lines, printed in "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 99—103.

⁴ Who died in 1627, when James his son was served his heir. (Inq. rot. in pub. arch.)

⁵ The best actor of the day; see p. 237.

⁶ Probably unfounded, as it does not appear elsewhere noticed.

"Some speech there is likewise how the Burghers of Edinburgh received him in scarlet gowns, and more than an hundred in velvet coats and chains of gold, three hundred musketeers in white sattin doublets and velvet hose; and that they presented him with 10,000 marks in gold. But these things, it is like, you shall have there sooner than we; for the King hath given order for cherries and other fruit to come over to him from those parts, and as being the shorter cut ¹."

On the 30th of May, the "King's Majestie came from Kinaird to the Burgh of Dondee², when at his entrie this subsequent Speech was delivered in name of the Towne by Mr. Alexander Wedderburne their Clerke³:

"Albeit the commoun feares which perplex most confident Orators may dash and confound my spirit, justlie suspecting my owne weaknes in speaking to your sacred Majestie, most mightie King, and our most gracious Sovraigne Lord; yet being upholdin by the long experience which I have had from time to time of your Majestie's most myld and gracious acceptance of the speaches delivered by your Majestie's most humble subjects, of whose number I doe acknowledge myselfe one of the meanest, I am emboldned, at the desyre of the Magistrates, Counsellours, and whole bodie of this your Majestie's ancient, free Regal Burgh, to offer to your most excellent Majestie, that hartie welcom from them, whose inward grieffe conceaved for your Majestie's long absence is turned in excessive joy in regaird of your Majestie's most Princelie resolution (now reallie effectuat) to honour this your Majestie's most ancient Kingdome with your Royall and most comfortable presence; an inestimable blessing to all, bot cheiflie to us, who have not onlie participat of the commoun benefits which all your Majestie's good subjects doe injoy under your Majestie's most happy government, I meane puritie of religion, peace, and securitie, by sea and by land, at home and abroad, so that no hieresie hath toleration, no oppression the badge of authoritie, no insolence the mark of greatnes, within all your Majestie's dominions, the meanest living under his owne fig-tree, but feare of wrong, both in the Highlands and Borders, and the mightiest kept under your Majestie's obedience and feare of the lawes; but also besids these, a more particular blessing to

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² The Royal Burgh of Dundee in the County of Forfar is a large and well-built Town, formed, as most others in Scotland, of stone. In the account of this place in the Beauties of Scotland, no mansion is mentioned at which we might presumptively fix the King's lodgings.

³ Of Kingennie. See Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. I. p. 467.

us, who have teasted so abundantlie of your Majestie's bountefull goodnes and fatherlie care laitlie kythed in the quenshing and extinguishing (by your Majestie's most Princelie and prudent directions given to the Lords of your Majestie's most honorable Privie Counsale,) of that fire of sedition which was kindled within our bowels, to the apparent overthrow and combustion of our whole estate; and in the setting and establishing of a solid peace amongst us by the meanes of justice, whereof wee have most sensiblie found both sweet and profitable fruits ever since. Of these manifold blessings to speak what wee can is not now convenient, and to speak what we shuld is not possible. This one thing wee must say, that wee have more then just cause to welcome to these our meane territories your sacred Majestie, whome wee have ever ludged in our hearts since the first houre of your Majestie's most happie nativitie.

"Receave then, most gracious Soveraine, that hartie welcome which wee all most humblie offer from true and weell approved hearts; and here wee doe lay down at your Majestie's feete oure lyves, our liberties, our goods, and all other meanes granted to us by God, to be sacrificed in your Majestie's service, without any privat respect or consideration whatsoever. Praying the King of Kings that your Majestie's Royall person may bee ever saife from all treasonable practises, your Highness's naturall lyfe extended to the possibilitie of nature, and your Royall progenie and race, by lineall succession sitting upon your Imperiall throne, may have one period with the world. Amen."

His Majestie was also welcomed at Dundee by two Latin Poems, one composed by Peter Goldman, M. D. and the other by James Glegg, both residents in the Town¹.

On the 3d of June, the Earl of Buckingham wrote from Edinburgh to the Lord Keeper Bacon, that "his Majesty, God be thanked, is very well and safely returned from his hunting journey²."

On the 4th, Mr. Secretary Winwood wrote thus, from Greenwich, to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"His Majesty being returned from the furthest parts of his Journey into Scot-

¹ The first, entitled "Sylva," is of 50 hexameters, and the latter, "Ad Regem Εγκομισστικόν," consists of ten elegiac couplets.—Dr. Goldman's Poem is inserted in the *Delitiæ Poet. Scot.* with another, entitled, "Ad eundem abeuntem desiderium Patriæ," and some others, one of them being addressed to Margaret Jack his mother on the sad and premature deaths of four of her sons. See also Monteth's *Theater of Mortality*, vol. II. p. 47.

² Bacon's Works, vol. III. p. 520.

land, is now at Edinburgh, where a Parliament is shortly to be held. He is, God be thanked, in very good health, and so are the Queen and Prince here. The 7th of July I set forward to Scotland. I leave my Secretary John More to receive and send unto me all letters and packets ¹."

On the same day Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote, from London, to the same Ambassador:

"We hear little out of Scotland but that the Parliament is now beginning, and that our English are extraordinarily respected, especially our Nobles, to whom the King makes much caresses, and hath them as his guests. The Earl of Buckingham is made of the Council there, and hath his place above the rest as Master of the Horse.

"All our Pensioners that went with the King are knighted there, that were undubbed before, and all the Gentlemen of Yorkshire; so that there is scarce left an Esquire to uphold the race. And the Order is descended somewhat lower, even to Adam Hill, that was the Earl of Montgomery's barber, and to one Green, husband to the Queen's laundress, an host of Doncaster, and to another that lately kept an Inn at Rumford ². And a youth, one Conie, is come into consideration as to become a piece of Favourite, brought in by the Earl of Bucking-

¹ Letters of Sir Dudley Carleton, p. 135.—The Secretary never went to Scotland. In his letter to Sir Dudley, July 7, he says: "I am yet uncertain when I shall begin my Journey that way; for though I formerly intended to set forward as upon this day, the present constitution of his Majesty's affairs will not permit that I should remove from hence until I shall further understand his Majesty's pleasure therein;" and on the 26th the question seems decided in the negative: "My journey into Scotland is stayed. His Majesty was pleased to refer it to my discretion to go or stay, as the good of his service should require. But when I had made choice to go, and was resolved within three days after to set forward, the Lords demanded my attendance here; and, for my better discharge, signified to his Majesty by their letters, how necessary the presence of a Secretary is in this place in the absence both of himself and the Lords, for they are now all dispersed, every one unto his several home." Ibid. pp. 148, 155.

² These observations of Mr. Chamberlain are not confirmed by examination with Philipot's Catalogue of Knights. The name of Adam Hill, who was Page of the King's Privy-chamber (see p. 330), does not occur therein, nor does that of Mr. Gargrave, who was the King's Host at Doncaster. Richard Green, if the same person as Mr. Chamberlain alludes to, was knighted as Clerk of the Band of Gentlemen Pensioners. It is still more remarkable that the Pensioners, according to Philipot, were not knighted till July 17, more than a month after the date of Mr. Chamberlain's letter.

ham; and the wags talk, as if he were in possibility to be made Viscount Conie¹, and they play knavishly upon his name with,

“ News, news out the North!—and yet none,
The King loves a Conie, and yet loves not one.

“ All the mean Officers of the Household are likewise said to be knighted, so that Ladies are like to be in little request.

“ Secretary Winwood makes account to set forward towards Scotland the 7th of July, where he is like to make little stay, if the King hold his removes as they are set down. But we hear rather that he doth hasten them, and means to return by the way that he went, for that the ways by Cumberland, Lancashire, and Cheshire, are said to be impassible for coaches, besides incommodious lodging and other inconveniences. But this is only whispered yet, and perhaps will not fall out.

“ The new Viscount Brackley, the Lord Chancellor's son, was the last week made Earl of Bridgewater by patent, which now will become as good a way to all intents and purposes as by investiture.

“ Sir Edward Coke and his Lady, after so much animosity and wrangling, are lately made friends, and his curst heart hath been forced to yield to more than ever he meant, but upon this agreement he flatters himself that she will prove a very good wife. He hath likewise compounded with the French Ambassador about the bailing of a pirate which lay heavy upon him, wherein the Queen by Mr. Secretary Winwood's means stood him in good stead, though it hath cost him the setting on, some say, very near £.4000. But though he had it out a great while, yet he was driven at last to the rule, *redimus te captum quàm queas minimo*².”

On the 6th of June, Mr. Secretary Lake wrote from Edinburgh to Sir Dudley Carleton, saying that he had there on the 4th received his Lordship's last letters, “ his Majesty being newly returned from a hunting journey, which he made fifty miles further into the country immediately on his arrival here.

“ We are fixed for a time to this City till the Parliament be passed, which beginneth the 17th of this month. In the mean while his Majesty is in consultation, by way of preparation, towards *his ends*, — that is, to procure better

¹ This probably relates to Edward Conway, knighted March 25, 1617-18, and afterwards (in 1627) actually created a Viscount.

² Birch's MSS. 4173.

maintenance than the ministry [clergy] here hath, and some conformity between this Church and ours in England in the public service, whereof of the first it is hard to guess the success, so many great men are interested in the tythes. Towards the other his Majesty hath set up his Chapel here in like manner of service as it is in England, which is yet frequented well by the people of the country.

"When the Parliament is passed, our Journey homewards beginneth, which we long for, although we have here very kind and magnificent entertainment; but we would fain have some pleasure of our own homes this summer¹."

On the 8th of June, being Whitsunday, Bishop Andrews preached before the King in "Halyrud House," on Luke, iv. 18, 19². On the same day Sir Thomas Lake, eldest son of the Secretary, was knighted at Edinburgh³."

On the 11th, in a Letter dated Edinburgh, the Earl of Buckingham again assured the Lord Keeper Bacon that "his Majesty is very well, and receiveth much contentment in his Journey⁴."

On the same day the King repaired to the Palace of Dalkeith⁵, the seat of

¹ Letters of Sir Dudley Carleton, p. 136.

² The Discourse is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Tenth on the Sending of the Holy Ghost.

³ He died s. p.

⁴ Bacon's Works, vol. III. p. 521.

⁵ Dalkeith House, now the principal seat in Scotland of the Duke of Buccleugh, and honoured by the residence of his present Majesty George the Fourth on his auspicious Visit to Scotland in 1822, was anciently a place of considerable strength, and stood some sieges. It was situated on a perpendicular rock of great height, and inaccessible on all sides except the east, and there defended by a foss. It was for some centuries the residence of the noble family of Morton, and was styled, "The Lion's Den of the celebrated Regent." On his execution the Barony of Dalkeith was included in his attainder, and although the whole was finally restored to the family, yet the Castle seems long to have been considered as Crown property, and used as such. Monipenny, who published his Description of Scotland in 1612, classes among the Palaces appertaining to the King, "the Palace of Dalkeith, reserved for the use of the Prince, with the orchard, garden, banks, and woods adjoining thereunto, within four miles of Edinburgh." In the eventful year 1639 the Duke of Hamilton, then Royal Commissioner, occupied Dalkeith House during his unavailing disputes with the Covenanters. Francis Earl of Buccleugh purchased the estate from the Earl of Morton in 1642. A new front and wings were added after the Restoration by Ann Duchess of Buccleugh and Monmouth, but the thick walls of the ancient Castle still remain. The Park, in which the North and South Eske join their streams, is eminently beautiful. These particulars are chiefly taken from the Provincial Antiquities of Scotland, by Sir Walter Scott, in which elegant work is a view of the Town of Dalkeith, and another of the Church.

the Earl of Morton, afterwards High Treasurer of Scotland¹, where he was welcomed with several short Latin Poems².

Again, on the 13th of June, Mr. Secretary Lake wrote, from Edinburgh, to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"We are now towards a Parliament, which beginneth on Thursday next, and will not hold above ten days; and, that being done about the beginning of next month, we shall begin a Progress here, but towards home, and his Majesty keepeth his purpose to be at Carlisle the 5th of August³."

"On the 19th, the King's Majestie's most happie nativitie was celebrat in the Castle of Edinburgh, the proper day and place thereof⁴; where at his Majestie's entrie in the Castle was delivered ane Hebrew Speech by Andrew Ker⁵, a boy of

¹ William Douglas, seventh Earl of Morton, succeeded his father in that title in 1606. He possessed excellent abilities, highly improved by a liberal education and foreign travel. He was early appointed a Privy Councillor in Scotland, and a Gentleman of the Bed-chamber to King James, in which office he was continued by Charles. [He was constituted High Treasurer of Scotland, April 12, 1630; held that office till 1635, when he was appointed Captain of the Yeomen of the Guard; and he was invested with the Garter and sworn a Privy Councillor in England. In 1641 he was nominated to the office of High Chancellor, but this nomination being opposed in Parliament by his son-in-law the Marquis of Argyll with much heat, the King passed therefrom. Before the Civil Wars broke out, the Earl of Morton was one of the richest subjects in the Kingdom, but espousing the Royal cause with zeal, he advanced such considerable sums for its support, that he disposed, for that purpose, of the noble property of Dalkeith and other estates to the value of no less than £.100,000 Scots of yearly rent. On that account the islands of Orkney and Zetland, with the whole jurisdictions and royalties belonging to them, were granted to his Lordship, June 14, 1643, by Royal charter, redeemable by the Crown on payment of £.30,000 sterling. When Charles the First came to the Scottish army in 1646, the Earl of Morton went to Newcastle to wait on his Majesty; he afterwards retired to Orkney, where he died, August 7, 1648, aged 65. He was succeeded by his eldest son Robert. Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 274.

² Which occupy pp. 109—115 of "The Muses' Welcome." The first, entitled, "Dalkethensis Philomela," was by A. Simonides, — Andrew Simson, an Elegy to whom is printed among the Poems of David Hume, of Godscroft, in the *Delitiæ Poet. Scot.* vol. I. p. 378; six are by Gualterus Ballentinus, J. Licent.; and the last is signed Arthurus Muirhead.

³ Letters to and from Sir D. Carleton, p. 137.

⁴ The King was born in Edinburgh Castle, June 19, 1566.

⁵ Perhaps the same as Andrew, son of John Ker, Minister of Preston, co. Haddington, educated at the University of Bourges, where he distinguished himself; admitted Advocate 1633; appointed Lord of Session in 1655; and extolled by Sir George Mackenzie in his *Characteres Advocatorum*. — No Hebrew is printed in "The Muses' Welcome."

nyne yeeres age. And thereafter several short Latin Poems were also presented to his Majestie ¹."

A DESCRIPTION OF SCOTLAND ².

BY SIR ANTHONY WELDON.

Ffirst, for the Country I must confesse yt is too good for those that possesse yt, and too bad for others to be at the charge to conquer yt. The ayre might be wholesome but for the stincking people that inhabit yt, the ground might be fruitfull had they the will to manure yt. Their beasts be generally small, women only excepted, of which sort there are none greater in all the world. There ys great store of fowle, as fowle houses, fowle sheetes and shirts, fowle lynnens, fowle dishes and potts, fowle trenchers and napkins, with which sort we have beene forced to fare as the children [of Israel] did with their fowle in the wilderness. They have

¹ These occupy pp. 117—121. Three of them are by David Hume, of Godscroft (see p. 306); two are signed A. S.; and three Henricus Danskinus. The latter was a Schoolmaster and Professor of Philology at St. Andrews, where he delivered a Speech to the King, printed hereafter. Some of his Poems are in the *Delitiæ Poet. Scot.* vol. I. pp. 291—306.

* This curious Satire is taken from the Harl. MSS. no. 5191. It is undoubtedly the "libel" by Weldon mentioned in the passage of the "*Aulicus Coquinarie*" quoted in p. 299. Weldon's name is not attached to it in the MS. but it is duly ascribed to him by Sir Walter Scott in the description of Holyrood Chapel in his "*Antiquities of Scotland*." There is another copy with some unimportant variations among Bishop Kennett's Collections, in the Lansd. MSS. 973, entitled, "A Letter sent out of Scotland to a friend in England," and dated as the above, "Lieth, June 20." It is accompanied by an introduction and conclusion from which we may gather that Weldon communicated it as soon as written to some Patron of a satirical taste congenial to his own, unless indeed he sent it himself in his own or an assumed character. They are as follow: "I fear if it should please God to settle me a fortune here, the Divell would make me run from it into some other countrey, for to live here but a little while were to live in heaven ever after. The forbidden smile with golden sides grows not on this side Tweede, and follie it were for Satan here to tempt me with any thing else. Nothing but women have power over me, and nothing here seems so uglye. Of them hereafter. I will not trouble you with a long letter, because of a tedious discourse that followes. Remember my true love to my kind pupill, and tell her I desire as ever I may deserve well at her hands, that in her next letter she will remember my humble service to my most honoured Mistress. I would not wish to be King of Scotland, unless it were to make her a Queene. Commend me kindly to your Cousin, and forgett not, I intreat, my service to noble Sir John Mollineux [see II. 212], and my love to his kind brother. I have for this time only sent you a brief discourse of this Kingdom, with the nature and condition of the people. If I may understand the receipt thereof, I shall continue

good store of fish too, and good for those that can eate yt rawe, but yf yt come once into their hands, yt ys presently worse than three days olde. For their butter and cheese I will not medle withall at this tyme, nor noe man else at any time that loves his life. They have likewise great store of deare, but they are so farre from the place where I have beene yet, that I had rather believe yt then goe to disprove yt; I confesse all the deere I met withall was deare lodgings, deare horse-meate, deare tobacco and English beere. As for fruyte, for their grandsyer Adam's sake they never planted any; and for other trees, had Christ beene betrayed in this Countrey (as doubtles he should have beene had he come as a stranger), Judas had sooner found a tree of repentence then a tree to hang himself on. They have many hills wherein they say ys much treasure, but they shew not of yt; Nature hath only discovered to them some mines of coales to shew to what end she erected them. I see little grasse but in the pottage. The thistle was not given them of naught, for yt ys the fayrest flower in their garden. The word hey [hay] is heathen Greeke unto them; neither man nor beast knoweth what it meanes. Corne ys reasonable plentifull at this tyme, for since they heard of the King's coming, yt hath beene as unlawfull for the common people to eate wheate, as yt was in the olde tyme for any but the priests to eate the shew-bread; they prayed much for his coming, and long fasted for his welfare. All his followers were welcome but the Guard, for those they say are like Pharoah's leane kine, and threaten dearth wheresoever they come. They would perswade the Footemen that oaten cakes would make them long-winded, and the Children of the Chapell they have brought to eate of them for the maintenance of their voyces. They say our Cookes are too saucy, and for Groomes and Coachmen they wish them to give their horses no worse then they will eat themselves. They commend the brave mind of the Pensioners and the Gentlemen of the Chamber, which chose rather to goe to taverns then to be alwayes eating of the King's provision. They likewise commend the Yeomen and Pages

this story further. I desire to hear from you at London at Mr. Herbert's, where I entend shortly to be, but shall make a short stay. I shall both goe and returne by sea. After my coming hither again you shall hear newes from Danneton. And thus in hast I commit you to what followes. [*Then the Description of Scotland.*] You shall in my next letter, sweet-heart, if I may heare of the receipt hereof, have this Discourse continued to his Majestie's departure, with all the shoves and triumphes at large. Thus, desiring a continuance of your love, with the hearty thanks for your kindness at our last meeting, with my love again to my good puple, I rest ever. From Leith near Edenbrough, 20 June."—The promised continuation was probably never written, and some readers may not regret it.

of the Buttery and Seller, for their retirednes and silence in that they will heare twentie knockes before they will answeere one. They perswade the Trumpetters that fasting is good for men of that quallity, for emptines, say they, causeth winde, and winde causeth a trumpett to sound sweetly. The bringing of Heraldes, they say, was a needlesse charge, they all know their pedigree well enough; and the Harbingers might have beene spared, since they brought so many beds with them; and, of two evils since the least is to be chosen, they wish the beds might remaine with them, and the poore Harbingers keepe their place and doe their office as they return. His hangings likewise they desire might remaine there, as reliques to put them in minde of his Majestie, and they promise to dispence with the woven images; but for those graven images in his new beautified Chappell, they threaten to pull them downe soone after his departure, and to make of them a burnt offering to appease the indignacion they imagine is conceived against them in the breast of the Almighty for suffering such idolatry to enter their Kingdom. The organs I think will find mercy, because, as they say, there is some affinity between them and the bagpipes. The skipper that brought the Singing-men with their papisticall vestments complains that he hath beene much troubled with a strange singing in his head ever since they came aborde his ship, for remedy whereof the Parson of the parish hath perswaded him to sell that prophane vessell, and distribute the mony amongst the faythfull brethren¹.

"Ffor his Majestie's entertainment, I must needes ingenuously confesse he was received into the parish of Edenborough (for a City I cannot call yt) with great showts of joy, but no shewes of charge; for Pageants, they holde them idolatrous things, and not fit to be used in so reformed a place². From the Castle

¹ Mr. Chamberlain's anticipations respecting the reception of these innovations (see p. 230), were very justly founded. It was now, remarks Sir Walter Scott, in his *Antiquities of Scotland*, that "for the first time, the Episcopal service of the reformed Church, with vocal and instrumental musick, was performed at the Chapel of Holyrood. But the stern reformers of the preceding age had not viewed the mass itself as a greater abomination than did the Presbyterians of the seventeenth century regard the surplices and chaunts of the choristers. Their astonishment and horror is described with some humour by Sir Anthony Weldon." *Ant. of Scotland*, vol. I. p. 121. — We do not, however, find that any fanatical outrages were committed at this time; but the patience of the populace was wholly exhausted by James the Second, who perfected the papistification of the chapel; and at the Revolution in 1688, "the Abbey Church and private Chapel of Holyrood House were despoiled of their ornaments, the College of the Jesuits almost pulled to pieces, and the houses of the Roman Catholics plundered."

² Several expensive Pageants, however, were exhibited at King Charles's entry in 1633.

they gave him some pieces of ordinance, which surely he gave them, since he was King of England; and at the entrance of the Town they presented him with a golden bason, which was carried before him on men's shoulders to his Pallace, I thinke indeede from whence yt came. They protest, yf Christ came from Heaven, he could not have been more welcome; and I believe yt, for his Majestie came but to summon them to a Parliament, and Christ would have summoned them to judgement, which they love not to heare of. His Majestie was conveyed by the yonkers of the Towne, which were some 100 halberts, (derely shall they rue yt, in respect of the charge!) to the Crosse, and soe to the High Church, where the onely bell they had stood on tiptoe to beholde his faire face, where I must entreat you to spare him for an howre I confesse I lost him. In the meane tyme, to report the speeches of the people concerning his never-exampled entertaynement were to make this course too tedious unto you, as the Sermon was to those that were constrayned to endure yt. After the preachment he was conducted by the same halberts to his Pallace, of which I forbear to speake, because yt was a place sanctified by his divine Majestie, only I wish yt had beene better walled for my friends' sake that wayted on him. To bring the Maior back, who all this while accompanied his Majestie, were too farre to amplifie my story, because the Gentlemen lodged thirteen stories high. I will only briefly and faithfully speake of the people according to their degrees and qualities.

"Ffor the Lords Spirituall, they may well be tearmed so indeed, for they are neither fish nor flesh, but what yt shall please their earthly God the King to make them; obedience is better then sacrifice, and therefore they make a mocke of martyrdome, saying that Christ was to dy for them, and not they for him. They will rather subscribe then surrender, and rather suspence with small things then trouble themselves with great disputacions; they will rather acknowledge the King to be their Head then want wherewith to pamp their bodyes; they have taken great paynes and trouble to compasse their Bishoppricks, and they will not leave them for a trifle. Ffor the Deacons (whose defects will not lift them up to dignities), all their study is to disgrace them that have gotten the least degree above them, and because they cannot write 'Bishop,' they proclaim they never heard of any. The Scripture, say they, speakes of Deacons and Elders, but not a word of Bishops; their discourses are full of detraction, their Sermons nothing but rayling, and their conclusions nothing but heresy and treasons. Ffor their religion they have, I confesse yt ys above reach, and, God willing, I will never

reach for yt. They christen without the crosse, marry without the ring, receive the sacrament without reverence, dy without repentence, and bury without divine service¹. They keepe no holy dayes, nor acknowledge no Saint but Saint Andrew, who, they say, got that honour by presenting Christ with an oaten cake after his forty dayes' fast. They say likewise that he that translated our English Bible was the son of a malster, because he speaks of a miracle done by barley loaves, whereas they swear they were oaten cakes, and that no other bread of that quantity could have sufficed so many thowsands. They use no prayer at all, for they say yt is needles; God knowes their mindes without prattling, and what He doth He loves to doe yt freely. Their Saboath daye's exercise ys a preaching in the forenoone, and a persecuting of their backebiters in the afternone. They goe to Church in the forenoone to heare the Lawe, and to the craggs and mountaines in the afternoone to l—se themselves. They holde their noses yf youe talke of beare-bayting; and they stop their eares yf you talke of a playe; * * * * They thinke yt impossible to lose the way to Heaven yf they can but leave Rome behind them; to be opposite to the Pope is to be presently with God. To conclude, I am persuaded that yf God and his angells at the last day should come downe in their whitest garments, they would run away and cry, 'The Children of the Chappell are come againe to torment us; let us fly from the abomination of these boyes, and hide ourselves in the mountaynes!'

"The Lords temporall and temporizing Gentlemen, yf I were apt to speake of any, I could not speake much of them, only I must let you know they are not Scotchmen, for as soone as they fall from the breast of the beast their mother, their carefull Sire posts them away for Ffrance, where as they passe, the sea suckes from them what they have suckt from their rude dames; there they gather new flesh, new blood, new manners; there they learne to put on their cloathes, and they returne into their country to weare them out; there they learne to stand, to speake, and to discourse; to congee, and to court women, and to complement with men. They spared for no cost to honour their King, and for no complementall courtesy to welcome their countreyemen; their followers are their fellowes, their wyves their slaves, their horses their masters, and their swords their judges, by reason whereof they have but few lawyers, and those not very rich; their Parliaments hold but three dayes, their statutes three lyves, and their suytes are determined in three words. The wonders of their Kingdom are these: the

¹ A slight commotion at the burial of one of the Guard during the King's stay is related in p. 344.

Lord Chancellor is beleevd, the Master of the Rolles well spoken of, and the whole Counsell, who are the Judges for all causes, are free from suspicion and of corruption.

“The Country, although yt be mountainous, affords noe monsters but Women, of which the greatest sort, as Countesses and Ladyes, are kept like lyons in iron grates. The merchants' wyves are likewise prisoners, but not in so stronge a holde; they have wooden cages like oure boare-ffrancks, through which some tymes peeping to catch the aire, we were almost choked with the sight of them. The greatest madnes among the men is jealousy, in that they feare what no man that hath but two of his senses will take from them. The Ladyes are of opinion, that Susanna could not be chaste because she bathed so often. Pride is a thing bred in their bones, and their flesh naturally abhorreth cleanlines. Their breath commonly stinkes of pottage, their linnen of * * * * * Their splay feet never offend in wearing of socks. To be chayned in marriage with one of them were as to be tyed to a dead carkase and cast into the stinking ditche; fformosity or a dainty face are things they dreame not of. * * * * * I protest I had rather be the meanest servent of two to my pupill's chamber-maide then to be the master minion to the fayrest Countesse I have yet discovered. The sinne of curiosity for oyntmente is but now crept into the Kingdome, and I think will not long continue. To draw you downe by degrees from the Citizens' wives to the Country Gentlewomen, and so convey you to common dames were to bring you from Newgate to Bridewell. The despised dames, in Seacole-lane that converse with ragges and marrow-bones are things of mynerall rate, every wh—e in Houndsditch is a Helena, and the greasy bawdes in Turnebull-streete are Greekish dames, in comparison of these.

“And therefore, to conclude, the men of olde did no more wonder that the great Messias should be borne in so poore a Towne as Bethlem in Judea, as I do wonder that so brave a Prince as King James should be borne in so stinking a Towne as Edenborough in l—sy Scotland.

From Lyeth neare Edenborough, 20 June, 1617.”



On the 21st of June, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“ Secretary Lake’s eldest son is returned out of Scotland with a Knightship. We hear little thence; for our men write they reserve all to their coming home. The University or School of Edinburgh have set out good verses, as I hear, in gratulation and applause of the King’s return thither.

“ Our Churchmen and Ceremonies are not so well allowed of; the rather by an accident that fell out at the burial of one of the Guard, who died there, and was buried after the English fashion; and the Dean of St. Paul’s¹ preaching, desired all the Assembly to recommend with him the soul of their deceased brother unto the Almighty God, which was so ill taken, that he was driven to retract it openly, and to confess he did it in a kind of civility rather than according to the perfect rule of divinity. Another exception was taken to Dr. Laud’s² putting on a surplice when the corps was to be laid in the ground. So that it seems they are very averse from our customs; insomuch that one of the Bishops, Dean of the Chapel there to the King, refused to receive the communion with him kneeling.

“ In Whitsun week the Countess of Arundel made a grand feast at Highgate to the Lord Keeper [Bacon]³, the two Lords Justices, the Master of the Rolls [Sir Julius Cæsar], and I know not who else. It was after the Italian manner with four courses and four table cloths one under another; and when the first course and table-cloth were taken away, the Master of the Rolls, thinking all had been done, said grace, as his manner is when no Divines are present, and was afterwards well laughed at for his labour.

“ The Queen removed on Tuesday from Greenwich to Oatlands, and the Prince to Richmond. She is building somewhat at Greenwich, which must be finished this summer. It is said to be some curious device of Inigo Jones, and will cost about £.4000⁴. But he hath another model or platform for a new Star-chamber, which the King would fain have done, if we could find money⁵.”

¹ Dr. Valentine Carey, Master of Christ’s College, Cambridge, and afterwards Bishop of Exeter.

² At this period Chaplain to Bishop Neile, and, with that Prelate attendant on the King.

³ It was at the Earl of Arundel’s house at Highgate that Bacon breathed his last, April 19, 1626, having been taken ill on his way into the country.

⁴ See the history of this “ House of Delight” in vol. II. p. 704.

⁵ Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

On the 28th of June, the following Letter was written out of Scotland, whom does not appear, to the Lord Keeper Bacon :

“ I will begin to speak of the business of this day ; *opus cujus diei in die suo* which is of the Parliament. It began on the 7th of this month, and ended this day, being the 28th of June. His Majesty, as I perceived by relation, rode thither in great state on the first day. These eyes are witnesses, that he rode in an honourable fashion, as I have seen him in England, this day. All the Lords rode in English robes ; not an English Lord on horseback, though all the Parliament House at his Majesty’s elbow, but my Lord of Buckingham, who waited upon the King’s stirrup, in his collar, but not in his robes. His Majesty, the first day, by way of preparation to the subject of the Parliament, made a declaratory Speech, wherein he expressed himself what he would not do, but what he would do. The relation is too prolix for a sheet of paper, and I am promised a copy of it, which I will bring myself unto your Lordship with what speed I may. But I may not be so reserved as not to tell your Lordship that in that Speech his Majesty was pleased to do England and Englishmen much honour and grace ; and that he studied nothing so much, sleeping and waking, as to reduce the barbarity, (I have warrant to use the King’s word,) of this Country unto the sweet civility of ours ; adding further that if the Scottish nation would be as docible to learn the goodness of England as they are teachable to limp after their ill, he might with facility prevail in his desire ; for they had learned of the English to drink healths, to wear coaches and gay cloaths, to take tobacco, and to speak neither Scottish nor English ! Many such diseases of the times his Majesty was pleased to enumerate, not fit for my pen to remember ; and graciously to recognize how much he was beholden to the English nation for their love and conformity to his desires. The King did personally and infallibly sit amongst them of the Parliament every day ; so that there fell not a word amongst them, but his Majesty was of council with it.

“ The whole Assembly, after the wonted manner, was abstracted into eight Bishops, eight Lords, eight Gentlemen Knights of the Shires, and eight Lay Burgesses for Towns. And this epitome of the whole Parliament did meet every day in one room to treat and debate of the great affairs of the Kingdome. There was exception taken against some of the Lower House, which were returned by the Country, being pointed at as men averse in their appetites and humours to the business of the Parliament, who were deposed of their attend-

ance by the King's power; and others better affected, by the King's election, placed in their room.

"The greatest and weightiest articles agitated in this Parliament were specially touching the Kirk and Kirkmen, and of abolishing of hereditary Sheriffs to an annual charge; and to enable Justices of the Peace to have as well the real execution as the title of their places. For now the Sheriff doth hold *jura regalia* in his circuit without check or controlment; and the Justices of the Peace do want the staff of their authority. For the Church and Commonwealth, his Majesty doth strive to shape the frame of this Kingdom to the method and degrees of the Government of England, as by reading of the several Acts it may appear¹. The King's desire and travail herein, though he did suffer a momentary opposition, (for his countrymen will speak boldly to him,) hath in part been profitable. For though he hath not fully and complementally prevailed in all things, yet he hath won ground in most things, and hath gained Acts of Parliament to authorize particular Commissioners to set down orders for the Church and Churchmen, and to treat with Sheriffs for their offices by way of composition. But all these proceedings are to have an inseparable reference to his Majesty. If any prove unreasonably and undutifully refractory, his Majesty hath declared himself, that he will proceed against him by the warrant of the law, and by the strength of his Royal power.

"His Majesty's Speech this day [June 28] had a necessary connexion with his former discourse. He was pleased to declare what was done and determined in the progress of this Parliament; his reasons for it; and that nothing was gotten

¹ Some of the Scottish writers have supposed the King's designs for reducing the Clergy of Scotland to a conformity with the English Church, to have been the principal motive for his Journey to Scotland. "Through the persevering energy," remarks Mr. Irving, "of Andrew Melvin and other ecclesiastics of the Genevan School, presbyterianism had been sanctioned by the laws of the country, and in 1590 the King had solemnly promised to adhere with inviolable fidelity to its doctrine and discipline. This promise he soon forgot. But although episcopacy had been re-established, yet as he had not hitherto found himself able to introduce those ceremonies which he so much admired in the Church of England, his object was only half accomplished. During the Visit which he now paid, he endeavoured, though without much success, to effect these frivolous innovations."—The King had sent the following articles to be inserted in the Scottish canons: "I. That they should receive the Communion kneeling. II. That the Sacrament should be administered in private to sick persons. III. That they should keep the festivals of Christmas, Easter, Ascension, and Whitsuntide. And IV. That Children, at a certain age, should be confirmed by the Bishop." These articles, after many difficulties, he prevailed upon the Assembly of the Kirk to accept, but the imposition assisted in sowing the seeds of subsequent troubles.

by shouldering or wrestling, but by debate, judgment, and reason, without any interposition of his Royal power in any thing. He commanded the Lords in state of judicature, to give life by a careful execution unto the law, which otherwise was but *mortuum cadaver et bona peritura*. Thus much touching the legal part of my advertisement unto you. I will give your Lordship an account in two lines of the complement of the country, time, and place.

“The Country affords more profit and better contentment than I could even promise myself by reading of it. The King was never more chearful in both body and mind, never so well pleased; and so are the English of all conditions. The entertainment very honourable, very general, and very full; every day feasts and invitations. I know not who paid for it. They strive, by direction, to give us all fair contentment, that we may know that the country is not so contemptible but that it is worth the cherishing. The Lord Provost of this Town, who in English is the Mayor, did feast the King and all the Lords this week; and another day all the Gentlemen. And, I confess, it was performed with state, with abundance, and with a general content.

“There is a general and bold expectation, that Mr. John Murray¹ shall be created a Baron of this Country; and some do chat that my Lord of Buckingham’s Mr. Wray shall be a Groom of the Bed-chamber in his place. There hath been yet no creation of Lords, since his Majesty did touch Scotland; but of Knights many, yet not so many as we had in England; but it is thought all the Pensioners will be Knights to-morrow. Neither are there any more English Lords sworn of the Privy Council here, save my Lord of Buckingham. The Earl of Southampton, Montgomery, and Hay, are already gone for England.

“I have made good profit of my journey hither, for I have gotten a transcript of the Speech, which your Lordship did deliver at your first and happy sitting in Chancery, which I could not gain in England. It hath been shewn to the King, and received due approbation. The God of Heaven, all-wise and all-sufficient, guard and assist your Lordship in all your actions! for I can read here whatsoever your Lordship doth act there; and your courses be such as you need not to fear to give copies of them. But the King’s ears be wide and long, and he seeth with many eyes. All this works for your honour and comfort. I pray God nothing be soiled, heated, or cooled in the carriage. Envy sometimes

¹ John Murray (afterwards Earl of Annandale, (of whom p. 78) was within a year or two of this date created Viscount Annand and Lord Murray of Lochmaben, but when is not exactly known.

attends virtues, and not for good; and these bare certain proprieties and circumstances inherent to your Lordship's mind; which men may admire, I cannot express. But I will wade no further herein, lest I should seem eloquent. I have been too saucy with your Lordship, and held out too long with my idleness. He that takes time from your Lordship, robs the publick. God give your body health and your soul Heaven!

"My Lord of Pembroke, my Lord of Arundel, my Lord Zouch, and Mr. Secretary Lake, were new sworn of the Council here¹."

On the 29th of June², Sir Roger Gray³, of Northumberland; Sir Thomas Savage⁴, of Cheshire; and Sir John Cæsar⁵; were knighted at Edinburgh.

"On Monday the last of June, the King's Majestie came to the Burgh of Sterling, where at his Majestie's entrie, this subsequent Speech was delivered in name of the Towne, by Master Robert Murray, Commissar there:

¹ Bacon's Works, vol. III. p. 523, from a copy in the State-paper Office.

² Philipot says, that these three Knights were made at Edinburgh, July 2; but on that day the King was either at Stirling, or between that place and Perth; and as we find by the following Warrant that Sir Julius Cæsar was certainly knighted June 29, we may presume that the two others also were. The following order of the Earl of Arundel, Earl Marshal, bearing date Arundel House, May 20, 1623 (nearly six years after the knighthood was conferred), is among the Lansdowne MSS.: "I have received a sufficient certificate that Sir John Cæsar was knighted by his Majestie at Edenborough in Scotlande, and took the oath of knighthood, with all other ceremonies, accordinge to the custome of Scotland, on the 29th day of June 1617; and therefore I require you to enter him accordingly in your Register of Knights, for which this shalbe your Warrant."

³ Uncle of William first Lord Grey of Warke; see p. 298. He was seated at Ulcester, Northumberland, and died s. p. Brydges's Peerage, vol. V. p. 684.

⁴ This must have been Sir Thomas Savage, of Rocksavage, Baronet, who had succeeded to that title on the death of his father, July 14, 1615 (but whose name, following a mistake of Wotton in his Baronetage of 1720, I erroneously placed instead of his father's, in vol. II. p. 424; see the *Corrigenda* to that volume). Sir Thomas Savage was Chancellor of the Queen's Court at Westminster, and married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Lord Darcy of Chiche, who was created Viscount Colchester in 1621 with remainder to his son-in-law Sir Thomas and his heirs male, and Earl Rivers in 1626 with the same limitation. Sir Thomas died before the Earl in 1635, but his son Sir John succeeded his maternal grandfather in the titles in 1639. See Ormerod's Cheshire, vol. I. p. 529.

⁵ Second surviving son of Sir Julius Cæsar, the Master of the Rolls. He was born in St. Catherine's near the Tower, his father being Master of that Collegiate establishment, Oct. 20, 1597, and was therefore at this period still in his minority. He was settled by his father at Hyde Hall, Herts, where, says Chauncy, he "was a Justice of the Peace for that County divers years, being qualified by a strong constitution and ready smart parts." He died May 23, 1647, aged 49. His portrait is engraved in *Life of Sir Julius Cæsar*, where, for his domestic history, see p. 54.

“Most sacred Soveraine, amongst the manie comforts wee enjoy under this your calme and most glorious reigne, this is not the least that your Majestie deignes to heare your owne welcomes, and disdaines not the humble applause of your meanest subjects, no more then Augustus Cæsar did when in name of the Senate and people of Rome, Valerius Messala welcomed and saluted him, *Patrem Patriæ*, which (as hee answered) was the hight of his desires, and beyond which hee had nothing more to sollicite the Gods for; provyding onlie that that harmonie could continue, and bee the last sound should stricke his dying eare.

“I, your Majestie’s most humble subject, in name of the Magistrats and indwellers of this your ancient Towne, in all reverence most hartlie and justlie welcome and salute your Majestie, *Patrem Patriæ*, after this your happie returne to your late languishing, bot now fullie contented Cuntrie.

“What heart wold not breake; what eye not drowne it selfe in teares for the so long absence of so wel-beloved and so much loving a Prince? a King secund unto no other, and farre from any secund, matchles in birth and Royall discent, bot more in heroicall and amazing vertues. What blessing did ever Almighty God impart to any Prince, which hee hath not powred upon you, Sir? or what doeth any people enjoy, which wee have not abundantlie by you?

“Much is recorded in the Calenders of Fame of that Macedonian conqueror Alexander, and not without cause perhaps was he entitled Great; bot his violence and pryd (like deep skarres in a wel-proportioned face) were staynes unto his other qualities. Yee are great, Sir, bot with greatnes good; which are in you so combined that your greatnes hath ever extended your goodnes, and your goodnes hath been the occasion of your greatnes; your dominions are large and ample, yet neither acquired nor cemented with blood. By due right and lawfull succession did yee come unto them, and with great equitie doe you governe them. Clemencie, which one calleth *Dos Regum*, which maketh men like unto God, hath been the square of our Majestie’s actions; yee have not only bein a King over others, bot you have learned to command and bee a King over your selfe, to which government all others if compared shall bee of small moment.

“Trajan, for his beneficence towards the learned, the conforming himselfe to his owne lawes, for his great courtasie and liberalitie, obtained the name of Optimus, a tittle more glorious then any triumph; which methinks might be more competent to your Majestie, who not only art a former of lawes and a conformer of

your actions unto them, but whose pure and spotles life is a law to your subjects, and may be an example to all after Princes; who not onlie cherishes the learned, but art learned your selfe; whose manie, manie writtings, if they had been in the former ages, sure had been kept in gold and cedar, and which as they are above all envye, shall in spight of dayes, wrastle and overcome time. As for your courtasie and liberalitie, I think even the Antipodes have hard of it. *Nemo tristis decessit a facie Imperatoris*. But why travell I so farre in heathen stories? when I fix my eyes upon your Majestie, Constantine the Great straight presenteth himselfe to my wandring and wondering thoghts. Hee extended the limits of his empyre farre beyond the reach of his predecessors; so hath your Majestie yours; for bloodie warrs and dissentions which hee found in the world, hee left peace; and have not yee done the same? Hee maintained Christians, and are not yee the Defender of the Faith? The Kirk of God here, which in your minoritie seemed but a weake youngling, hath by you attained both to her full stature and strenght. Hee by the assemblies and determinations of grave Bishops and Kirkmen destroyed heresies, to the great advancement of religion; and hath not your Majestie (as witnes your late diligence) endeavored as much for the same? So that in these your Majestie's happie dayes atheisme is unknown, ignorance removed, superstition and idolatrie banished, Kirks are planted, their revenues augmented, and knowledge daylie groweth more. Many worthy and profitable lawes did Constantine establish amongst the Romans; and what hath not your Majestie done not onlie for the making, but execution of good lawes heere? So that they are not now (as of old) like spiders' webs, which take hold of the small and let passe the greate, but like nets for lions and bores, which hold fastest the most mightie. By which now it is come to passe, that the most savage parts of this countrie have loosed of their wyld nature, and become tame; where are now the broyles of the Borders? where the deadlie feads and ignoble factions of the Nobles? the stryf of Barrons and Gentlemen? where is that woolfish crueltie of the Clans in the Isles, and far Heighlands? ar not all now by your Majestie's wyse providence and government, under God, either abolished or amended? And so justlie wee may avouch *Scotiam invenisti Lateritiam, Marmoream fecisti*, and also averre you to be with Augustus *Patrem Patriæ*, with Alexander *Magnum*, with Trajan *Optimum*, and with Constantine *Religiosum*. And that which is more then wonderfull wee may boldlie say it, *Quæ data sunt aliis singula*,

cuncta tibi. I might heere loose my selfe in the vast ocean of your Majestie's worth, sayling beyond my lyne; if this your Majestie's litle, but loving Towne, did not becken to mee now to anker and speak somewhat towards her.

"This Towne, though shee may justlie vaunt of her natarall beautie and impregnable situation, the one occasioned by the laberynth of the delightful Forth, with the deliciousnes of her valayes, and the heards of deare in her park, the other by the statlie rock on which she is raised; though shee may esteme herselfe famous by worthy founders, re-edifiers, and the enlargers of her manie privileges, — Agricola (who in the dayes of Galdus fortified her), Kenneth the Secund (who here encamped and raised the Picts), Malcolme the Secund, Alexander the First, William the Lyon; yet doeth shee esteme this her onlie glorie and worthiest praise, that shee was the place of your Majestie's education, that those sacred brows, which now bear the weghtie diademes of three invincible nations, wer empalled with their first heere; and that this day the onlie man of Kings, and the worthiest King of men, on whom the eye of heaven glaunceth, deignes (a just reward of all these cares and toyles which followed your cradle) to visit her. Now her Burgesses, as they have ever bein to your Majestie's ancestors obedient and loyall, they heere protest and depose to offer up their fortunes, and sacrifice their lives in maintenance and defence of your sacred person and Royall dignitie, and that they shall ever continue thus to your worthie progenie. But long, long may you live; and let us still importune the Almightye,

"That your happie dayes may not be done,
Till the great comming of his Sonne;
And that your wealth, your joyes, and peace,
May as your raigne and yeares increase.

Amen!"

After this Speech was heard by his Majestie, two long Latin Poems were presented², and he proceeded to his palace, the Castle³.

¹ "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 123—125.

² One, of 287 hexameters, is signed "Schola Sterlinensis;" the other of 119, "Gulielmus Wallas."

³ The Castle of Stirling, in respect of situation, is a miniature of Edinburgh, standing on a lofty rock, rising out of a plain. It first became a Royal residence about the middle of the twelfth century, when David the First kept his Court there; but it was not a fixed palace, though an occasional retreat, of the Scottish Kings, till the family of Stuart mounted the throne, after which the Lordship was the usual dowry of the Queen. James the Third was very fond of it, and built a large hall 120 feet long, with a fine gallery, still called the Parliament House. Stirling Castle was the place of the nativity of James the Fourth; here James the Fifth was crowned, and here the same ceremony was performed to the unfortunate Mary, Sept. 4, 1543, in the presence of the three Estates of Parliament,

"On Saturday the fyft of July, the King's Majestie came to Perth, other-
wayes called Saint-Johnes-towne¹, where at his Majestie's entrie this subsequent

with great pomp and solemnity. Here she almost constantly resided from her assumption of the reins of the government till her captivity, and here was spent nearly the whole of the minority of James the Sixth, under the tutelage of Buchanan. This abode of his youth we may presume our Monarch found in tolerable repair at his present visit. It still contains many remains of Royal magnificence, but is now converted into barracks. The Parliament House, stripped to the bare walls, has become a riding-school, and the Royal Chapel adjoining, which was founded by Pope Alexander the Sixth, at the request of James the Fourth, and was accounted the richest collegiate Church in Scotland, is a store-room and armoury. Pennant was shown two large rooms with well-carved roofs of wood, called the Queen's and the Nursery. Upon the rock on which the Castle is built, a flat enclosed piece of ground is still pointed out as "the place of the tournaments," on one side of which is "the Ladies' Rock, whereon the fair used to sit and observe the valour of the combatants." On the south side of the Castle is the park, enclosed by a stone wall; and at the east end of it was the Royal Garden, vestiges of the walks and parterres of which are still visible. In it is a mount of earth, in form of a table, called the Knot, where, according to tradition, the Court sometimes held *fêtes champêtres*. Possibly this might be the "Round Table" mentioned by Barbour; if so, it was here that James the Fourth used to amuse himself with the pastime of the Knights of the Round Table, of which he is said to have been particularly fond. On the north side of the Castle is a steep path leading to the Town, called Ballochgeich; and James the Fifth, who used often, for various purposes, to travel the country in disguise, when questioned who he was, always answered, "The goodman of Ballochgeich." This road, carried round the Castle from the Town, and in many places cut out of the solid rock, affords several fine prospects. There is a view of Stirling Castle in the first volume of Pennant's Tour in Scotland; and another in Paul Sandby's Virtuosi's Museum.

¹ I have not ascertained whether the Castle or any other Royal Palace was standing at Perth at this time. The King may have been accommodated in the mansion which had formerly belonged to the Earl of Gowrie, and was the scene of that attack on his Royal person commonly called the Gowrie Conspiracy. It was built by the Countess of Huntly in 1520, and is still standing. It was given by the magistrates in 1746 to William Duke of Cumberland, who sold it to Government for the purpose of containing barracks for a company of artillery. The Parliament House also still remains, converted into dwelling-houses. The houses of many of the nobility are likewise standing, though modernized, particularly those of the Bishop of Dunkeld, the Earl of Errol, and the Earl of Athol. — Not more than a mile from Perth is Scone, where was an ancient Palace of the Scottish Kings destroyed at the Reformation. A large house, "which has usually received the appellation of the Palace of Scone, was begun to be built there by the Earl of Gowrie, and was completed by Sir David Murray, of Gospatrie, to whom King James granted it after the forfeiture of Gowrie. It was built round two courts, and contained some large apartments, particularly a gallery of 160 feet in length by 18 in breadth, with an arched cieling covered with paintings, on one of which was represented the hunting of a stag in all its different stages, and on the other, hawking and hunting the wild boar; and the King appeared in every scene, attended by the Nobles of the Court, many of whom were portraits from life. The dining-room contained a magnificent chimney-piece, with the King's arms

Speech was delivered in name of the Towne, by Johne Stewart, marchant, Burgesse of the said Burgh:

“The ancient nation of Scots, descended of the victorious Greeks and learned Ægyptians, right high and mightie Prince, was in the chyldhood of her rysing empyre greatlie obliged to the goodnesse of God. For, what no nation may say, the Kingdome of Scotland, notwithstanding the whole nations about, like the lines of a mariner’s compasse, direct from the circumference to the center, had conspyred her overthrow, yet to her infinite glorie hath shee continued these two thousand and thrittie yeeres bypast under the governement of a hundreth and seaven Kings, all lineallie sprung from Fergus the First, free and untributarie to any forraine Prince unto this day. The Romanes by Scapula and Caius threatned the Scots with thralldom; and Hadrian reared a mightie wall for saiftie of his province in South Britaine; but the one found before him King Galdus, forcing the remaines of his unsleine armie upon their knees, with their hands to heaven to beg their lyfes; and the other he might heare tell of Fergus the Second, not onlie to have payed home to the outmost farthing Maximianus’ bloodshed here, with the sacking of Rome there, but likewayes to have levelld his rampeir with the low earth. The Danes from the north renewed eight diverse battels upon the Scots; but the heaps of their witherd bones left in diverse corners of this countrie, lyke the tall cedars cut doune in Mont Libanus, may shew what mightie Josuaes, destroying such sonnes of Anak, have sweyed this Kingdome’s scepter heirtofore. The Irish on the west dreamed of ane easie conquest here; and even so the Picts on the east presumed to enlarge their bounds after King Alpin’s death; but the one found the worth of King Gregorie’s valor, and the other felt the weght of King Kenneth’s wrath, sweeping them for their crueltie with the besome of destruction. Nor was the river of the Lord’s bountie to this people, most Christian Monarch, dried up in this one benefite; for God having determined fiftie yeeres ago to deliver his Kirk in this Kingdome, from the palpable darknes of papisticall errors (wherein shee had lyen miserablie plunged seaven

and this motto, “*Nobis hæc invicta miserunt centum sex proavi.*” Below was the arms of Murray. An apartment on the west side of the house, called the Queen’s Room, contained a bed of flowered crimson velvet, which was said to have been the work of the unfortunate Queen Mary during her confinement in Lochleven Castle. It is highly probable that King James visited this mansion, and at the present period, though I have found no specific affirmation that it was the case. It has been pulled down and given way to a modern building, which is the property of the Earl of Mansfield. See the “*Beauties of Scotland.*”

hundreth and fiftie yeeres,) to the trew knowledge of God ; wherein, of before, from the midst of Christ's first centurie (at which tyme the candlestick of the gospell was conveyed to this cuntrie) shee had continewed with puritie full eight hundred yeeres ;—even when God had determined to vindicate his Kirk here from Antichrist to her ancient puritie and bewtie,—then, even then, of his gracious goodnes hee ordained your Majestie our gracious Soveraine to be borne. And the Heavens, appointing for your most happie birth that remarkable poynt of tyme, seme to have poynted out unto the world to what end yee was borne, even to be that which in no small measure your Majestie hes prooved alreadie,—to wit, a shield of the trew word preached ; a defender of the trew faith professed ; a second Constantine to support Sion's second daughter ; the lyon comming out of the forrest to deplume the eagle ; to darken the starr in the crescent's bosome, and to strype the strumpet of Rome stark naked, that of a two-horned lambe shee may appeare to the world, as shee is indeed, a ten-horned devill. And why, except for this, hes the Almightye endowed you with such rare and incomparable gifts als weal of bodye as of mynd ? for not onlie is your Majestie for princelie vertue repute more liberall than Alexander, because more discreit ; more just than Trajan, because more wyse ; and more gracious than Cæsar, because more myld ; but also in spirituall disposition a faithfull David for your burning zeal to God's glorie, yea, and more than David, because more continent than hee ; ane other Salomon for your heavenlie wisdom in governing God's Kirk, and more than Salomon also, because more constant than hee ; and ane upright Josia for your great affection to the puritie of God's worship, and more than Josia lyk-ways, because more considerat than hee. And is it not for these great things that the Almightye hes made your Majestie to parallel the Three Gentile Nobles in heroicall vertue, to equall the Thrie Jewish Worthies in constant standing to the cause of God, and to excell the Thrie Christiane Peires in Christian meiknes ? The earth may see that the heavens hes fitted your Majestie for great things, when it beholds your fiftie and fourtein yeeres' reigne more peaceable than that of Augustus, your gouvernement more happie than that of Cræsus, your yok more easie than that of Salomon, and your retinew more royall than that of Ashuerus, maugre all his hundreth and seaven-and-twentie provinces. The comfortable frutes of these your rare and royall vertues all the Kingdomes about hes tasted, Sir, but your owne hes enjoyed the sweitnes therof to the full ; and amongst your owne, none more than this your kyndlie Kingdome of Scotland ; whose

fourtein yeeres' dririe winter, caused be absence, is now turned in a joyfull summer by this livelie and lightsome presence of your Majestie (the bright sunne of oure firmament) in this your northerne ascension. Whilst your Majestie was absent, her feares wer many, her desyres vehement, her hopes either few, or none at all. And how could shee not but be ever fearing, since the least endangering of your sacred person was her totall ruyne? And if the providence of God had not otherwayes disponed then the malice of man proponed, her losse had bein beyond the losse of any cuntrie in the world, because none had so rare a jewell to be taken from them. What is there beneath the scope of heaven shee could have desyred to this so glorious and triumphing a returne? not lyk to that of King Philip, from that self-same cuntrie to Spaine, or lyk to that of Henrie the Thrid from Pole; but equaling, yea above the returnes of the most valiant and fortunate Emperours in the world, for what they all affected (yet never obtained) here is fullie effected. Could ever this your cuntrie hope, nay dreame, of what shee now enjoyeth? especiallie at such a tyme whan the weightie affaires of the neighbour Kingdomes require both the eye and the aide of so great and wyse a Prince. France, yet smarting for the blow of her last King; the Alpes (though frozen), inflamed with the choler of Spaine; the Low Cuntries, making religion to serve their disordered factions. What was there in ws of such importance as to draw you here? When wee advyse well, of our selves wee shall find nothing; but when wee think on you, Sir, wee shall find that, even that, which is the greatest and most powerfull thing in the world, by which deformitie often appeareth pleasant;—love was in you, Sir, which as it is excellentlie rare and great in so rare and great a Prince to the whole Kingdome of Scotland and all the cities thereof, so it hath bein most singulare to Perth. I will not speak of your Majestie's noble ancestors, William the Lyon and Robert the Bruce, of which the first (to the example of the conquering Greek who builded Alexandria in Ægypt, on the brink of Nilus,) did found the Towne of Perth, after the overthrow of old Berth by inundation in the midst of this plaine; the other for the great delight hee had in her situation, standing lyk Seleucus' Palace betuix the two famous rivers of Asia, and for the pleasure hee tuik in her valleyes and river, lyk Po smyling along the gardings of Lombardie, dowried her with als manie privileges as did Numa Rome, or Cecrops Athens. But to passe with silence the love your Majestie hes kythed to Perth from tyme to tyme, it wer a token of sensles ingratitude; for may not your beneficence toward her compair with Ptoleme his vin-

dicating of Memphis' liberties usurped by Thebe Ogygia? to Alexander his ratifeing of Babylon's privileges granted to her by the two preceding Monarchies? and to Cyrus his liberall remembrance of Jerusalem in his absence from her? But chieffie hath your Majestie's unfenzeit affection to Perth manifested it selfe in this point; that, being now returned home againe to your ancient Kingdome and cradle Scotland, and not being unmyndfull of that miraculous delyverie which the Lord, the God of your Highness's saiftie, did give you out of the bloodie hands of those two unnaturall traitours within this Towne, your Majestie hes resolved with that great Patriarch from whom yee have your name, to rear ane altar in that place where yee did find God's presence in mercie with yow, and to pay those vowes your Majestie promised to performe,—namlie, to continew a gracious King and a faithfull protector to Perth for ever.

"For all which most memorable benefits, right high and mightie Prince, but most of all for your Majestie's presence and most benigne aspect this day, by which wee, who these many yeeres bypast in absence of your Majestie (the sunshyne of our bewtye) did sitt lyke so manie gyrasoles languishing in the shades of darknes, may now againe lyke als manie lizards delyte our selves in the sight of your gracious countenance, wee your Majestie's ever-loyall subjects, the Citizens of Perth, as heretofore wee have bein alwayes readie to serve your Highnes to the last gasp, being earnest with God for your owne long and your seed's everlasting reigne over ws in peace, so now praying Almighty God, that your Majestie may shyne in the firmament of these Kingdomes lyke Josua's sunne in Gibeon, there to dowble the naturall dyett of man's abode upon earth, with the Citizens of Jerusalem, who gave a shoute to the Heaven for joy of King David his returne home unto the Citie after his long absence, wee bid your Majestie most hartie welcome home againe to your ancient kingdome and cradle Scotland, and to this the hart thereof, your Majestie's Peniel, Perth. GOD SAVE THE KING ¹!"

"This preceeding Speech being delyvered to his Majestie," several Latin Poems ² were presented.

¹ "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 137—141.

² Which occupy pp. 142—161 of "The Muses' Welcome." They consist of two Eclogues, of 111 and 161 hexameters, entitled, "Amaryllis Expostulans," and "Amaryllis Exultans," and signed "Henricus Andersonus, Mercator Perthensis;" "Ad Regem Pons Perthanus," 20 elegiac lines, anonymous; "De Regis in Scotiam Adventu et in urbem Perthi introitu Dialogismus Scotiæ et

“On the 5th of July, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“The King is already gone from Edinburgh not to return thither again, but taking a Progress further into the land, to come about by the west coast of Scotland to Carlisle, where he makes account to be about the beginning of August.

“About a fortnight since the Lord Zouch took a voyage thither in a pinnace from Dover¹, but whether he arrived before the King’s departure we hear not; neither what was done in this Parliament, being by all likelihood very little, else we should have had more noise. I have seen the King’s Speech the first day of the Session, which was neither so long nor in my judgment so accurate as he was wont.

“Most of our English are retired toward Carlisle till the King’s coming, and some are returned hither this week, as the Earls of Southampton, Montgomery, and the Lord Hay, who will use all possible means to get the Earl of Northumberland’s good will with his daughter, and to have the £.20,000 he promised her if she would be ruled by him. But he may cast his cap at that, seeing him so incensed not only against her, but against his fair Lady of Somerset² for procuring and persuading of that Match, that they came to bad terms, and no better than to call her bawd and young bawd.

“Divers of our Merchants have been and are very backward in the late loan of money, and cannot be drawn by persuasion to lay down that they are rated at, so that, having been often before the Council, there is lately order taken to send some of the most refractory with letters to Scotland to give there a reason for their refusal³.”

On the 7th, Mr. Secretary Winwood wrote thus from St. Bartholomew’s in London, to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“The best news I can send you is that his Majesty in Scotland, and the Queen and Prince here, are in good health. Our last letters from thence tell us Genii,” 144 Iambic lines, signed “Joannes Stuartus, Mercator Perthensis” (who delivered the Speech to the King); and others by Alexander Adamides, Mercator Perthensis; Adamus Andersonus, Perthensis; and Georgius Stirkaeus, Perthensis.—Henry Anderson’s Eclogues, with other Poems of his, are inserted in the *Delitiæ Poet. Scot.* “The faculty of making Latin poetry,” remarks Mr. Irving, “was so common, that several copies of Latin verses were produced by the merchants, or rather tradesmen.” “*Scottish Poets*,” vol. I. p. 103.—All the Poems presented to the King at Perth are re-printed, with some other extracts from “The Muses’ Welcome,” in Cant’s edition of Anderson’s “*Muses’ Threnodie*,” 1774.

¹ His Lordship was Constable of Dover Castle and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports; see II. 333.

² So called from the Earl’s associating with her at the Tower, where she was his fellow prisoner; see p. 181.

³ Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

that the Parliament there is ended, and that the Earl of Arundel, the Earl of Pembroke, and the Lord Zouch are lately sworn of the Privy Council of Scotland¹."

On the 10th of July, Mr. Secretary Lake wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton, from Falkland Palace, where the King probably then was².

"On Fryday the ellevent day of July the King's Majestie came to the Citie of Sainct Androes, where at his Majestie's entrie this subsequent Speech was delivered in name of the Towne by Maister Harie Danskin³, Scholmaister thereof:

"Catuli Leonis, animalium omnium proximè secundùm hominem generosis-simi, infirmi et informes nascuntur, bimestres vix moventur, non nisi semestres recto insistunt talo et gradiuntur; contrà, ἡμεροβία illa apud Hypanim Scythiæ Europææ fluvium, mane nascuntur, meridie adolescent, vesperi consenescent et occidunt. Flores in Adonidis hortis vernantes ad auram quamvis et flatum levis-simum marcescunt et corrumpuntur, ita citò nata citò pereunt, et quæ egregia futura sunt serò proveniunt, eorumque incrementa, quia lentis et minutis constant auctibus, per intervalla tantùm sentiuntur. Enimvero si unquam aliàs, hoc presertim tempore opus erat oratione gravi, suavi, politâ, eruditâ, liberali, admirabili; hoc materiæ substratæ dignitas poscebat; hoc civitatis hujus antiquissimæ et celeberrimæ honos flagitabat; hanc autem inordinatam sylvam et confusaneam farraginem neque labor expedivit, neque cura limavit; sine ingenii acumine, moræ maturitate, embryo crudus, partus ursinus, aut magis viperinus, qui effractis uteri materni repagulis in lucem erumpit; illo scilicet cive, cui hæ partes erant demandatæ morte, sibi quidem opportunâ, nobis autem intempestivâ, e medio sublato, qui inclytæ huic civitati a scriniis fuit et epistolis. Certè hæc una remora navem plenis velis concitatam retardare potuit, quòd coram Serenissimo et Augustissimo Rege dicendum esset, qui ut imperii amplitudine, ita ingenii fascibus doctissimos quosque longissimè submovet, apud quem (ut de Cæsare dixit Varius Geminius,) qui dicere audent, ejus ignorant magnitudinem; qui non audent, humanitatem. Illud tamen Plinii ad Vespasianum me consolatur,—rustici, multæque gentes Diis lacte supplicant, et molâ tantum salsâ litant qui non habent thura; nec ulli fuit vitio Deos colere quoquo modo posset. Non est mihi animus Regis Laudatissimi laudes prosequi, quas neque animo complecti, neque memoriâ assequi possum; satius enim est eas

¹ Letters of Sir Dudley Carleton, p. 148.

² Ibid. p. 153.

³ At the ancient town of St. Andrew's the King was probably lodged at the Castle, which was built in the twelfth century by the Bishop of the See, and which was greatly improved by Cardinal Beaton, who was murdered there. It is now in ruins, but we are not told when it ceased to be inhabited.

integras et illibatas cogitationibus vestris reservare, quàm carptim et perfunctoriè perstringere; summa tantum rerum legam fastigia, et pauca quasi punctis acuminatis signabo, ut illi quibus ætas viget et ingenium, seminarium habeant unde orationum suarum jugera complere possint. Sed ut apes vere novo exeuntes hærent et cunctantur quâ parte camporum sidere, quid primum, violas ne an thymum, amellum an amaracum delibare velint ac depascere; sic ego hæreo in tam uberi et copiosâ dicendi segete, quod exordium, quem orationis meæ exitum inveniam. Rei divinæ olim operantes ad eum mundi cardinem ora oculosque converterunt unde lucis esset principium; ita ego ab eo temporis articulo verba facere incipiam, quo amicum, propitium, nobisque omnibus salutare hoc sidus cœpit affulgere. Hipparchus divinorum consiliorum (ut ait Plinius,) compos, quandam siderum cum nativitate Regum cognationem esse judicavit; stella coronæ specie, circa orbem solis interdiu visa, Augustum felicissimum fore imperatorem portendit et prædixit; estque Lex non lata, sed nata, Regum ortum et educationem Deo curæ esse, itaque Deorum Filii et Διοτρεφες Βασιλῆες vocantur. O beata mater Scotia, quæ vel hoc solo nomine florentissima quæque regna multis parasangis antevertis; quicquid ubique terrarum laudabile est, tibi uni assurgit! Creta ἑκατομπολις Jovis incunabulis nobilitata, Delosque geminis reptata numinibus tibi cedit; fidem constare auditis nescimus, Scotia dedit Principem quem videmus. Sed, heu me miserum! tum temporis ægra et pene exanimata decubuisti, vivax est calamitatum recordatio, piaculumque est in tam festâ presentium gaudiorum luce tristitia immiscere; prudentes imitabor Medicos, aliorum vulnerum cicatrices leni et pendenti manu tractabo.

“Sed quis vulneribus tam deploratis manum admovit? hic Deorum manus, divina virgula, Deus e machinâ apparuisti; et, ut Æneas patrem, ita tu patriam e mediâ flammâ servasti; ita Scotia horrida, squalida, situ et illuvie immunda, succum et sanguinem, speciem et colorem recepit, instarque avis illius Arabicæ, quam naturâ ferunt esse unigenam, moriens revixit. An Regii corporis bona naturæ primigenia primùm commemorabo? qualia sunt pulchritudo, incolumitas, sensuum integritas, valetudo, robur, πρῶτον εἶδος ἀξίον τυραννίδος. An ullius mortalis forma dignior est imperio? Certè anima tua idoneum sibi metata est hospitium dignumque indole suâ finxit habitaculum; in quo hilaritas severitati, humanitas majestati, simplicitas gravitati nihil detrahit, et jam cæsaries insignibus senectutis ad majestatem augendam ornata, ut dubium sit utrum te mentibus nostris virtus an oculis vultus magis insinuet! Virtus tua

principatum meretur, sed virtuti addit forma suffragium; virtus præstitit ut oporteret te Principem fieri, forma ut deceret; valetudo per Dei gratiam a teneris unguiculis ad hunc usque diem firma, constans, inoffensa, certissimum summæ in vitâ moderationis indicium, eamque sine Medicorum operâ aut medicinæ adminiculo jugiter es tutatus, memor Adriani, ‘multitudo Medicorum Regem perdidit.’ Virium non mediocrium perspicuum est argumentum, quòd equos ferocissimos nunc fræno sistas, nunc calcaribus ad cursum incites, eâ denique disciplinâ quâ par est commodè tractes et modereris; quòd venatione, omnibus seculis Regibus gratissimâ, insidiantis otii rubiginem detergas; decisis quippe negotiis Majestati tuæ volupe et familiare est saltus perlustrare, feras cubilibus excutere, montium juga superare, et Minervam non minus quàm Dianam in montibus errare experiris. An a dotibus corporis ad bona (ut vocant) fortunæ veniam? quæ sunt vitæ adminicula, pacis ornamenta, belli nervi et subsidia, tibi pleno cornu humana se felicitas infudit, et eximia Dei Opt. Max. benignitas nihil deesse voluit, quo præcellens et divina animi tui magnitudo promi possit! Sed opes tuas in chrysophylaciis et capsulis conditoriis non reponis, verùm ad liberalitatis et beneficentiæ opus perpetuo uteris, magnitudinis quippe tuæ proprium existimas calcare mortalia, et quæ alii mirantur vel nulla ducere, vel ut mancipia ad virtutis ministerium redigere. Neque mirum; nectareum puræ putæ Religionis succum cum lacte nutriceis hausisti, totâque mente penitùs conbibisti, itaque dum Hydræ Papisticæ renascentia subinde capita conaris amputare, quam ancipitem (horret animus meminisse) gravissimorum periculorum aleam subiisti!

“Dumque es Romanæ mastix et malleus aulæ,

Non dubitas vitæ prodigus esse tuæ.

Deus itaque conjurationes in sacrum tuum caput tam crebrò initas, et technis plusquam Ægyptis consutas, detexit et patefecit. ‘Exurgat Dominus, et hostes Regis uncti sui spiritu oris interficiat, iisque caput virgâ ferreâ diminuat.’

“Religioni comitem adjunxisti Justitiam, virtutum reliquarum epitomen, cujus es rigidus satellites, gravis, severus, integer, jus animatum, lex loquens, justitiæ oculus, clavum semper et æquilibrium rectum tenens, sed ἀκριβοδικαίαν ἐπισκεΐται, justitiæ rigorem clementiæ rore temperare soles, ut anima corpori, pater liberis, ita subditis præsides, talem te iis exhibens cujusmodi Deum tibi deposcis, ad decretorium stylum rarò et non nisi invitus accedis, quod boni est medici unguentem sæpiùs adhibes quàm ferrum, insigni unius supplicio multitudinis vitia sæpe sanas. Supplicia fulmina sunt; paucorum periculo, omnium metu cadunt; æs, ferrum,

durissima quæque comminuunt, ceram non attingunt; magnanimi quippe est Leonis

“Parcere subjectis et debellare superbos.

“Caduceum sæpiùs mittis quàm hastam; pacis studia admiraris in quibus veræ virtutes laudis theatrum inveniunt. Vita tua nobis est censura et cynosura; ad hanc dirigimur, ad hanc sequaces ducimur, nec tam imperio moves quàm exemplo doces; nihil de illicitis voluptatibus in sacrum pectus admittis, operto conclavis tui non ara Vestalis sanctior, non Pontificis cubile castius, non Flaminis pulvinar erat tam pudicum. Summum imperium summâ eruditione ornasti, quam monumenta edita et æternitati consecrata luculentissimè testantur; summæ eruditioni raram et admirabilem adjunxisti eloquentiam, ne tam preciosæ supellectilis munera in pectoris sacrario supprimantur; nemo veterum Oratorum vel dicenda accuratiùs cogitavit, vel cogitata prudentiùs disposuit, vel disposita maturiùs expedivit; non hic Carneadis Academici ubertatem, non Diogenis scitam venustatem, non Critolai peripatetici modestum stylum, non Periclis fulmina, non aurea Aristotelis flumina, non mellitam Nestoris facundiam desiderares. Denique, si Principem fingere et formare velimus, nunquam animo talem concipiemus, in quo laudum concentus, virtutum chorus conspirat; propria commoda, proprios affectus exuit, communes induit; tantumque ultra omnium seculorum Principes eminet, quantum a privatis cæteri Principes recesserunt. Utinam rerum natura pateretur ut Xenophon in nostra tempora rediret, qui ad Cyri virtutes celebrandas votum potiùs quàm Historiam commodavit; in Rege nostro videret quod in Cyro suo tantum optavit! Multi Principes Majestatem Regiam vulgari et prostitui existimant, nisi intra privatos parietes quasi secretum aliquod Vestale contineantur, et in umbrâ domesticâ jacentes solitudine et silentio muniantur. At Rex noster Seren. spectari gaudet; turpiter agenti tenebras, honestæ vitæ lucem convenire arbitratur; itaque omnibus se spectandum exhibet, nec magis communem hunc diem atque solem, quàm Principem nostrum licet intueri; subditorum preces audit, verba accipit, nec quisquam acerbâ stipatoris voce aut duro viatoris verberare submovetur, ut Imperator ille qui, cùm videret tenuiores (quæ maxima in populo est multitudo,) ad se viam affectantes a satellibus suis arceri, non sine stomacho dixit, ‘Sinite homines ad me accedere; non enim ideo ad Imperium sum vocatus ut in arcâ includar.’

“Sed heu nos miseros! ut solet terra ventis et aquis subtermisissis nutare et dehis-
cere, sic Scotia, Regis sui benignissimi præsentia quâ sustentata fuit, jam diu

orbata, contremuit et pene subsedit. At felicissimus in patriam reditus rimas sistit, solitudinem pellit, mœrentes consolatur, jacentes erigit. Gaudent profectò divinâ perpetuo motu, et jugi agitatione se vegetat æternitas, indefessa vertigo cœlum agit, sol loco stare nescit, maria reciprocis æstibus sunt inquieta, divinus divina imitatis, ut salutare numen ades et assistis, et velocissimi sideris instar omnia perlustras, sic ‘Jupiter, æthere summo despiciens, mare velivolum terrasque jacentes, littoraque et latos populos;’ et hæc septemtrionalis orbis tui plaga rigida, frigida, aureo tui vultûs jubare illustrata calescere incipit et inclarescere. Ad civitatem Andreanam, antiquitate si non primam, celebritate saltem nulli inter gentiles secundam, ab Invictissimis tuis Majoribus fundatam, a Majestate tuâ permultis privilegiis prerogativis et immunitatibus splendidissimè exornatam, feliciter es advectus; alias quidem urbes in transcurso et quasi per transennam, hanc autem consultò et datâ operâ, licet in secessu sitam et studiis tantum florentem ignobilis otî, invisere non es dedignatus. De illibatâ et constante civium erga sacram tuam Majestatem fide et observantiâ, multis documentis cognitâ et exploratâ, dicere non est necesse; de sitûs opportunitate et amœnitate, aëris salubritate et temperie, de fanis basilicis, sacris pyramidibus, de publicarum et privatarum ædium splendore et magnificentiâ, de foro, ad quod tres latissimæ ducunt plateæ, lapide quadrato constratæ, de portu, vi tempestatis non ita pridem disjecto, operâ que et industriâ optimi et vigilantissimi nostri Consulis Jhoannis Knoxi *ἐν σιγμῇ χρόνου* brevissimo temporis curriculo instaurato, quia omnem dicendi facultatem superat, dicere supersedeo; hæc certè Civitas pascendis oculis et reficiendis animis data est et dicata;—sed quod instat agamus. O dulce lucis hujus serenum certè ipsâ cœli positurâ modulato concentu affici videtur, ut nec meliore notâ splendeat Galaxias, spirent Etesiæ, pariant Alcedones! Non ætas, non sexus, non valetudo retardat quominus oculos grato hoc spectaculo pascamus et compleamus; parvuli noscunt, ostentant juvenes, mirantur senes, ægri relictis Medicis ad sacrum tuum vultum, quasi ad salutem, prorepunt, ipsa civitatis tecta lætari, gestire, et prope sedibus suis convulsa obviam procedere videntur! Et vos, Andreanæ civitatis proceres et primores, fastos evolvite, ephemeridas legite, comperietis nunquam tantum hospitem penatibus vestris successisse; supplicationes itaque decernite, trophæa erigite, triumphum agite, diem hunc quo nunquam felicior vobis affulsit festum et genialem habete;—sed vigilantes exsuscito, currentibus calcar addo,—oculos aspice, ingenui affectûs et humillimi obsequii indices certissimos et testes luculentissimos! Sed, quod erit amplissimum gratitudinis vestræ indicium, nullâ

ratione vobismet ipsis satisfacere; sed Serenissimi Regis benignitati impares vos perpetuò fateri; nec Majestatis Regiæ fortuna desiderat remunerandi vicem, nec vëstra suggerit restituendi facultatem; ejus benignitas ut majestate præcellit, ita mutuum non repossit quod nostræ opis est gratias agimus, sed quod apud Deum fieri solet, sentiendo copiosius quàm loquendo quod capere potest Regis potentissimi fortuna et nostro modulo fieri; muneris hujus immortalitatem officii colemus sempiternis. Non te, æterne Deus, votis distringimus, non pacem, concordiam, securitatem, non opes, non honores oramus; votorum nostrorum epitome est salus Principis; ‘serus in Cælum redeat! diuque lætus intersit populo’ Britanno, neve eum nostris vitiis iniquum ocior aura tollat; et quandocunque post pensum, post ordinarium ætatis dimensum, cœlitum albo ascribetur, succedat divinæ originis Princeps, quem genuit, quem finxit, sibi que similem fecit! Et ego, curialis Musarum vernula, a Sacr. tuâ Majestate veniam peto quòd hæc teretismata in medium produxerim; malui etenim audacis et temerarii animi loquendo, potiùs quàm ingrati et pusilli tacendo, crimen subire.

“HENRICUS DANSKINUS,

“Civitatis Andreanæ Orator, et Juventutis ibidem Moderator.”

“The preceeding Speech being delivered, his Majestie made forward to the great Church of the Citie, and at the entrie of the porche this Speech subsequent was delivered in name of the Universitie, be Doctor Peter Bruce, Rector thereof:

“Si cujusquam Principis vel Monarchæ ad ullam vel Urbem vel Academiam adventus civibus suis usquam terrarum gratus jucundusque exstitit, tuus certè, Rex Augustissime et Invictissime, ad hanc tuam Academiam nobis longè jucundissimus esse debet, qui faustissimis Serenissimæ Majestatis tuæ auspiciis in hisce Musarum castris meremus; atque hunc diem, quo nos tanta Majestas invisere dignata est, nobis instar immortalitatis esse debere, et in fastos nostros referendum lubentes agnoscimus, quem tanquam alterum natalem in omnem posteritatem festum ac sacrum habeamus, quemque studiis negotiisque omnibus posthabitis in omnimodam lætitiâ effusi eximias tuas virtutes, res gestas, felicitatem, in hanc Academiam omnesque literatos beneficentiam deprædicando, sacro et solenni ritu celebremus. Ac etiam nunc, si quantum gaudium ac voluptatem ex adventu tuo intus mente concipimus, tantum vel fando exprimere, vel magnificè Majestatem tuam accipiendo offerre possemus, magis esset verendum ne orationis

flumine te obrueremus, quàm ne splendore et magnifico apparatu ullis mortalibus cederemus, qui Reges et optimos et optimè de se meritos in maximis opibus, maximâque rerum omnium copiâ et affluentîâ, unquam exceperunt. Quòd si unicum hoc beneficium, quòd nos tenues homunciones, in Scholarum umbrâ et situ jam diu marcescentes, splendissimis Serenissimæ Majestatis tuæ radiis proprius illustrare ac recreare volueris, tanti apud nos ponderis est ut de pari gratiâ habendâ nedum referendâ vel cogitare summæ non tantum ingratitudinis, sed et amentię vecordiæque prope conclamatæ esse non dubitemus, quomodo ad innumerabilia tua alia nos affectos esse putandum est, quæ licet in speciem multò leviora videantur, usu tamen multò fructuosiora comperiuntur? quæ tot tantaque sunt, ut, si ea non copiosè ornare, sed quàm parcissimè enumerare conarer, citius me dies quàm oratio deficeret; mihiq; esset verendum, ne meæ orationis tædium Majestati tuæ beneficentiæ pœnitentiam afferret; præsertim cùm me non fugiat, tantam esse tuam beneficentiam, ut longè majorem capias voluptatem novis beneficiis conferendis, quàm veteribus tuis audiendis, levioraque si commemorentur, plùs ruboris quàm oblectationis afferre tibi solere. Quòd si ista non satis amplam dicendi materiam mihi sufficerent, quàm spatiosum campum res tuæ domi forisque pro Republicâ, pro Ecclesiâ, summâ cum prudentiâ et fortitudine gestæ suppeditarent? nam, ut reliquas omitterem, quas in hoc proximo ordinum tuorum conventu gessisti, orationem meam, si illi habenas laxarem, in infinitum prope cogerent evagari; in quâ mihi esset dicendum, quo studio, quâque animi vocisque contentione, causam Reipublicæ et Ecclesiæ egeris adversus homines, qui, quòd suæ cupiditati nimium indulgerent, de neutrâ satis rectè senserunt; quibus omnibus non Majestatis terrore sed rationis armis debellatis, tandem effecisti ut neque Ecclesiæ Pastores, neque Pastoribus honesta vivendi ratio imposterum sit defutura; totamque Rempublicam ita bonis legibus stabilivisti, tenuiorumque securitati adversus potentiorum impotentem dominationem ita prospexisti, ut omnes regiæ tuæ curæ à Deo Opt. Max. demandati vitam in pietate, pace, honestate, (nisi quis sibi deesse velit,) imposterum suavissimè transigere possent. Possem infinita prope alia commemorare, quibus tu orbi Christiano pacem conciliasti, Antichristo odium conflasti, ad Babylonis exitium viam aperuisti, iis omnibus magno et excelso animo contemptis, quæ in sacrosanctum tuum nomen convitia contorquent homines nefarii, et publicæ generis humanæ pestes; qui, sub specioso nomine et fuco pietatis, Principum omnium, tuum verò imprimis, Rex Serenissime, exitium moliuntur; tuum inquam, quem nefandis probris incessunt,

in quem sicarios armant, veneficos subornant, incendiarios submittunt; quorum tu consilia omnia et machinationes, ex arce divini præsidii, in quam te recipisti, ceu vanos canum latratus, dirisui et contemptui habes. Hæc quanquam a nobis aliena nonnullis videri possunt; nos tamen, et propter eam quæ est nobis et cum Majestate tuâ et cum omnibus Christianis conjunctio, tam prope attingunt, ut nos non minus afficiant, quàm quæ privatim in nos beneficia conferuntur. Sed ea tot et tanta cùm sint, tamque latè pateant, nulla gens tam remota sit ac barbara, ad cujus aures non pervenerint; nulla exoritura posteritas sit tam impia et ingrata, quæ de iis conticescet; nullius dicendi aut scribendi tanta vis tantaque copia sit, ut eâ voce aut stylo possit exæquare; meæ certè tenuitatis et infantiaæ oblitus videri possem, illa si meâ oratione vellem complecti; quin si vel de tuis in hanc Academiam meritis dicere instituam, infamem ineptiaæ notam non effugerem. Sed bene habet quòd in hoc loco et coronâ de hisce non incumbat mihi dicendi necessitas, quandoquidem illa nostris oculis modò obversentur et aures circumsonent; an Bibliotheca illa tuis unius auspiciis fundata, et ad fastigium jampridem prope perducta, sed nostro partim torpore, partim necessitate interrupta, a nobis conspici potest? an tituli honorifici quibus appellamur, quos tu ab oblivione et interitu revocasti¹, audiri queant,—nisi simul audiamus eos altâ voce clamantes Regem Jacobum esse literatum et literatorum, non fautorem modò et patronum, sed Deum etiam atque parentem? Quamobrem, Rex Invictissime, ne te ex itinere fessum, et ad sacra festinantem diutiùs morer, ut tu hanc Academiam ab optimis tuis majoribus primò fundatam, Filiamque honoris ergo appellatam, a te ipso ornatam et auctam, in intimo sinu Regii tui favoris et benevolentiaæ complexus es, et hodierno die clarissimum tui in illum amoris documentum exhibes; ita vicissim illa, quanquam antea in intimo recessu sui pectoris Majestatem tuam complexa est, tamen hodie longè interiore recipit ac hospitatur; et quicquid ingenio, studio, operâ potest, id omne tibi ut Regi suo clementissimo, Patri indulgentissimo, Benefactori munificentissimo, et præsens humillimè defert, et in futurum sanctissimè pollicetur; Deumque Opt. Max. comprecatur, tuam ut Majestatem quàm diutissimè sibi et toti orbi Christiano salvam esse velit, utque tu ipse cum sene illo Pylio de longævitate possis contendere; sacratissima verò tua Progenies et solium eundem quem Sol et Luna dierum numerum sortiatur!²

“ His Majestie having hard this Speach, a book of Poems³ was presented.”

¹ See p. 367.

² “ The Muses' Welcome,” pp. 163—171.

³ A quarto printed volume, similar to that of the University of Edinburgh (noticed in p. 323),

On the 12th of July, the King signed at St. Andrews a letter to Sir Dudley Carleton, directing him to appease, as much as lay in his power, the controversies on Religion existing in the United Provinces¹.

On the same day, a Disputation in Divinity by members of the University of St. Andrews, was held before the King, "Præside Roberto Hovæo, S. S. Theologiæ Doctore. Propugnavit David Lyndesius, S. S. Theologiæ Doctor. Ubi præfatus esset Disputationis Præses, D. Hovæus, Respondens, theses suas explicavit²; et eas impugnarent Petrus Brusius, Henricus Philippus, Theodorus Hayus, Joannes Strangius³, Theologiæ Doctores. Rex, cùm eo vindice nodus incidiebat, ita doctè interfatus est et disertè, ut omnes (qui et plurimi et doctissimi interfuerant) auditores in summam rapuerit admirationem."

On the 14th were discussed certain "Problemata Philosophica, in æde sacrâ Andreanâ. Disputationi presidebat Joannes Wemesus, Academiæ Procancellarius, Jurisque in Foro Consistoriano Præses. Respondebat Robertus Baronius, Philosophiæ Professor⁴. Oppugnabant Andreas Brusius, Andreas Sylvius, David Monrous⁵, Patricius Wemesus, Gulielmus Martinus, Philosophiæ Professores." The questions were :

and entitled, "Antiquissimæ, Celeberrimæ, Academiæ Andreanæ ΧΑΡΙΕΤΗΡΙΑ in Adventum Jacobi Primi. Edinb. 1617." The Poems, of various dimensions, are re-printed in "The Muses' Welcome," and occupy pp. 172—203 of that work. They are signed, P. B.; Jacobus Blarius, S. S. T. D.; Jacobus Wedderburnus, S. S. T. B.; Guliel. Areskinus, Dunons. Pastor; Andreas Brusius, Philos. Prof.; Andreas Sylvius, Philos. Prof.; Gulielmus Martin, Philos. Prof.; Joannes Cornvallus; Godefridus Vanderhaghen, Middelburgo-Zelandus; Joannes Leochæus; Justinus Arondæus; Joannes Durwardus; David Kinalochus; Henricus Danskinus, Philol. Profes.; and the last, the only one in Greek, (consisting of five Sapphic stanzas,) *Ιωαννης Αὐλωνόστου*.—To the memory of Vanderhaghen there is a Poem, by Sir John Scot of Scotstarvet, in the Delitiæ Poet. Scot., entitled, "Tumulus Godofredi Vanderhaghen Middelburgho-Zelandi."—Of David Kinloch there are several Poems in the same collection, vol. II. pp. 1—66. See also Monteth's "Theater of Mortality."—Of Henry Danskin see p. 338. His "Ad Regem Panegyricus," presented at St. Andrews is, as well as his Poem on the King's birth-day noticed in p. 338, re-printed in the Delitiæ Poet. Scot.

¹ Printed in the Letters to and from Sir Dudley Carleton, p. 155.

² The theses and this Disputant's Speech occupy pp. 204—212 of "The Muses' Welcome."

³ Created D. D. by mandamus at the King's present visit to St. Andrews, and afterwards Principal of the University of Glasgow.

⁴ "Dr. Baron, who was at this period only a beardless youth, disputed with such dexterity and knowledge, that he filled the King and the rest of the auditory with astonishment." Irving's Scottish Poets, vol. II. p. 254.

⁵ Elected one of the Regents of the University of Edinburgh in 1604, and resigned in 1607. Craufurd's Univ. of Edinb. pp. 56, 62, 63, 66.

1. *An solum Regimen Monarchicum sit naturale.*
2. *An Muliarum et Puerorum Imperia licita sint.*
3. *An homo lumine naturæ scire possit mundum a Deo esse creatum.*
4. *An anima rationalis sit traduce* ¹.

“James now revived the practice of conferring Academical Degrees, which for some time had been discontinued by the ill-directed zeal of the Puritanical party. On the authority of a Mandamus, his Chaplain Dr. John Young created several Doctors of Divinity, among whom was William Forbes, afterward Bishop of Edinburgh, and John Strange, afterward Principal of the University of Glasgow; men who are still remembered as the authors of works connected with their sacred profession ².”

On the 17th of July, the King knighted all those members of his Band of Gentlemen Pensioners who had not before received that honour ³:

Sir Arthur Tirlingham.

Sir Arnald Herbert.

Sir John Brand.

Sir Henry Ryve.

Sir Ralph Sidenham.

Sir Thomas Evelyn.

Sir Edward Goring ⁴.

Sir John Hales.

Sir Sanders Duncomb.

Sir William Fryer.

Sir Richard Green ⁵, Clerk of the Band.

Sir Edward Burnel.

Sir Edward Gilborn.

Sir Edward Fowler.

Sir John Farmer, of Kent.

“His Majestie being returned to Stirling the 18th of July, on the morow deigned with his presence some Philosophick Disputationes.” These were by the members of the University of Edinburgh, and had been intended to have been held in the College there, but public business had interfered. At Stirling, therefore, on the 19th of July, “dixit se futurum cum magnâ Nobilitatis utriusque Regni et doctorum virorum frequentiâ. Theses disputatæ sunt in Capellâ Regiâ ab horâ quintâ vespertinâ in octavum sine Regis fastidio. Præsidebat

¹ “The Muses’ Welcome,” p. 213. Two Speeches of the Præses, and one of the Respondent, occupy pp. 214—220.

² Irving’s Scottish Poets, vol. II. p. 254.

³ On Charles the First’s visit to Scotland in 1633, he also knighted his Gentlemen Pensioners “in Master James Maxwell’s house at Anderweek.”

⁴ Most probably related to Sir George Goring, the Lieutenant of the Band, of whom in p. 255.

⁵ See p. 334.

Joannes Adamsonus¹; respondebat Jacobus Fairlæus²; opponebant Patricius Sandæus³, Andreas Junius⁴, Jacobus Reidus⁵, et Gulielmus Regius⁶, Philosophiæ Professores⁷.

¹ John Adamson, the Editor of "The Muses' Welcome," was the son of Henry Adamson, Provost of Perth, was brother to Dr. Henry Adamson, and nephew or grandson of Dr. Patrick Adamson, Archbishop of St. Andrews, and has been commemorated as one of the literary friends of the Poet Drummond. He was probably educated at St. Andrews, where he held the Professorship of Philosophy. He was elected in 1598 one of the Regents or Professors of the University of Edinburgh, and held the office with great commendation till 1604, when he resigned on being called to the ministry of Northberwick. Being injuriously used by Sir John Hume of that place, he was removed to the Ministry of Libberton near Edinburgh. In 1625 he succeeded Dr. Robert Boyd, of Trochrig, as Principal of Edinburgh University, which office he held till 1653. After having taken an active part in the present Royal Entertainment, he devised and composed, in conjunction with William Drummond, of Hawthornden, the Master of the High School, and a Committee of the gravest and most understanding citizens, the Pageants and Speeches employed on King Charles's Entry into Edinburgh in 1633. Some of his poems on that occasion are in the *Eisodia Edinensium*, 1633. See further of Adamson and his works in Irving's *Scottish Poets*, and Craufurd's *University of Edinburgh*, *passim*.

² James Fairlie, son of an honest Burgess of Edinburgh, was laureated at the University in 1607, and though only 19 years of age was elected in the same year one of the Regents or Professors of that University. In 1625 he was called to the Ministry of Leith, where he remained till 1629, when he was appointed Professor of Divinity in the same University, but resigned that office in the following year, when he was nominated one of the Ministers of Edinburgh. Craufurd's *Univ. of Edinb.* *passim*.

³ Patrick Sands, born of an honest family near Culross in Perthshire, was educated in the University of Edinburgh, where he laureated in 1587, and was elected one of the Regents or Professors in 1589. He resigned that charge in 1597, going to travel with Robert Lord Newbottle, afterwards Earl of Lothian. On his return he followed the College of Justice, and was appointed Principal of Edinburgh University in 1620. He resigned in 1622. Crauf. *Univ. of Edinb.* *passim*.

⁴ Andrew Young, born of mean parents near Jedburgh, laureated at the University of Edinburgh in 1598, and the same year was elected Regent or Professor of a Philosophy Class at Aberdeen. He was appointed one of the Regents of Edinburgh University in 1601, and died in 1623, at about 45 years of age. "He was a man, though not of great authority, yet exceedingly apt to teach, for besides his assiduity, he was very perspicuous and plain, and short and comprehensive in his dictates and expositions. He was singularly acquainted in all the text of Aristotle (wherefore the Royal compliment afterwards mentioned), though he abhorred the scholastics; being also very well seen in Humanity. About 1611 he married Barbara, widow of one Brown, a Citizen of Edinburgh, an industrious woman by whose assistance he purchased considerable wealth." By her he had one daughter who came of age, Barbara, married to Sir Michael Naesmith, of Passo, co. Peebles. Craufurd's *Univ. of Edinb.* *passim*.

⁵ James Reid, laureated at the University of Edinburgh in 1600, was elected one of the Regents

"The first Thesis¹ was, 'That Sheriffs and other inferior Magistrates ought not to be hereditary. This was opposed by a variety of arguments brought by the Opponent, wherewith the King was so well pleased, that, after divers reasons given by him in support thereof, and hearing the Respondents' answers, he turned to the Marquess of Hamilton, (at that time Hereditary Sheriff of Clydesdale²;) who stood behind his chair, and said: 'James, you see your cause is lost, and all that can be said for it clearly answered and refuted.'

"The second Thesis was on the Nature of Local Motion. The opposition to this was very great, and the Respondent produced numerous arguments from Aristotle in support of his Thesis, which occasioned the King to say that 'These men know the mind of Aristotle as well as he did himself when alive.'

"The third Thesis was concerning the Origin of Fountains or Springs. The King was so well pleased with this controversy that, although the three quarters

or Professors in 1605, and remained so to 1627, when in consequence of a quarrel with Mr. William Struthers, one of the Ministers of Edinburgh (see p. 306), who, in censure of an expectant, had called *Philosophy the dishclout of Divinity*, whilst Mr. Reid taxed this expression in his public Theses, calling it "*salsam et rigidam nimis*," alleging that Philosophy was an honorary handmaid, so strong a party was raised against him, that he gave in his resignation and retired to his house of Pitleshie in Fife, which he had acquired by marriage. His only child that came to age was married first to Sir Charles Arnot of Arnot, and secondly to Bruce of Earlsball, both co. Fife. Mr. Reid was alive in 1655, aged about 75. See Craufurd's Univ. of Edinb. *passim*.

⁶ William King, son of a North-country Gentleman, laureated at Edinburgh University in 1607, and the same year, being as Mr. Fairlie only 19, was a competitor with him for the vacant Professorship, which (when, as is very remarkable, the votes were equal,) was decided by Mr. Thomas Nicolson, who was called in to give his casting vote, assigning it to Mr. Fairlie. Mr. King was, however, recommended by the Judges for the first occasion of advancement, and was elected a Professor in the next year. He continued so till 1630, when he was called to the Ministry of Cramond, co. Edinburgh. He was a very eloquent and able preacher, and died in June 1632. Wood's History of Cramond, and Craufurd's Univ. of Edinb.

⁷ "The Muses' Welcome," p. 224, where follow the several Speeches with which the Disputants commenced their harangues.

¹ The Theses were thirteen, though only three are mentioned by Maitland, from whose History of Edinburgh the ensuing narrative is taken, and who quotes "MSS. in Coll. Lib." They are displayed with suitable perspicuity in "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 222—224, to refer to which is here sufficient.

² Such hereditary offices were very usual in Scotland, and the King would have extended the custom into England also, had the law permitted. Sir Thomas Gerard, Baronet, was promised a grant for perpetuating the Shrievalty of Lancashire in his family, but "it was not performed, being alledged to be against the liberty of the subject" (see vol. II. p. 423).

of an hour allotted for the Disputation were expired, he caused them to proceed, sometimes speaking for and against both Respondent and Opponent, seldom letting an argument on either side pass without proper remarks."

"The Disputations being over, the King withdrew to Supper; after which he sent for the Disputants, whose names were John Adamson, James Fairlie, Patrick Sands, Andrew Young, James Reid, and William King, before whom he learnedly discoursed on the several subjects controverted by them, and began to comment on their several names, and said, 'These Gentlemen, by their names, were destined for the Acts they had in hand this day;' and proceeded as followeth: 'Adam was father of all, and Adam's son had the first part of this Act; the Defender is justly called Fairlie (wonder), his Thesis had some fair lies in it, and he sustained them very fairly, and with many fair lies given to the Oppugners; and why should not Mr. Sands be the first to enter the sands? but now I clearly see that all Sands are not barren, for certainly he hath shewn a fertile wit; Mr. Young is very old in Aristotle; Mr. Reid need not be red with blushing for his acting this day; Mr. King disputed very kingly, and of a kingly purpose concerning the Royal supremacy of reason above anger and all passions;' adding, 'I am so well satisfied with this day's exercise, that I will be Godfather to the College of Edinburgh, and have it called THE COLLEGE OF KING JAMES, for after its founding it stopped sundry years in my minority; after I came to knowledge, I held to it, and caused it to be established; and although I see many look upon it with an evil eye, yet I will have them know that, having given it my name, I have espoused its quarrel, and at a proper time will give it a Royal God-bairn gift, to enlarge its revenues¹.' The King being told there was one in company his Majesty had taken no notice of, namely, Henry Charteris, Principal of the College, who, though a man of great learning, yet, by his innate bashfulness, was rendered unfit to speak in such an august assembly², his Majesty answered, 'His name agrees well with his nature, for charters contain much matter, yet say nothing; and though they say nothing, yet they put great matters into men's mouths.' The King having signified that he would be pleased to see his remarks on the Professors' names versified, it was accordingly done as follows:

¹ The name of King James's College it still retains; but, says Mr. Irving, "I have not been able to discover that the institution was ever enriched by the bounty of its nominal patron. It may, however, be incidentally mentioned to his honour, that Sir James Ware has celebrated his munificence to the University of Dublin."

² See a short memoir of him in p. 323.

"As Adam was the first of men, whence all beginning tak,
 So Adamson was President, and first man in this Act;
 The Theses Fairlie did defend, which though they lies contain,
 Yet were fair lies, and he the same right fairlie did maintain;
 The feild first entred Master Sands, and there he made me see,
 That not all Sands are barren sands, but that some fertile be;
 Then Master Young most subtilie the Theses did impugne,
 And kythed old in Aristotle, although his name bee Young;
 To him succeeded Master Reid, who, thogh Reid be his name,
 Neids neither for his Disput blush, nor of his Speach think shame;
 Last entred Master King the lists, and dispute like a King,
 How reason reigning like a Queene shuld anger under bring,
 To their deserved praise have I thus playd upon their names,
 And will their Colledge hence be call'd THE COLLEDGE OF KING JAMES¹."

On the 19th of July, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus from London to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"These eight or ten days here have been great stirs betwixt the Lord Coke and his Lady about carrying away their younger daughter, which she will no ways consent should match with Sir John Villiers, as the Lord Coke had agreed, with £.20,000 ready portion, 2000 marks yearly maintenance during his life, and £.2,000 land after his decease. If he had offered these conditions when time was, and taken Occasion by the forehead when she presented herself, they might have stood him in great stead; whereas now perhaps he doth but catch at the bald side. The Daughter was first carried to Lady Withipole's², from thence privily to a house of the Lord of Argyle's³, at Hampton Court, whence her father with a warrant from Mr. Secretary fetched her; but indeed went further than his warrant, and broke open doors before he gat her. His Lady was at his heels; and if her coach had not tired in the pursuit after him, there was like to be strange tragedies. He delivered his daughter to the Lady Compton [Villiers],

¹ "The Muses' Welcome," p. 231; "Mox versus varii Latinos fecerunt, ex quibus tres versiones non inegantes placuit ascribere," pp. 231, 232. They are signed, D. Patr. Humius, Atonius, Eques (of Ayton, co. Berwick, an old cadet of the family of the Earl of Home); G. B.; and N. Uduardus (see p. 324). Then follow, in the three next pages, three Latin Poems, the first of which, consisting of 40 elegiac lines, has for its text the King's compliment to its author—"Arenæ Fertiles."

² Wife of Sir Edmond Withipole, knighted in 1599. Their house was near Oatlands.

³ Archibald, seventh Earl of Argyle, succeeded his father in that title in 1584. He was of a warlike disposition, and in 1610 went to Spain, entered into the service of Philip the Third, and became a Papist. He returned to England in 1638, and died in London the same year, aged about 62. See Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. I. p. 93.

Sir John's mother; but the next day Edmondess, Clerk of the Council, was sent with a Warrant to have the custody of her at her own house. The next day, being all convented before the Council, she was sequestered to Mr. Attorney, and yesterday upon a palliated agreement betwixt Sir Edward Coke and his Lady, she was sent to Hatton House, with order that the Lady Compton and her son should have access to win her and wear her. It is said the mother and daughter aim at a younger son¹ of the Lord Treasurer's².

On the 22d of July, the King came to Glasgow³, "where at his Majestie's entrie this subsequent Speach was delivered in the name of the Citie by Maister William Hay, of Barro, Commissar of Glasgow⁴:

"If my eloquence were in the smallest proportion answerable, high and mightie Prince, to the glorie and brightnes of your vertues, and to the pompe and splendor of this Royall assemblie and staitlie throng, then might I have most certaine hope to performe this task which by the most reverend Prelat and Citizens of this your loving Citie is præscribed unto mee; but knowing all that is in mee humble and weak, and seing everie thing heere about mee magnificent, high, and glorious, I am become like one touched with a torpedo, or seen of a woulfe, and my words, as affrayed, ar loath to come out of my mouth; but it shallbe no dishonour to mee to succombe in that for the which few or none can be sufficientlie able. What Orator either of the old world or of these after tymes, were accomplished enough to speake before so excellent and learned a Prince? and can condignlie manifest the unmeasurable happines of this triumphing day? Had I as many tongues as there bee heere eyes which gaze upon mee, and if everie one of them should flow with as deepe a torrent of eloquence as either that of Demosthenes did at Athens, or that of Tullius at Rome, they were all but unworthie to performe this office, and all too too few for that last.

"O day worthie to bee marked with the most orient and brightest pearles of Inde, or with them which that enamoured Queene of Nile did macerat to her as valorous as unfortunat lover? O day more glorious, becaus without blood, then

¹ Probably Sir Robert Howard, K. B. who was afterwards prosecuted for his gallantries with the young Lady, when wife of Sir John Villiers.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

³ Where the King was accommodated at Glasgow I have not been able to ascertain. It was either in the Bishop's Palace or within the walls of the University.

⁴ Probably the eldest son of John Hay, Depute Clerk of Edinburgh and Lord of Session (see p. 318), and himself afterwards one of the Clerks of Session.

that in which, at the command of that imperious Captain, the Sunne stayed his course and forgot the other hemisphere? Thou hast brought us againe our Prince by three diadems more glorious than hee was in that last day when with bleeding harts and weeping eyes wee left him. Those who never looked on our horizon, but as fatall comets, nor ever did visit us, but heavie with armes, and thirstie of blood, thou, o day, as benigne planets, freinds, and compatriots bringest unto us.

“But if wee owe so much unto thee, o day, what ar wee owen to him who made thee? faire lamp of the world, this day is none of thyn; but, mightie Prince, it is from thee that we enjoy it. For, were it not by thee, wee had still continued in our old Cimmerian night, a night of discord, hatred, envye, a night of civile broyles, mischef, blood, a night in which all the Furies did walk, a night only enlightned with horrible meteors, lightnings, dragons, lances, thunders of warres. It is by thee, great King, that both this darknes and our old name begin to be abolished; and from thyne aspect and dayes it is, that our happines heere below doth flow.

“Honorable and worthie Auditors, stay your minds and eyes a while with mee, and contemplat heere the onely Phoenix of the world. Heere is that great peacemaker and composer of our mortall—no, immortall—warres; behold the man, who what nether by wit, nor force, nor blood, could bee performed, hath accomplished, made a yock of lyons, united two the most warlik nations of the world. This is that King whose birth was so long foretold by these ancient Rimors, Beads, and Merlines, the end of all your prophecies; to see whose happie dayes our credulous forefathers so earnestlie wished, and wehementlie did languish. Heer is a patrone of all vertue, a scourge of vice, either a daunter or extirper of wilde barbaritie; the innocent’s guard, the orphan’s father, the rich man’s securitie, the poore man’s wealth, your true ἀλεξικακος and diverter of evils. Heere is a Prince in whome there is verelie to be found more vertues and more worth then all those which Guevara did faigne to bee in his Marcus Antonius, or Xenophon in his most excellent Cyrus; who although hee were not yours, yet he could be no otherwayes looked upon by you then with the eyes of love and admiration. Hee is amongst the Princes of his tyme as the gold amongst the mettals, the diamond amongst the gemmes, the rose amongst the flowers, and the moone amongst the starres. His vertues breath such a sweet aire through all the climats of the world, as roses wold doe if they did grow in the skie. Now I am no more in a maze why the sunne draweth so admirablie the lotos, the load-starre the load-stone,

the load-stone the irone, the amber the chaffe, sith his vertues so far have that attractive power, that the remotest nations not onlie love them, but wish that his happie government were over them.

“O Prince, no less wise then learned, learned then religious, religious then humane, who wold rightlie praise thee should have thyn owne eloquence! Thou deservest more to bee crowned with bayes and olives, then that first and greatest Emperour, who to this joyfull moonth hath given this name; thy victories are without blood, and thy conquests all love and peace. Who wold compare this thy reigne with these reignes of thy Predecessors, shuld find such difference amongst them as is between blustering tempests and gentle calmes, rough winters and flowrie springs, delightsome health and devoring seiknes. Thrice happie Isle, without that hath so stronge a guard as the Ocean, within so wise a Governour as this King! The sunne, who maketh the round of this earth everie day, seeth no bounds so happie as thyne, and of this Isle seeth no place now comparable to this Citie.

“Upon whose Citizens from the highest top of all greatnes, honour, and worth vouchsaife, Sir, to looke; who thogh they glitter not with gold and precious stones, yet doe shyne with loyaltie and obedience, and thogh not with great rhetorick and flourishing of words, yet with their countenances, gestures, acclamations, claps of joy, doe testifie and give evident signes of that abundant gladnes which possesseth their harts for this your happie returne. In which thogh there may bee perhaps many found who have equaled them, yet there shalbe none that can goe before them. I shuld heere relate how farre this Citie is engaged to your Majestie’s progenitors, if those dueties which it oweth to your selfe did not mak all the former lesse; the restoring of her Archbishop’s seat (by the violence of opinion almost abolished), the confirming of her ancient priviledges, the beautifying her with a seminarie of religion and learning. And I shuld tell, how many reasons your Majestie had to love this Citie, if they were not more then evident to all who either know us, or our historie.

“Incense was of old offred in the temples for a token of thankfulnes and humilitie of humane minds, and that men shuld know how that all they could offer to heaven was of no more worth in itselfe then is a litle smoake. So doe wee confesse to be all that wee doe or can doe to your Majestie. Alas! all that can proceed from us can in nothing answer that which your merits deserves of our gratitude, and that our gratitude oweth to your merits; for the hight of it

can bee but perpetuall remembrances of them, love and true obedience to you and yours, the Gemini which are the ascendants of all loyall subjects; earnest prayers to heaven for the enlarging of this flourishing Impyre with the continuing of your long and happie reigne; which whil we enjoy any peice of reason, of sense, of lyfe, of being, shall never be unregarded, no, shal ever bee devotlie observed of us¹."

"Regi transeunti, Academiae Glasguensis nomine, hanc Salutationem dixit Robertus Bodius a Trochoregiâ, Academiae Primarius²:

"Si è sphærâ suâ descenderet, nobis se propriùs admoturus, ille Mundi Oculus, qui vitam lucemque rebus hisce terrenis impertit, non lætitiâ et fructum, sed luctum potiùs lachrymasque secum afferret, nec faustis ac festis applausibus, sed fletu potiùs ac tumultu omnia compleret, miseros mortales nimîâ suâ propinquitâ torrens simul ac terrens, quod et sub Phaëtonte olim accidisse veteres poëtæ fabulantur; atqui non ita, Rex Augustissime, quem Britannia tuæ Solem unicum, quem, secundum Deum, florentis hujus Imperii lumen et columen jure merito profitemur, non ita de Serenissimâ tuâ Majestate rem esse, testis inter alias hodiernus dies, tua quo 'propriùs datur ora tueri,' immo temet coram et comminus affari; dies, quo nullum unquam nobis lætiorem, clariorem, optatiorem illuxisse, vel nobis tacentibus clamat hic Civium gratulantium lætantiumque concursus, hæc subditorum tam læta ac festa Panegyris, ad Principem suum videndum simul et audiendum 'Θυασιν ἥδε ποσὶν ἴσον ἐπειγομένων, auribus pedibusque, inquam, ex æquo certantium, irruentium, irrumpentium. Quùm tuæ Majestati visum est, è

¹ "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 237—239. In p. 250 is a "Salmo Χερσεντερος Regi Glasguam ingredienti cum poculo a Civibus oblatum."

² Robert Boyd, of Trochrig in Ayrshire, was son and heir of James Boyd, of Trochrig, Archbishop of Glasgow, who died in June 1581. He was first Professor of Divinity at Saumaz in France, was then made Principal of Glasgow University, and afterwards in 1620 of that at Edinburgh. His "Prælectiones in Epistolâ Pauli Apostoli ad Ephesios," are considered as a respectable monument of his learning. They were delivered in the College of Saumaz, but not published till after his death, when they were edited by his son John and printed at London in 1652, forming no fewer than 1236 ample folio pages. Prefixed is a life of the author by the celebrated Andrew Rivet. Boyd was the author of a much-admired Poem, entitled, "Ad Christum Servatorem Hecatombæ," inserted in the collections of Johnston and Lauderdale; and other Poems of his are preserved in the *Delitiæ Poet. Scot.* See further in Irving's *Scottish Poets*, vol. II.—Robert Boyd was served heir of his father James Boyd, of Trochrig, Feb. 16, 1608, and John his eldest son was served heir of him, April 21, 1640. (Inq. rot. in publ. arch.)

tuo Palatio Regiâque Civitate, velut è sphærâ quâdam sublimi, descendere, Præsulum Procerumque coronâ splendidissimâ circumseptâ, tanquam radiis totidem ex tuo corpore quaquaversum promicantibus, ut cæteras amplissimi tui regni partes præsentiæ tuæ splendore proprius illustrares, quòcunque Sol hic noster amœnissimi sui vultus lumen circumtulit, subditorum suorum animos exhilaravit sola ejus appropinquatio, eosdem autem incredibili gaudio replevit, immò extra se raptavit, exoptata præsentiâ; quod quidem ipsis et corda dilatavit et ora reservavit, partim in laudes et gratiarum actiones, partim in vota precesque pias pro tuâ incolumitate conceptas. Hunc adventus tui felicitis effectum¹ senserunt ante nos insigniores illæ Civitates, provinciarum suarum Metropoles, quæ te transeuntem exceperunt, quasque dierum aliquot morâ Majestas tua nobilitare dignata est; hunc eundem post alias Glasgva tua persentiscit; Glasgva, etsi nec opum copiâ, nec ædium splendore, nec mœnium ambitu, nec civium dignitate conspicua, erga te tamen, obsequio, fide, summissæque devotionis affectu, nulli cessura tuarum; quin, ut illud omittam, gloriandi ingens Glasguensibus argumentum, quo divinâ quâdam dispensatione Glasgva sibi vindicat, si non ortum ipsum, at certè auspicata vitæ tuæ primordia,

“ Quæ gremio complexa suo est, cùm Martis in alvo
 Occulereris adhuc, Mundi hoc sublime priusquam
 Te jubar aspiceret; reliquas interque Britannas
 Munere tam raro tantum caput evehet urbes,
 Humanos inter quantum caput eminet artus.

“ Ut illud, inquam, omittam, hoc ipso non paucis aliarum invidenda, quòd per te illo fruatur, quòd sub te ab illo regatur Antistite, quem ut præsens ætas colit et suspicit, ut Patriæ decus, Ecclesiæ munimen, præsidium civibus, amplissimi ordinis ornamentum, sic ultra omnem livoris et calumniæ nubem, sibi aliquando proponet haud ingrata posteritas in omnigenæ virtutis exemplar, et in quo uno, si dicere fas est, inopem tua se prodidit opulentia, quòd scilicet, etsi hominumque et honoris abundans, vix tamen huic parem habeas reliquum, quem in ejus quod absit amissi aliòve translati locum sufficias. Verum ante omnes hanc Sapientiæ Musarumque domum refocillat ac recreat hic jucundissimus tuæ Majestatis aspectus, quæ sub tuæ pueritiæ felicibus auspiciis excitata, nunc sub ejusdem venerandâ canitie denuo sibi renata videtur; et unâ cum tuo adventu faustissimo, unâ cum publicâ hâc festivitate atque lætitiâ, suum hunc alterum natalem celebrare

gestit; tantòque aliis gestit et exultat impensiùs, quantò plus fructùs ex hâc publicâ temporum felicitate sentit ad nos literarum studiis addictos, quàm ad vulgus promiscuum redundare. Sicut enim ex iis quibus eadem aspiravit maris ventorumque tranquillitas, animosiùs à Mercatore, quàm à vectore votum solvitur, adeoque ex ipsis mercatoribus is Deo plura debere se judicat, qui odores et purpuras et auro pensanda portabat, quàm qui vilissima quæque et saburræ loco futura congesserat, ita pacis hujus otiique publici beneficium, quo sub tuæ Majestatis pio prudentique moderamine tot annos fruimur, etsi ad omnes æquè pertineat, ad nos tamen eo rectè usuros, hoc est, illud in Virtutis et Sapientiæ studium impensuros, altiùs pervenire debet, et gratioribus animis agnoscì, agnitumque publicâ hâc et unanimi professione celebrari. Verùm hoc nobis commune cum cæteris, per tuas ditiones ejusdem vitæ sociis, eorundem studiorum consortibus; ad illud festino, quod huic Academiæ peculiare fecit tua clementia; quippe quam alioqui sub onere suo fatiscentem, proximis hisce regni comitiis novo subsidio fulcire, novo commeatu instruere, novique censûs auctario ditare atque dotare dignatus es; unde spes nobis posterisque nostris affulgeat, fore aliquando, ut non modò damna nostra sarciantur, membra nunc languentia roborentur, omniaque quæ nunc labant aut vacillant in melius mutantur, sed et quæ desunt membra suppleantur, quæ alibi videmus invidenda, (nec tamen invidemus, sed ingenuè miramur potiùs,) apud nos quoque videantur, et hoc Musarum hospitium, quod sub te natum, sub te quoque crevit et adolevit, ad suam quandam et perfectionem et cultum et claritatem, tuo unius beneficio provehatur. Pro quâ largitate quas tibi nunc, Rex Maxime, gratias agat hæc alumna tibi devotissima simul ac devinctissima? quibus hanc tuam erga se munificentiam encomiis, quibus hanc humanitatem *εὐφημίσμοις* prosequatur? quæ suam ad hoc debitè præstandum inopiam et *ἀμυχανίαν* non tam ædificiorum angustiis, parietum squalore, aspectu ipso tam humili, tuamque sublimitatem nequiquam addecente, quàm hac ipsâ mei balbutientis infantiâ, quàm hâc ipsâ mei ad tam claram lucem *εὐγγιῶντος καὶ σκοτοδινιῶντος*, hæsitantis inquam et caligantis vertigine, prodere cogitur ac propalare; certè si quid in me esset ingenii, si quid artis, inventionis, eloquii, si quid in hâc dicendi facultate aut usu possem aut studio, nunc, aut nunquam aliàs, id omne promendum esset et exprimendum; sed nescio quo pacto plerunque fit in his talibus, ut quo magis conamur eo minùs faciamus, quò acriùs enitimur ægriùs pariamus, quod maximè volumus id minimè valeamus, et effectum nimis anxie concupitum impediât ipsa affectionis intentio; quòd cùm reputaret Indus ille,

jaculator omnium sui temporis peritissimus, invitante Alexandro renuit artis suæ specimen exhibere, maluitque recusando vitæ suæ discriminem incurrere, quàm unius ictûs periculo de famâ sibi multò antè quæsitâ vel tantillum detrahere; mihi tamen absit ut idem nunc placeat coram tuâ Majestate consilium, apud quam, contrâ quàm olim Bernardus apud Eugenium, tutiùs acceptiùsque reor ipsâ loquendi temeritate quàm silentii timiditate peccare; modò conatum interim sese ultra vires intendentem remisero, et ad moduli mei gyrum breviorē revocâro, *μὴ ταῦτο παθῶ ταῖς φωναῖς, αἱ τῷ ὑπερφωνεῖσθαι παντέλως διαπίπτουσι, ἢ τῇ ὀψει τεινύουσιν πρὸς ἡλιακῇν ἀκτῖνα*, ne quod vocibus idem mihi contingat, quæ supramodum elatæ prorsus intercidunt et evanescunt, aut visui qui contra radios solares intenditur, ut scitè monet Nazianzenus. Quid igitur faciam per has temporis quæ me coarctant angustias, cui nec multa dicere consultum est, tam alieno loco ac tempore, nec datum est paucis multa complecti, sed, equitum Tyronum instar, non nisi laxiori gyro circumvehi? An passis velis nunc prohevar in immensum illud laudum suarum pelagus, quod nec tua pateretur modestia, nec pro merito ac dignitate præstare posset mea jejunitas, nec si possem vel maximè, dicendum id esset in transitu, cui vix dies integer et ingens volumen sufficeret? An virtutum tuarum culmina leviori, quod aiunt, et sicciori pede percurram, quod esset eas ingenii mei culpâ deterere potiùs quàm decorare? An rerum à te domi, foris, privatim publicèque gestarum gloriam delibabo, quas optima certatim ingenia jampridem æternitati consecrârunt? An Majestatem tuam vel cum coævis Principibus, vel cum superiorum temporum præstantissimis quibusque componam, ut, quatenus quidem in singulis eximium aliquid eluxit, omnium in te uno compendium quoddam admirandum proponam? An sortis tuæ felicitatem ostendam, quem quùm jure meritisque tuis, communia procerum ac populorum vota, communia ordinum omnium suffragia sic in sublimitatis hujus fastigium evexerunt, ut inter illius Solis occasum et hujus Augustioris exortum, nullam noctem intervenire senserit Australis illa Britannia?

“ Qui diadema tenes, nec vi, nec sanguine partum,
 Nec precio; felix triplicis concordia Regni
 Cui servata venit, magnis quod Regibus olim
 Tentatum toties meminit, totiesque negatum
 Prisca Caledoniis comprehensa Annalibus Ætas;
 Fœdere nam nullo tantæ coalescere vires
 Ante tuum potuere diem, Natura, Deusque
 Quem fecere Ducem, quique hoc nisi jura dedissent
 Imperium, poteras solâ virtute mereri.

“ Sed hoc jam alii luculentur oratione et prorsâ et vorsâ præstiterunt, qui tamen argumenti hujus ubertatem nullâ styli diligentia sic totam exhaurient, ut non multa aliis famæ eundem tuæ campum ingressuris intacta relinquant; quippe quum nulla dies vitæ tuæ annis accedat, (accedant autem optamus innumeræ!) quin ex novis virtutum tuarum fructibus, novam semper afferat felicibus ingeniis tui decantandi materiam. Hoc unum igitur, omissis aliis, Augustissime Princeps, a nobis præsertim omitti nec debet nec expedit, quod in tuæ Serenitatis encomium nunquam silebit universa eruditorum posteritas, tibi scilicet uni bona, literas, tibi literarum studia, tibi studiorum horum et alumnos et præstites, non cultum tantum ac decus, nec tutelam solum ac patrocinium, sed et vitam ipsam debere cum spiritu; te haud ita pridem, in Amplissimo illo Ordinum Concilio, subditis tuis universis ad hanc laudem et exemplo et auctoritate tuâ prævisse; immo non tuis tantum, cujuscunque gradûs et ordinis, sed et exteris posterisque ipsis; apud quos lucebunt illa tuæ eloquentiæ fulmina dicam an flumina, quamdiu apud illos vigebit ulla rerum a te feliciter gestarum memoria, quamdiu ulla legum sub tuis auspiciis latarum reverentia; te palam omnibus ostendere cæpisse, (quod et porro facturum indies cum bono Deo speramus et vovemus,) quis verus usus illarum opum, quas Deo piisque semel usibus a Majoribus nostris dicatas, nescio tamen quo malo regni et ecclesiæ hujus fato (dicam enim liberè sub tanto Patrono ac Vindice καὶ δακέθυμον ἐπ' οὐγὺν ἔκτοθε ῥήξω, Οφρά με μὴ ῥήξειεν ἐεργόμενον πρᾶτιδεσσιν, et vocem hanc edam veram atque severam, ilia ne mihi fors rumpat, nisi nunc erumpat,) nescio quâ quorundam ἀβουλία, aliorum πανουργία, omnium ἀβελετερία videmus nunc a primo suo scopo penitus aberrasse, quippe è quibus in sanctos olim usus, et nominatim in juventutis rectam institutionem erogatis, nunc tamen, O seculi nostri probrum et maculam! nihil ad ecclesiam, nihil ad publicum, nihil ad viduas, orphanos, egenos, nihil ad patriam juventutem utilitatis redundat; quæ tali destituta subsidio, cogitur non sine gentis nostræ contemptu atque dedecore, apud externos ignobilem plerumque servitutem servire, et vel in Gallias quotannis sese diffundere, vel domi inter vernas et assecclas otiosa desiderare; aut certe, si quid inde ad Ecclesiam, si quid ad Ecclesiæ seminaria, Scholas et Academias, virtutis et pietatis ἀσκητήρια doctrinæ et morum officinas, fructus manat et commodi, si quid ad inopem, ad bona tamen studia natam juventutem, subsidii, id omne tuæ unius munificentiae, pietati, prudentiæ acceptum ferimus et imputamus; audiant hoc animi à Musarum cultu alieni; audiant livor et sacrilegium ipso livore deterius, (quas tamen labes, absit ut audientium cui-

quam adspersam,) audiant tamen, ubicunque locorum delitescunt, et audientes ringantur et erubescant; absque tuâ Majestate foret, Ecclesias vastitas, Academias solitudo, Regnum hoc pristina tandem barbaries occuparet; tantus ex Atheismo natus est, in tantâ lucem et literas profitendi libertate, literarum tam divinarum quàm humanarum contemptus! tanti sui retinendi, alieni autem occupandi cupiditas! Quòd ergo sive Scholarum sive Ecclesiarum Rectoribus, sive Musarum sacris, sive Sacrorum functioni, suus adhuc constet honos, libertas, præmia, vel certè, quòd nondum in extremi contemptûs et paupertatis angustias hæc omnia detrusa sint, cui nisi tuæ Majestati secundum Deum debebimus? quæ si in hoc tam laudabili instituto perrexerit, et in hunc scopum suas curas et cogitationes constanter direxerit, cujus tam paucos ubivis terrarum æmulos habitura est, næ illa tandem Regina Sapiencia, cum totâ disciplinarum illi famulantium Encyclopediâ, suas has nec recentes nec decentes quærimonias,

——“ Fuerant, fuerant mea tempora quondam,
Quùm docilis nostris magno fervore juvenus
Serviit imperiis, nec honos Marti obtigit uni.

Apud nos quidem, in vaticinium hoc veriùs lætiùsque commutabit,

——“ Venient, venient mea tempora quondam,
Scotia quùm nostris magno certamine rursum
Serviet imperiis, et honos mihi habebitur uni.

Sed vereor, ne navim tuam triumphalem plenis velis in portum tendentem, nimis jam diu remorata sit hæc nostra remora; quo enim alio, Rex inclyte, schematismo, tuam hanc tantam erga nos tantillos humanitatem expressero, quâ, cum Regali comitatu pompâque præteriens, et ex longioris itineris jactatione nonnihil fortasse fatigatus, ad nostra tamen hæc limina restas, exemploque tuo magnificum hoc satellitium tecum restitare cogis et frænos adducere? quo alio quàm navis in medio suo cursu, ringentibus nautis, mirantibus ventis, Oceano ipso adstupente, pusillæ Echeneïdos objectu, è vestigio inhibitæ et compeditæ, utque olim eleganter illud Ciliciæ lumen,

“ Ἰχθυὸς οὐτιδάνοιο κατὰ σόμα ριζωθείσης
Τοιγύνη, νηὶ πεδὴν περιβάλλεται αἰολὸς Ἰχθυὸς
Ἀντιάσας τοιγύνη δὲ φεγωνυμίην λάχεν ἔργων.

“ Pisciculi vilis medio quam fixit in alto
Os inconspicuum; tantum valet illius ictus,
Illius occursus, contra remosque, notosque,
Vimque omnem adversam! hinc Echenëis jure vocata est.

“ Hoc solum interest, quod Remoræ natura vim quandam ἀνθελκτικὴν dicam an σατικὴν, admirandâ planè non exquirendâ ratione concessit; nobis nihil adest, nihil inest ἐλκυσικόν, nulla virtus occulta, nullum sermonis illicium, cujus venustate Regales tuæ aures oculive capiantur, qui Regnum hoc tam latè patens potensque

“ Ὡτε νῆα νέμεις πραπίδων ὀηκὶ παλίνῳ

Ceu navim excelsæ regis acri mentis habenâ.

“ In temet uno causa quærenda est; nempe illa tibi peculiaris humanitas, Musarumque immensus amor, qui te cogit ad hæc tecta divertere, atque humiles lustrare casas; quod tuum factum, quin eâdem nunc ad extremum acclamatione celebremus, quâ Imperatorum suorum Optimum Romanus olim Senatus excepit; TANTO MAJOR, TANTO AUGUSTIOR, quantò te ad minora et angustiora demittis! Cui enim nihil ad augendum fastigium superest, hoc uno modo crescere potest, si magnitudinis suæ securus, ad subditos se ipse submittat, et ut Sol ille, quo celsior, eo minor apparet, ita gloriæ suæ solstitium ad intuentium captum et conditionem attemperet; hæc igitur acclamatione iteratâ TANTO MAJOR, TANTO AUGUSTIOR, hanc sermonis telam finio, vel abrumpo potius; ubi tuam priùs Majestatem oravero, *ὁὸς χεῖρα καὶ ἐυμενέουσιν ὀπώπην*, ‘placido cum vultu porrige dextram,’ non quò des aliquid, (absit à nobis ad modestiam et factis et institutis tam intemptiva, tam invereconda petendi licentia!) sed ut hoc è tuâ segete præmetium accipias, quod Celsitudini tuæ cum hæc spe gestit et audet offerre tua Glasguensis Academia, fore ut sicut *Καθαρὰς τὸ Θεῖον χεῖρας, ὅν πληρεῖς σκοπεῖ*, ‘puras Deus, non plenas aspicit manus,’ ita tu quoque, viva et spirans ejus in terris effigies; cujus honori, ut plenâ aliquando manu, plenâque ingenii messe litet hæc alumnarum tuarum, ut natu et vultu, ita cultu et conatu minima, ubi per te speratam illam maturitatem attigerit, unanimi hæc nostrûm omnium voce votoque Deum supplex veneratur, sit vita tua apud ipsum ligata in fasciculo viventium, inimicos tuos induat pudore, super te autem floreat Corona tua, *Πολλαῖς ἐν δεκάδεσσιν ἐλισσομένων ἐνιαυτῶν*, ‘Per multas vertentium annorum decurias,’

Te superumque Choris aucto, tua fama superstes
Canescat seclis innumerabilibus. Amen, amen.

Vivat Rex Jacobus in æternum! !.”

‘ “ The Muses’ Welcome,” pp. 240—246. Next follow eleven pages of poetry, by Robert Boyd, of Trochrig, Robert Blair, Alexander Boyd, and a Greek hexameter Poem of 47 lines, by David Dikson.—In Jonstoni Heroes (Del. Poet. Scot. vol. I. p. 698) Alexander Bodius is noticed as “ poeta suavissimus.”

"On the 24th of July, the King's Majestie came to Paisley, where in the Earle of Abercorne ¹ his great Hall ² was verie gratuslie delivered by a prettie boy of nine yeeres age, Williame Semple, son of Sir James Semple of Beltries ³, this Welcome following :

"A grayer Orator, Sir, would better become so great action as to welcome our great and most gracious Sovereigne; and a bashfull silence were a boye's best eloquence. But seeing wee read that in the salutations of that Romane Cæsar, a sillie pye amongst the rest cryed, 'Ave, Cæsar!' too. Pardon mee, Sir, your Majestie's owne old Parret, to put a few words, as witnesses of the fervent affections of your most faithfull subjects in these parts; who all by my tongue, as birds of one cage, crye with mee, 'Ave, Cæsar!—welcome, most gracious King!'

"'Welcome!' then is the word, and welcome the work wee all aime at. A verball welcome were base, trivial, and for everie body; and a real and Royal welcome, answering either our harts' desires or your Highnesse's deservings, *Ad hæc quis sufficiens?* Actions can never æquall affections. Saying then is nothing; shall I swear your Majestie's welcome? I dare; but it becommeth not a boy to

¹ Of the Earl's house I have discovered no account. The family mausoleum, an ancient chapel, is pronounced by Pennant to be by much the greatest curiosity in Paisley. It contains some Royal monuments, but has no pulpit or pew. It affords "the finest echo perhaps in the world." See Pennant's Tour in Scotland, vol. II. p. 168.

* James, eldest son of Claud Hamilton, Lord Paisley, "was a man of eminent parts, much taken notice of at Court, and highly esteemed by King James," who, whilst yet King of Scotland only, made him a Lord of his Privy Council and Gentleman of his Bed-chamber, and gave him in 1600 the office of High Sheriff of the County of Linlithgow to him and his heirs male whatever, and in 1601 the lands of Abercorn, &c. He was created a Peer by the title of Baron of Abercorn in 1603; in 1604 was one of the Commissioners of the proposed Union; and in 1606 was advanced to the dignity of Earl of Abercorn, Baron of Paisley, Hamilton, Mountcastle, and Kilpatrick. Having large estates in Ireland, he was, when summoned to the Parliament there in 1613, allowed the precedence of an Earl. In 1615 he was appointed of the Council of the Province of Munster, and had a large grant of lands in the Barony of Strabane, where he built a very strong and fair castle, a school-house, and a church. In 1616 his son James, then only thirteen, to encourage his residence in Ireland, was created Baron Strabane, a title he afterwards, having succeeded to the Earldom of Abercorn, resigned to his brother Claud, by whose family it was enjoyed till it merged in the Earldom on Claud fifth Lord Strabane becoming fourth Earl. The first Earl died March 16, 1617-18, within a year of the present date. His father Lord Paisley survived him, dying in 1621, aged 78. See Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. I. p. 4.

² The Semples of Beltries were old cadets of the family of Semple Lord Semple. This juvenile Orator is a parallel to the young Sir Alexander Seton, the anecdote respecting whose welcoming Charles I. at Seton in 1633 has been related in p. 307; but the present youth had seen three years less than the future Viscount Kingston.

touch the Bible; and yet, because an oath taken by nothing, is but nothing, I sweare by the BLACK BOOK OF PAISLEY your Majestie is most dearlie welcome.

“Thus have I said, Sir, and thus have I sworne,
Performance tak from noble Abercorne.

“Welcome then, Sir, every where, but welcomer here then any where. This seemeth a paradox, but if I prove it, your Majestie I hope will approve it. Three pillers of my proof I find in our ould Poet, his Phœbus, his Clytia, and his Leucothoe; whose fabulous allegorie, if I can applie to ourselves by true historie, all is well.

“Phœbus, Sir, you know, is known to all, because seene of all; that sunne, that eye, by which the world seeth, shining alike both on good and bad. And are not you, Sir, our Royall Phœbus? are not you as an eye of the world, seeing upon you are the eyes of the world, some for good, others for evill, according to their minds. And as that sunne in his course compasseth and passeth by the whole world, so hath your Majestie, since you beganne to shine in your Royall sphære, inhanced a good part of the world; but passed by, and buried all the Princes, aswell of the heathen as Christiane world. O shine still then, our Royall Phœbus!

“Now that your Majestie is the peculiar Phœbus of our westerne world, if any did doubt, then, *Ex ore duorum aut trium*, your three Kingdomes ar three witnesses. Still shine then, our Royal Phœbus! Now, Sir, Clytia and Leucothoe were Phœbus’ Mistresses; Clytia, the daughter of the Ocean, Phœbus’ first Love. Hence did the Poets faine, that the sunne rising in the East, holdeth his course westward for visiting his love, and according to their long or short embracements, aryse our long or short dayes and nights. And are not wee then, Sir, of Scotland, your Majestie’s owne old kindlie Clytia? are not you, Sir, our Phœbus, comming from the East, with glorious displayed beames, to embrace us in the mouth of ocean? and is not this verie place now, Sir, your westermost period? Ergo, Sir, your kindest Clytia.

“Your Clytia, Sir, is of many goodlie members. Your Majestie hath past alreddie her head, neck, and armes, your greater Townes and Cities; but till now came you never to her hart. Why? because in this very parish is that auncient seat of William Wallas¹, that worthie warrier, to whome, under God, wee owe that you ar ours, and Britanne yours. In this very parish is that noble house of

¹ Wallace was the younger of Wallace of Elderslie, near Paisley.

Dairnley Lennox, whence sprung your Majestie's most famous Progenitors. In the Citie you came from, the bed that bred you. In the next youe goe to that noble race of Hamilton, wherein your Highnesse's most Royall steme distilled some droppes of their dearest blood; and in this very house is your Majestie's owne noble Abercorne, a cheefe sprigge of the same roote, removed only a litle by tyme, but nothing by Nature. And therefore are you in the verie hart of your Clytia, and so welcomer to her hart then to any other part. And so I hope your Majestie's parret hath proved his paradox.

"Now, Sir, Leucothoe, that fairest Ladye, Phœbus' second love, shee is even your Majestie's owne glorious England most worthy of all love. When that Phœbus first wooed that Leucothoe, hee was faine to transforme himselfe in the shape of her mother, and so to shift her hand-maids for a more privat accesse. But when your Majestie went first to English Leucothoe, you went lik yourselfe, busked with your owne beames, and backed with the best of your Clytia; so were both you and wee welcome, and embraced of your Leucothoe. And retourn-ing now to your Clytia, you bring with you againe, the verie lyfe, as it were, of your Leucothoe, these Nobles and Gentry which accompanie you; and shuld not both bee? nay, are not both most dearlie welcome to your Clytia?

"That Phœbus in his love to his Leucothoe forgot his Clytia; he came no more at her, her nights grewe long, her winters tedious, wherupon Clytia both revealed and reviled their loves; and so Leucothoe was buried quick by her owne furious father; and Clytia cast out for ever of Phœbus' favour. But your Majestie in your most inward embracements of your Leucothoe, then were you most mindfull of your old Clytia. Indeed our nights have beene long, a four-tein yeeres' winter, if wee weigh but your persone; but yet the beames of your Royall hart (the onlie lyfe of love) were ever awarming us. The onely remedie were, that these two Ladyes, as their loves are both fixed on one, so themselves become both one; and what will not true love unite? As they have alreadie taken on one name for their deare Phœbus' sake, let them put on also one nature for the same sake. So shall our Phœbus shine alike on both; be still present with both; our nights shalbe turned in day, and our winter in ane endlesse sommer; and one beame shall launce alike on both sides of our bound-rod, and our Phœbus no more need to streach out his armes on both sides of it, devyding as it were his Royall body for embracing at once two devided Ladyes. Hee that conspireth not to this union, let never Phœbus shine more on him.

"Lastly, Sir, that poore Clytia, thogh shee lost her Phœbus' favour, yet left shee never off to love him, but still, whether his chariot went, thether followed her eyes, till in end by her endlesse observance shee was turned in that floure colled Heliotropion or Solsequium. And how much more, Sir, shuld wee, who growe daylie in your grace and favour, bee all turned in a Βασιλεοτροπιον with a faithfull Obsequium. Our eyes shall ever be fixed on your Royall chariot; and our harts on your sacred person.

"O Royal Phœbus, keepe this course for ever,
And from thy deare Britannia never sever;
But if the Fates will rather frame it so,
That Phœbus now must come, and then must goe,
Long may thy selfe, thy race mot ever ring
Thus, without end, wee end. God save our King! Amen¹."

On the 28th of July, the King proceeded to Hamilton², the seat of James second Marquess of Hamilton³.

¹ "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 259—261, whereafter follows, pp. 262—270: "In felicissimum et optatissimum serenissimi potentissimique Monarchæ Jacobi Britannicæ Magnæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Regis, ex Angliâ post annos quatuordecem in Scotiam reditum Carmen Panegyricum," a Latin Poem of 193 hexameters, signed Michael Wallas.

² Hamilton Palace, where the King had in former days frequently visited the first Marquis of Hamilton, stands in a level valley between the town of Hamilton and the river Clyde, and is a large pile with two deep wings at right angles with the centre, externally of a plain and heavy appearance. Its site was granted by King Robert Bruce to the first great founder of the family, who emigrated into Scotland in the reign of Edward the Second of England. The extremely valuable collection of paintings is the principal attraction to the house. There is a portrait of James the First by Jansen, and one of Charles the First by Vandyke. A view of Hamilton Palace is engraved in the Beauties of Scotland. — On the King's arrival at Hamilton, Sir William Mure the younger, of Rowallan, composed an English Poem of 19 six-line stanzas, printed in "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 271—274. This Poet was of an antient and knightly family in Ayrshire, of which was Elizabeth Mure, the first wife of King Robert II.

³ James Hamilton, (to whose character at the present period see a pleasing testimonial in p. 413,) born in 1589, succeeded his father John as second Marquess of Hamilton in 1604, and his uncle James as Duke of Chatelherault and fourth Earl of Arran in 1609. In consideration of his father's fidelity and sufferings for Queen Mary, the King was also pleased in 1608 to erect the Abbacy of Aberbrothick into a temporal Lordship in his favour, with the title of a Lord of Parliament. The Marquess was a Gentleman of the King's Bed-chamber, Lord Steward of the Household, and a Privy Councillor; and June 16, 1619, was advanced to the English Peerage by the titles of Baron of Ennerdale in Cumberland and Earl of Cambridge. He was High Commissioner of the Parliament which sat at Edinburgh in 1621; was installed a Knight of the Garter, July 7, 1623; and died at

On the last day of July the King was at Sanquhar Castle¹, the seat of William seventh Lord Crichton of that place².

On the first of August his Majesty was entertained at Drumlantig³, the seat of Sir William Douglas, afterwards Earl of Queensberry⁴.

Whitehall, March 2, 1624-5, aged 36,—only a few days before his Royal Master, of whose affection and confidence he enjoyed a great share. See more particularly in Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. I. p. 703. There is a portrait of him, in black, by Vansomer, at Hamilton Palace; where, among the other pictures, are many family portraits, four of which: James Hamilton, Earl of Arran, Duke of Chatelherault, by Ketel; John first Marquis of Hamilton, by Mark Gerard; James first Duke, by Vandyke; and William second Duke, by Mytens; — the uncle, father, and sons of the subject of this note,—are engraved in Lodge's Illustrious Portraits.

¹ The old Castle of Sanquhar is a picturesque ruin, at a small distance south from the Borough, situate on a high bank overlooking the river Nith. It has been a building of considerable magnitude and extent. There was formerly a large park, wherein the Queensberry family, after purchasing the estate, chiefly kept their deer. On a bottom that lies beneath the west side of the Castle, were the gardens, where the remains of a fish pond, with a square island in the middle, are still visible. On the south side of the castle was a bowling-green. Beauties of Scotland.—Upon the King's arrival at Sanquhar four short Latin poems were composed, printed in "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 275—278; the first, "Sancharæ Gloriatio, Nobilis Sancharii nomine posuit Patricius Kinalochus;" the others were by Patrick Johnston, Robert Wilkie, and Samuel Kello (see p. 324).

² William Crichton succeeded to the title on the death of his cousin-german Robert sixth Lord, whose notorious trial and execution were largely noticed in vol. II. pp. 186, 443, 444. William was created Viscount Air by patent dated Newmarket, Feb. 2, 1622, and further advanced to the dignity of Earl of Dumfries, when King Charles visited Scotland in 1633, by patent dated Dunglass, June 12 in that year. He was succeeded in his honours by his son William. See minor particulars in Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 450.

³ Drumlantig House, the present spacious and magnificent residence of the Queensberry family, was built by William Duke of Queensberry in the reigns of Charles the Second and James the Second, from a plan of Inigo Jones;—see a view in the Beauties of Scotland, and another, with the fine prospect of the mountains of Galway beyond, in Paul Sandby's Virtuosi's Museum. Of the earlier mansion I have found no account. It was formerly surrounded by a park, containing upwards of 700 Scottish acres, covered with the finest trees in Britain, but all the timber was sold by the last Duke of Queensberry. — Two Poems welcoming the King to Drumlantig, one of 56 lines by George Douglas, the other of 240 hexameters, by John Nimmo (see p. 323), occupy pp. 279—286 of "The Muses' Welcome."

⁴ Sir William was served heir to his father Sir James Douglas, Oct. 17, 1615. He was first raised to the titles of Viscount of Drumlantig and Lord Douglas of Hawick and Tibberis, by patent dated Whitehall, April 1, 1638; and he was advanced to the Earldom of Queensberry on the same occasion as Lord Crichton to the Earldom of Dumfries,—King Charles's Visit to Scotland in 1633, by patent dated Seton, June 13, that year. He died March 8, 1640, and was succeeded by his son James. See Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 378.

“ On Monday the ferd of August, his Majestie, returning to England, past be Dumfreis¹, where, at the entrie of the Towne, this Speach was delivered by Mr. James Halyday, Commissar there²:

“ Your Royall Majestie, in whose sacred person the King of kings hath miraculously united so many glorious Kingdoms, under whose Scepter the whyte and reid crocies are so proportionable interlaced, the lion and leopard draw up one equall yok, and the most honourable ordors of the thistle and garter march togidder, is most heartelie welcome to this your Majestie's ever loyall Towne, whose Magistrats and people now beholding your long desired face doe imitat the lizard. For no diamonts or carbuncles by lustre can so allure the eyes, as doeth the brightnes of your countenance our eyes and hearts. Hence it is that the mynds of your good subjects are filled with such incomprehensible joy. And considering the innumerable comforts which this your Majestie's auncient and unconquered Scotland, (*Unica vicinis toties pulsata procellis, Externi immunis Domini*,) hath received under your happie government both in Kirk and Politie, what merveile is it to see the flamme of their love kyth in their faces and tongues, two infallible witnesses of their hearts? To reckon all it were impossible, to speake of none it wer ungratfull; if I speake but of one, which is Peace, they who with bleeding hearts and weeping eyes did daylie taist of the bitter fruites of discord, inward and outward broyles, shall acknowledge even that onelie Peace to bee all they could have wished, and more then ever they could have hoped for. For what is to be wished that wee doe not enjoy with it? *Omnia pace vigent*. Now Justice hath unsheathed her sword; now basse assentation hath no place, and sycophants ar put to silence; now is not sucked out the marrow of the people by odious and unjust monopolies; now is not the husbandman his face worne with the grindstone of extortion; but sitting under his own aple-trie hee in Peace eateth the fruites of his labours; Relligion hath her place; Law is in vigour; Naboth bruketh his owne vin-yard; Achitophell his just reward; simonie preferreth not Balaam; nor doeth corrupting gold set up a Judge in Israel; but everie place is provyded with some one fitting and sutable for the same.

“ If silent in these things, should wee not be convinced of ingratitude to Almighty God, by whose grace wee have this oure Salomon, by whose providence, under God, these good things ar procured unto us? and at the fountaine of

¹ As with Glasgow, it does not appear at what house the King was entertained at Dumfries.

² James Halliday, of Pillochie, Advocate, son of John Halliday, of Tulliboill, Advocate.

whose wisdom so many Kingdomes and States get daylie refreshment? Who would essay to speake worthelie of your worthie, rare, Royall, and heroicall vertues, should have eloquence for his tongue; and let any speak what hee can, what can hee speake but that which everie man doeth know? for there is no corner of the earth which hath not heard of your Majestie, that yee are not onlie a mirour, but a master of Kings; not onely a patterne to their lyfe, but also a patrone of their cause. Doeth not your Royall practise and penning prove all these? and knoweth hee any thing to whome your Βασιλικον Δωρον and your learned writings against the supporters of the Antichristian Hierarchie is not knowne. O, Sir, your Majestie oweth much unto your King, that King of kings, by whome so much upon you is bestowed. That wee see the face of him, whome God hath anoynted so above his fellowes, is the ground of all these joyes which wee enjoy this day. In the fulnesse of which joyes this one thing breeds us angwish, that this your Majestie's ever loyall Towne (whose people ever were, are, and shall bee resolved to sacrifice their lyves in their Prince's service, and of which God made choise, that it shuld be the place where your Majestie's most Royal ancestor the walian Bruce killed the Cumming, extirped the Baliol blood, and re-established the Royall race of our native Princes,) now should bee the last period of your Majestie's Progresse within this your most auncient Kingdome. Would God it could bee circular, as that of oure other sunne; that all your Majestie's subjects might enjoy the comfort of your presence be vicissitude! But let God's will, and your Majestie's weel be the measure of our desires.

“ And since wee perceive the force of our load-stone failling, so that it hath no more power of retention; seeing your Majestie will southward, wee would wish your course more meridianall, even trans-Alpine, that that Romish idol, the whore of Babel, might repent of her too too presumptuous sitting in the Kirk of God in God's owne chaire, above the crownes of Kings. Let her feel the furie of your sword, let her know the sharpnes of your pike, as weel as of your pen; in that expedition shall not bee last *Mavortia pectora Scoti*. For, may wee not now, by God's assistance, in like courage and magnanimitie levell with the ground their walles there, as wee did heere of these monstrous heapes of stones and rampires reared be their Emperour Severus and Hadrian. Especiallie now, having the concurrence of that bellicose and resolute Nation which God hath made to come under your standard with us, how can wee but have hope to cause all them who will fight against God for Babylon, like as many heards of animals scattered on

mount Aventine and Appennine, will make jacks of old dyks? But, remitting this and all other your Majestie's desseignes to God's gracious dispensation, and your worthie disposition, wee close up our Speach, praying Almighty God, that you and your Highnesse's Royal progenie may sit upon the thrones of your dominions with increse of all heavenlie and earthlie blessings, so long as the sunne and moone shall have place in the firmament of Heaven. Amen¹."

On the 4th of August, the Lords of the Council in Scotland, signing, "Lenox, Hamilton, Pembroke, Mar, G. Buckingham, Binning, Tho. Lake," dispatched a Letter to the Lords of the Council in England, dated "from the Court at Dumfries²."

The Gests of the King's Return home through the North of England must now be introduced. They were as follow³:

			Nights.	Miles.
Auguste 6.	From Carlisle to Brougham Castle	-	1	18
7.	From thence to Aplebie in Westmoreland	-	1	9
8.	From thence to Wharton	-	1	6
9.	From thence to Kendall	-	2	13
11.	From thence to Hornbie Castle, Ebor.	-	1	14
12.	From thence to Ashton	-	1	9

¹ "The Muses' Welcome," pp. 287—289, where the work concludes. The Exodia, which was published with it (and of which the title has been given in p. 301), is comprised in 18 pages, and consists wholly of Latin poetry, by David Hume (see p. 306); "Lachrymæ in Regis Recessu," 288 hexameters, by John Leech (see p. 331); "Lessus Musarum, in Regis Recessum in Angliam," of 120 elegiac lines, by Walter Bannatine; and the poems by David Wedderburn noticed in p. 329. — There was also published, "In serenissimi et invictissimi Regis Jacobi Sexti e Scotiâ suâ decessum, Hodoeporicon, per Joannem Scotum, adolescentem omnium bonarum artium cognitione pro ætate cumulantissimum [pp. 17]. Adjecta insuper D. Joannis Scoti a Scottistarvet patrueli Schediasmata miscellanea [pp. 23]. Edinburgi, excudebat Andreas Hart, anno 1619," 4to. Dedicated to Thomas Hamilton, Lord Binning. A copy is in the British Museum in the same volume as Kello's "Carmen Gratulatorium," noticed in p. 324.

² It was respecting some disagreement between the Scotch and Dutch fishermen, and is printed in the "Letters to and from Sir Dudley Carleton," p. 156. — The Lords of the English Council who addressed a dispatch on the same subject to Sir Dudley Carleton, from Whitehall, Aug. 13, 1617, were "G. Canterbury, F. Bacon, T. Suffolk, E. Worcester, Nottingham, W. Wallingford, G. Carew, James Hay, Ralph Winwood, T. Edmondes." Ibid. p. 159.

³ From Cole's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) vol. XLVI.—See p. 257.

			Nights.	Miles.
Auguste	13.	From thence to Merkestene [Myerscough] Lodge	2	- 13
	15.	From thence to Hawghton Tower, Lanc.	- 3	- 12
	18.	From thence to Latham - -	- 2	- 12
	20.	From thence to Bewsey - -	- 1	- 13
	21.	From thence to Vale Royall in Cheshire	- 4	- 11
	25.	From thence to Nantwich - -	- 1	- 10
	26.	From thence to Gerard's Bromley in Staff.	- 2	- 10
	28.	From thence to Tixall - -	- 2	- 8
	30.	From thence to Whorerost [Hoarcross]	- 1	- 14
September	1.	From thence to Ashbye-de-la-Zouch in Leic.	- 1	- 18
	2.	From thence to Coventrye in Warw.	- 2	- 8
	4.	From thence to Warwicke - -	- 1	- 10
	5.	From thence to Compton - -	- 1	- 12
	6.	From thence to Woodstock - -	- 4	- 12
	10.	From thence to Rycott - -	- 1	- 13
	11.	From thence to Bysham - -	- 1	- 9
	12.	From thence to WyndSOR Castle - -	- 3	- 20
	15.	From thence to London - -	- 1	- 20
	16.	From thence to Theobaldes - -	- -	- 12

On the 4th of August "the King came to Carlisle out of Scotland, where the Marquess of Hamilton is chosen one of the Privy Council in England¹." His Majesty left that City on the 6th², having, on the morning of his departure, there knighted Sir Richard Fletcher³, of Cockermouth; Sir Henry Blynk [Blencow⁴], of Cumberland; and Sir William Musgrave, at this time High Sheriff of the County⁵.

¹ Camden's Annals.

² Of his Majesty's entertainment there I have not been able to find any trace remaining, though my justly esteemed and valuable friend and contemporary Bishop Goodenough has kindly taken much trouble in his enquiries for me; as has also William Hodgson, Esq. Town Clerk of Carlisle, and John Heysham, Esq. M. D. resident there.—The King was probably lodged in the ancient castle.

³ Of Hutton; Sheriff of Cumberland in 1615 and 1624. His son Sir Henry was created a Baronet, Feb. 19, 1640. The title is extinct.

⁴ He was Sheriff of Cumberland in 1608 and 1625. See the family pedigree printed in Hutchinson's Cumberland, vol. I. p. 413.

⁵ Of Hayton Castle, a family very remotely if at all related to the Musgraves of Eden Hall. He

On the same day, after arriving at Brougham Castle¹, a mansion of Francis Clifford, fourth Earl of Cumberland², his Majesty conferred knighthood on

was again Sheriff of Cumberland in 1629. His son Edward was created a Baronet of Nova Scotia, Oct. 20, 1638,—a title now enjoyed by Sir James Musgrave, of Barnsley Park, Gloucestershire. Of this family see Wotton's Baronetage, 1741, vol. V. pp. 354—357.

¹ Brougham Castle, with its appendant demesnes, formed part of the ancient Barony of Westmoreland. The greatest part of it was built by Roger de Clifford, a principal commander under Edward the First. His grandson of the same names erected the eastern portion. By an Inquisition taken in 1303, the jurors find, "that the Castle of Brougham, and demesne thereto belonging, were worth nothing, because they say it lieth altogether waste, by reason of the destruction of the country made by the Scots; and that the whole profit of the Castle and demesne is not sufficient for the reparation and safe keeping of the said Castle." It still, however, continued in the possession of the family; and doubtless must have been in tolerable repair when King James was entertained there. After the family estates had devolved on the celebrated Anne, only daughter of George third Earl of Cumberland, and Countess of Dorset, Pembroke, and Montgomery, she occupied her time in repairing the various castles and other buildings belonging to her estates which had been injured during the Civil Wars. Among these edifices was Brougham Castle, the repairing of which is thus mentioned by the Countess in her Memoirs: "After I had been there myself to direct the building of it, did I cause my old decayed Castle of Brougham to be repaired, and also the tower called the Roman Tower, in the said old Castle, and the Court-house, for keeping my Courts in, with some dozen or fourteen rooms to be built in it upon the old foundation." She also mentions the "Tower of leagues" and the "Pagan Tower;" and a state apartment called the "Greystocke-chamber." In all her visits to this Castle, she informs us, she slept in the room in which her father was born and her mother died; and in which, likewise, King James was lodged during this visit. The reparation of the edifice was commemorated by the following inscription: "This Brougham Castle was repayred by the Ladie Anne Clifford, Countesse Dowager of Pembroke, Dorsett, and Montgomery, Baronesse Clifford, Westmerland, Veseie, Ladie of the Honour of Skipton in Craven, and High Sheriffesse, by inheritance, of the Countie of Westmerland, in the yeares 1651 and 1652, after it had layen ruinous ever since about August 1617, when King James lay in it for a time in his Journie out of Skotland towards London, until this time. Isa. chap. 58. verse 12. 'God's name be praised.'" The same inscription, *mutatis mutandis*, is on Skipton Castle, repaired in 1657 and 1658. Margaret, the eldest daughter of the Countess, conveyed her inheritance, by marriage, to John Lord Tufton, afterwards Earl of Thanet. Thenceforward this venerable edifice was permitted to become a ruin; and at the beginning of the last century most of the materials were sold to two legal Gentlemen of Penrith, who again disposed of them in public sales, the first of which took place on the day of the Coronation of George I. —There are two good views of the ruins in Woolnoth's Ancient Castles.

² Francis fourth Earl of Cumberland, succeeded his brother George the celebrated Earl in 1605; being himself a much more quiet character. He was born in Skipton Castle in 1559, and that was his almost constant residence, dying in the apartment of his birth more than eighty years after. He was, however, at Court on Prince Henry's Creation; see vol. II. p. 332 (where the references relate to his brother). "He seems," says Dr. Whitaker, "to have been an easy improvident man, but

Sir Francis Brandling¹, of Durham.

Sir Henry Trotter, of Yorkshire.

Sir William Thorald, of Yorkshire.

Sir Thomas Hutton², of Yorkshire.

Sir Christopher Dalston, of Westmorel.

Sir Philip Mounteney, of Yorkshire.

Sir George Bowes³, of Durham.

Sir — Dromond, *Scotus*.

In 1618 were published in folio: "The Ayres that were sung and played at Brougham Castle in Westmoreland, in the King's Entertainment, given by the Right Honorable the Earle of Cumberland and his Right Noble Sonne the Lord Clifford. Composed by Mr. George Mason and Mr. John Earsden⁴."

otherwise comparatively blameless. His niece (Lady Anne Clifford) contents herself with observing of him, that he and his estate were governed by his son Henry Clifford for the last twenty years of his life. She had an excellent hand at drawing characters, but the best painter of the face or of the mind, is confounded by absolute vacuity." Dying in 1640, Earl Francis was succeeded by his son Henry Lord Clifford (the last Earl), of whom in vol. II. pp. 341, 609.

¹ Whose house, Alnwick Abbey, the King had visited in his Progress to Scotland; see p. 297.

² Third son of Archbishop Hutton, and younger brother to Sir Timothy, noticed in vol. II. p. 36. Sir Thomas, says Dr. Fuller in his Church History, "lived and died respected in his own country."

³ Of Bradley; grandson of Sir George Bowes, Knight Marshal north of Trent; and half-nephew to Sir Talbot, noticed in p. 275.

⁴ "London, printed by Thomas Snodham, *cum privilegio*, 1618." This title is furnished by Hawkins's History of Music, but, as with the "Shepherd's Songe on Salisbury Plain," addressed to Queen Anne in 1613, I have not been able to trace any copy of these "Ayres." One of the Earl's letters to his son Lord Clifford printed in Whitaker's History of Craven, and written whilst the King's visit was in anticipation, begins with this passage respecting the Entertainment: "Sonn, I have till now expected your lettres, according to your promis at your departure; so did George Minson [*sic*] your directions touching the musick, whereupon he mought the better have writt to Dr. Campion [of whom in vol. II. p. 104]. He is now gone to my Lord President's [at York], and will be ready to do as he heares from you. For my own opinion, albeit I will not dislyke your devise, I fynde plainly, upon better consideration, the charge for that Entertainment will grow very great, besyde the musick; and that, instead of lessening, my charge in generall encrease, and newe payments come on, which without better providence hereafter cannot be performed." History of Craven, p. 293. In the next page is a letter of Bishop Toby Matthew, dated Pocklington, May 17, 1617, inviting the Earl to visit his Lordship, and containing this paragraph: "Gladly would I heare by or from your Lordship what good newes out of Scotland, or at best the confynes thereof; and, namely, in what solemnitie his Majestie departed out of Berwick thither; as likewise whether our English Officers relinquished their places (as is here [erroneously] reported) to the Nobles and Gentles of North Brittain; and whether the Quene's Highnesse's fearful dreme, signified to his Majestie (for so runneth the rumor here), be like to shorten the Progresse. But, among and above the rest, whether his resolution be constant and permanent of holding his Courte sett downe in the [Gests] heretofore designed." Dr. Whitaker is here pleased to insinuate that the King was not likely to despise such a warning as the Queen's "fearful dreme;" on which we may remark, as it is certainly worthy of being remarked, that the

On the 7th of August, the King proceeded to the Town of Appleby, where he staid one night in the Castle¹, another of the mansions belonging to the Earl of Cumberland.

On the 8th, his Majesty rode to Wharton Hall², the mansion of Philip third Lord Wharton³, where also he rested one night only.

On the 9th, the King entered Kendal⁴, where he knighted Sir Henry Mild-

pre-determined gests of the Royal Progresses seem never to have been disturbed even by occurrences of real importance, of which we have had a memorable instance under 1614, when the King, having been recalled from his Progress by the arrival of the King of Denmark, posted forward, on his Royal Brother-in-law's departure, directly to the place where he should have been on the same date, had he met with no interruption whatever.

¹ Appleby Castle "had been of note ever since William the Conqueror's time," but was chiefly built by Thomas Lord Clifford, about the middle of the fifteenth century. This may be asserted on the authority of Lady Anne Clifford's Diary; but, adds she, "by records and evidences, which are still remaining, the Barons' Chamber in it was built long before, and in Henry the Third's time and Edward the First's time it was styled the Knights' Chamber, and sometimes the Barons' Chamber in the records." Her Ladyship, during her visits, used "to lie in a chamber, in Clifford's Tower;" and in her time one of the Judges of Assize slept in the Barons' Chamber, and the other in the "chief chamber in Cæsar's Tower." In 1651, she says, "I continued to lie in Appleby Castle a whole year, and spent much time in repairing it and Brougham Castle, to make them as habitable as I could, though Brougham was very ruinous and much out of repair. And in this year, the 21st of April, I helped to lay the foundation stone of the middle wall of the great tower of Appleby Castle called Cæsar's Tower, to the end it might be repaired again and made habitable, if it pleased God (Isa. lvi. 12), after it had stood without a roof or covering, or one chamber habitable in it, since about 1567." Pembroke MSS. The principal part of the present structure was built in 1686 by Thomas Earl of Thanet, out of the ruins of the old Castle. See a view in Pennant's *Tour from Downing to Alston Moor*.

² "Wharton Hall, from the fall of the Duke of Wharton, had been gradually lapsing into a ruin, till a part of it was lately repaired by the Earl of Lonsdale for the use of his tenant, and for his own accommodation during the shooting season. The Chapel is converted into a dairy. In the kitchen are two vast fire-places, and in the hall one twelve feet wide, melancholy testimonies of the former hospitality of the place. It is surrounded by a tract of most excellent grazing ground, once a noble park, and commands interesting views of the Eden, and the country about Kirkby Stephen." *Beauties of England and Wales*. There is a good view of the interior court of Wharton Hall in Pennant's "Tour from Downing to Alston Moor," and another of the gateway in the *Gentleman's Magazine* for March 1813.

³ Who succeeded his father in that title in 1572, and died March 26, 1625, aged about 70, leaving the title to his grandson Philip; his two sons, Sir George Wharton, K. B. (of whom see vol. I. p. 223; vol. II. p. 207.) and Sir Thomas, having died v. p.

⁴ It does not appear where the King was lodged at Kendal, but there were two ancient mansions

may and Sir George Spencer, both Sewers to his Majesty, and Sir Francis Knightley¹, his Cup-bearer.

On the same day, the 9th of August, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus, from London, to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King came to Carlisle the 4th of this present, where the Earl of Arundel met him, coming out of Ireland, where he had been about a bargain and exchange of land with the Lord Dingwall. He was much made of there, and often feasted, and sworn a Counsellor of that State, so that he is now of the Council in all the three Kingdoms; all our Counsellors that went with the King having that honour done them in Scotland.

"The Lord Hay thinks it long till the King's coming, that he may consummate his Marriage, for the King hath promised to give the Bride. He is wonderfully observant and obsequious to her and her mother, and spends most of his time there, having taken Sir Francis Darcy's house by Sion², where he makes solemn feast twice a week at least, with that cost and expense that the Lady of Northumberland does not so much as once invite him by reason of his curiosity; though he be commonly in her house from morning till dinner, from after dinner till supper, from after supper till late in the night. It comes well to pass, that he begins this course in a year when there is so great plenty of excellent venison and such store of salmons, that the like hath not been seen in the Thames these forty years. The like feasting he kept during his abode in Scotland, where his ordinary rate for his table was £.300 a week³, besides feasts, which were very frequent, to the Council, our Clergy and Chaplains, the Household, the Pensioners, the Guard, the Chapel, and his own Country Nobility and Gentry⁴."

there, one called the Abbot Hall, which before the Dissolution was an occasional residence of the Abbot of St. Mary York, rebuilt about the middle of the last century, and enjoying fine and extensive pleasure-grounds; the other, called Dockwra Hall, a seat of the ancient family of that name. See the Beauties of England and Wales, for Westmoreland, p. 193.

¹ Tenth and youngest son of Sir Richard Knightley, of Fawsley, Northamptonshire, and brother to Sir Seymour and Sir Ferdinand, noticed in vol. II. p. 207, and this Volume, p. 227. Sir Francis died unmarried in 1619-20.

² Of this and other ancient mansions in the neighbourhood, see Lysons's *Environs*, vol. III. p. 93. This seems to have been Sir Francis Darcy's most usual or only residence, as his monument is in Isleworth Church with effigies of himself in armour and his lady (*vide* *ibid.* p. 102). He was the seventh son of Sir Arthur Darcy, and uncle to Sir Conyers, of whom in p. 395. Sir Francis was knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1591.

³ Of Lord Hay's expensive habits, see before, particularly in vol. II. p. 103, and this volume, pp. 183—185, and *sparsim* throughout.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (*Brit. Mus.*) 4173.

On the 11th of August, the Gestes place the King at Hornby Castle¹, in Richmondshire, the seat of Sir Conyers Darcy, afterwards Lord Darcy and Conyers²; and on the 12th, at Ashton Hall³, a mansion of Thomas first Lord Gerard⁴, whose nephew, Sir Charles Gerard⁵, of Middlesex, his Majesty there⁶ knighted, as also Sir Thomas Walmesley⁷, of Lancashire.

¹ Hornby Castle, now a seat of the Duke of Leeds, stands on a gentle but considerable elevation, from which the ground declines on every side, and affords extended views in almost every direction. The fine slope of the park forms a charming foreground to the south and south-east. To the east and north-east the great plain of Mowbray spreads its fertile expanse, bounded by the Cleveland hills; while more to the right the wild mountain which separates Richmondshire from Craven, and the wapentake of Claro are well contrasted with the soft home scene. This baronial Castle was built by William first Lord Conyers, who died in 1524, and has descended with the title to the present Duke of Leeds, who is the ninth Baron Conyers. The shell of the builder's work remains entire, the whole having undergone no other alteration than such as Windsor Castle had from the time of Charles the Second till the accession of George the Fourth. Little of antiquity, however, remains in any of the apartments within, but the interior of a regular and well-proportioned quadrangle, much like that of a College of the same period, though rather darker and more contracted, is curious and striking. Of this there is an excellent view in Whitaker's Richmondshire, vol. II. p. 44, whence the foregoing particulars are extracted, and where, pp. 203, 263, are also two beautiful views of the vale in the centre of which the Castle rears its lofty tower. A south-east view of Hornby Castle, which gives a good idea of its exterior appearance, and a view in the Inner Court, are also published in the New Series of Neale's Seats; and there is a view of the Castle from the village in Gregson's Fragments of Lancashire.

² Sir Conyers Darcy, knighted July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 215), was created Baron Darcy in 1642, and became Baron Conyers *jure matris*.

³ Ashton Hall, which was the inheritance of Lord Gerard's mother, Elizabeth Ratcliffe, is still standing in excellent repair, having descended through the heiress of the Gerards to the ducal family of Hamilton. "It is an oblong building, flanked by a projecting wing on the east, and a noble square tower with angular turrets, embattled and machicolated, on the west. The walls throughout are probably of the age of Edward the Third, though successive additions and alterations, from the time of James the First, have almost confined the proofs of so early a date to the great tower. The most material additions in the style prevalent under James are on the north front," of which there is an excellent view by Buckler in the History of Richmondshire, vol. II. p. 475.

⁴ Of whom in vol. II. p. 25. He was again called upon to entertain the King, a few days after, at Gerards Bromley; see p. 413.

⁵ Son of Ratcliffe Gerard, the first Lord's brother; and father of Charles created in 1645 Baron Gerard of Brandon, and in 1679 Earl of Macclesfield.—Those titles became extinct with his younger son Fitton, the third Earl, in 1702.

⁶ Philipot makes these knights dubbed at Ashton, but, erroneously as I conclude, on the 11th.

⁷ Of Dunkenhalgh, a maternal ancestor of Lord Petre. See the Walmesley pedigree in Gregson's Fragments of Lancashire, p. 241.

The best manner of conducting the King to Myerscough Lodge and Hoghton Tower, will be to introduce the following very curious extracts from the private journal of Nicholas Assheton, Esq. of Downham in the parish of Whalley¹:

"June 1, Sunday. Mr. C. P. moved my brother[-in-law] Sherborne from Sir Richard Houghton², to do him such favour, countenance, grace, and curtesie, as to weare his clothe, and attend him at Houghton, at the King's comming in August, as divers other Gentlemen were moved and would. He likewise moved mee. I answered I would bee willing and redie to doe Sir Richard anie service.

"August 11. My brother Sherborne his taylor brought him a suit of apparall, and us two others, and a livery cloake from Sir Richard Houghton, that we should attend him at the King's coming, rather for his grace and reputation, shoeing [showing] his neibors' love, then anie exacting of mean service³.

"August 12. Coz. Townley⁴ came and broke his fast at Dunnoe, and went away. To Mirescough. Sir Richard gone to meet the King; wee after him to ———. There the King slipt into the Forest⁵ another way, and we after, and overtook him, and went past to the Yate; then Sir Richard light [alighted]; and when the King came in his coach, Sir Richard stept to his side, and tould him ther his Majestie's Forrest began, and went some ten roodes to the left, and then to the Lodge⁶. The King hunted, and killed a buck.

"August 13. To Mirescough, the Court. Cooz. Assheton⁷ came with as gentlemanlie servants as anie was ther, and himself excellently well appointed. The

¹ From Dr. Whitaker's History of Whalley, pp. 300—305.

² The first Baronet; of whom in vol. II. p. 423.

³ Although the gradations of society were then such that the gentry of England disdained not, on occasions like the present, to wear the livery of the rank immediately above them, yet there is an evident anxiety in Mr. Assheton's mind to have it understood that his appearing in Sir Richard Houghton's livery was merely as a token of good will. WHITAKER.

⁴ Richard Towneley, of Towneley, Esq. who married Jane Assheton, of Lever. He, too, must have been on his way to wait upon the King. WHITAKER.

⁵ Myerscough Forest, near Garstang, then and long after well stocked with deer. WHITAKER.

⁶ Myerscough Lodge is, it appears, still standing, but I have found no other account of it but that it is "an ancient manor, the seat of Charles Gibson, Esq." Beauties of England and Wales. Myerscough Hall is the seat of Edward Greenalgh, Esq.

⁷ Of Whalley Abbey. Mr. Assheton seems proud of his cousin's equipage and appearance. The spirit of clanship, it might have been supposed, would have led him to have made part of that "gentlemanlie" train. WHITAKER.

King killed five bucks. The King's speache about libertie to pipeing and honest recreation ¹. We that were in Sir Richard's livery had nothing to do but riding upp and downe.

"August 14. Us three to Preston; ther preparation made for Sir Gilbert Hoghton ², and other Knights. Wee were desyred to be merrie, and at nyght were soe. Steeven Hamerton and wyffe, and Mrs. Doll Lyster ³ supped with us att our lodging. All Preston full.

¹ A Petition presented to the King by a great number of Lancashire peasants, tradesmen, and servants, requesting that they might be allowed to take their diversions (as of old accustomed) after divine service on Sundays, is said to have been the origin of the "BOOK OF SPORTS," soon after promulgated by Royal authority. James, being persuaded those were Puritans who forbad such diversions, and that they were Jewishly inclined because they affected to call Sunday the Sabbath, recommended all diverting exercises after evening prayer, and ordered the Book to be read publicly in all Churches, and such Ministers as refused to obey the injunction were threatened with severe punishment in the High Commission Court. This legal violation of the day which is unequivocally the Christian Sabbath, roused at the time the indignation of the seriously disposed, and has been frequently reprobated by historians. Foremost of its opposers stands the example of the virtuous and firm Archbishop Abbot, who, being at Croydon the day it was ordered to be read in Churches, flatly forbad it to be read there; "which the King was pleased to wink at, notwithstanding the daily endeavours that were used to irritate the King against him." The "Book of Sports" is not, however, without its apologists among modern writers. The following are Mr. D'Israeli's remarks on the subject: "The King found the people in Lancashire discontented from the unusual deprivation of their popular recreations on Sundays and holidays, after the Church service: 'With our own ears we heard the general complaint of our people.' The Catholic Priests were busily insinuating among the lower orders, that the Reformed Religion was a sullen deprivation of all mirth and social amusements, and thus 'turning the people's hearts.' But, while they were denied what the King terms 'lawful recreations,' (which are enumerated to consist of dancing, archery, leaping, vaulting, May-games, Whitsun-ales, Morris-dancis, and the setting up of May-poles, and other manly sports,) they had substituted some vicious ones. Alehouses were more frequented, drunkenness more general, tale-mongery and sedition, the vices of sedentary idleness, prevailed, while a fanatical gloom was spreading over the country. The King, whose gaiety of temper instantly sympathized with the multitude, and perhaps alarmed at this new shape which Puritanism was assuming, published 'The Book of Sports,' which soon obtained the contemptuous term of 'The Dancing Book.'" Life of James, p. 135. In reply to this view of the subject, I shall for the present conclude with Dr. Whitaker's remark, that "the King was little aware of the effects which the ill-judged licence was likely to produce on the common people. The relics of it are hardly worn out to this day; and there is scarcely a Sunday evening, in any village of the County of Lancaster, which does not exhibit symptoms of obedience to the injunction of 'honest recreation.'"

² Son of Sir Richard; see vol. I. p. 454; vol. II. p. 267.

³ Stephen Hammerton, of Hellyfield Peel, Esq. and Mary Lister, of Midhope, his wife, and Mrs. Doll Lister, probably her sister. WHITAKER.

"August 15. The King came to Preston. Ther, at the Crosse, Mr. Breares, the lawyer, made a Speeche, and the Corporation presented him with a bowle; and then the King went to a Banquet in the Town Hall, and soe away to Houghton¹; ther a Speech made."

"A Speeche made to Kinge James at his comeinge to Hoghton Tower by two conceaved to be the Houshold Gods; the first attyr'd in a purple taffata mantle, in one hand a palm-tree branch, on his head a garland of the same, and in the other hand a dogge:

"This day, great Kinge for Government admir'd!
Which these thy Subjects have so much desir'd,
Shall be kept holy in their hearts' best treasure;
And vow'd to James, as is this month to Cæsar.
And now the Landlord of this ancient Tower,
Thrice fortunate to see this happy hower,
Whose trembleinge heart thy presence setts on fire,
Unto this house (the heart of all the shire)
Does bid thee hearty welcome, and would speake it,
In higher notes, but extreame joy doth breake it;
Hee makes his Guest most welcome, in whose eyes
Love-teares do sitt, not he that shouts and cries.

¹ The ancient castle denominated Hoghton Tower stands on the summit of a hill, formerly shrouded with trees, four and a half miles west of Blackburn. It was erected by Sir Thomas Hoghton, in the beginning of Elizabeth's reign. It remained for several generations the principal seat of the Hoghton family, and after part of it had been blown up by accident, when garrisoned for Charles the First, the injury was repaired. The family have now removed to Walton Hall, and Hoghton Tower is left to decay, two poor families inhabiting the south wing only. A ponderous gateway, immediately under the centre tower, leads to the quadrangular court-yard, capable of holding 600 men. The noble embattled tower, forming the west front, with its two minor square towers, serve as appendages to the north and south wing, and are united by low walls. Within the Court-yard, a noble flight of steps lead to the middle quadripartite, similar in aspect to Stonyhurst College, the ancient residence of the Sherbornes. This middle pile contains large stair-cases, branching out to long galleries, into which the several chambers open. One chamber, still called James the First's room, is considered "most worthy of notice." It has two square windows in both north and south, is beautifully wainscotted, and contains some old furniture. A fine prospect is gained from this ancient and sequestered abode;—the pretty village of Walton-le-dale, delightfully situate in a valley, the improving town of Preston, and the single-coned Nese Point presenting itself majestically in the distance. The gentle river Darwin pursues its placid course among the enclosures at the base of the hill. A good general front view of Hoghton Tower is engraved in Pennant's *Tour from Downing to Alston Moor*.

And we the Gods and Guardians of this place,—
 I of this House, he of the fruitfull Chase,—
 Since the Hoghtons from this hill took name,
 Who with the stiffe unbridled Saxons came;
 And soe have flourish't in this fairer clyme
 Successively from that to this our tyme,
 Still offeringe upp to our Imortall Powers,
 Sweet incense, wyne, and odoriferous flowers,
 While sacred Vesta in her virgin tyre
 With vowes and wishes tends the hallowed fire;
 Now seeing that thy Majestye we see,
 Greater than Country Gods, more good than wee,
 Wee render upp to thy more powerfull Guard
 This House;—this Knight is thyne, he is thy Ward;
 For by thy helpinge and auspicious hand,
 He and his House shall ever, ever stand
 And flourish, in despite of envious Fate;—
 And then live, like Augustus, fortunate.
 And longe, longe may'st thou live! to which both men,
 Gods, saints, and angells say, 'Amen, amen!'

The Second Tutelar God begins :

Thou greatest of Mortalls!

[*He's nonplust.*

The Second God begins againe :

Dread Lord! the splendor and the glorious raye,
 Of thy high Majestye hath stricken dumbe
 His weaker God-head; if t' himselve he come,
 Unto thy service straight he will comend
 These Foresters, and charge them to attend
 Thy pleasure in this park, and shew such sport,
 To the chief Huntsman, and thy Princely Court,
 As the small circuit of this round affords,
 And be more ready than he was in's words ¹.

After the delivery of the Speech, as Mr. Assheton continues, the King
 "hunted, and killed a stag. Wee attend on the Lords' table.

"August 16. Houghton. The King hunting; a great companie, killed affore dinner a brace of staggs. Verie hott; soe hee went in to dinner. Wee attend the Lords' table, and about four o'clock the King went downe to the allome-mynes ²,

¹ Communicated from the family records of Sir Henry Philip Hoghton, Bart.

² The alum-mines were at no great distance from Hoghton Tower. Webster, in his "History of Metals," published in 1672, but probably written long before, says, "Sir Richard Hoghton set up a

and was ther an hower, viewed them preciselie, and then went and shott at a stag, and missed. Then my Lord Compton had lodged two brace. The King shott again, and brake the thigh-bone. A dogg long in coming, and my Lord Compton shott again, and killed him [the stag]. Late in to supper.

"August 17. Houghton. Wee served the Lords with biskett, wyne, and jellie. The Bushopp of Chester, Dr. Morton¹, preached before the King. To dinner. About four o'clock, ther was a rush-bearing² and pipeing afore them, affore the King in the Middle Court. Then to supp. Then, about ten or eleven o'clock, a Maske of Noblemen, Knights, Gentlemen, and Courtiers, afore the King in the middle round in the garden. Some Speeches; of the rest, dancing the Huckler, Tom Bedlo, and the Cowp Justice of Peace.

"August 18. The King, [after knighting, at Houghton Tower, Sir Arthur very profitable mine of allum nigh unto Houghton Tower in the Hundred of Blackburn, within the^{se} few years, where store of very good alome was made and sold." It appears to have been held by the family under lease from the Crown.

¹ Of whom see p. 2.

² An entry in Mr. Assheton's journal in the preceding month is "July 25, St. James' day. At Whalley; ther a rush-bearing, but much less solemnity than formerlie." Are we to conclude from this that the ancient festivities were suffering a decline, or merely that Mr. Assheton was disappointed in his expectations of pleasure? We have already seen that the Lancastrians were inclined rather to enlarge than contract their period of festivity, and we must assent to the idea that the writer spoke from his own personal feelings. The Rush-bearing, says Mr. Ormerod, is still customary at the Annual Wake in many parts of Cheshire. "The ceremony (as in use at Lymme in 1817) consists in carrying to Church the rushes intended to be strewed on the clay floor under the benches, which are piled neatly up in a cart, and a person constantly attends to pare the edges with a hay-knife, if disordered in progress. The cart and the horses are carefully selected from the various village teams, and decorated with flowers and ribbands, and on the rushes sit persons holding garlands intended to ornament the church for the year ensuing. These are composed of hoops slung round a pole connected by cross-strings, which are concealed by artificial flowers, cut paper, and tinsel. One is placed in the rector's or principal chancel, and the others in the subordinate ones belonging to the several manor-houses in the parish, and they are frequently ornamented by the young ladies at the respective mansions. The cart thus loaded goes round to the neighbouring seats, preceded by male and female Morris Dancers, who perform a peculiar dance at each house, and are attended by a man in female attire (something between the fool and the Maid Maryan), who jingles a bell to the time, and holds a large wooden ladle for money. As night approaches, the cart with its attendants returns to the town where the church is situated, and then the garlands are fixed, whilst a peal is rung on the bells, and the concourse of village revellers is attracted to view the spectacle." Of Rush-bearing in other parts of the country see Brand's *Popular Antiquities*, vol. I. p. 436.

Lake¹, of Middlesex; and Sir Cecil Trafford, of Lancashire,] went away about twelve to Lathome. Ther was a man almost slayne with fighting. Wee back with Sir Richard. He to seller², and drunk with us kindlie in all manner of friendlie speche. Preston; as merrie as Robin Hood, and all his fellowes.—August 19. All this morning wee plaid the Bacchanalians.”

The following are “Notes of the Diet at Hoghton, at the King’s coming there³ :”

SUNDAY’S DINNER, THE 17TH OF AUGUST.

For the Lords’ Table.

First Course.	Haunch of venison roast.	Rabbits cold.
Pullets.	Burred capon.	Jiggits of mutton boiled.
Boiled capon.	Pasty of venison hot.	Snipe pye.
Mutton boiled.	Roast turkey.	Breast of veal boiled.
Boiled chickens.	Veal burred.	Capons roast.
Shoulder of mutton roast.	Swan roast, one, and one	Pullet.
Ducks boiled.	for to-morrow.	Beef roast.
Loin of veal roast ⁴ .	Chicken pye hot.	Tongue pye cold.
Pullets.	Goose roasted.	Sprod boiled.

¹ Son of Sir Thomas Lake, the Secretary of State, and named after his uncle Arthur, the Bishop of Bath and Wells. He died s. p. The present Viscount Lake is descended from his brother Sir Lancelot.

² We are indebted to the French (and it is no small obligation) for the temperate elegance of modern tables, and particularly for the practice of drinking wine at dinner. It is not above 60 years since the Lancashire gentry were in the habit of adjourning after dinner to the cellars of inns, and drinking themselves drunk with wine immediately drawn from the pipe. WHITAKER.

³ Communicated by Sir Henry Philip Hoghton, Bart. from a MS. in his possession.

⁴ There is a laughable tradition, still generally current in Lancashire, that our Knight-making Monarch, finding, it is presumed, no undubbed man worthy of the chivalric order, knighted at the banquet in Hoghton Tower, in the warmth of his honour-bestowing liberality, a loin of beef, the part ever since called the *sir-loin*. Those who would credit this story, have the authority of Dr. Johnson to support them, among whose explanations of the word *Sir* in his Dictionary, is that it is “a title given to the loin of beef, which one of our Kings knighted in a fit of good humour.”—“*Surloin*,” says Dr. Pegge (*Gent. Mag.* vol. LIV. p. 485), “is, I conceive, if not knighted by King James as is reported, compounded of the French *sur*, upon, and the English *loin*, for the sake of euphony, our particles not easily submitting to composition. In proof of this, the piece of beef so called grows upon the *loin*, and behind the small ribs of the animal.” Dr. Pegge is probably right, and yet the King, if he did not give the sirloin its name, might, notwithstanding, have indulged in a pun on the already-coined word, the etymology of which was then, as now, as little regarded as the thing signified is well approved.

Herons roast cold.	Artichoke pye.	Gammon of bacon.
Curlew pye cold.	Chickens.	Pigeons roast.
Mince pye hot.	Curlews roast.	Made dish.
Custards.	Peas buttered.	Chicken burred.
Pig roast.	Rabbits.	Pear tart.
	Duck.	Pullets and grease.
Second Course.	Plovers.	Dryed tongues.
Hot pheasant, one, and one for the King.	Red deer pye.	Turkey pye.
Quails, six for the King.	Pig burred.	Pheasant pye.
Partridge.	Hot herons roast, three of a dish.	Pheasant tart.
Poults.	Lamb roast.	Hogs' cheeks dryed.
		Turkey chicks cold.

SUNDAY NIGHT'S SUPPER.

First Course.	Ducks boiled.	Plovers.
Pullet.	Chickens baked.	Chickens.
Boiled capon.	Pullet.	Pear tart.
Cold mutton.	Cold neat's-tongue pye.	Rabbits.
Shoulder of mutton roast.	Neat's-tongue roast.	Pease buttered.
Chicken boiled.	Sprod boiled.	Made dish.
Cold capon.	Curlews baked cold.	Ducks.
Roast veal.	Turkies baked cold.	Gammon of bacon.
Rabbits boiled.	Neats' feet.	Red deer pye.
Pullet.	Boiled rabbits.	Pigeons.
Turkey roast.	Rabbits fried.	Wild-boar pye.
Pasty of venison hot.		Curlew.
Shoulder of venison roast.	Second Course.	Dry neats'-tongue.
Herons cold.	Quails.	Neat's-tongue tart.
Sliced beef.	Poults.	Dried hog's cheek.
Umble pye.	Herons.	Red deer pye.

MONDAY MORNING'S BREAKFAST.

The 18th of August.

Pullets.	Boiled chickens.	Pasty of venison.
Boiled capon.	Rabbits roast.	Turkey roast.
Shoulder of mutton.	Shoulder of mutton roast.	Pig roast.
Veal roast.	Chine of beef roast.	Venison roast.

Ducks boiled.	Hérons.	Chicken pye.
Pullet.	Mutton boiled.	Burred capon.
Red deer pye cold.	Wild boar pye.	Dried hog's cheek.
Four capons roast.	Jiggits of mutton boiled.	Umble pye.
Poults roast.	Jiggits of mutton burred.	Tart.
Pheasant.	Gammon of bacon.	Made dish.

"Labourers,—for the Pastries: John Greene, Richard Blythe, William Aldersey, Alexander Cowper;—for the Ranges: John Coleburne, Elias James, John Rairke, Robert Dance;—for Boiling: John Munyer, William Parkes;—for Pulletts: John Clerke, John Bibby.

"Chief Cook, Mr. Morris; Mr. Miller."

At the seat of William sixth Earl of Derby¹, Lathom House², the King rested

¹ Of whom see vol. II. p. 331.

² Lathom House was described by Pennant, as "placed on a most barren spot, and commanding a view as extensive as dull." The ancient Lathom, the celebrated seat of nobility and hospitality, stood between the north-east offices of the present house and the kitchen garden. Here in 1496 Thomas Stanley, the first Earl of Derby of his name, entertained King Henry the Seventh, who arrived on the 11th of June, and, it is said, stayed eight days. On this subject I have been favoured by Mr. Ormerod (from a MS. volume of Poems relating to the Stanley family, collected by him and in his library,) with the following extracts from a Metrical History of the Stanley family composed by Thomas Stanley, Bishop of Man, who died in 1570, and a Paraphrase of the same, by R. G. who was Chaplain to William Earl of Derby from 1672 to 1702. — The latter is curious, but what it affirms must be entirely on traditional foundation, for the lines in Bishop Stanley's Poem are but four:

"First he builded faire Lathom Hall out of the ground,
Such a howse of that age can not now be found;
I mean not for the beauty thereof, all onely,
But every office is sett soe handsome and necessary."

MS. p. 44.

The paraphrase is as follows:

"When place, and wealth, and wisdom call'd home this Earl * to rest,
He viewed his antient seat, and saw the ruines of his nest,
And pulled yt downe, and from the ground new builded Lathom Hall,
So spacious that yt can receive two Kinges, their Traines and all.
Each office hath as well, and for two sides of great receyte,
Two kitchens, butteries, sellers by, with places fit to waite,
Foure stately towers, lodgings of beauty, rich and fairely hunge;
Nothing wants that man could devise, or question with his tonge.
To grace this goodly building, Henry the Seventh came,
Highly commended every thing, and wondered at the frame;
His Royal entertaine was rich and sumptuous, as yt
His followers all admired where he should such provision get.
Eight days his Highness staid, and held his Royal Court in state,
And every day was serv'd in change of hangings and of plate;

* Thomas first Earl of Derby.

two nights; and on the 20th of August, before his departure, knighted Sir William Massy¹, Sir Robert Bendloes², Sir Gilbert Clifton, Sir John Talbot of Preston, Sir Gilbert Ireland of the Hutt³, and Sir Edward Olbaston, all of Lancashire.

No Statesman or Head-officer, but his chamber-pots were siller,
Sellers and butteries day and night were open to each willer.
And after all the cost and eates the Country could afford,
Pleasures and quaint inventions as well at bed as board;
The Earl presents the King a guift of value infinite,
Christ and his twelve Apostles, which were wrought most exquisite,
In silver plate, all double gilt, and each a cubitt longe;
This bred strange admiration in all the Courtly thronge.
It was accepted and sent up into the Jewel-house,
And, as we think, remains there yet, it was so valuous.
The Kinge thus satiate with delights, surveying Lathom Hall,
Enamour'd of the frame and forme, and other buildings all,
At his home-coming pull'd downe Richmond, faire in man's estimation,
And built that new, in all respects like Lathom Hall in fashion.
The entertaine, expence, and guiftes, the King and Countrey's jolity,
In Lancashier will never die, while our Countrey lives in memory.

[Richmond Palace, of which two views were given in my Progresses of Queen Elizabeth, was built, according to Stow, in 1498; according to Lysons (*Environs*, vol. I. p. 438) in 1499; but according to Hall, in the *latter part* of the 15th Hen. VII. which would be 1500.]—To proceed with our account of the old Hall at Lathom; its form may in great measure be collected from its state at the time of its memorable defence by the Countess of Derby in 1644. It stood upon a flat boggy ground, and was encompassed with a wall of two [yards in thickness. On this wall nine towers were erected, each of them mounted with six pieces of ordnance. A moat of twenty-four feet in breadth and six in depth, surrounded the whole. It had two Courts; the Gate-house at the entrance of the first, had a strong tower on each side; and in the midst of the house rose the Eagle Tower, surmounting all the rest. The fortress was nearly demolished by the Parliament, though part of it is concealed in the present beautiful pile, the seat of Edward Bootle Wilbraham, Esq. of which there are two good views in Neale's Seats, and another (a chef-d'œuvre of wood-engraving) in Gregson's Fragments of Lancashire.

¹ Sir William Massey, of Podington Hall in Wirral, Cheshire, is particularly specified as knighted at this time in the register of Burton Parish. He died in 1649, aged 69. See his pedigree in Ormerod's Cheshire, vol. II. p. 309.

² Sir Robert Bindlosse, of Borwick Hall, was Sheriff of Lancashire in 1613. He died about 1629. See his pedigree and a view of his mansion in Whitaker's Richmondshire.

³ And of Hale, Sheriff of Lancashire in 1620, and died in 1629. There is a very copious pedigree of the Irelands in Gregson's Fragments of Lancashire, pp. 216—218.—At Hale-hall is still preserved a full-length portrait of a prodigy in stature, born at that place, whom Sir Gilbert is traditionally reported to have introduced to James I. in the very dress in which he is there depicted. The painting is inscribed, "John Middleton, child of Hale, was born in the year 1572; died in 1628, aged 56; buried in Hale church-yard; stands nine feet high. From his elbow to his middle finger, three feet. From his wrist to the end of his middle finger, nine inches and a half." He is said to have possessed extraordinary strength.

The King then proceeded to Bewsey Hall¹, the seat of Thomas Ireland, Esq. on whom his Majesty, before his departure the next morning, conferred knight-hood², as he did on Sir Lewis Pemberton, of Hertfordshire³.

After entering Cheshire⁴ on the 21st of August, a ride of two miles would bring the King to the Bridge of Warrington, then defended by works of considerable strength⁵, and from thence he would probably proceed down the vale of the Mersey to his Castle of Halton, formerly a residence of a line of powerful Cheshire Barons, and after their extinction united to the Duchy of Lancaster. The picturesque ruins which now crown Halton Hill, and are visible from a vast district, formed at that period part of a line of regular fortifications, which in the ensuing troubles long withstood the forces of the Parliamentary garrison of Manchester⁶.

From hence Webb conducts the King to Rock Savage, a dependency of Halton Barony, situated at a short distance west of the Castle, at the point where the prospect opens to the vale of Chester and the Welsh mountains, with the confluence of the Weaver and the Mersey in the foreground⁷.

¹ The antient fortress and mansion of the Barons of Warrington, which had recently passed by purchase to a younger branch of the Irelands of Hutt. The moat and part of the house still remain.

² Sir Thomas was fourth cousin of Sir Gilbert Ireland, noticed in p. 404. He was in the profession of the law, and Vice-chamberlain of Chester. In the pedigree in Gregson's Fragments he is erroneously said to have died at Bewsey, Aug. 20, 1617 (the day before he was knighted). His granddaughter and eventually sole heiress, was married to her sixth cousin, Sir Gilbert Ireland, of the Hutt and Hale, Knight, grandson of the Sir Gilbert before noticed. They had no children, and the estates have descended by female heirs to the families of Aspinwall, Green, and Blackburne, being now enjoyed by John Blackburne, Esq. F. R. S. the worthy Member for the County.

³ Lewis Pemberton, Esq. of St. Alban's, succeeded Sir Goddard Pemberton in the Shrievalty of Hertfordshire, for the latter part of 1615.

⁴ For the King's safe conduct through the County Palatine of Chester, I am indebted to the friendly guidance of its accurate Historian, George Ormerod, Esq. D. C. L. of Barnesville Park in Gloucestershire, who has compiled the narrative chiefly from scattered notices of his reception interspersed through that part of King's Vale Royal called Webb's Itinerary. Dr. Gower (in his sketch of Materials for a History of Cheshire) fixes the composition of this part "somewhere about 1600," and Messrs. Lysons in 1622; the real date is 1621, as Webb expressly mentions Sir Thomas Smith, of Hatherton, being Mayor of Chester and Sheriff of Cheshire, at the time of his writing. The Mayoralty would extend into 1622, and this office is dated by the *latter* part of the year of office, but the Shrievalty would relate to 1621 only.

⁵ See Cromwell's letter to Lenthall, Aug. 23, 1648, when in pursuit of the Duke of Hamilton, after his victory at Preston.

⁶ "Certaine Informations." No. 28. July 31, 1643.

⁷ This mansion was erected by Sir John Savage in 1565. Its site can now only be traced by mere

“And so we next behold the magnificent fabrick of Rock Savage, overlooking the waters and goodly marshes round about the skirts of it, and so contrived in the scituation, that from the lower meadows there is a fine easie ascent up, upon the face of the house; which as you approach nearer still to it fills your eye with more delight, as it is the nature of true beauty; and to see now the late additions of delectable gardens, orchards, and walks, would make one say, it longs to be the abode of so honourable a Master as it doth service to; but his worth is like to have employment where honour herself cannot give too much attendance.

“Yet never since the foundation of it was it more graced then when it pleased our gracious Sovereign in anno 1617 to accept the princelye entertainment, which there for his Majesty and whole Traine was prepared by the honourable Sir Thomas Savage¹, his Royal Majesty taking his repast there, and killing a buck in Halton Park, after he was that morning come from Bewsey, where his Highness had lien at the right worshipful Sir Thomas Ireland's, now Vice-chamberlain of Chester, whom then of his free grace he knighted².”

The ride in the evening would skirt the rich vale of the Weever, unless the King deviated for the purposes of hunting from the usual route; and, as we hear nothing of a visit to Northwich, he probably turned aside at Winnington Bridge to Vale Royal. Arriving there (in the words of the Parish Register) on “the 21st of Auguste being Thursdays,” he “there kept his Court until Mondaye after.” Here King James was received by Mary Lady Cholmondeley, “the bold Ladie of Cheshire³,” widow of the younger Sir Hugh Cholmondeley, distinguished for military prowess in the reign of Elizabeth, and knighted by her on the eve of the expected Spanish invasion. A drawing of Vale Royal, taken in the year previous to this visit, represents the “Manor

fragments of ruins. It appears from drawings to have been much in the style of Brereton Hall in Cheshire, yet existing and erected about the same period; the apartments were ranged round a quadrangle, built of stone; the windows divided with mullions and flat-headed; in the principal front which commanded the prospect above-mentioned, was the entrance-gateway, placed between two tall octagonal turrets.

¹ Of whom see p. 348.

² Vale Royal, edit. 1656, p. 93.

³ So termed by her Royal Guest; see Leycester's Bucklow Hundred under Holford. Robert Cholmondeley, her eldest son, was created Earl of Leinster; Hugh Cholmondeley, her third son, was ancestor of the present Marquis of Cholmondeley, and Thomas Cholmondeley, her fourth son, was ancestor of the present Thomas Cholmondeley of Vale Royal, created Baron Delamere previous to the Coronation of his present Majesty George the Fourth.

House" as it had been new-modelled by its grantees, the Holcrofts. A gateway would admit the Royal party to a spacious court, round three sides of which the mansion displayed its bay windows and oriels, with a broad flight of twenty steps in the centre leading to the antient refectory of the Abbey, seventy feet in length, still preserved entire, and containing, among numerous portraits, those of the "bold Ladie" and her martial husband. The situation is on the bank of the Weever, adjacent to the forest of Delamere, which extends towards Chester and the west.

"Methinks," observes Webb, "it is not altogether improbable that some such like occasion might long ago, by the presence of a King (and it may be King Edward the First who founded here the Abbey), give this denomination to the goodly tract of grounds, betwixt the forrest and the river of Weever, by his hunting, or other princely sports, to term it *Vallem Regalem*, as the late occasion of our gracious Sovereigne his making the house here four days his Royal Court, while in his forementioned Return out of Scotland he solaced himself, and took pleasing contentment in his disports in the forrest¹, he confirmed it indeed to be a Royal Vale. When it was the joy and gladness of our hearts to behold how graciously his Highness spent there the King of Heaven his own day in the service of his God, and where he was pleased to hear our Reverend Dean of Chester² preach unto him God's truth, and could at his dinner recount the heads and chief points of his Sermon as punctually as if his Highnesse had been acquainted with the preacher's notes. And where his Majesty the day following had such successful pleasure in the hunting of his own hounds of a stag to death, as it pleased him graciously to calculate the hours and confer with the keepers and his honour-

¹ This forest (Delamere) was disafforested in 1812 by an Act of Parliament, which specially reserved to John Arderne, Esq. (representative of Sir John Done here mentioned) his titles of Chief Forester, Bow-bearer, and Forest Bailiff. In his possession is an antient horn, said to have been given to his ancestor Ralph Kingsley, together with the office, by Earl Randle the First, and with this horn and two white greyhounds the antient foresters are said to have been bound to attend the Earl of Chester (their local sovereign) in the chase.

² Thomas Mallory, D. D. of Cambridge, a younger brother of Sir William Mallory, of Studley in Yorkshire, was installed Dean of Chester in 1606. He was also Archdeacon of Richmond; about 43 years Parson of Davenham, and 23 of Mobberley, both in Cheshire. He was sequestrated from those livings in 1642, and was forced to retreat from Mobberley (where he had purchased the advowson) to his Deanery at Chester, where he died April 3, 1644, and was buried in the Cathedral. He continued Dean about 38 years, and married Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Vaughan, Bishop of Chester, and had many children. See Ormerod's History of Cheshire, vol. I. pp. 220, 323.

able attendants of the particular events in that sport, and to question them whether they ever saw or heard of the like expedition and true performance of hounds well hunting; at which his Highnesse's Princely contentment we had much cause to rejoyce, and the rather for that the diligence and service of Sir John Done¹ had so prosperously prepared his Majestie's sports, which he also as graciously accepted²."

On Saturday, August 23, (the day previous to the King's visit to Whitegate Church,) he proceeded to Chester. Webb takes no notice of the ceremonies observed, but the following account is given in Aldersey's series of local events, printed also in the Vale Royal:

"Aug. 1617. Our City was graced with the Royall presence of our Sovereign King James, who being attended with many honourable Earls, reverend Bishops, and worthy Knights and Courtiers, besides all the Gentry of the Shire³, rode in state through the City the 23d of August, being met with the Sheriffs, Peers [Sheriffs-Peers], and Common Councill of the City, every one with his foot-cloth well mounted on horseback. All the Traine Souldiers of the City, standing in order without the Estgate, and every Company with their ensignes in seemly sort, did keepe their several stations on both sides of the Eastgate-street. The Mayor and all the Aldermen took their places on a scaffold railed and hung about with green, and there in a most grave and seemlie manner they attended the coming of his Majestie. At which time, after a learned Speech delivered by the Recorder, the Maior presented to the King a fair cup with a cover, double gilt, and therein an hundred Jacobuses of gold; and likewise the Maior delivered the Citie's Sword to the King, who gave it to the Maior again, and the same was borne before the King by the Maior, being on horseback. And the Sword of Estate⁴

¹ See p. 410.

² Vale Royal, p. 116.

³ It was in the Progress of this day that the King, exhausted with heat and dust, and well aware of the character of his provincial attendants, resorted to the expedient of ordering "those of the best blood to hasten forwards"—a command said to have been obeyed by *all*, excepting one poor, but highly descended Welshman, whose horse's blood was unable to give the required testimony to the noble qualities of that of its owner. The crowd of visitants appears to have fixed an æra in the annals of the City, for a local journalist describing the visit of the Duchess of Tremouille in 1630, adds, "so many Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen, never were in Chester together, no, not *when the King James came to Chester*." Harl. MSS. 2125.

⁴ Termed the "Earl's Sword of the Excheq'r" in Harl. MSS. 2125. There were two swords of state relating to this Palatinate, both of which are preserved in the British Museum. The older one, called the sword of Hugh Lupus, was probably the sword of investiture used by the later Earl Hugh,

was borne by the Right Honourable William Earl of Derby, Chief Chamberlain of the County Palatine of Chester.

"The King rode first to the Minster, where he alighted from his horse, and in the west isle of the Minster he heard an Oration delivered in Latine by a Scholler of the Free School; after the said Oration he went into the Quire, and there, in a seat made for the King in the higher end of the Quire, he heard an anthem sung, and, after certain prayers, the King went from thence to the Pentice¹, where a sumptuous Banquet was prepared at the Citie's cost. Which being ended, the King departed to the Vale Royall, and at his departure the honor of knighthood was offered to Mr. Maior², but he refused the same³."

A Chester Journalist gives these additional particulars: "He stayd in Chester not above five howres. After the departure was a collection made in the Citty towards the charges the Citty was att for the cupp of gould, which was £.120; the banket, £.40; besides fees to his Majestie's servants, £.50; and other charges to a good value⁴."

In his return to Vale Royal the King diverged from his direct route to visit Lea Hall, near Aldford, an antient mansion of the Calveleys, the site of which is now marked only by the foss of a considerable moat, and the farm buildings which have succeeded to the manor-house. It was then, according to Webb, "a fair antient timber mansion of the great family of the Calvelies, which now (1621) by the late decease of Sir George Calveley, Knt. is being in wardship to his Majesty; which house had in times past one addition of honour when the owner thereof, Sir Hugh Calveley, was Captain of Calleys, and married the late Queen of Arragon; and another by the late presence of our gracious Sovereign surnamed Kevelioc. The other sword (which is that here alluded to), sometimes improperly called Earl Randle's sword, was the sword of Edward V. who visited this Earldom in great pomp in 1475, and to whom all the armorial bearings enamelled on the sword refer, viz. those of Primogenitus Angliæ, Cornwall, Wales, March, Chester, and Pembroke.

"To the Shoe-makers'-rowe in Northgate-street to the Pendice." The Pentice was an antient timber building where the Mayor's Courts and Civic Banquets were held, "at the High Crosse under St. Peter's Church, and in the midst of the City, in such a sort that a man may stand therein, and see into the markets or four principal streets of the City." Smith's Description of Chester in the Vale Royal. It abutted against St. Peter's Church, and is represented in a sketch of that edifice engraved in Ormerod's History of Cheshire, vol. I. p. 259.

² The Mayor who declined this honour was "Edward Button, Innholder." See the list of Mayors in the Vale Royal.

³ Vale Royal, p. 215.

⁴ Harl. MSS. 2125, p. 306.

King James, in anno 1617, who, in his Royal Progress and Return out of Scotland, came thither from the City of Chester, and advanced there the said Sir George Calveley to the degree of knighthood, who both for his noble descent of his ancestors and for his noble matches in marriages, was worthily thought capable of that his Majestie's munificence."

The proceedings at Vale Royal on Sunday have been already described. On Monday, after the chase of a stag on Delamere, the King proceeded to Nantwich, and on his way thither "took his pleasure and repast" with "the Chief Forester and Keeper," who "ordered so wisely and contentfully his Highness's sports,"—"freely honoured him with knighthood, and graced his house of Utkinton with his Royal presence, making him Sir John Done, of Utkinton, of which name the country speaks much of brave Knights his ancestors¹." Sir Andrew Corbet², of Salop, was also knighted at Sir John Done's house.

¹ This Knight was a descendant of a long line of martial ancestors, representing in the male line a younger branch of the Norman Barons of Kinderton, and in the female line the original Foresters of Delamere. Sir John Done closed his eyes before the Rebellion, but his coheirs experienced a full share of its tumults. The eldest daughter had her mansion at Utkinton sacked by the Royalists; the second married Mr. Crewe, Member for Northamptonshire, a prominent character in the History of the Uxbridge Commission; the third was wife of Mr. Arderne, of Alvanley, a gentleman whose military services were confined to the neighbourhood of his estates, but who led his tenants at an early period to combine with the Parliamentary garrison at Manchester, and the assailants at Warrington. Both the parents of these Ladies had imbibed the principles of Puritanism as pupils of the celebrated John Bruen, of Stapleford, but in the *mother* at least they were softened by every grace and virtue. "To this day," Pennant truly observes, "when a Cheshire man would express some excellency in one of the fair sex, he would say, 'There is a Lady Done for you.'" In the possession of Mr. Ormerod, who is connected by marriage to the Utkinton family, are five fine portraits of Sir John and Lady Done, and their three daughters. The Knight is habited in the costume which he probably wore on this occasion, a splendid suit of *forest green*, fringed, slashed, and laced, and ornamented with rosettes and all the other finery of the time. On his right hangs the Delamere bugle, and the *couteau de chasse* on his left, in which hand he holds a green slouched hat and the leashes for his greyhounds, sustaining with the other his staff of office. The same dress, apparently copied from this picture and finely executed in white marble, occurs on his monument in the Church of Tarpорley, near which the remains of his family mansion Utkinton Hall are situated, being partly re-built and partly consisting of buildings in the usual style of old Cheshire manor-houses, namely, timber-work (there denominated "post and plaster"), bay windows and large gables. After the extinction of the Crewes of Utkinton, the Done estates devolved to the Ardernes of Alvanley, from which place the father of the present representative of the family derived his title on being raised to the Peerage.

² Of Moreton Corbet; son of Sir [qu?] Roger Corbet, by Anne, daughter of Andrew, first Lord Windsor; first cousin once removed to Sir John Corbet, of Stoke, Shropshire, created a Baronet in

Proceeding southward from Utkinton, the King next arrived at Townsend¹ in the suburbs of Nantwich, the mansion of Thomas Wilbraham², Esq. Here, on the 25th of August, "the King vouchsafed to make the lodging place for his Royal person, and after he had for some hours accommodated himself in the house (then his Royal Court), it pleased him to walk so far as to the brine-seeth, and with his eye to behold the manner of the well, and to observe the labours of 1627; and ancestor of Sir Andrew Corbet, of Moreton-Corbet, advanced to the same dignity in 1808.

¹ A large and lofty brick mansion erected in 1571, by a younger branch of the Wilbrahams of Woodhey. This edifice suffered materially in the siege of Nantwich, and was abandoned as a residence by its proprietors in the last century, but its remains still exhibit evidences of former consequence in its large bay windows and ornamented chimneys, numerous out-buildings of massy timber-work, and long lines of garden walls decorated with armorial bearings and grotesque devices.

² The following memorandum by the King's host is copied from a paper in the possession of George Wilbraham, of Delamere House, co. Chester, Esq. to whom I am indebted for a copy: "That upon the 25th of August 1617, King James, at his Returne forth of Scotland, came to this Towne of Nantwich, and lay one night at my house; at the same time there were with him, the Duke of Lenox, Lord Steward of the King's Household; the Duke [Earl] of Buckingham, Master of the Horse; the Earl of Pembroke, Lord Chamberlain of the King's Househould; and divers other Lords and Knights. Upon the 26th day he went to the Church, where Dr. Dod preached before him, who shortly after was sworne his Chaplaine; at his returne from Church he went to see the bryne-pitt, and after dinner went to Bromley, to my Lord Gerard's house." Some pages after, in the hand-writing of Roger, son of Thomas Wilbraham, who was the writer of the above memorandum, we read: "Thomas Wilbraham [who left these last remembrances] being sworne servant to King Charles, had summons by the Lord Chamberlaine of the Household, to attend his Majesty in his Royall Journey into Scotland, coming to York, where the Court then was, in such equipage as befitted his plan. He was sworne a Gentleman of the honourable Privy-chamber Extraordinary, attested by Sir James Palmer who swore him, and by a certificate under the hand and seale of the Lord Chamberlain of the Household, dated 23 April 1639. Whence the said T. W. attended his Royal Master to Edinburgh in Scotland, where a Peace was concluded. Whereupon his Majesty retired into England, and the said Thomas Wilbraham returned by Carlisle to his house in Nantwich, 6 July 1639. The year following the said Thomas Wilbraham entertained the Earl of Strafford, the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, and his retinue, viz. his son, the Lord Raby, Sir Toby Mathew, Sir Philip Mainwaring, the Secretary to his Lordship, and some others of quality, in their way to London in April 1640." In 1659, on the eve of the battle of Winnington Bridge, the house became the head-quarters of Sir George Booth on the 11th of August, and received in the following week Lambert and his officers marching in pursuit of him.—Mr. Wilbraham, after "having had some taste of the troubles that ensued," died at Sir Robert Pelham's in Sussex in 1643, having retired to that County. Wilbraham MSS.—The Wilbrahams of Townsend, on the extinction of the Wilbrahams of Woodhey, became heirs male of their antient name, and are now settled at Delamere Lodge in the adjacent Hundred of Edisbury.

the briners, so they call the drawers of the brine, whose work it is to fetch it up in leather buckets fastned to ropes, and empty it into the troughes, which troughes convey it to the wich-houses, at which work those briners spend the coldest day in frost and snow, without any cloathing more than a shirt, with great cheerfulness. And after his Majestie's gracious enquiry, among the poor drawers, of many things touching the nature of the same brine, and how they proceeded to convert it into salt, most princely rewarding them with his own hand, his Majestie returned to the Court.

"The next day, August 26, his Majestie was likewise pleased to appoint a Sermon to be preached before him in the Church, and of his princelye graciousnes to stay whiles an Oration was pronounced by one of the Scholars of the school, which Sermon was then performed by a Divine of our own countrey, both by birth and dwelling, Mr. Thomas Dod, Archdeacon of Richmond¹, and to which his Majestie gave so great attention, and with the same was so affected, as it pleased his Highnesse to grace the Preacher with his Princelye and free election of him into the number of one of his Chaplains in Ordinary²."

The same day the King knighted, at Nantwich, Sir Hugh Wrottesley; and Sir William Owen, of Condover, Shropshire; and in the afternoon proceeded on his way to Gerards Bromley, with his own retinue and a train of the principal Gentry of Cheshire, including the High Sheriff, John Davenport, of Davenport, a Gentleman of most antient family, and the hereditary possessor of two high offices in the Palatinate, the Forestership and Serjeancy of the Peace of the Forest and Hundred of Macclesfield.

"At his taking leave in the confines of the County, his Majesty not only gave him thanks for his attendance, but of his Royall benignity called him to come near him, and bestowed upon him the degree of knighthood, and graced him with a pleasant Princely farewell, 'You shall carry me this token to your wife,' graciously so meant by his Majesty, but the gentlewoman³ having indeed

¹ Representative of the Dods of Shocklach, a younger branch of the antient family of Dod of Edge. The Archdeacon of Richmond was also D. D. Dean of Ripon, Prebendary of Chester, and Rector of Astbury and Malpas, most of which titles follow his name in every entry made by him on the most trivial occasion in his parish registers. His uncle, John Dod, of Jesus College, Cambridge, is well known as "the Decalogist."

² Vale Royal, p. 70.

³ This Lady (who was buried at Swettenham Church, Aug. 8, 1613), was Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Wilbraham, Esq. Attorney of the Court of Wards, and a younger brother of the House of Townsend.

before that attained to a better Ladship, being gone to her Lord and Saviour in Heaven¹."

On the 26th of August, the King arrived from Nantwich at Gerards Bromley² in Staffordshire, the seat of Thomas first Lord Gerard³, where his Majesty stayed two nights, and, on the day of his departure, knighted Sir Roger Puleston, of Flintshire; Sir Thomas Wolseley⁴, of Staffordshire; and Sir Richard Liddall, of Berkshire.

On the 27th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows, from Ware Park, to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King is now in Lancashire or Cheshire, and about ten days hence is expected at Woodstock. The Lord Coke makes account to meet him at Coventry, where we shall see what he is to trust to.

"On Saturday last here passed by Ware one Ker, a Scottish Gentleman, suspected and charged, together with some others of that family and name, to have conspired the death of the Earl of Buckingham at his coming out of Scotland; and so was apprehended about Carlisle; where the Marquis Hamilton was sworn of the Council of England, and meets the King when he comes to Theobalds.

"The Lord Walden is said to be in some dislike both for quarrelling with the Earl of Montgomery and Lord Compton, as specially for going about by indirect means to set dissention betwixt my Lord of Buckingham and the said Marquis⁵; which coming to repetition, the whole disgrace turned upon himself. I have not heard a man generally better spoken of than the Marquis, even by all the English; insomuch that he is every way held as the gallantest Gentleman of both the nations⁶."

¹ Vale Royal, p. 81.

² Gerards Bromley, "a stately quadrangular fabric of stone," was built by Sir Thomas Gerard, Master of the Rolls, who died in 1592. Camden mentions it in his *Britannia*, as being worthy of notice "both for its magnificence, and for its being the principal residence of Thomas Gerard, created by King James in the first year of his reign Baron Gerard of Gerards Bromley." Dr. Plot in his *History of Staffordshire* calls it "the most magnificent structure of all this County," and gives a view of it which shows it to have been a singular as well as magnificent edifice; but, having been purchased by the Meynell family, it was pulled down many years since. See *Erdeswicke's Staffordshire*, by Harwood, p. 83.

³ See p. 395.

⁴ Second cousin of Sir Robert the first Baronet, and of an elder branch of the family. See *Wotton's Baronetage*, 1741, vol. II. p. 134.

⁵ Of whom in p. 385.

⁶ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

On the 28th of August, his Majesty, pursuing his journey, passed through the Town of Stafford; and we have the following highly curious account of his reception, from a manuscript in the possession of the right honourable Lord Bagot¹:

Preparatory to his Majesty's arrival, the Mayor, Mr. Thomas Cradocke, and the Common Council agreed to give best and "most royalste" entertainment in their power, and requested the people of the Town to repair their houses, paint the forefronts of them, sand their streets, and to do any thing else that might cause the King to take notice of their loves and duties. The North-gate was repaired and beautified with the arms of the Kingdom, and the way and passage of the Gate made wider, "it being a causey not three yards broad, and very dangerous both for coach and horse." A barn which stood near the Gate was likewise removed, and a garden-place thrown open for greater conveniency. The other Gates were adorned, the Hall windows glazed, and the King's arms put up there. It was at one time intended to have sent two of the Common Council to witness the mode of his Majesty's reception at Preston, as a guide for their own proceedings, but this was relinquished; though some of that body rode to Nantwich for that purpose, and also conferred on the subject with Mr. Gosnell, one of the Gentlemen Ushers, whose turn it was to wait at Stafford. The Recorder, Robert Aston, Esq. an ancient Barrister, was requested to prepare and deliver a suitable Oration, which he declined, not considering it as belonging to his office; and urging besides that "he was oulde and unweldye, and could not use such gesture of his body as would be expected;" in consequence of which, he assigned Richard Weston, Esq. a Counsellor of Law, to supply his place.

"But now lett us retyre to Thursday morninge and expect the King's cominge, who laye all night at Bromley, at the Lord Gerrard's house, and therefore was expected in the Towne about one or twoe of the clocke. And now, understandinge that Sir Robert Osborne², and the Gentlemen Ushers and other Officers attending his Majestie in state (accordinge to theire promisses formerlie made), some foure or fyve howers before the Kinge came repared to the Towne, conferred with the Maior and his accomplices, and did see the guift [that] was to be presented to his Majestie, tooke notice of all of us howe we were apparelled, instructed us for the place most convenient for the meetinge of the Kinge, which

¹ Communicated, with his Lordship's kind permission, by William Hamper, Esq. F. S. A.

² Probably one of the King's Escuyers or Equeuries; see pp. 420, 431. One Sir Robert Osborn was knighted in 1599; and another, of Kelmarsh in Northamptonshire, at Whitehall, May 30, 1604.

they thought to be the most fittest in the markett-place. But yet he informed us that it was our parts to meete the Kinge at the confynes of our Liberties; and therefore Sir Robert Osborne woulde ryde immediatlye to the Kinge to knowe his pleasure therein. And for that the waie and weather was very foule, the Kinge was pleased to keepe his coache till he came under the North-gate of the Towne, where his Majestie stode longe in regard of the continuall rayne that then fell, makinge it knowne unto his Nobillitye then present with him that hee did of purpose staie a faire blast that he might the better survaye the Towne. Whilest the Kinge thus staied for faire weather, the Earl of Arundell, to hould some discourse with the Kinge, looking upon the Gate, and behouldinge the walls of the Towne, toulde his Majestie that he was of opinion that the Towne was a very auncient Towne; to whom the Kinge presently replied, 'That could not be, for,' saith the Kinge, 'it is but three yeares sithence we made them a Maior Towne, for before that tyme they could not sende Burgesses to the Parliament, but were onlye governed by Bayliffs.' But herein was an error, for, althoughe the Kinge noe doubt had eyther enquired, or out of his reading had taken some notice of the Towne, yet his Majestie's recordes will perpetuallie shewe that ever-sithens the Towne was incorporated, yt hath usually sente forthe Burgesses to the Parliament. The Heavens began then to tell the Kinge they will be cleare, his Majestie beinge under the Gate oute of his coach and mounted upon his horse of state, and caused the Earle of Essex, whoe was Highe Steward of the Town¹, to ryde upon an other of his horses of state, with his plumes uppe, and to carrye the Sworde before him. And soe the Nobillitye, Bushoppes, Officers, and Trumpetters, everye one rancking themselves in their places, marched alonge, and made the streets glorious by the happie aspect of his Majestie. The

¹ The Earl of Essex, since his disgraceful divorce, had remained in retirement at his mansion of Chartley, about four miles from Stafford. He lived, says Arthur Wilson, with a great magnificence, in a friendly correspondence with all the Gentlemen of the country round about him; and, in process of time, with as general affection and respects from all ranks and degrees of people as he possibly could desire. Sometimes he made a tour to Drayton near Tamworth, where his grandmother the Countess of Leicester resided, and sometimes he visited his brother-in-law, the Earl of Hertford, in Wiltshire. Manly sports, such as hunting, shooting, and riding long journies, made a great part of his summer recreations. In the winter, good chear, feasting, with masques and plays, composed commonly by Arthur Wilson, who was his Groom of the Chambers, served to mitigate his melancholy, and to give the Country Gentlemen content.

sounde of the trumpetts gave the Maior, the Common Councell, and the Assistants, sommons that his Majestie was nere at hande. But, as his cominge was not unexpected, soe alsoe the Maior, and Common Councell, and the Assistants, were not unfurnished, but all in readynes to give him entertainement; for that morninge they had prepared in the middle of the Markett-place a scaffould, halfe a foote in height, made in the forme of a triangle, rayled in, whereupon was placed in the fore parte a table covered with a carpett of broade greene cloath, hanginge downe to the grounde, and fringed with Naples silke, and in the middle of the same the armes of all the Kingdomes richlye embroydered, and of eyther syde the King's armes were the armes of the Towne richlie embroydered. There was alsoe prepared one greate chaire with a backe having thereon the armes of the Towne richlye embroydered, twoe other chaires somethinge lesser, richly embroydered with the armes of the Towne, and foure other buffett stooles richly embroydered upon the seate with Stafford knotts intermingled, and all fringed with green silke.

“ And all provyded of purpose for the entertayninge of his Majestie, upon this scaffold stode the Maior, Common Councell, and Assistants. In the middle of the table stood a guilt cupp, an ell in height, duple guilt, and very richlie and curiouslie wrought by the gouldsmith. The Markett-place beinge fullye replenished with spectators, all windowes and casements about the Markett-place beinge taken downe, and in theise places was manie a faire face putt oute. The Kinge cominge into the Markett-place cast his [eye] everye waie, turning his horse aboute to behoulde the prettye site thereof, sayinge (that manie might here him), ‘that he was come into *Little London*.’ Then castinge his eye towards the scaffold, he directlie rode up to the Maior, whoe upon his knee with the rest of the Common Councell and Assistants prayed God to blesse his Majestie. The Maior kissed the Mace, and delivered it up to his Majestie, whoe havinge received the same did very seriouslie observe the forme thereof, for it was in outward shewe as faire a mace as anie the Kinge had then carryed before him; yt had all the armes and coats of the Kingdome richlie wrought upon the gloabe, and yt was of that beautye and seemed to be of that worth, that Francis Dorington had given forth divers times that yt was too bigge, and that the Kinge would take exceptions to yt. But, thanks be to God, that scruple of conscience is removed, for the Kinge did most graciouslie give the same backe againe to the Maior, enablinge him

thereby, as yt were then by an actuall possession, both to carrye that mace, and to exercise his former authoritye.

“ The Maior havinge thus received the mace, then did Mr. Weston on his knee deliver a Speech unto the Kinge, which Speech by reason of the alteracion thereof over night seemed not to be a premeditated Speech, but rather a resolved Speech of the present accidents, which he had founde and heard of in that instant; that is to saye, the discourse the Nobility had with the Kinge at the Gate touchinge the antiquitye of the Towne, as alsoe a kinde of distraccion in our government, which he had founde over night amongst the Maior’s owne complices, which caused him not to binde himselfe to anie kinde of sett Speech. And therefore Mr. Weston, beinge not able to deliver in wrytinge what he had pronounced to the Kinge, yet as neare as I can, the effect thereof I shall sett downe, althoughe not in soe good termes. Hee first declared unto his Majestie that, since out of his Princelie care to knowe his Kingdomes and to be knowne unto his people, yt had pleased his Majestie to undertake soe longe a pilgrimage, his poore subjects whome he nowe vouchsafed to visitt, did thinke yt fitt to tell his Majestie what they were and whence they came; wherein (saith he) they will not deale like a newe upstart gentree, whoe, to seeme discended of a worthy race, eyther change their names for better, or buy of the Heraldes longe petty-grees; but that they did freelie acknowledge that of manie persons they were first made one bodye by Kinge John, and by him encorporated by the name of Bayliffes and Burgesses; the Bayliffes twoe, the Burgesses indefinite. In which state yt continewed untill about three yeares since; but, like the successe of an unsounde bodye, whose ill-disposed humors are neyther cured nor corrected, soe the state bodye of the said Towne, befoure yt came to be foure huundred yeares of age, by the multiplicity of overgrown members was becomen a monster. For evrie freeman, eyther by birth or bought with monye, havinge an equall voice in the choosinge of their Bayliffes, and the greater number beinge of the worser sort (as it is in all popular eleccions) such were made Governours as eyther were followers or favorers of vices, and that hence grewe impunitye, the deliveringe of lawe and the scorne of government. The said Mr. Weston further added, that yt had pleased his Majestie to new make this Corporacion, and that it nowe consisted of one Maior, tenne Aldermen, and tenne Cheefe Burgesses; and that, by the guift of this greater tytle, his Majestie had added to their honor by change-

inge the eleccion of theire Officer to fewe and theire governement to one; and that three yeares' experience nowe past had given assertance of a perpetuall blessinge. And further Mr. Weston declared unto the Kinge, that manie that had received favors (havinge theire turnes served) did turne theire backs upon theire benefactors, beinge either too proude to acknowledge theire debte, or unwillinge to make requitall; but, saith Mr. Weston, theire lodgeth noe such unthankfulness in the walls of this Towne, for here the people come all forthe with joy to meete your Majestie, whome they well knewe and acknowledg theire leidge Lord and Kinge; they confess (saithe he) that they are your Majestie's creatures, and that your Majestie was most exceedinge welcome to the true hartes of all your loyall subjectes, and that it was a custome amongst them to give pledges of their love. At which wordes Mr. Weston, puttinge his hande towards the Cuppe, said further as followeth: 'This they offer, and humblie crave acceptance, for it is onelie that which must make yt worthye requitall, but they have none untill they have begged it.' Here the Maior delivered uppe the Cuppe unto his Majestie, who ever observantlye looked upon the same, and all behoulders might both witnes and take notice that his Majestie made gracious acceptance of the same; for as he held the Cuppe in his hande he apparentlye smyled, puttinge his hande up to his hatt and stirring the same, as an infallible toaken of the Towne's true love and loyall obeydience. This Cuppe his Majestie forthwith delivered to his Gentleman Usher Mr. Gosnell, and presently thereupon Mr. Weston proceedes to conclude his whole Speech to this effect followinge: 'God (saithe he) hath enriched your Majestie with guifts fitt to be his Vicegerent; we praye unto the Kinge of Kinges to give unto your person health and longe life; to your Governement peace and plentye; and, when the earth shalbe unworthie longer to enjoy you, in Heaven there to receive a rewarde, on earth the memorie of a good Kinge, and David's blessinge to your succession.' Att which woordes the Maior, Common Councel, and Assistantes, with loude voyces prayed, 'God blesse your Majestie!'

"Then the Maior by the appointment of Sir Robert Osborne tooke horse, and upon his footecloath, bearinge the mace upon his necke, he rode in his place as he was assigned, before the Kinge, attended on eyther side him with twoe Sergeantes of the lesser maces. The weather nowe began to be foule, and the skye loured, as beinge loath that his Majestie should departe from soe true and lovinge subjectes. But the rayne fallinge, yt was an occasion that, as his Majestie tooke

horse of state under the North-gate, soe here his Majestie was by unseasonable weather enforced to take his coach under the East-gate.

“The Kinge had noe sooner taken his coach, but one of the Gentlemen Ushers gave notice to Mr. Maior that he should alight and take his leave of his Majestie, which he did accordinglie; and the Lord of Essex, seeinge the Maior's intencion, did very honorablie present the Maior to the Kinge; and his Majestie takinge notice of him for his kinde entertaynement and gave him his hand to kisse.

“Memorandum. That the seaven-and-twentieth daye of August, anno Regis Jacobi Angliæ xv, the Maior, by consent of the Companie, or the greater parte of them, called unto him divers Burgesses to assist him in the entertayninge of his Majestie, whoe voluntarilie for the more reputacion of the Towne did furnishe themselves everye one with a newe gowne and a newe suite of apparell, and soe attended the Maior and the rest of the Common Councill duringe the Kinge's presence, whoe are called before the Assistants of the Common Councill, and by oathe are alsoe bound to give further attendance as by the same oath more att large appereth. The names of such as then tooke that oathe were:

J. Foley.	Michael Wouldrich.	Thomas Edwardes.
Rich. Drakeford.	Edward Aveye.	Thomas Trevett.
Tho. Worswicke.	Thomas Sawyer.	George Lewes.
James Wilson.	Walter Beech.	Thomas Downinges.
Hugh Homersley.	Humfrey Burne.	Thomas Chamberlen.

“It is fitt alsoe to sett downe the names of such that, out of selfe-will, of mallice, or for wante of witt and judgment, obstinatlye refused to take the place upon them of the Assistants of the Common Councill. The names of them that soe refused are, William Wouldrich, Francis Walthoe, and Robert Lees.

“A Particular of the Fees paid to the Kinge's Servauntes at such tyme as his Majestie came throughe the Towne of Stafford, 28^o Augusti 1617.

“To the Gentlemen Ushers Daylie-Wayters	-	-	ijfti. vjs. viijd.
To the Serjauntes-at-Armes	-	-	ijfti. vjs. viijd.
To the Ushers Quarter-Wayters	-	-	xxs.
To the Shewers of the Chambers	-	-	xxs.
To the Yeomen Ushers	-	-	xxs.
To the Groomes and Pages	-	-	xxs.

To the Trompetters - - - - -	xls.
To the Footemen - - - - -	xls.
To the Porters at the Gate - - - - -	xxs.
To the Knight Harbenger - - - - -	ijjti. vjs. viijd.
To the Foure Yomen of the Mouthe - - - - -	xls.
To the Yeoman of the Feilde - - - - -	xs.
To the Way-maker - - - - -	xxs.
To the Yoman Usher for bringinge the Sword to the Lord Lieutenant - - - - -	vjs. viijd.
To the Coachman - - - - -	xs.
<hr/>	
So ^m a total'. -	xxijjti. vjs. viijd.
<hr/>	

Paid more, the Knight Marshall's Fee - - - - - xxs.

Paid more, for the Gentlemen Harbingers' Fee. [No sum entered.]

Paid more, in Fees to Sir Robert Osborne for the Stirrippe and

Quirrey - - - - - vijti.

At Tixall¹, the seat of Sir Walter Aston, Knight of the Bath and Baronet, the King remained two nights.

Of the King's visit to the ancient mansion of Hoarcross², in the parish of

¹ The antient mansion at Tixall was a magnificent and venerable building, having its ground floor constructed of stone, and the higher ones of wood and plaster. It was remarkable as containing a vast number of windows, and yet not one of them alike. On the sills of the windows was the inscription, WILLIAM YATES MADE THIS HOUSE, MDLV. It was nearly all pulled down about 1780, when a plain modern mansion of brick was erected, but a few remains of the ancient structure are still standing, together with a magnificent gatehouse consisting of three stories, and embellished with three series of columns, Doric, Ionic, and Corinthian, which was erected by Sir Walter Aston, who died in 1589. Of this elegant fragment there is a view in the Beauties of England and Wales. Here Sir Walter, grandson of the above, and the King's present host, patronized Drayton the Poet, who was his Esquire when he was created K. B. (see vol. I. p. 225), and who sings in his Polyolbion :

"The Trent, by Tixall graced, the Astons' ancient seat,
Which oft the Muse hath found her safe retreat;" &c.

² Hoarcross, having been the mansion of the family of Welles for about 200 years, was in the reign of James the First carried by an heiress to Thomas or John Cassey; and the estate, having passed through several hands, was when Mr. Shaw wrote the property of Hugo Meynell, Esq. Erdeswicke, who wrote temp. Eliz. says, "at Horecross there is a fair Gentleman's seat and a park some time the house of Humphry Wells, and now a nephew of the same surname is the owner." Dr. Wilkes, who wrote about 1740, soon after which date the old mansion was destroyed, describes it as "a large house,

Yoxall, it is recorded in the register of the neighbouring parish of Alrewas, that “*Jacobus Rex noster rediebat apud Whorcrosse xxx^{mo} die Augusti, et illic remansit die Sabbati, Dominicâ, et Lunæ abiit.*”

On the first of September his Majesty left Hoarcross, and, having proceeded through an angle of Derbyshire, and knighted “at the last bounds of the shire,” Sir Henry Ager, the Sheriff, arrived at the fine baronial Castle of the Earl of Huntingdon¹, at Ashby-de-la-Zouch² in Leicestershire. In procuring provi-

built at several times, as appears by the different sorts of building. It stands upon a hill, and is encompassed with a moat, over which is a draw-bridge, and on the side next to the house a porter's lodge. In the garden is a square pile of building in the nature of a summer-house, two stories high, with sash windows, a flat roof, and rail and balusters at top. This was very neatly furnished and made use of for a music-room, but now with the rest of the buildings is running fast to decay.” The windows of the house contained much painted glass of the age of the building, which seems to have been erected soon after it came into the Welles family. This ancient mansion was destroyed soon after Dr. Wilkes wrote, and was succeeded by another, also pulled down in 1794. A farm house now occupies the site.

¹ Who had entertained the King at his house in Leicester in 1612 and 1614 (see vol. II. p. *458, and this volume, p. 22) ; and of whom see vol. II. p. 145.

² Where the Queen was lodged for one night on her first journey into England in 1603 (see vol. I. p. 170) ; and where was performed in 1607 a Masque the outlines of which are re-printed in vol. II. pp. 144—152. This is the only visit the King ever paid to Ashby ; yet, by the assistance of tradition and invention, working upon the vulgar idea that Royal Visits were always ruinous to the families honoured by them, Mr. Bell has enlarged as follows in his *Huntingdon Peerage* : “ Indeed the Visits of the King became *so frequent* and *often so long*, that the enormous cost of entertaining him and his numerous followers in such sumptuous and magnificent style, was said [qu. by whom?] to have materially impaired Lord Huntingdon's fortune. It was even insinuated [qu. where?] that his Majesty's covert and ungenerous purpose, in thus conferring the expensive honour of his company, was to involve, by this means, the circumstances of his Noble Host in embarrassment, in order thereby to disable him from all attempt, and quell all *ambition after the Crown* ! However this may be, it is certain that James and his whole Court were *frequently* quartered on his Lordship for *many days together*, during which, such was the more than Princely splendour of Ashby Castle, the dinner was always served up by poor Knights, dressed in velvet gowns and gold chains. On these festive occasions, it was customary for the Nobility residing within several miles round of Ashby to repair thither, in order to pay their respects to the King. This homage, according to a traditional anecdote, was omitted by Lord Stanhope of Harington, who was somewhat flighty and eccentric, and his Majesty, offended at this neglect, sent for him, and reproved him for lack of duty ; ‘ but,’ concluded the King, ‘ I excuse you, for the people say that you are mad.’ ‘ I may be mad, my Liege Sovereign,’ replied Lord Stanhope, ‘ but I am not half so mad as my Lord Huntingdon here, who suffers himself to be worried by such a pack of bloodhounds.’ ” — It is needless to enlarge on the high improbability and absurdity of all this ; and all formed from the one simple fact, of King James resting

sions for the Royal Train, the Earl, as was customary, was assisted by the liberality of his neighbours, and, among the rest, by the Corporation of Leicester. "At a Common Hall held on the 8th of August, it was agreed that the Town should give to the Earl of Huntingdon, against the King's coming to Ashby, one yoke of fat oxen worth £.13. 6s. 8d. or £.14, at the discretion of Mr. Pare, Mr. Ludlam, and such others as should buy them. There was a division in the Hall as to whether wine or oxen should be given, but the gift of oxen was carried by a majority of 15 to 11." Having rested one night at Ashby, the King departed the following day to Coventry, after having knighted Sir Walter Devereux, "base brother to the Earle of Essex;" Sir Matthew Saunders¹, Sir John Bale², and Sir William Hartopp³, all of Leicestershire; Sir Francis Ashby, of Middlesex; and Sir Thomas Trentham, of Staffordshire.

Preparatory to the King's Visit to the City of Coventry, the following Act of Leet⁴ was promulgated on the 6th of May:

"Whereas the King's most excellent Majestie intendeth to come unto this Citie sometime this present yeare to view the same, against whose coming it is verie fit and requisite, for the credit of this Citie, that as well all and singular houses and buildings within the same, and suburbs thereof, especially on the street side, should be well and sufficiently repaired and amended, as also all and singular bulks and paint-houses [pent-houses] within the said Citie (on the street side as aforesaid) should be in like repair, as also that all streets in this Citie and suburbs thereof should be well and sufficiently paved and amended where neede

a single night in the Castle. The passage may certainly be regarded as no ordinary specimen of that ingenuity which is the "stock in trade" of counsel learned in the law, and learned in the arts of amplification and embellishment! Surely Mr. Bell was the first person who ever dreamed that Henry fifth Earl of Huntingdon entertained any "ambition after the Crown!"

¹ Of Shankton; he died in 1623. His son Francis Saunders, Esq. was High Sheriff of Leicestershire in 1634. See the pedigree of the family in the History of Leicestershire, vol. II. p. 792.

² Of Carleton Curlieu and Sadington; he died in March 10, 1621, aged 70. His grandson John was knighted at Belvoir Castle, when High Sheriff of Leicestershire, Aug. 4, 1624. See hereafter under that date, and the pedigree in the History of Leicestershire, vol. II. p. 534.

³ Of Burton Lazars; he died in 1622. His son and grandson were Knights, and one of the coheireses of the family was married to the first Earl Howe. See the pedigree in the History of Leicestershire, vol. II. p. 267.

⁴ This, and the documents that follow, have been communicated from the Records of the Corporation of Coventry, by my kind friend, Thomas Sharp, Esq. author of a dissertation on the Coventry Pageants, and, it is to be hoped, the future writer of a History of that City, for which he has formed large collections.

is: And forasmuch as there is expresse order and commaund given unto Mr. Maior of this Citie by the right honourable the Lord High Chamberlaine of England, that theise reparaçons and pavements shall be made as soone as conveniently maie be without any further delay; It is therefore enacted, &c. that everie housholder of this Citie, and suburbs of the same, shall, at or before the Feast-day of St. James th' Appostle next ensuing, sufficiently repaire his or their house or building on the streete-side, and cullor and laie the same with white and russet or other colours on the street-side, on pain of *xxs.* And further, that everie householder of this Citie or suburbs that hath any bulk or paint-house before his shopp on the street-side, shall cause the same to be sufficiently repaired before the said Feast, on pain of *xs.* And also that everie person dwelling within this Citie and suburbs shall, before the next Quarter Sessions, pave, or cause to be sufficiently paved, his or their street, before his or their houses, on pain of *xxs.*

The particulars of his Majestie's reception are thus recorded in the City Annals:

"Samuel Miles, Mayor; In this year in the month of August most of the houses were painted with black and white, and the Gates, as New Gate, Spon Gate, and Bishop Gate, and also some of the Conduits, against the King's coming; who, on September 2, with many of his Nobles, came to Coventry, and was met by the Mayor and Aldermen in scarlet gowns without Bishop Gate, and Dr. Philemon Holland¹, drest in a suit of black sattin², made an Oration³, for which he had much praise:

¹ Philemon Holland was Head-master of the Free School at Coventry. He was the son of an Essex Divine; and, having received his education at Chelmsford and Trinity College, Cambridge, and taken the degree of A. M. at Oxford in 1587, and that of M. D. at Cambridge about 1590, he practised physic with considerable reputation in his neighbourhood. But he had a third occupation, by which he acquired greater celebrity than either as a pedagogue or physician. This was as a translator of the Classics, in which his labours were so extensive, that he gained the title of Translator General of the Age. He was now in his 66th year and survived till his 85th, dying in 1636. See a fuller account of his life and labours in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary, and the other works there referred to. His portrait at the age of 80, inscribed *INTERPRES*, was prefixed to his translation of Xenophon's *Cyropædia*; and it was copied by Richardson in 1798.

² See the bill for this among the expenses in p. 430.

³ This Oration, which is here printed from the MS Annals of the City, was first printed and published in the year 1622, in a pamphlet bearing the following title: "A learned, elegant, and religious Speech, delivered unto his most excellent Majestie, at his late being at Coventry. By Philemon Holland, Doctor of Physicke, the right honourable the Recorder his deputy for a time; when as his Royall Majestie was graciously pleased to grant and command the erecting of a Military Garden

"Most high and mighty King, vouchsafe to receive from me, your humble Orator, the exceeding joy which your loyal and loving subjects, the Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons, do now conceive, for your safe return out of your noble united Realm of Scotland. Right glad were we all, when in the fulness of time your Highness from thence came to possess the Imperial Crown of this Kingdom, descended upon you; for why? *sol occubuit, nox nulla sequuta est*, nay we may behold even thus the blessed beams of a new sun rising, the full brightness and strength whereof seeing, we have enjoyed ever since; far greater is our present gladness, by how much known jewells are of greater price, and blessings once had are sooner missed. In these few years, (and many may there be of your happy reign over us!) we have found a concurrence of so many felicities, proportioned to your incomparable wisdom, justice, mercy, and other Princely virtues, seasoned all with true religion, as no age by any record can boast the like. To rehearse them all, would breed distasteful satiety; to bury them in oblivion, were impiety; to avoid one and the other, *summa sequar vestigia rerum—placet enim illud*.

"We have seen peace both in Church and Commonwealth fully established, wholesome laws respective to the times judicially enacted, and the same, with mercy, equity, and moderation, all seated in your Princely breast, duly executed; the antient Catholic faith, according to your just title, constantly defended; the Holy Scriptures, with profound judgement, newly translated, a work of high consequence in matters of religion, and beseeeming a noble Prince; your own power-

therein, and sithens to enlarge the aforesaid Citie's Charter. Together with a Sermon preached in the audience, and published at the request, of the worthie Companie of practizers in the Military Garden of the said well-governed City of Coventry; serving as a warning to the enemies sudden invasions, as also exciting to readiness against all secret assaults; by Samuel Buggs, B. of D. sometime Fellow of Sidney Sussex Colledge in Cambridge. Published with authority. London, printed by John Dawson, &c. 1622," 4to, pp. 56, of which the Speech occupies six only. The Sermon was probably preached but shortly before the publication of the Tract. It is entitled: "Miles Mediterraneus, or the Midland Soldier," and is dedicated by its author to William Lord Compton, Earl of Northampton, Lord President of Wales, and Lord Lieutenant of Warwickshire and of the City of Coventry; and to Sir Thomas Leigh, Knight and Baronet, Lieutenant-deputy of the said County. Also by another dedication, to Captain William Sewall, Lieutenant Paston, and all the Company of Soldiers of the said Military Garden. Oldys's Catalogue of Pamphlets in the Harleian Library (Harl. Misc. vol. X. p. 409). There is a copy in the Bodleian Library, but none in the British Museum; one was sold at the sale of the Library of James West, Esq. Pres. R. S. March 29, 1773, in a large lot of contemporary tracts which together produced only 11s.

ful pen in those rare and admirable compositions directly bent against that usurping and bloody seat of Rome, plotting assassination of Christian Princes, and teaching so to do; which words, like so many battering pieces, have shaken the foundation of that Italian Babylonian, so as the very Sultan there, seeing the defection of some, and the wavering of others, must needs say in his heart as Hector himself did a little before the downfall of Troy. And who knoweth whether the Divine Providence hath not appointed that in these your days, even that Rome proudly styled sometimes *Urbs æterna, vetus veticivira*? We have seen the Realm of Ireland, without sword drawn, reduced to civility; aye, and justice settled in all parts thereof, which, in 440 years and more, with effusion of so much English blood and expence of so many millions of pounds, never could be performed. Now (and not before), to the immortal honour of King James be it spoken, the strings of the Irish harp be all in tune, and make good harmony; that wild and ireful Irishry is subdued indeed, and governed by ordinary laws, under our Sovereign and mighty Monarch, the only essential note of a final conquest. We have seen the insolent outrages suppressed of those rude and unruly borderers of the Middle Shires of Great Britain, where now, instead of deadly and mortal enmity, is entertained mutual amity; instead of hostility, hospitality; a thing not known before by any Prince your noble Progenitor. Lastly, such a heavenly gift hath God bestowed upon your Majesty, as among other Kings is rare, if not only to yourself; not only to maintain peace within your own dominions at home, but also to be a blessed peace-maker betwixt foreign Princes and Estates abroad. How happy then are we, to whom the King of Kings hath sent such a King, as both knoweth and practiseth — *et regere imperio populos pacisque imponere morem* — the very perfections imposed so upon a Roman, that are in a complete Prince and Ruler.

“Seeing then that, from this beautiful Sun, we of this City have not received the least comfort, as being situate near the heart of the land — we joyed, only hearing of your Majesty’s purpose to make it in your way returning out of that antient Realm of yours; and taking knowledge of your vigorous abilities of body and chearful countenance, ever since your setting foot again upon English ground, we rejoiced much more; and now that our eyes behold your gracious self, in so good health and Princely port, within our territory, *verè seriò triumphamus*. And even already we conceive hope of some good towards this antient and poor City; — antient from the time of Arviragus, a British King, and poor for want of traffic, in that Nature hath denied it the benefit of the sea, the chief maintenance of

great Towns and Cities; for albeit that in former times, through the industry of the inhabitants, it flourished, and was accounted the only Mart Town of these parts, yea, and named *CAMERA PRINCIPIS*, which we gladly acknowledge it to be,—yet by sublunary chances and fatal revolutions, it hath sensibly fallen to decay, notwithstanding the bountiful favours of divers worthy persons supporters thereof, never to be forgotten; from the time of Leofric and Ranulph, noble Earls of Chester, the first founders of the franchises; Kings Henry the First and Second confirmed and augmented the same; Queen Isabel, sole inheritrix of France; the puissant King Edward the Third; the victorious Prince of Wales, Edward surnamed the Black Prince; jointly together advanced it from a Borough to a City, permitting the Burgesses to elect a Mayor and two Bailiffs. Finally, that mild and devout Prince, King Henry the Sixth of blessed memory, enlarged the privileges, and laid unto the former territory certain villages, and granted it to be an entire County corporate by itself, distinct from the County of Warwick, and ordained two Sheriffs in lieu of Bailiffs; which government, through the favour of Princes successively following, hath been ever since continued; and by God's assistance, so managed, as that it was never noted to harbour rebellion or conspiracy, nor at this day within this City or County is there known so much as one recusant papist or schismatical separatist.

“And, in token of our loyal obedience to your sacred Majesty, we yield up to your Royal authority this said subordinate power; acknowledging thereby, that all our allegiance we owe to your Highness only, and what regimen soever we have; neither are our lives so dear unto us, but that most willing will we be to bestow the same in your Majesty's service. Be pleased then, gracious Lord, to stand favourable to the declining state of this City; and as your noble Progenitors have been good to the same, and yourself in merciful clemency respected it hitherto, so let the sunshine of your Grace be upon it still. And so I conclude, humbly craving of your Majesty, first for myself, your meanest subject, pardon for my rude speech and imperfections; then for the Mayor and Aldermen, and whole Body of this City, acceptance of such their simple yet hearty entertainment as they may have provided; and may they often have the fruition of your presence, and evermore resound this ditty:

“*Lucem redde tuis, Rex bone, civibus;
Instar veris enim vultus ubi tuus
Affulsit populo, gratior it dies,
Et soles melius nitent.*

HOR.



THE CUP OF GOLD PRESENTED TO JAMES THE FIRST AT COVENTRY,
SEPTEMBER 2, 1617.

FROM AN ORIGINAL DRAWING IN THE TREASURY AT COVENTRY,
OF THE SIZE OF THE CUP, HERE REDUCED ONE HALF.

The Oration being ended, the Mayor delivered the Sword to the King, who gave it back again, and the Mayor bare it before him bare headed through Bishop-street, by the Cross, through High-street and Hay-lane to the Church-yard; and thence through St. Michael's Church, which he much recommended; from thence to St. Mary Hall, where he was Royally feasted with his attendants. He lay that night at the White Friars.

"The next morning his Majesty rode forth, with the Mayor and his Brethren riding before him in scarlet gowns bareheaded, to the Free-school, and from thence back up Cross-cheaping and to Spongate. At his departure he gave the Mayor and Aldermen hearty thanks for all their kindnesses shewed him and his Nobles. There was given to his Majesty at that time a Cup of pure gold weighing 45 ounces with £.100 in it. The Cup cost £.160¹, for which he gave them thanks. The foot of the Cup was chased with the King's arms, the two supporters, and garter; next to that was a collet with three lions, supporting the potkin or handle; in middle of the potkin, in cast work of gold, two thistles and two roses standing out, with three escutcheons with the King's arms curiously wrought; next were three antiques in form of three men back to back to bear up the bowl; the bowl was raised and graven about the lip. On the cover was the form of an imperial crown richly wrought; then a coronet to which the crown was fastened; with the crown was the cover of the Cup, with two heights and a pyramid above. On the top of the crown was a scroll or wreath turned about, which was graven, 'EJUS CORONA CRESCAT IN ORBEM;' on the top of that a globe of the world, and over the globe a little pyramid. In the bottom of the Cup was the City arms with this inscription, 'City of Coventry.' The case was of crimson velvet lined with crimson taffeta. The King said that 'wheresoever he went, he would drink in his Coventry Cup,' and did cause it to be put with the Royal plate, to be kept with the rest of the plate for the heirs of the Crown for ever."

¹ Its estimated price. The actual cost of the present, as is recorded by original documents preserved in the Treasury of Coventry, was:

	£.	s.	d.
"The Cup, 45 oz.	-	-	148 0 0
Making and graving the arms at 10s. <i>per</i> oz.	-	-	22 10 0
The Case -	-	-	1 10 0
	<hr/> £.172 0 0 <hr/>		

In the City Treasurer's Accounts are the following items :

	£.	s.	d.
" 1617, August 23. Paid the Wardens to make provision against his Majestie's coming - - - - -	40	0	0
Butler and Waring, expences in journey to the Court - - - - -	5	14	0
For gilding the great Mace and the Sword - - - - -	6	14	0
For mending the Sword-scabbard - - - - -	1	0	0
Post-horses to Ashby when the King was here - - - - -	0	18	0
To Benley the Taylor for apparel for the King's Jester ¹ - - - - -	1	17	0
Laid out at London for provision against the King's coming to Coventry - - - - -	10	0	0
Laid out at the King's being here - - - - -	20	0	0
More expences for the King's diet - - - - -	47	17	7
For a silver Cup which was lost then - - - - -	0	19	0
For Copies of Fees and Rewards from Leicester - - - - -	0	2	0
For altering the City spoons - - - - -	1	17	3
For the oxen - - - - -	27	1	0
For making a Frier's coat when his Majestie was here - - - - -	0	2	6
The King's Serjeant-at-arms - - - - -	3	6	8
For making of Mr. Doctor Holland's shirte - - - - -	1	3	0
For a suit of satin for Doctor Holland, and other things - - - - -	14	7	0

The following list of payments is also collected from original documents in the City Treasury :

" Expences of receiving the King at Coventry, September 2, 1617 :

A Bill for black sattin 10 $\frac{3}{4}$ yds. at 13s. 6d. and trimmings - - - - -	11	1	11
Black velvet and black silk for foot-stools - - - - -	2	10	3
One nail of crimson velvet and one Turkey purse ² - - - - -	0	14	11
Charges of the Supper made for the King - - - - -	147	17	7
Ringling at the three Churches - - - - -	1	10	0
Fees to the King's servants and attendants - - - - -	57	0	0
Total - - -	£.220	14	8

¹ Archee, mentioned afterwards.

² These three items added together make the price of Doctor Holland's suit as mentioned above, —£.14. 7s.

The following is an "Account of Fees" paid at Coventry :

	£.	s.	d.		£.	s.	d.
Sir Robert Osborne - - -	5	10	0	Coachmen - - -	1	0	0
Mr. Gwyn with Lord Comp-				Mrs. Stewart - - -	0	10	0
ton - - - - -	2	4	0	The Littermen - - -	1	2	0
Fees of Stable Packe - - -	7	0	0	Provost and Knight Marshall	0	13	4
Yeomen Harbingers - - -	1	0	0	Trumpeters - - -	2	0	0
One of the Guard for keep-				Serjeant Trumpeter - - -	1	0	0
ing the door - - - - -	1	0	0	Pages and Grooms of Chamber	2	0	0
Yeoman Usher - - - - -	1	6	8	Gentleman Shewers - - -	2	0	0
Drummer - - - - -	0	10	0	Gentleman Ushers - - -	5	10	8
Given Archee [the King's				Quarter Waiters - - -	2	0	0
Jester] - - - - -	5	0	0	The Knight Harbinger - - -	3	6	8
A Yeoman Usher keeping				Four Yeoman of the Mouth	2	0	0
the door - - - - -	0	10	0	The Bottlemen for the field	0	10	0
Yeoman Porters - - - - -	2	0	0	Messengers of the Chambers	0	10	0
Deputy Marshall and Trum-				Purveyor of the Skullery - -	0	6	8
peter - - - - -	1	0	0	Gentlemen Harbingers - - -	2	0	0
The Footmen - - - - -	2	0	0				
Surveyors of the Ways - -	1	0	0	Total -	£57	0	0

On the 3d of September, on the road between Coventry and Warwick, the King stopped at Kenilworth to view the Manor¹. There was paid to the Ringers "when the Kinge was at Kenellworth, 2s. 8d.;" and "for unsealing the Church-dore² when the King was heare, 27s. 6d."

On the same day, his Majesty entered Warwick, where he remained two days. At the Gate of the Castle, which had then lately become the mansion of Sir Fulke Greville, K. B. Chancellor of the Exchequer³, his Majesty was welcomed by the following Speech⁴:

¹ See vol. II. p. *459.

² "Probably the western entrance, closed with lath and plaister, and opened to admit the King in greater state."

³ Of whom see vol. I. p. 224.

⁴ Carefully transcribed by my very kind and accurate friend William Hamper, Esq. F. S. A. from the BLACK BOOK OF WARWICK, a record preserved by the Corporation, which furnished me with an ample detail of Queen Elizabeth's Entertainment at Warwick in 1572, but contains no other memorial of the present visit of King James.

“Non est dubium, Princeps Auguste, quin reverso sole multum lætentur quibus nox fuit semestris. Occidebas nobis in vere, oreris in autumnno. Glorietur Anglia tandem sibi datum Regem, cujus fœlicitati in extremos Britanniae recessus pronum est iter, quod nullis Romanorum armis unquam patuit. Nunc Insularum Regina, te demum marito fortunata, liberos suos concordēs alit, et velut fratres in unâ familiâ, qui nunquam antehac in unum locum, nisi ad prælium, coibant. Per te rediit sua Britanniae natura, et verè una jam dici potest, quæ ab initio semper fuit distracta. Tibi igitur omnes urbes suis effusæ portis gestiunt occurrere; nostra autem non tam Regem, quàm bonam fortunam, ad se venientem amplectitur. Census enim noster, et tredecimviralis potestas, et privilegia, tui sunt muneris; in summâ, quicquid publicum habemus nostræ est in te gratitudinis auctoramentum. Verùm, ne videaris beneficium apud indigne perdidisse, audi, Regum serenissime, nostram Urbem pauca pro se loquentem. Ego illa sum quæ Romanorum Bellonam harum rupium hospicio trecentis annis excepi; hinc terrificæ tot legionum aquilæ subjectæ Britanniae minebant. Fuit, fuit quùm tua illa Trinobantum Augusta ad meum nomen contremere. Cùm cogerentur Romani orbi cedere, fueram ego non exigua pars fati. Sed dominum tum mutati

“There is noe doubt, worthiest of Monarches, but they whoe have had a sixe monethes’ nighte rejoyce greatly at the retorne of the Sonne. You sett to us in the springe, and rise nowe in autumnne. Let England glory that nowe, at the laste, shee is provided of a Kinge, whose felicitie hath opened an easie passage to the remoteste corners of Great Brittain, which could never be accomplished by the Roman armies. Never was this Queene of Islandes fortunate, till by your mariage she nourisheth her children in one familie, which before (except to ruine ech other) could never be assembled into one place. By you Brittany hath recovered her owne nature, and nowe may truely be termed one, which before was alwaies divided. Therefore other Citties run out at their gates to meete you, but this of ours receiveth you rather as good fortune to her then her Sovereigne. For our revenue, our Corporation of Bayliffe and Burgesses, and all our priveledges, wee doe hold of your gifte. To be shorte, whatsoever wee have in publique is the bond of our thankfulness to you. But, least your bountie mighte seeme to be bestowed upon an unworthy subjecte, be pleased, Royall Sir, to heare this Towne speake a fewe wordes for herself. Whatsoever nowe I may seeme, gracious Sovereigne, I am shee that for the space of three hundred yeres entertained the Roman Bellona under the roof of these rockes. Hence did the dreadfull eagles of so many legions sore over poore subdued Brittain. There was a tyme when your Royall Trynovant was wonte to tremble at my name. When Rome was forced to resigne her scepter to barbarianes, I was a parte of her fall, changeinge then my Lord, not my fortune,

non fortunam, donec tandem, cicurato Saxone, pro Tribuno Episcopum accepi, ut sub Christi vexillo deinceps mererem, quæ nonagintis annis Marti servieram. Interea, mei heroas genui inusitatæ fortitudinis, notioresque vicinæ meæ, quàm fuit Hercules Thebis, aut Theseus Athenis,—testis Guido ille, qui, postquam certaminum fama Britanniam complessit, nimix virtutis pœnitentiâ viam sibi in cœlos aperuit. Ultima et fatalis procella mihi a Danis incubuit; ibi pertinacia mea exitio multata est. Qualis fuerim hinc estima, quòd in tantis tempestatibus non perierim. Si in Greciâ Argos, Lacedemonem requiras, nulla nominum, nedum urbium vestigia, reperies. Vides, serenissime, militarem nostræ urbis jactantiam; senectutem nostram et debilitatem præteritæ virtutis memoriâ, et urbis priori fortunæ paribus solamur, quibus nec dispar est munusculum, nostræ bonum voluntatis testimonium patrominio tenui.

“Arx quoque, quæ te, hospitium quod habuit maximum, nunc gestit accipere, nihilo humiliùs loqueretur, nisi nupera ignominia grandiloquentiam inhiheret. Postquam lictoris facta est, et aureos procerum suorum torques ferreis miseriorum catenis mutavit, nocturnisque ferarum monstris, strigibus et ululis cessit habitanda, apud te loqui erubescit. Quem tua inexhausta benignitas ejus domi-

till at laste religion, tameinge the Saxones, gave me a Bishope instead of a Generall, that henceforth I should follow the banner of Christe, after nyne hundred yeres' service unto Mars his colours. Yet, in this space, I bred worthie spirittes, and like theire ancestors better knowen in this Country then Hercules in Thebes or Theseus in Athens; witnesse Guy, whoe, after he had made Fame sound her trumpet for him throghe Brittanie, by doinge penance for excesse of valor made himselfe a way to Heaven. My laste and fatall storme was caste upon me by the Danes, wherein my over-hardines coste me my overthrowe. Out of this you may judge what I was, that in soe manie tempestes I did not sinke. Yf you doe seeke for Argos in Mecene, or Sparta in Greece, you shall not finde soe muche as a marke of theire names, much lesse of theire places. Thus you see, gracious Sovereigne, the militarie stile of this Towne; wee comforte our weakenes and age, with a remembrance of our former valor, and language of our ancient fortune, of which our guift is a remembrance, a testimony of our good will in a weake estate.

“The Castle alsoe, moste desirous to receve you, the greateste Gueste that ever shee entertained, would speake in noe lower key, but that her late disgrace abateth her courage. After shee became the jaylor's lodge, enterchangeinge the goulden chaines of her noble Erles with the iron fetters of wretched prisoners, given over to be inhabited by battes and owles, shee is ashamed to speake before you. Hee whom your never-

num esse voluit, Urbs patronum elegit, mihi et dominum et patronum sua dedit humanitas, is non exiguo sumptu et curâ testatus est, nihil esse sibi tuo prætiosius dono; igitur, ut ad seros posteros tuæ munificentiae memoria in edibus perenaret, suam illis ut potuit juventutem restituit¹;—quam si ipse sibi vel Nestoriam posset reddere, brevem tamen estimaret pro æterno illo quod tuæ non tam sorti quàm virtuti debetur obsequio. Ille reliquo etatis fructum hinc arbitratur uberri- mum, si amore, labore, fide mereri possit ut moriatur tuus."

decayinge bountie hath made Master of this Howse, this Towne his patron, and his humanitie mee his servant, hath with noe small care of thoughtes and charge made it knownen that this signe of your Majestie's favoure is pretious to him; and to the end the memorie of this guifte might remaine to all ages in the Howse, he hath restored unto her some luster of her former flourishing youth; — which if he could doe unto himself, yet would he thinke his age too shorte, in comparison of that eternall homage which is due, not so much to your fortune as to your vertues; and will esteeme the reste of his life passinge well spent, if by love, labour, or loyaltie he may deserve to die in your favor."

At the end of the hall of Leicester's Hospital at Warwick is the following inscription:

MEMORANDUM.

THAT

KING JAMES THE FIRST
Was Right Nobly Entertain'd at A
Supper in this Hall, by the Honoura-
ble S^r FULKE GREVILLE, Chancellor
of the Exchequer, and one of His
Majestie's Most Honourable Privy-
-Council, upon the fourth Day
of September, Anno Dom. 1617.

GOD SAVE THE
KING.

¹ "When Sir Fulke Greville took possession of the Castle, he found it in a ruinous condition, having been used for some time as the County Goal. He expended, according to Dugdale, £.20,000 in restoring the buildings and arranging the dependant grounds. To his care and good taste it is evident that the structure is indebted for much of the excellent preservation in which even its most ancient parts are now seen."

On the 5th of September, before leaving Warwick, the King knighted :
 Sir William Bowyer¹, of Staffordshire. Sir William Burlacy⁴, of Bucks.
 Sir John Bodley², of Surrey. Sir Humphrey Ferrers⁵, of Warwicksh.
 Sir William Cade³, of Hertfordshire. Sir William Maxy⁶, of Warwickshire.
 Sir Francis Crane, Secretary to the Prince.

The Royal Traveller then proceeded to Compton Winyate, the seat of William second Lord Compton, afterward Earl of Northampton⁷. His Majesty remained there for one night only, and proceeded, on the 6th of September, to

¹ Of Knipersley, and Sheriff of Staffordshire in 1627. This, the elder branch of the Bowyer family, was raised to a Baronetcy, now extinct, Sept. 11, 1660; the Bowyers, Baronets of Denham Court, Bucks, and Radley, Berks, being younger branches of the same house.

² Sir John Bodley, of Streatham, Knight, Justice of the Peace for the County of Surrey, was in 1619 one of the witnesses to the deed of foundation of Dulwich College. See the History of Surrey, vol. III. pp. 432, 438.

³ One of the King's Band of Gentlemen Pensioners. He was resident in the parish of Aldenham in Hertfordshire, and was connected with Warwickshire by having married Katharine, "descended of the antient family of Throckmortons of Conton in that County," which Lady has a kneeling effigy in Aldenham Church, with an epitaph, which is printed in Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. I. p. 139.

⁴ Probably son of the Sir William Burlacy in vol. I. p. 192.

⁵ Sir Humphrey Ferrars was of Tamworth Castle in Staffordshire, where the King was entertained in his summer Progresses of 1619, 1621, and 1624. He was fifth in descent from Sir Thomas de Ferrars, Knight, second son of William fifth Lord Ferrars of Groby. See Shaw's Staffordshire, vol. I. p. 419.

⁶ Sir William Maxy married a niece of the present host at Warwick, — Helena, one of the eight daughters of Sir Edward Greville, youngest brother of Sir Fulke (see p. 79).

⁷ Of whom see vol. I. p. 477, this vol. p. 94. Compton Winyate, sometimes called Compton in the Hole, is situated at the south of Warwickshire, on the borders of Oxfordshire. Here Queen Elizabeth had "very great entertainment," after leaving Warwick, in 1572, as Lord Burleigh, when partaking of it, assured the Earl of Shrewsbury (see "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. I. p. 320). Henry first Baron Compton was then the host of his Royall Mistress. The mansion, says Dugdale, was "a fair mannour-house," erected by Sir William, father of the first Lord, most of the brick used in the structure being brought from Fulbroke where a ruinous Castle was, whereof he had the custody by the King's grant. Sir William also formed a large park at Compton, having licence in 11 Henry VIII. to inclose 2000 acres. Compton House, during the Civil War, narrowly escaped demolition for the owner's loyalty; and it was afterwards garrisoned by the Parliament forces. "Over the gateway," says Mr. Gough, "are the arms of France and England, under a crown, supported by the greyhound and griffin, and sided by the rose and crown, probably in memory of King Henry the Eighth's visit here; whose gilt bed [probably that which accommodated King James, even if it did not his Royal Great-uncle,] was sold, with every thing else, in the late wreck of this fine estate by parliamentary influence and gaming."

Woodstock, having first bestowed knighthood on Sir Richard Samwell¹, of Northamptonshire; Sir Henry Gibbis², Sir William Somerfield³, and Sir Hercules Underhill⁴, all of the County of Warwick.

On the 10th of September, the King knighted, at Woodstock, Sir Thomas Glenham, of Suffolk; Sir Thomas Wayneman⁵, of Oxfordshire; and Sir Henry Rowe, of Middlesex⁶.

On that night his Majesty slept at Rycott, the seat of Francis Lord Norris⁷, afterwards Earl of Berkshire; where, on the following morning, he knighted Sir Robert Dormer, of Oxfordshire⁸; and Sir John Culpeper, of Sussex.

On the 12th, the King proceeded from Rycott to Bisham, the seat of the Hoby family⁹; and, for ringing on his approach to that mansion, the neighbouring parish of Great Marlow paid 5s.¹⁰

After staying one night at Bisham, and three at his own Palace of Windsor Castle, his Majesty arrived in London on the 15th of September, and "brought Holyrood-day, (not Holyrood House,) to Whitehall¹¹." He "was met at Hyde

¹ Third but eldest surviving son of Sir William Samwell, of Upton, co. Northampton, knighted with the majority of the Country Gentlemen, previously to the Coronation, July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 218), to whose estates he succeeded in 1627-8; and grandfather of Sir Thomas, on whom a Baronetcy was conferred in 1675, which became extinct in 1789 with Sir Wenman the fourth Baronet. Sir Richard was Sheriff of Northamptonshire in 1634, and died in 1668, aged 73. His sister was mother of James Harington, author of the *Oceana*, who was born at Upton. See the very ample pedigree of the family in Baker's *Northamptonshire*, vol. I. p. 225.

² Of Honington, Warwickshire, son of Sir Ralph Gibbs, also one of those knighted July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 217). Sir Henry was living when Dugdale wrote.

³ Son of Sir William Somerville, of Edston, Warwickshire, (apparently the same person as the Knight made at Whitehall, July 23, 1603, and then styled of Somersetshire; see vol. I. p. 213,) who, having served Sheriff of Warwickshire in 1609, died in 1616. His son the Sir William here knighted died in 1628.

⁴ Of Idlicote, Sheriff of Warwickshire in 1624, and living when Dugdale wrote. Mr. Chamberlain in his letter to Sir Dudley Carleton, Oct. 31, says, "I hear your brother Sir Hercules Underhill was knighted at the King's being at the Lord Compton's."

⁵ Son of Sir Richard, who was created in 1628 Viscount Wenman in Ireland, and whom he succeeded in that title. See his history in Lodge's *Irish Peerage*, vol. IV. p. 284.

⁶ Of Shacklewell, son of Sir Henry Rowe, Lord Mayor of London in 1607, and grandson of Sir Thomas, Lord Mayor in 1568.

⁷ See vol. II. p. *462.

⁸ Sir Robert Dormer was Sheriff of Oxfordshire in 1628.

⁹ See vol. II. p. *462.

¹⁰ Langley's Desborough Hundred, p. 143.

¹¹ Arthur Wilson's *Life of James I.*

Parke by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and above foure hundred of the chief Citizens with chaines of gold, and well mounted. The Lord Mayor presented the King with a purse, and in it five hundred pieces of gold¹; and the King knighted Sir Anthony Benn, the Recorder², and Sir Ralph Freeman, of London³. The Churchwardens of St. Margaret's, Westminster, "paid for ringing when the King came out of Scotland, 6s. 8d."

On the 16th of September, our Monarch having knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Alexander Denton, went out of town to Theobalds.

On the 23d, his Majesty was at Enfield⁴, where he knighted Sir Arthur Capel⁵, of Hertfordshire; and, on the 29th, at Hampton Court, he conferred the same honour on Sir Clement Edmondes, of Northamptonshire⁶, Sir George Calvert⁷, of

¹ Howes' Chronicle.

² Sir Anthony Benn, before being chosen Recorder of London, had been Recorder of Kingston-upon-Thames, where he was for a short time possessed of Norbeton Hall, and where there is in the Church a recumbent effigy of him, in a scarlet gown. He was but a short time Recorder, and died Sept. 29, 1618, in his 50th year. See the History of Surrey, vol. I. pp. 349, 375.

³ Sheriff of London in 1624, and Lord Mayor in 1633. He died in 1634, aged 74, leaving an only surviving daughter and heir, who was married to George first Earl of Feversham. His estate at Aspeden in Hertfordshire was, however, settled on his nephew, the only daughter and heir of whose great-grandson, carried it in 1755 to the honourable Charles Yorke, father of the present Earl of Hardwicke. See the pedigree in Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. III. p. 348.

⁴ Where he probably kept some anniversary on this day; see p. 190.

⁵ Son of Sir Henry Capel, knighted in 1587, and grandfather of Arthur first Lord Capel. He served Sheriff of Hertfordshire in 1592, but Mr. Clutterbuck erroneously makes him knighted May 7, 1603. See the family pedigree in the History of Hertfordshire, vol. I. p. 243.

⁶ Son of Sir Thomas Edmondes, Comptroller of the Household to Queen Elizabeth, and the Patron (though not nearly, if at all, related,) of the more eminent Sir Thomas Edmondes, of whom in vol. I. p. 156, this vol. p. 231. Of Sir Clement, who distinguished himself by some learned "Observations on Cæsar's Commentaries," there is a short memoir in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. His public offices are said to have been, successively, those of, Secretary for the French Tongue about 1601; Remembrancer of the City of London; Muster-master of Brill in Zealand; and one of the Clerks of the Council. The office of Muster-master he had certainly only in reversion, and never enjoyed; see p. 259. That of Secretary for the French Tongue was in 1617 filled by the eminent Sir Thomas Edmondes (then aged about 54) with a salary of £.66. 13s. 4d. whilst the salary of a Clerk of the Council was only £.50; it is not therefore probable that Sir Clement Edmondes, who died Clerk of the Council, in 1622, aged 56, should have enjoyed the former office so much previously as 1601. A mistake may have arisen from the similarity of surname.

⁷ Afterwards Lord Baltimore. Descended from a noble family in Flanders, he was born at Kipling in Yorkshire about 1582. In 1593 he became a Commoner of Trinity College, Oxford, and in

Yorkshire, and Sir Albert Morton of Kent¹, three of the Clerks of the Council; "the chief reason whereof was, that Secretary Lake's son, being but Extraordinary, had gotten the start of his fellows²."

On Monday, the 29th of September, was celebrated at Hampton Court "the marriage between the two honourable persons, Sir John Villars, Knt. and Gentleman of the Prince's Bed-chamber³, and brother to the Earl of Buckingham, and the Lady Frances⁴, youngest daughter of the honourable Sir Edward Coke, Knt. formerly Lord Chief Justice, and of the Lady Hatton his wife, was solemnized by the Bishop of Winchester. The King gave her in his Chapel Royal at Hampton Court. Fees, £.40."⁵

On the same day, James Montague, Bishop of Winchester, was, at Hampton Court, chosen of the Privy Council⁶.

On the 30th of September, Mr. Adam Newton⁷ wrote as follows, from Deptford, to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"I was at Hampton Court on Sunday last, where the Court was indeed very full, the King, Queen, and Prince all residing there for the time. The King and 1597 took the degree of B. A. On his return from his travels he became Secretary to Mr. Secretary Cecil, and he continued in the same office to that illustrious individual when Earl of Salisbury and Lord Treasurer. On accompanying the King to Oxford in 1605 he was created M. A. (see vol. I. p. 556). He was made one of the Principal Secretaries of State, Feb. 16, 1618-19, but resigned in 1624, frankly owning that he was become a Roman Catholic. The King, however, who in projecting an alliance with Spain, was suffering his vigilance against papacy to sleep, created him, in 1625, (by the name of Sir George Calvert, of Danbywiske in Yorkshire, Knight,) Baron of Baltimore, co. Longford. He was at that time M. P. for the University of Oxford. After the death of James he successively planted colonies and settled in Newfoundland and Maryland, the particulars of which see in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

¹ Albertus Morton was elected Scholar of King's College, Cambridge, in 1602. He went to Venice as Secretary to his uncle Sir Henry Wotton when Ambassador there, and was afterwards Agent at the Court of Savoy and with the Princes of the Union in Germany, and in 1616 Secretary to the Queen of Bohemia. He was at last for a short time one of the Secretaries of State, and died in that post in November 1625. Birch's *Life of Henry Prince of Wales*, p. 171.

² Letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, Oct. 11.

³ Of whom see p. 176, and of the progress of his courtship in pp. 225, 231, 255, 371.

⁴ Who proved a faithless wife, and gave birth to an illegitimate son, the father of a worthless family. See Brydges's *Peerage*, vol. III. p. 770.—It seems, however, from Mr. Chamberlain's letter in p. 372, that her attachment to Sir Robert Howard was of a date precedent to her marriage, and her conduct may, in charity, be partly attributed to an union formed contrary to her inclination.

⁵ Malcolm's *London*, vol. IV. p. 276. ⁶ Howes' *Chronicle*. ⁷ Of whom see II. 35, 43, 374.

Prince after their coming from Theobalds this day s'ennight, went to Windsor to the hunting of the wild boar, and came back on Saturday.

"Yesterday, which was Michaelmas day, the Marriage betwixt Sir John Villiers and his Lady was celebrated in the presence of their Majesties. Sir Edward Coke brought them from his son's house at Kingston town's end with eight or nine coaches. It is said the mother's consent was obtained, the Lady protesting that, howsoever she liked Sir John better than any other whatsoever, yet she desired to keep a solemn promise made to her mother not to marry any man without her consent¹."

On the first of October, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Greville Verney²; and on the third, at Theobalds, Sir Nicholas Kemp, of London.

On the 2d, Edward Fitton, of Gawsworth in Cheshire, Esquire, was created a Baronet, being the ninety-ninth so honoured³.

On the 11th, Mr. Chamberlajn wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"Sir Patrick Murray's Lady, who was Sir Francis Vere's widow, hath brought him a son⁴, at whose Christening the King, the Earl of Buckingham, and the Lady of Salisbury were gossips; wherein is a mystery, if the tinder will take.

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

² Son of Sir Richard Verney, of Compton Murdac, Warwickshire, and Margaret, sister of Sir Fulke Greville, first Lord Brooke. As the knighthood of Sir Greville Verney took place so soon after the Royal visit to his uncle's Castle of Warwick, it may be presumed that it was a consequence of that event, and the only singularity is that it did not take place there. Sir Greville, "a Gentleman," says Dugdale, "accomplisht with singular endowments, and of a noble and courteous disposition," died May 12, 1642. His son and grandson bore the same names.

³ Sir Edward Fitton was descended from a very ancient Cheshire family, and his lineal ancestor was Sir Richard Fytton, who held lands in that county temp. Hen. II. His great-grandfather Sir Edward Fitton was Sheriff of Cheshire in 1543; his grandfather Sir Edward was Lord President of Connaught, and Treasurer of Ireland; and his father Sir Edward was Lord President of Munster, knighted in Ireland in 1579. Sir Edward the first Baronet died May 10, 1617, aged 46, and has a monument in Gawsworth Church, with kneeling effigies of himself, wife, and ten children. He was succeeded by his eldest son, also Sir Edward, with whom the title became extinct in 1643, he dying of a consumption in Bristol, after having been engaged in the defence of that town for Charles the First. His sister and heiress carried Gawsworth to Sir Charles Gerard, father of Charles first Earl of Macclesfield. See Ormerod's Cheshire, vol. III. pp. 293—296.

⁴ Of Sir Patrick Murray, K. B. afterwards Earl of Tullebardine, see vol. I. p. 223.—His eldest son, now Christened, was named James after his godfather the King, and succeeded his father as fourth Earl. He was not, however, loyal to his Royal gossip's son and successor; but, on the con-

"It were to no purpose to write of the King's Return out of Scotland; and what infinite numbers of people went out of this Town [London] to meet him, when he came hither, and how well they were washed with a sound shower of rain for their labour. Our good friend [Secretary Winwood] went no further¹ than Woodstock to meet him; the rest of the Council to Windsor.

"I cannot relate all the passages of the Lady Hatton's business, because I was absent. But sure she hath done herself a great deal of wrong in kicking against the pricks, and by indirect courses to hinder that which lay not in her power. Her daughter was married to Sir John Villiers at Hampton Court on Michaelmas-day. The King himself gave away the Bride, and they were thrice publicly asked in Church.

"The Lady of Roxburgh is gone from Court, and the Lady Grey de Ruthyn, though with much opposition, succeeds in her place. Our good friend [Secretary Winwood] played his prizes there too, and overcame all difficulties, which I would not wish to adventure too often; for the pitcher goes so long to the water, that at last it comes broken home. But he says he will meddle no more in such matters. In truth he could never leave in a better time, for he hath taken down all that stood in the way, and made the highest strike sail and vail bonnet; which I impute not altogether to his fortune, but to courage and foresight in what he undertook. The Queen lately asked the Lord Keeper [Sir Francis Bacon] what occasion the Secretary had given him to oppose himself so violently against him²? who answered prettily: 'Madam, I can say no more, but he is proud, and I am proud.' But the King, according to the pacifical disposition, hath made all friends, and in the admonition he gave some of them, did him this honour to say: 'You may perhaps think, that he [Bacon] hath informed these and these things against you; but I assure you, on the word of a Prince, that neither by word nor writing did he ever suggest ought to any particular man's prejudice, either to me, or to Buckingham, as he is ready to protest before you.' He is gone this morning to Royston to the King. Yesterday he came home from the Star-chamber after he had sat there half an hour very sick in his stomach; but with rest and other

trary, active on the part of the Parliament, though he opposed in 1647 the delivering up of Charles to the English, for which he was fined £.1500 by Cromwell's Act of grace and pardon in 1654. He was thrice married, but died s. p. in Jan. 1670, when his title devolved on his cousin John second Earl of Athol. See Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 602.

¹ He was to have gone to Scotland; see p. 334.

² See the note in p. 298.

helps he recovered, and went back after dinner, because the Council sat there; the table and diet being newly erected there, as it was wont to be ¹."

Again, October 18, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to his friend:

"Your nephew John is grown so negligent and idle that he is generally noted for it, and I hear from good place that, when the King reproves any man for ill-waiting, he tells him that he will prove a Carleton.

"The Queen is somewhat crazy again, though they say it is but the gout. She is generally well wished, and the care of her welfare makes the world the more fearful ²."

On the 22d of October, we find the King at Sir Oliver Cromwell's at Hinchinbrook ³, where he then knighted Sir Richard Ingoldsby.

On the 25th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King is now at Hinchinbrooke by Huntingdon, where he hath sprained his leg in his bed, as he saith,—but it must not in any wise be thought to be the gout; so that, unless he amend the faster, it is doubted whether he will be here at Hallow-tide.

"The Queen continues still indisposed; and, though she would fain lay all *her* infirmities upon the gout, yet most of her physicians fear a further inconvenience of an ill habit or disposition through her whole body ⁴."

On the 28th, Sir George Ayloffe ⁵, of Essex, was knighted at Royston.

The Lord Mayor's Pageant of 1617 was, "The Triumphs of Honor and Industry; a Solemnity performed through the City, at confirmation and establishment of the right honorable George Bowles ⁶, in the office of his Majestie's Lieuetenant, the Lord Mayor of the famous Cittie of London; taking beginning at his Lordship's going, and proceeding after his return from receiving the Oath

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Ibid.

³ A visit to Hinchinbrook at the latter end of October seems to have been an annual custom of the King, at least during the latter years of his reign. We have before found him there on the 22d of October last year, 1616; and shall again meet with him at this hospitable mansion of the uncle of his son's murderer, Oct. 19, 1619; and Oct. 28, 1623.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁵ Probably George, third and youngest son of William Ayloffe, Judge of the King's Bench, and brother to Sir William and Sir Thomas, both knighted at the Charter-house, May 11, 1603 (see vol. I. pp. 114, 118), and the former created a Baronet in 1612 (see vol. II. p. 491). George died unmarried.

⁶ Knighted during his Mayoralty, at Greenwich, May 31, 1618.

of Maioralty at Westminster on the morrow next after Simon and Jude's day, October 29, 1617¹."

On the 31st of October, the ringers of St. Margaret, Westminster, were paid 2s. 6d. "at the King and Queen's coming to Whitehall."

On the same day Mr. Chamberlain thus related to Sir Dudley Carleton the particulars of the death of their mutual friend Sir Ralph Winwood:

"My fear was not in vain, which I conceived of Mr. Secretary's disease, and I presaged too truly of the success. He daily decayed even visibly, so that by Monday in the afternoon he was plainly *deploratus*, though he lived till Tuesday morning [October 27] towards seven o'clock. He had all the help that our Physicians could afford; but Mayerne² never saw him after he had let blood, for he went strait to the King. Of all men I have no fancy to him, at leastwise for luck sake, for that I have observed he is commonly unfortunate in any dangerous disease. But I will not blame him too much for this, seeing it appears upon the opening of the body, that he could not possibly last long, having his heart withered almost to nothing, his spleen utterly rotten, one of his kidneys clean gone, the other perished, his liver full of black spots, his lungs not sound, besides divers other defects; so that it was a wonder he held out so long and looked so well. But there appeared no signs of any ill measure, as was first generally suspected. Upon Sunday he received a gracious letter from the King to this effect, that he doubted the multiplicity of business had cast him down, wherefore he advised him to cast off all agitations, saving such as might best procure his recovery; wherein he should do him the best service that he ever had or could do him. At the same time he had one likewise from the Lord of Buckingham to the same purpose; and, seeing it was God's pleasure to call him, he could never go in a better time than when he was in the highest favour with the King, Queen, Prince, and principal Favourite, and was generally grown into so good opinion, that his sickness first, and then his death, was as much lamented as ever I knew any of his rank. We buried him privately yesterday at ten o'clock, with as little noise or shew as might be; only his household and some of

¹ "London, printed by Nicholas Okes, 1617." At the end of the Dedication is T. M. for Thomas Middleton. The only copy I have traced is one which was sold at the sale of Mr. Garrick's Library, May 3, 1823, in a volume of several scarce tracts, which was purchased by Mr. Thorpe, for £48. 16s. 6d. The Pageant, I believe, was added to the vast library of Mr. Heber.

² Of whom in vol. II. p. 475.

his friends and kinsmen had mourning. [Then follows the substance of his will.] The Archbishop of Canterbury professes very great affection towards the memory of him; and expresses much care towards his Lady and her children. The King has given her the wardship of her son; but in what terms I do not know; for it is but new done. The Queen wrote earnestly in her behalf, and failed not every day to send him after she heard he had been let blood¹."

The King having been so long absent from London, there were now many foreign Ambassadors expecting Audiences of him, which Sir John Finett shall here describe:

"The Ordinary Ambassador of Venice, Seignior Barbarigo, dying here, Seignior Centareni came hither Extraordinary, and on the first of November was brought to his first Audience at White-Hall by the Lord Clifford, accompanied with halfe a score Gentlemen his Majestie's Servants, in his Majestie's coach and three of the Lords' coaches. His house was at the Hospital², where he had, attending our coming, the French Ambassador's coach, the Master's of the Ceremonies (who had dined with him), and five or six of the Ambassador's owne and others' providing.

"After his rest in the Councill-chamber, he was conducted to his Majestie's presence in the Presence-chamber, and thence, after a briefe Speech and delivery of his letters of credence (which before he had made an end of speaking he took not from the Secretary who held them in his hand), he returned to his home in company of the persons mentioned.

"On the fifth of November, an Ambassador, with his assistant Commissioner the Chancellor of Muscovy, sent from that Emperour [Michael] to his Majesty, was received at Tower Wharfe by the Lord Compton, having been first met at Gravesend by Sir Richard Smith³, and others, sent in the name of the City, and brought up in their barges. The King's coach and five or six others tooke them in at Tower Wharfe, but with such disorder of Gentlemen come from Court

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² St. Mary's Spittle, near Bishopsgate-street, contained at the Dissolution not less than a hundred and fourscore beds, for the accommodation of the poor. Here, throughout the reign of James, and till Civil War, was preached the celebrated Spital Sermon, which the Privy Council had this year attended; see p. 299.

³ Doubtless one of the principal Russian merchants. He was knighted previously to the Coronation, July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 214). See his son Sir John mentioned in this volume, p. 252.

(more then were appointed) that too soone pressed into them, as, without my care and boldness to displace, some of the better sort of Muffes must have walked on foote to their lodgings. They were wellcom'd at their Landing with a volley of great ordinance from the Tower and shippes, and were incountered on Tower Hill by the Aldermen of the City in their scarlet gownes and other Citizens in their velvet coates and chaines of gold, all on horseback, and thence conducted to their house in Bishopsgate-street, where they were lodged and defrayed at the charge of the Muscovy Company¹."

On the morning of the 8th of November, Sir John Killegrew was knighted at Whitehall. On the same day Lady Hatton, "the wife of Sir Edward Coke, *quondam* Lord Chief Justice, entertained the King, Buckingham, and the rest of the Peers, at a splendid dinner, not inviting her husband²." On this occasion, his Majesty knighted, at Hatton House, Sir Nathaniell Rich, of London; Sir Francis Needham, and Sir Peter Chapman³.

On the same day Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The first of this month being so solemn a day⁴, and the streets full by reason of the Lord Mayor's passage to Paul's, the Earl [of Buckingham], accompanied with the Marquis of Hamilton, the Lord Compton, the Lord Hay, Sir Edward Cecil, and I know not how many more, to the number of twelve coaches, went to fetch the Lady Hatton from Sir William Craven's⁵, and brought her to her father's [the Earl of Exeter] at Cecil House in the Strand⁶, where she hath continued ever since, saving that on Tuesday she went with little state to the Court, and there was much graced by the King, who likewise reconciled her to the Queen, and made at the same time atonement betwixt her and the Lady Compton [Villiers], and a perfect peace betwixt her and her daughter, who would not be persuaded that she could forgive her, till at parting she got the King to make her swear that she loved her as dearly as ever she did in her life. That night there was a great feast at her father's, where the Earl of Buckingham and most of the Lords about Court were entertained. The King was to have supped last night with her at Hatton House, but I hear it is put off till this day at dinner;

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 37.

² Camden's Annals.

³ Of these Knights, and of the feast at which they were knighted, see further in Mr. Chamberlain's letter in p. 448.

⁴ All Saints' day, at that time kept with great solemnity.

⁵ Alderman of London; see vol. I. p. 234; vol. II. p. 370.

⁶ Otherwise called Burleigh House and Exeter House. Exeter Change and Street stand on its site. See its history in Pennant's London, p. 127.

and so from thence he goes to Theobalds at night. It is hoped he will likewise mediate a peace betwixt her and Sir Edward Coke, which was mentioned and motioned at the general pacification. But the King said, that was a matter of more difficulty and more time. I doubt not that would prove but a palliated cure, the wound being so deep that *manet altâ mente repostum*; so that he is, as it were, *in statu quo prius*, saving that he comes to the Star-chamber and to the Council Table. And thus you see the revolutions of the times.

"The Bishop of Winchester [Dr. Montagu] hath bestowed great cost in repairing and beautifying his house at St. Mary Overy's; and on Monday [November 3], to warm it, made a great feast to all the Lords and others of quality that went the Scottish Journey.

"On Thursday the Lord Hay married his mistress the Lady Lucy Percy; and that night the King and Prince honoured his wedding-supper with their presence at the Wardrobe¹.

"On Wednesday the 5th of this present [being the Anniversary of the Gunpowder Treason] young King², the Bishop of London's eldest son, of the age of twenty-three years, preached at Paul's Cross. It was thought a bold part of them both, that so young a man should play his first *prises* in such a place and such a time, it being, as he professed, the *primitiæ* of his vocation, and the first Sermon that ever he made. But this world, they say, is made for the presumptuous. He did reasonably well, but nothing extraordinary, nor near his father, being rather slow of utterance, *et orator parum vehemens*. He hindered me from hearing the Bishop of Ely [Dr. Andrews], whose text that day at Court was, 'That we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear;' and they say he handled it excellently well³.

¹ Of the progress of Lord Hay's courtship see pp. 246, 252, 367, 394.—On the 24th of May 1617, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton: "The Earl of Northumberland could not divert his daughter the Lady Lucy from Lord Hay, for while he had her in the Tower, giving her leave daily to visit the Lady of Somerset, thereby to have the better access himself, the matter was so plotted, that where he thought he had her safest there he lost her, and so was fain to send her away, seeing he could prevail no more with her. Her mother would not receive her neither, so that she retired to her sister [Lady Sidney], at Baynard's Castle, and since the Lord Hay's going into Scotland continues at the Wardrobe, he having left her £2000 for her maintenance till his return."

² Henry King, afterward Bishop of Chichester.

³ This Discourse on Luke i. 74, 75 (the 7th and 8th verses of "Benedictus") is printed in Bishop Andrews's "XCVI Sermons," the Ninth on the Gunpowder Treason.

"This weeke Sir John Merrick¹ is arrived from Muscovia, where he hath been these three years and a half, and hath effected his business with good approbation. He was yesterday with the King, who used him very graciously, and had long conference with him. There is come an Ambassador with him from thence, accompanied with seventy-five persons, to the great charge of the [Muscovy] Company, upon whose account they are like to tarry here for seven or eight months. He has brought the King some presents to his liking, as white hawks, live sables, and I know not what²."

"On Saturday the 8th of November," continues Sir John Finett, "the Lord Chamberlain let me know his Majestie's pleasure for my repaire to the French Ambassador with an assignation for his demanded Audience the next day at one of the clock, with an excuse of the unfitnessse of the houre, in regard the King intended to depart that day betimes to Theobalds. He came according to appointment, and being introduced to his Majestie's Presence, I (with demand of pardon) left him, and taking with me the King's coach, which together with the Lord Chamberlain's attended that service at the Court-gate, went (without any Lord or other to accompany me) to Bishopsgate-street to fetch thence the Muscovit Ambassadors to their Audience.

"All their servants of less esteem marched all the way on foot before them, the rest in coaches provided by the merchants; each of those on foot carrying before them with ostentation to open view some parcell of the various Present sent to his Majestie from the Emperour. This consisted of sable furies, black foxes, ermynes, hawkes with their hoods and mantles covering their backs and wings all embroydered with gold and pearle, two lining sables, a Persian dagger and knife set with stones and pearles, two rich cloath-of-gold Persian horse-clothes, a Persian kettle-drum to lure hawkes with³, &c. besides many other sables and black-fox furies sent the King from three of the principall Nobles of the Emperor's Court, and besides some presented to his Majesty from the Ambassadors and the Chancellour. The Queene and Prince had likewise their severall Presents of furs from all these mentioned, altogether esteemed worth £.4000 sterling.

"The Ambassadors were received at the Court-gate by the Lord Shandoyes

¹ Of whom before in p. 6.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

³ Camden in his Annals describes the presents as "hawks, rich furs, some small animals, a cemitier, and a Persian bow." See Mr. Chamberlain's account of them in the next page.

[Chandos], and on the top of the staire at the enterie to the Guard-chamber by the Earle of Shrewsbury, and by these conducted along the Terras immediately (the King allready expecting them with some impatience) into the Banquetting House. There at the doore they were met by the Lord Chamberlaine, and, being entred the Roome, the exceeding press of the people so hindred their profound superstitious reverences, or rather adorations, as stooping and knocking their fore-heads against the ground, intended to have been thrice, but by that hindrance only once, and that so close before his Majestie performed by them, as it turned much to their discountenance and discontent. Those that carried the Present (about fifty) were, after the Ambassador had finished his Speech and interpretation made of it, commanded to pass along on the left-hand, and in sight of his Majestie, by one and one into the Privie-gallery, where his Majestie might at leisure in his return take better view of what the press before had hindred. The Lord Chamberlain re-conducted the Ambassadors after their dismissal to the door of the Banquetting-house, the other Lords to the stations of the first reception, and I only to to their lodging ¹."

On the 10th of November, "the King goes from Whitehall towards Royston ²." On the 11th he knighted, at Theobalds, Sir John Wild, of Kent; and, on the 12th, at the same place, Sir Edward Gresham, of Surrey ³; Sir Thomas Parker; Sir Christopher Buckle, of Essex; and Sir Gabriell Dowse, of Hampshire.

On the 15th, Mr. Chamberlain again wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"On Sunday the King entertained the Muscovian Ambassador, who had solemn audience, though with great confusion by reason of the throng; and Sir Edward Coke, by what nischance I know not, stumbled and fell there before all the Company. Beside the Principal Ambassador, there is a Chancellor in commission with him, and three other special Courtiers that stood covered. Their presents were carried publickly by their own people, and were the greatest that ever came from thence; the very furs being estimated, by those that are skilful, at better than £.6000, though some talk of much more. There were divers hawks, with

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 38.

² Camden's Annals.

³ Of Titsey in that county, great-grandson of Sir John Gresham, of that place, and Lord Mayor of London in 1547, who was uncle to Sir Thomas the Founder of the Royal Exchange. Marmaduke, son of the present Sir Edward, was, July 31, 1660, advanced to a Baronetcy, which became extinct in 1801, with his great-grandson Sir John, the fifth Baronet. See the pedigree in the History of Surrey, vol. II. p. 403.

coats or coverings of crimson sattin and other colours, embroidered with pearl; a rich Persian dagger and knife, bows and arrows, Persian cloth of gold, with divers other things I remember not. The King was very much pleased, and the more when he understood that Queen Elizabeth never had such a present thence.

"The Lady Hatton's feast was very magnificent, and the King graced her every way, and made four of her creatures Knights,—Sir Peter Chapman that belongs to the Lord of Exeter; Sir Francis Needham, an old solicitor betwixt her and Sir Christopher Hatton; Sir Nathaniel Rich, a kinsman of Sir Robert; and one Withipole, a kinsman of her own¹. But the principal graces and favours lighted on the Lady Compton [Villiers] and her children, whom the King praised and kissed, and blessed all those that wished them well.

"These were some errors at the Lady Hatton's feast (if it was not on purpose) that the Lord Chamberlain [the Earl of Pembroke] and the Lord of Arundel were not invited, but went away to their own dinner, and came back to wait on the King and Prince. But the greatest error was, that the good man of the house [Sir Edward Coke] was neither invited nor spoken of, but dined that day at the Temple²."

On the 17th of November, the King knighted, at Newmarket, Sir Robert Digby³; on the 19th and 25th his Majesty wrote from that place to Sir Dudley Carleton⁴; and on the 27th Sir William Fish was there dubbed Knight.

On the 29th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Prince went three days since towards Newmarket to the King. He is

¹ No Knight of this name occurs in Philipot's Catalogue as dubbed on this occasion; but see the name mentioned before in p. 371.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

³ Eldest son of Sir Robert Digby, knighted at Dublin in 1596, and Lettice Baroness Offaley; nephew of John first Earl of Bristol (of whom in vol. II. p. 36); and lineal ancestor of the present Earl Digby. This Sir Robert succeeded to the large estates of his father and mother both in England and Ireland, and was advanced to the Irish Peerage, by the title of Lord Digby of Geashill, July 29, 1620. In 1627 he was appointed Governor and Commander of the King's County, and, with his brother Simon, Constable of the Castle of Philipston. He was a leading man in the Irish House of Lords, and a member of all Committees; was one of the Privy Council; and Captain of a troop of a horse in the King's army. See more fully of his history in Brydges's Peerage, vol. V. pp. 374—376. He was succeeded by his son Kildare, and the present Earl is the eighth Irish Baron.

⁴ Letters to and from Sir Dudley Carleton, pp. 204, 205.

practising for a Masque¹ at Christmas, which, they say, shall be at the Earl of Buckingham's charge²."

On the 3d and 6th of December, Sir Charles Hussey; and Sir Richard Saltonstall, of London³; were knighted at Newmarket.

On the 8th of December, "the son of the Prince of Anhalt, who paid a visit to the French King at Paris, and to ours at Newmarket, went to the Queen at Denmark House, and was honourably entertained⁴."

On the 10th of December the King gave an Audience at Newmarket to the Swedish, or, as Camden styles him, the Saxon Ambassador. On the 28th of November, says Sir John Finett, "Sir Thomas Spence, Lord of Wormstone, who had been a Generall in the wars of the King of Sweden, let me know that an Ambassador Extraordinary of that King was arrived at Gravesend, and there attended order for his proceeding." Sir Lewis Lewkenor, however, the Master of the Ceremonies, had already been commissioned to bring the Ambassador to London, which he accordingly did to his abiding in the Crouchet Fryers. After much consultation respecting the Audience, during which it was determined that the Ambassador's expences were "not to be defraied, as that had never yet been doneto any of that King's Ambassadors, neither would his Majesty bring up any such custome;" but that he should have carriages for his Train and baggage, with the hire of two horses, Sir John Finett set out from London with the Ambassador on the eighth of December, and came the first night to Puckerage, whence, says that writer, "I wrote by a servant, sent before with the Ambassador's Cookes to the Earl of Buckingham, to signifie our approach, and that if his Majestie's pleasure were to do the Ambassador any further honour by incounter of some Noble person on the way, his Lordship might have time to take and give directions for it. But his Majesty and my Lord being, when my letters came, allready horsed to ride on hunting, all rested without further order till the evening that we arrived

¹ Ben Jonson's *Vision of Delight*; see p. 464.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

³ Sir Richard Saltonstall, Lord Mayor of London in 1598, left a son Richard, who was knighted July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 217), and who dying Dec. 11, 1619, left a son Sir Richard, then aged 23. This son may have been either the present Knight, or a fourth Sir Richard, knighted at Newmarket, Nov. 23, 1618. Sir Samuel and Sir Peter, knighted July 23, 1603, and October, 1605 (see vol. I. pp. 209, 577), were sons of the Lord Mayor. Sir Peter was of Barkway, Essex, and Escuyer to the King (see vol. II. p. 438). The descent of the Saltonstalls may be imperfectly gathered from Morant's Essex, vol. I. p. 101, and Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. III. p. 362.

⁴ Camden's Annals.

at our lodging; whence I went immediately to my Lord of Buckingham (my Lord Chamberlain being then at London,) with the accoumpt of our comming, and to solicit the Ambassador's Audience; but this being referred for resolution to the next morning, I acquainted Mr. Secretary Lake and the Lord Fenton with the Ambassador's desire of dispatch, and at eleaven of the clock before noon obtained the King's pleasure for accesse at two after noone.

"The Lord Clifford with halfe a dozen Gentlemen of the Privy-chamber, his Majestie's coach, and the Bishop of Winchester's, went to receive him at his lodging, and, with the Ambassador's followers in other foure coaches that brought us from London, brought him to Court. He was conducted, without stay any where, to the Presence-chamber, where his Majesty was already come forth to receive him. Having delivered his letters of credence, he made an Oration, to the purpose of the King's Princely office of mediation for Peace between the Kings of Denmark and Sweden, of almost an houre long. Which finished, and briefly answered by his Majesty in the same language¹, the Ambassador turned to the Prince, and beginning to him another formall Speech, the King left him. So did the Ambassador after a while the Prince, and returned to his lodgings. This was on Thursday.

"The Saturday following about ten of the clock at night, came to my lodging one of the Pages of the Bedd-chamber to tell me from his Majesty that his pleasure was I should invite the Ambassador to dine with him the next day; which I performed in the morning, and had his Majestie's coach (but no more) attending at the Court-gate about noone, when, the King having ordered that a Nobleman should fetch him from his lodging, it was held by others needlesse, and, except at his first Audience (now past) and at his last, I onely might serve the turne for his conduction. Which was allowed, and I with Sir James Spence onely brought him through the Presence into the Withdrawing-chamber, where the King within a while entering, he took him with him to dinner in the Presence-chamber. About the midst of the table, as accustomed, sate the King; at his left-hand the Prince, and at the table's end beneath, the Ambassador, who had for his Carver none but the Prince's, and for his Cup one of his own Gentlemen. Before dinner a question grew, which was diversely argued according to opinions, whether the Prince were to sit covered at dinner or no in the presence of his Father, seeing the Ambassador as a King's representant was not to set uncovered?

¹ Latin; see Mr. Chamberlain's letter, p. 452.

Some affirmed they had seen the Prince sit bare-headed, when an Ambassador had his hat on; others otherwise. But the King cleared all, when, after I had given him an hint of the question, and that himselfe had sate a while uncovered, he put on, and willed the like to be done by the Prince, and the Ambassador. The Ambassador's Gentlemen had no table appointed for them, by the King's expresse order; because, he said, the young Prince of Anhalt's Gentlemen, who had been with him the weeke before, had none; though the reason might not seem to serve for one as for the other, the different qualities of their Masters considered. Two or three of the cheife of them were sent to the table of the Groome of the Stooles, the Lord Fenton; the rest dined after with the Prince's Waiters.

"When dinner was done, the King retyred himselfe, and left the Ambassador in the Withdrawing-chamber to attend there his returne, which was an houre after; and, then holding with him a private conference, his Servants were after admitted into the roome; with whom I entring, his Majesty drew out my sword, and knighted with it the Ambassador.

"From thence the Ambassador went, by assignation from the Prince, (who would save him, he said, his offered paines of going to his inn and returning,) streight to his Highnesse' lodgings, and, after a short Audience, tooke his leave. His Majesty, by the mediation of Sir James Spence, was pleased, besides giving him a patent for confirmation of his knighthood, to add a marke of honour to his coate of arms.

"The next day we left Newmarket, dined at Cambridge, saw the best Colledges there, lay the first night at Newport neare Audley End (which rare building of the Earle of Suffolk's the Ambassador also saw), lodged the next night at Waltham, and after ten days absence were againe at London¹."

On the 14th of December, the King was still at Newmarket, whence he wrote on that day to Sir Dudley Carleton².

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, pp. 41—44; where Sir John goes on to say that the Ambassador "demanded Audience of the Queene, but her Majesty refused to give it without other reason or excuse then that the King his Master had not written to her, and why should she then, she said, see his Servant." The King sent him a diamond ring, and his picture enclosed in it, worth about £.2000, "to be worne as a private toaken without publique ceremonie, not for the value, but for the sender's memory." The Ambassador departed soon after to Gravesend, without attendance, though Sir John says it had always been the custom for Ambassadors, especially Extraordinaries, to use his Majesty's barges to and from Gravesend both at their arrival and departure.

² Letters to and from Sir Dudley Carleton, p. 218.

On the 20th of December, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to that Ambassador :

"The King hath been at Theobalds ever since Wednesday, and came to Town this day. I am sorry to hear that he grows every day more froward, and with such a kind of morosity, that doth either argue a great discontent in mind, or a distemper of humours in his body. Yet he is never so out of tune but the very sight of my Lord of Buckingham doth settle and quiet all.

"At his last going hence, one Simpson, of Trinity College in Cambridge¹, preaching before him at Royston, fell upon a point of Armenius's doctrine touching universality of grace; and so handled it that he was much displeased, and sent to the Doctors and Heads of Houses in Cambridge to convent him, and examine his Sermon. They returned a favourable censure, that this and this may be said; which was so far from satisfying the King, that he sent for them all, or the most part, to Newmarket, where the question was narrowly discussed, that he was enjoined to retract what he had said in the same place at the King's return thither after Christmas².

"The King of Sweden's Ambassador went to Newmarket, where, after a long Latin Oration and thanks for the King's mediation in this late business of the peace, I hear that his private demands were to have leave to levy men here, in case the war went on betwixt his Master and the King of Poland; that the King would enter into the union with the Princes of Germany for the defence of religion, &c."³

On the 29th, the King received notification that his daughter Elizabeth had on the 22d of December O.S. which was the 1st of January N. S. presented the Elector with a second son⁴. There were accordingly, says Camden, public rejoicings, bonfires, and bell-ringing. The ringers of St. Margaret's, Westminster, received 2s. 6d. on this occasion.

"On the first of January 1617-18, George Villiers, Earl of Buckingham, was created Marquis of Buckingham to him and his male heirs of his body, beyond all expectation, without any Investiture, by letters patents delivered into his hand; the Keeper of the Great Seal [Bacon], Lord Treasurer [Earl of Suffolk], Duke of Lenox, Marquess Hamilton, the Lord Chamberlain [Earl of Pembroke], the

¹ Of whom see p. 87, on occasion of his preaching a Latin Concio before the King on his Majesty's second Visit to Cambridge, May 14, 1615.

² See p. 467.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁴ See p. 469.

Earl of Arundel, Earl of Montgomery, the Viscounts Lisle, Wallingford, Fenton, and other witnesses being present ¹."

On the 3d of January, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"On New-year's day when there was no such matter spoken of or expected, the Earl of Buckingham was created Marquis of Buckingham, a dignity the King hath not bestowed since his coming to this Crown. But he protested to do it for the affection he bore him, more than ever he did to any man; and for the like affection, faith, and modesty that he had found in him. It was done privately, and by patent; and some few Noblemen called to be present, that had heard nothing of it till they saw it.

"The Muscovy Ambassadors shall be feasted at Court to-morrow, and on Twelfth-night is the Prince's Masque. There was a Masque of nine Ladies in hand at their own cost, whereof the principal was the Lady Hay ², as Queen of the Amazons, accompanied by her sister the Lady Dorothy ³, Sir Robert and Sir Henry Rich's Ladies ⁴, Mistress Isabella Rich ⁵, Mistress West the Lord De la War's daughter ⁶, Mistress Barbara Sidney ⁷, Sir Humphrey May's Lady ⁸, and the Lady

¹ Camden's Annals.

² The newly-married bride; see p. 445.

³ Dorothy, eldest daughter of the Duke of Northumberland, was married to Robert Lord Sidney, afterwards second Earl of Leicester. She died 18 years before her husband, Aug. 19, 1659, having given birth to a numerous and illustrious issue, among whom were Algernon Sidney the Patriot, and Dorothy Countess of Sunderland, celebrated by Waller under the name of Sacharissa.

⁴ Sir Robert Rich, who succeeded his father as second Earl of Warwick in March 1618-19, married Frances, daughter and heir of Sir William Hatton, and grand-daughter and heir of Sir Francis Gawdy, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas. She was mother of the third and fourth Earls of Warwick.—Sir Henry Rich, created in 1624 Earl of Holland (see vol. II. p. 334), married Isabella, daughter and heiress of Sir Walter Cope, whose mansion of Kensington, afterwards called Holland House, she brought to her husband. She was mother of Robert second Earl of Holland and fifth Earl of Warwick, and several other children.

⁵ Sister-in-law of the above Ladies, being fourth and youngest daughter of Robert third Lord Rich. She was married, first, to Richard Rogers, of Brianston in Dorsetshire, Esq. and secondly, to Sir John Smith, son of Sir Thomas, Farmer of the Customs.

⁶ Probably Jane, the eldest of Lord De la Warr's six daughters. She does not appear to have been married. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. V. p. 23.

⁷ One of the eight daughters of Robert first Earl of Leicester (at this period Viscount Lisle), by Barbara, daughter and heir of John Gammage, of Coytie, Glamorganshire, Esq. She was married to Thomas first Viscount Strangford.

⁸ Of Sir Humphrey May see vol. II. p. 517, and before in this vol. p. 22. His wife is not mentioned in the pedigree of May printed in Dallaway's History of the Rape of Chichester, p. 114.

Cave, daughter to Sir Herbert Croftes¹. They had taken great pains in continual practising, and were almost perfect, and all their implements provided; but, whatsoever the cause was, neither the Queen nor King did like or allow of it,—and so all is dashed.

“This night was the Lord Marquis's [Buckingham's] great feast, where were the King and Prince, with Lords and Ladies *sans nombre*. You may guess at the rest of the cheer by this scantling, that there were said to be seventeen dozen of pheasants, and twelve partridges in a dish throughout; which methinks was rather spoil than largess; yet for all the plenty of presents, the Supper cost £.600. Sir Thomas Edmondes undertook the providing and managing of all, so that it was much after the French². The King was exceedingly pleased, and could not be satisfied with commending the meat and the Master; and yet some stick not to say, that young Sir Henry Mildmay³, a son of George Brooke that was executed at Winchester⁴, and a son of Sir William Monson's⁵, begin to come into consideration⁶.”

On the 4th of January, Sir Francis Bacon, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, was made Chancellor of England, the Seal being delivered again to him by the name of Chancellor⁷.

¹ Daughter of Sir Herbert Croft, Knight, who died a Benedictine monk at Douay, April 10, 1622; sister to Dr. Herbert Croft, Bishop of Hereford; and aunt to Sir Herbert, the first Baronet. Her husband was Sir Thomas Cave, of Stanford, Northamptonshire, Knight, by whom she was mother of Sir Thomas, the first Baronet. See the pedigree in the History of Leicestershire, vol. IV. p. 372.

² He having been Ambassador to France.

³ Of whom in vol. II. p. 453. So far from being a Royal favourite, he was afterwards one of the Regicides of Charles the First.

⁴ William Brooke, who had been restored in blood in 1610, but not to enjoy the title of Lord Cobham without the King's special grace, which was never granted. He was created K. B. at the Coronation of Charles I.; and left two daughters his coheiresses, one of whom was married to Sir John Denham the Poet, and the other to Sir William Boothby, first Baronet of that name, in whose family the name of Brooke has been perpetuated from one generation to another till the present day. His first cousin John Brooke was created Lord Cobham in 1645, “to enjoy that title in as ample a manner as any of his ancestors had done,” but it became extinct with him in 1651. See further respecting the descendants of the Brookes, in Brydges's Peers of James I. p. 271.

⁵ Of this young gallant Wotton says nothing further than that his father gives him excellent advice in one of his Works. Of his ill success with the King see hereafter, p. 467. So much for these three abortive offsprings of Court intrigue.

⁶ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

⁷ Camden's Annals. He was already (says Mr. Chamberlain, Jan. 10,) expected to be made a Baron. This took place on the 11th of July following; see under that date.

On the 5th, the Muscovian Ambassadors dined with the King. "I was sent to them," says Sir John Finett, "with the King's coach and the Marquesse of Buckingham's, with the company of foure or five of the King's servants, (an honour more than usuall at such invitations, but the Merchants had made it their request, and it was not stood on for satisfaction of that particular Ambassador, whose nation stands so much on ceremony,) with order to bring them to the Court-gate by eleaven of the clock, and thus without stay through the Guard-chamber and Presence to the Privy-chamber, where his Majesty would be seated under the State ready to receive them; and that, after their complement should be passed, thence I was to conduct them along the Privy-gallery to the Councill-chamber for their Conference with the Lords about their Negotiation, while the King should be at Chappell; and after to conduct them along the Terras, and by the way they had before passed, to the Privy-chamber to dinner.

"But all this designed course was inverted by his Majestie's impatience to stay so long for them, when, by reason I had relyed on my Lord Marquesse of Buckingham's assurance over-night that he would give order, as Master of the Horse, for the King's coach to be ready the next day at the appointed houre, and his Lordship had forgotten it, we could not come to Court, being so retarded, till after eleaven, so as the King being already gone to Chappell, I received a direction different to the former, and descended from the coaches at the Court-gate, there happened another incongruity,—the Lord De la Ware, appointed to receive him there, did not appeare at his time. So as the Ambassadors, puntillious in their reception, made a stand under the Court-gate, but at last (against their ceremonious stomachs) went on as far as the midst of that first court, where they were met by the said Lord, and after, on the top of the stone stayres, by Richard Earle of Dorset; which two Lordes conducted them over the Terras into the Council-chamber, and kept them company with almost an hour's patience, till his Majestie's return from Chappell. They were at last brought through the Stone-table Chamber, where the Lord Chamberlaine met them, to the Privy-gallery, where (about the midst of it) stood the King and received them, and was thence followed by them into the Privie-chamber, where the two Ambassadors were seated at the table's end on his Majestie's left-hand. They had their health drunk to them by his Majestie after their Country manner, and the two cups they drank in presented to them. After this followed their Emperor's health drunk to them by his Majestie. Their Servants (about fifty of them) had a

dinner provided in the Guard-chamber, when the Guard that waited on them, failed not of their accustomed care, by soone shifting away their dishes, to keep them from surfeiting! The Ambassadors after dinner were reconducted, by the two Lords mentioned, to their severall stations, and by me and some of the King's Servants to their lodgings. Their failing at the time of their assignation (as before mentioned) was a cause that the Conference they should then have had with the Councill was deferred till the day following at nine of the clock, which should have been otherwise either immediately before dinner, or in the afternoon, if they had not alleadged for excuse, that it was the custome of their Country that, whensoever an Ambassador was to have an Audience of the Prince's Councill, they were to see the Prince's Eyes first,—but, in regard that their feasting with the King¹, they hoped his Majestie would allow them the liberty to take their drink, which they must forbear if business were immediately to follow; and desired they might not have their Audience till the next morning, and then see his Majestie's Eyes before they should see his Councillors.

“This request, though unusuall, thought reasonable and granted, I about nine in the morning [of January 6] fetcht them from their home; when the Chancellor [of Muscovy] took exceptions that he had never a Gentleman sent to sit within his coach, (which was the Lord Chamberlain's, sent ordinarily then with the King's,) as I did with his fellow Commissioner. Bringing them, by direction, through the Park and the Tilt-yard Gallery, to the Ordinary-chamber of attendance for Audiences, the King saw them only in the next room save one to the Privie-gallerie, and there with three words, and their low reverences, left them to the Councill. Eight of which having gone before into the Councill-chamber, and coming back to meet and receive them in the Stone-table Chamber, they were by them introduced (the Ambassador preceding), their business heard, they dispatcht, brought back by the Councill to the Chamber where the King had seen them, (and they, as they desired, his Majestie's Eyes!) and there left to my reconduction, which they had, to their lodgings².”

At the close of the same day, it being Twelfth-night, was performed Ben Jonson's Masque of “The Vision of Delight;” “wherein the Prince was a principall Actor, and that his first exercise in that kinde³.”

¹ Which, it may be presumed, made them see double.

² Finetti Philoxenis, pp. 45—48. Sir John's amusing accounts of some further Audiences given to these finical Ambassadors, will be found hereafter, under March 22, April 12, and April 24.

³ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 48.—See the names of the other Masquers in p. 464.

THE VISION OF DELIGHT.

PRESENTED AT COURT IN CHRISTMAS,

JANUARY 6, AND FEBRUARY 17, 1617-18¹.

Written by BEN JONSON.

The Scene, a Street in perspective of fair building discovered. DELIGHT is seen to come as afar off, accompanied with GRACE, LOVE, HARMONY, REVEL, SPORT, LAUGHTER; and followed by WONDER.

Stylo recitativo.

DELIGHT. Let us play and dance, and sing,
 Let us now turn every sort
 Of the pleasures of the Spring,
 To the graces of a Court.

 From air, from cloud, from dreams, from toys,
 To sounds, to sense, to love, to joys;
 Let your shows be new, as strange,
 Let them oft and sweetly vary;
 Let them haste so to their change,
 As the seërs may not tarry.
 Too long t' expect the pleasingst sight,
 Doth take away from the delight.

Here the FIRST ANTIMASQUE entered, a She-monster delivered of six Burratines², that dance with six Pantaloons; which done,

DELIGHT. Yet hear what your Delight doth pray;
 All sour and sullen looks away,
 That are the servants of the Day;

¹ "From the folio, 1641. This is one of the most beautiful of Jonson's little pieces, light, airy, harmonious, and poetical in no common degree. It stands without a parallel among performances of this kind." GIFFORD.

² I can give the reader no idea of the shape of the Burratines. The word itself occurs in that singular production, the "Microscomos," by Purchas; who speaks of it as "a strange stuff recently devised and brought into wear," much to his annoyance, p. 268. It was probably a glossy kind of perpetuana; whatever it was, the six young monsters were clothed in it, and formed, it may be presumed, some ridiculous contrast to the formal and fantastic habits of the six old men. GIFFORD.

Our sports are of the humorous Night,
 Who feeds the stars that give her light,
 And useth than her wont more bright,
 To help the VISION OF DELIGHT.

Here the NIGHT rises slowly, and takes her chariot bespangled with stars.

See, see, her scepter and her crown
 Are all of flame, and from her gown
 A train of light comes waving down.
 This night, in dew she will not steep
 The brain, nor lock the sense in sleep;
 But all awake with phantoms keep,
 And those to make Delight more deep.

By this time the NIGHT and Moon being risen, NIGHT, hovering over the place, sung¹:

NIGHT. *Break, Phant'sie, from thy cave of cloud,
 And spread thy purple wings;
 Now all thy figures are allow'd,
 And various shapes of things;
 Create of airy forms a stream,
 It must have blood, and nought of phlegm;
 And though it be a waking dream,*

¹ This Song or Incantation is thus paraphrased by Milton in his "Penseroso:":

"And let some strange mysterious dream
 Wave at his wings an aery stream
 Of lively portraiture display'd,
 Softly on my eye-lids laid;
 And as I wake sweet music breathe
 Above, about, or underneath,
 Sent by some Spright to mortals good,
 Or th' unseen Genius of the Wood.

Jonson himself has a similar thought in "Love's Triumph," where Euphemus says, very beautifully:

"Love in perfection longeth to appear,
 But prays, of favour, he be not call'd on
 Till all the suburbs and the skirts be clear
 Of perturbations, and the infection gone.

Then will he flow forth like a rich perfume
 Into your nostrils! or some sweeter sound
 Of melting music, that shall not consume
 Within the ear, but run the mazes round."

Chorus.

*Yet let it like an odour rise
To all the senses here,
And fall like sleep upon their eyes,
Or music in their ear.*

The Scene here changed to cloud, from which PHANT'SIE breaking forth, spake :

PHANT'SIE. Bright Night, I obey thee, and am come at thy call,
But it is no one dream that can please these all ;
Wherefore I would know what dreams would delight 'em ;
For never was Phant'sie more loth to affright 'em.
And Phant'sie, I tell you, has dreams that have wings,
And dreams that have honey, and dreams that have stings ;
Dreams of the maker, and dreams of the teller,
Dreams of the kitchen, and dreams of the cellar ;
Some that are tall, and some that are dwarfs,
Some that are halter'd, and some that wear scarfs ;
Some that are proper, and signify o' thing,
And some another, and some that are nothing.—
For say the French verdingale, and the French hood
Were here to dispute ; must it be understood¹
A feather for a wisp were a fit moderator ?
Your ostrich, believe it, 's no faithfull translator
Of perfect Utopian ; and then 't were an odd piece
To see the conclusion peep forth at a cod-piece.

The politic pudding hath still his two ends,
Though the bellows and bag-pipes were ne'er so good friends ;
And who can report what offence it would be
For a squirrel to see a dog climb up a tree ?
If a dream should come in now to make you afeard,
With a windmill on his head, and bells at his beard ;
Would you straight wear your spectacles here at your toes,
And your boots on your brows, and your spurs on your nose ?
Your whale he will swallow a hogshead for a pill ;
But the maker o' the mouse-trap is he that hath skill.
And the nature of the onion is to draw tears,
As well as the mustard ; peace, pitchers have ears,

¹ The medley that follows is purposely designed, I suppose, to intimate the inconsistency of dreams ; and has at least, if no other merit, the praise of being spoken in character. WHALLEY.—Our old Poets seem to have found some amusement in stringing together these sheer absurdities, as they frequently indulged in them. Jonson's, as Whalley observes, is not ill-placed ; and, if there be any degree of comparison in nonsense, his is also the best that we have. It might have been shorter ; but if it amused the audience, we need not quarrel with it. GIFFORD.

And shittle-cocks wings, these things do not mind 'em,
 If the bell have any sides, the clapper will find 'em;
 There's twice so much music in beating the tabor,
 As in the stock-fish, and somewhat less labour.
 Yet all this while, no proportion is boasted
 'Twixt an egg and an ox, though both have been roasted?
 For grant the most barbers can play on the cittern,
 Is it requisite a lawyer should plead to a ghittern?
 You will say now the morris-bells were but bribes
 To make the heel forget that e'er it had kibes;
 I say, let the wine make ne'er so good jelly,
 The conscience of the bottle is much in the belly;
 For why? do but take common council i' your way,
 And tell me who'll then set a bottle of hay
 Before the old usurer, and to his horse
 A slice of salt-butter, perverting the course
 Of civil society? open that gap,
 And out skip your fleas, four-and-twenty at a clap,
 With a chain and a trundle-bed following at th' heels,
 And will they not cry then, the world runs a-wheels?
 As for example, a belly, and no face,
 With the bill of a shoveler¹ may here come in place;
 The haunches of a drum, with the feet of a pot,
 And the tail of a Kentish man to it; why not?
 Yet would I take the stars to be cruel,
 If the crab and the rope-maker ever fight duel,
 On any dependence, be it right, be it wrong;
 But, mum; a thread may be drawn out too long.

Here the SECOND ANTIMASQUE of Phantasms came forth, and danced.

PHANT'SIE. Why, this you will say was phantastical now,
 As the Cock and the Bull, the Whale and the Cow,
 But vanish! away! [*They retire.*] I have change to present you,
 And such as I hope will more truly content you.—
 Behold the gold-hair'd Hour descending here,
 That keeps the gate of Heaven, and turns the year,
 Already with her sight how she doth cheer,
 And makes another face of things appear.

¹ A particular kind of sea-bird, with a broad bill. In the Entertainment given to Queen Elizabeth by the Earl of Leicester at Kenelworth Castle, we are told there were two square wire cages, and in them live bitterns, curleus, shovelars, &c. WHALLEY.

Here one of the Hours descending, the whole scene changed to the Bower of Zephyrus, whilst PEACE sung as followeth :

PEACE. *Why look you so, and all turn dumb,
To see the opener of the new year come?
My presence rather should invite,
And aid and urge, and call to your delight;
The many pleasures that I bring
Are all of youth, of heat, of life, and spring,
And were prepared to warm your blood,
Not fix it thus as if you statues stood.*

Chorus. *We see, we hear, we feel, we taste,
We smell the change in every flow'r;
We only wish that all could last,
And be as new still as the hour.*

WONDER. Wonder must speak or break; what is this? grows
The wealth of nature here, or art? it shows
As if Favonius, Father of the Spring,
Who in the verdant meads doth reign sole King¹,
Had roused him here, and shook his feathers, wet
With purple-swelling nectar; and had let
The sweet and fruitful dew fall on the ground
To force out all the flowers that might be found;
Or a Minerva with her needle had
The enamour'd earth with all her riches clad,
And made the downy Zephyr as he flew
Still to be followed with the Spring's best hue.
The gaudy peacock boasts not in his train
So many lights and shadows, nor the rain-
Resolving Iris, when the Sun doth court her,
Nor purple pheasant while his aunt² doth sport her

¹ This is from Claudian's "Rape of Proserpine:"

"Compellat Zephyrum, Pater O gratissime Veris,
Qui mea lascivo regnas per prata meatu," &c. Lib. II. 73 *et seq.*

Jonson was the first who made this excellent Poet familiar to us. At a time when he was little known or studied in this country, our author was already intimately acquainted with his merits, and had many allusions to his most striking beauties dispersed through his works. GIFFORD.

² i. e. his wanton mistress. Thus Brome :

CICELY. Is she your kinswoman—your aunt, or cousin?

SAM. [*aside.*] Means she in the mystical sense of ill? Totten. Court.

But our old dramatists used this word in a very loose way. As "The Gentleman's Recreation" says of *brach*, it "seems to be a mannerly word," for an appellation peculiarly offensive to female ears. See Gifford's Jonson, vol. VI. p. 92. GIFFORD.

To hear him crow, and, with a perched pride,
Wave his discolour'd neck and purple side.
I have not seen the place could more surprise;
It looks, methinks, like one of Nature's eyes,
Or her whole body set in art; behold!
How the blue bindweed doth itself infold
With honey-suckle, and both these intwine
Themselves with bryony and jessamine,
To cast a kind and odoriferous shade.

PHANT'SIE. How better than they are, are all things made
By Wonder? But awhile refresh thine eye,
I'll put thee to thy oftener, What? and Why?

*Here, to a loud music, the Bower opens, and the MASQUERS are discovered, as the
Glories of the Spring.*

WONDER. Thou wilt indeed; what better change appears?
Whence it is that the air so sudden clears,
And all things in a moment turn so mild?
Whose breath or beams have got proud earth with child,
Of all the treasure this great Nature's worth,
And makes her every minute to bring forth?
How comes it winter is so quite forced hence,
And lock'd up under ground? that every sense
Hath several objects? trees have got their heads,
And fields their coats? that now the shining meads
Do boast the paunce¹, the lily, and the rose;
And every flower doth laugh as Zephyr blows?
That seas are now more even than the land?
The rivers run as smoothed by his hand;
Only their heads are crisped by his stroke;
How plays the yearling with his brow scarce broke
Now in the open grass! and frisking lambs
Make wanton saults about their dry-suck'd dams!—
Who to repair their bags do rob the fields.
How is't each bough a several music yields?
The lusty throstle, early nightingale,
Accord in tune, though vary in their tale;
The chirping swallow, call'd forth by the sun,
And crested lark doth his division run?
The yellow bees the air with murmur fill,
The finches carol, and the turtles bill?

¹ The pansy, or heart's-ease, a word used also by Spenser. See Todd's Johnson. N.

Whose power is this ? what God ?

PHANT'SIE.

Behold a King,
Whose presence maketh this perpetual Spring;
The glories of which Spring grow in that Bower,
And are the marks and beauties of his power.

Chorus.

'Tis he, 'tis he, and no power else,
That makes all this what Phant'sie tells;
The founts, the flowers, the birds, the bees,
The herds, the flocks, the grass, the trees,
Do all confess him; but most these
Who call him Lord of the Four Seas,
King of the less and greater Isles,
And all those happy when he smiles.
Advance, his favour calls you to advance,
And do your this night's homage in a dance.

Here they dance their Entry, after which they sung again:

Chorus.

Again! again! you cannot be
Of such a true delight too free,
Which, who once saw, would ever see;
And if they could the object prize,
Would, while it lasts, not think to rise,
But wish their bodies all were eyes.

Here they danced their Main Dance, after which they sung:

Chorus.

In curious knots and mazes so,
The Spring at first was taught to go;
And Zephyr, when he came to woo
His Flora, had their motions too;
And thence did Venus learn to lead
The Idalian brawls, and so to tread
As if the wind, not she, did walk;
Nor press'd a flower, nor bow'd a stalk.

*Here they danced with the Ladies, and the whole Revels followed; after which
AURORA appeared, (the NIGHT and Moon being descended,) and this Epilogue
followed:*

AURORA.

I was not wearier where I lay
By frozen Tithon's side to-night;
Than I am willing now to stay,
And be a part of your delight,
But I am urged by the Day,
Against my will, to bid you come away.

Chorus. *They yield to time, and so must all.
As Night to sport, Day doth to action call;
Which they the rather do obey,
Because the Morn with roses strews the way.*
Here they danced their going off; and ended.

On the 7th of January, Sir Richard Young, of London, and on the 8th, Sir Richard Lucy, of Warwickshire¹, were knighted at Whitehall.

On the 10th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"On Twelfth-night was the Prince's Masque; which, besides the two Marquisses [Buckingham and Hamilton], the Earl of Montgomery, and some other Lords, was furnished and filled up with Sir Gilbert Hoghton², Abercromby³, Auchmouty⁴, Hodges, Palmer, and such like dancing companions. There was nothing in it extraordinary; but rather the invention proved dull, Mr. Comptroller [Sir Thomas Edmondes]'s daughter⁵ bore away the bell for delicate dancing, though remarkable for nothing else but for multitude of jewels, where-with she was hanged as it were all over. The Spanish and Venetian Ambassadors were invited, and well respected there, which the French Ambassador took in so ill part, that he hath expostulated very roundly, that there is no more regard of him, nor his Master; and the Lord Chamberlain hath orders to pacify him as much as might be⁶.

¹ Second son of Sir Thomas Lucy, of Charlecote in that county. Being seated at Broxbourn in Hertfordshire, by having become the third husband of Elizabeth, daughter and eventually sole heir of Sir Henry Cock, Cofferer to Queen Elizabeth (and who entertained King James at that place in his first journey to London in 1603; see vol. I. p. 186.), Sir Richard Lucy was created a Baronet of Broxbourn on the 11th of March following the present date. He died April 6, 1667. See Wotton's Baronetage, 1741, vol. I. p. 300, and Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. II. p. 55. ² See p. 367.

³ Of whom see vol. II. p. 725, this vol. p. 267.

⁴ See vol. I. p. 599; vol. II. p. 725.

⁵ Probably Isabel, the eldest of his three daughters, married to Henry Lord De la Warr. All the succeeding Peers of that family have descended from their union.

⁶ Sir John Finett, as might be expected, gives a particular account of this *brûlé*. The invitation to the Spanish Ambassador, says that author, was partly "to observe the promise his Majesty had made the year before to that purpose," but more particularly on account of its being the Prince's first Masque, and "a Marriage between the Prince and Infanta was then in treaty." The French Ambassador took so great umbrage at this proceeding, that it was actually the occasion of his obtaining his Revocation "before his three years' residence (which wanted but a quarter) were expired." See Finetti Philoxenis, p. 48.

"The King, before his going to Theobalds on Thursday, made Sir Robert Naunton Secretary with many good words, saying he had destinated him to it presently upon the death of Sir Ralph Winwood, though he acquainted nobody with it till now¹. Further that he did it *motu proprio, et ex certa scientia* of his sufficiency, without any other mediation, and gave him many good lessons, but especially of agreeing and drawing in one line with his fellow Secretary. He is gone this morning after the King to Royston from Theobalds, where he was to have yesternight a Play acted by Sir Thomas Dutton, Sir Thomas Badger, Sir George Goring, Sir Thomas Tyringham, Sir Edward Zouch, Sir Robert Yaxeley, and the like², of Tom of Bedlam the Tinker, and such other mad stuff.

"The Queen is not well, but they say languisheth, whether with melancholy or sickness, and what not, yet at Whitehall, being scant able to remove³."

Again, on the 17th of January, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows:

"Sir John Bingley⁴ was lately knighted at Theobalds, where the Play or Interlude did not *reascire* to the expectation, but rather fell out the wrong way, specially by reason of a certain song sung by Sir John Finett, wherein the rest bore the *bourdon*, of such scurrilous and base stuff, that it put the King out of his good humour, and all the rest that heard it. And I marvel the more that, among so many, none had the judgment to see how unfit it was to bring such beastly gear in public before a Prince. For beside those I named in my last, Sir William Uvedale⁵, Sir Thomas Tyringham, Sir Arthur Lake⁶, and George Garret, were of the concert⁷."

¹ Of Sir Robert Naunton's history see a note in p. 99. At the time of his being promoted to the Secretaryship he was a Master of Requests, and Overseer of the Liveries of the Court of Wards.

² Sir George Goring and Sir Thomas Badger had been performers in Lord Hay's Masque in the preceding February; see p. 246.—Sir Thomas Dutton was a combatant at the Barriers, 1605-6; see vol. II. p. 25.—Sir Thomas Tyringham received a Free-gift of £1000 in 1607; see vol. II. p. 190. He was probably a Scottish Knight, dubbed before James's Accession to the English Crown, and related to Sir Arthur, one of the Gentlemen Pensioners knighted in Scotland in 1617; see p. 367.—Sir Edward Zouch has been noticed in vol. II. p. 38, this vol. p. 256. ³ Birch's MSS. 4174.

⁴ Who, as "Writer of the Tallies and Counter Tallies in the Receipt of Exchequer," received a salary of £91. 13s. 4d. and an allowance of £9 for a Clerk. When the Earl of Suffolk was accused of taking bribes in July this year, his underling Sir John Bingley was committed to prison. Sir Francis Bacon, in his Speech against the Earl in the Star-chamber, compared his Countess to an exchange-woman who kept her shop, while Sir John Bingley cried, "What d'ye lack?"—See p. 487.

⁵ Who had been the Earl of Somerset's "chief Favourite," as Mr. Chamberlain calls him, March 17, 1613-14. He was elected M. P. for Hampshire at that time, having been knighted at Royston the previous Nov. 14; see vol. II. p. 704. ⁶ Of whom in p. 401. ⁷ Birch's MSS. 4174.

On the 20th¹ of January the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Edward Fleetwood, Sir Rowland Vaughan, and Sir John Bingley of the Exchequer; and on the 30th, at Newmarket, Sir Francis Blundell, of Ireland².

"On the first of February Sir Henry Carey³ is made Comptroller of the King's Houshold; and Sir Thomas Edmonds [the Comptroller] is made Treasurer instead of my Lord Wotton⁴."

On the 2d, which was Candlemas-day, the Students of Gray's Inn performed the Tilt of Henry Prince of Purpool, and the Masque of Mountebanks, concluding with a "Song for the Entertainment of the Lord Chancellor [Sir Francis Bacon] at Gray's Inn, on Candlemas-day, and of other Lords⁵."

¹ Philipot's Catalogue of Knights; but according to Mr. Chamberlain's letter of Jan. 17 (p. 465) Sir John Bingley had received knighthood on an earlier day.

² Afterwards the premier Baronet of Ireland, so created Oct. 14, 1620. He was Secretary for the affairs of Ireland; Treasurer, Receiver-general, and a Privy Councillor for that Kingdom. An Irish Viscounty was bestowed on one of his descendants, which became extinct in 1756.

³ Sir Henry Carey, afterwards Viscount Falkland, was the only son of Sir Edward, Master of the Jewel-house, and was united in that office with his father; see vol. I. p. 599. He was born at Aldenham, Herts; was educated at Exeter College, Oxford; and was knighted by the Earl of Essex in Ireland in 1599. He was one of the Judges of the Tilt on the King's-day 1614-15, 1615-16, 1617-18, and 1621-2; see pp. 135, 473, and Appendix. He was M. P. for Hertfordshire in the only four Parliaments held from 1602 to 1620, was created a Scottish Peer by the title of Viscount Falkland in that year, was Lord Deputy of Ireland from 1622 to 1629, and died in Sept. 1633 in consequence of breaking a leg on a stand in Theobalds Park. Lloyd in his *State Worthies* gives him the character of "a most accomplished gentleman and a complete Courtier." See further of his History in that work, in Douglas's *Peerage* by Wood, and in Park's *Royal and Noble Authors*, where his portrait is engraved. — Lord Falkland is in several authorities styled K. B. with much confusion between the Creations of Henry and Charles Princes of Wales. It is remarkable that on both those occasions a Sir Henry Carey was so created, but at the former it was Lord Hunsdon's eldest son, afterwards created Earl of Dover (see vol. II. p. 343); and at the latter Sir Robert Carey's eldest son, who succeeded his father as second Earl of Monmouth (see this vol. p. 222).

⁴ Camden's *Annals*.

⁵ The date of these revels is now clearly ascertained both by Mr. Chamberlain's letter of Feb. 7, and by the Song in honour of the Lord Chancellor Bacon above-mentioned. But I had not met with either the Letter or the Song, when the Masque and the several introductory *facetiæ* were printed in the Third Volume of Queen Elizabeth's Progresses, pp. 320—350, as the Second Part of the *Gesta Grayorum*. The First Part was printed in 1594, but the Second appears not to have been published at the time of its performance. It was printed in the "*Progresses of Queen Elizabeth*" from a MS. which contained neither a date nor the Song to the Lord Chancellor. They have been found in a contemporary copy, sold at the sale of the library of James Boswell, Esq. June 3, 1825, and purchased for four guineas by Mr. Pickering. It is worthy of remark that the name of "Henry

Whilst the King continued at Newmarket, he knighted, on the 3d, Sir Simon Norwich¹; on the 7th, Sir Michael Longeville²; on the 8th, Sir Jasper Herbert.

On the 6th, says Camden, "the Baron of Winninberg, Ambassador of the Prince Elector Palatine, goes to the Queen, and invites her, that she, with Prince Charles, and other Princes, would stand godfathers to the new Prince³."

On the 7th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Lord Chancellor [Bacon] hath been absent from Westminster Hall three days this week, not that he complains of want of health, but that he doubts this cold weather should pinch him. And yet on Monday, being Candlemas-day, he dined at Gray's Inn, to give countenance to their Lord or Prince of Purpoole, and see the Revels.

"I wrote you of one Simpson, of Cambridge, that preached some Armenian points before the King⁴, which being appointed to retract in the same place, when he came he made a very excellent Sermon otherwise, but spake not a word of that was looked for and enjoined him. Whereat the King was much displeased, and hath since taken order, that in another Sermon he shall clearly deliver his mind in such and such points. The King comes to town this day⁵."

On the 14th of February, the King came to Whitehall, but, being "troubled with a defluxion upon his knees, could not be present at Sermon⁶."

On the 17th, Theobald de Burgh, second son to Lord Castleconnel⁷, was created an Irish Peer by the title of Baron Brittas, co. Meath.

the Second, Prince of Graya and Purpulia," appears in the list of Subscribers to Minshew's Dictionary, which was printed in 1617.

¹ Only son of Sir Charles Norwich, of whom in vol. I. p. 427, and father of Sir John the first Baronet. Simon was a very old name in the family, which is supposed to have been derived from Simon Bigot, styled Earl of Norwich, a cousin of Hugh Earl of Norfolk temp. Stephen. The Sir Simon here knighted served Sheriff of Northamptonshire in 1619, and was buried Feb. 10, 1624. See the pedigree in Nichols's Leicestershire, vol. II. p. 519.

² Son and brother of the two Sir Henry Longuevilles noticed in vol. I. pp. 192, 211. Sir Michael married Susan Baroness Grey de Ruthyn, heiress of Henry eighth and last Earl of Kent; and their son Charles inherited that Barony in 1640. Susan, daughter and sole heir of the latter carried it to the Yelvertons, and her son Henry, fourteenth Baron Grey de Ruthyn (father of the first Earl of Sussex) was created Viscount Longueville in 1690. See the pedigree of the Longuevilles in Baker's Northamptonshire, vol. I. p. 27.

³ See p. 468.

⁴ See before, p. 452.

⁵ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁶ Camden's Annals.

⁷ The house of Castle Connell (ennobled in 1580) were old cadets of the family of the Earl of Clanricarde, being descended from the fourth son of Richard second Earl of Ulster, called the Red

On the 21st, Mr. Chamberlain again wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“On Shrove Tuesday the Prince’s Masque for Twelfth-night was represented again with some few alterations and additions ; but little bettered.

“On Thursday night the Gentlemen of Gray’s Inn came to Court with their show, for I cannot call it a Masque, seeing they were not disguised nor had vizards. For the rest, their fashion and device were well approved, though it were thought to be somewhat out of season to revel in Lent ; the cause whereof was they would not be turned into the Hall on Shrove-monday, (as was appointed by reason that the Prince’s shows and devices could not be set up and placed in so short time, if they should possess the Banquetting-room the night before) ; but seeing no reason or persuasion would serve the turn, they must of necessity be put off till Thursday or some time longer. The Queen was not present at either of them, but keeps close at Denmark House.

“There be a number of fine young Gallants about the Court, more than I formerly mentioned ; specially young Bell and Rookwood. This mustering of Minions, and pressing so fast forward, makes the world suspect it is toward a turning water.

“Dr. John Donne preached yesterday at Whitehall¹ ; but the King was not there, being weary, belike, of the former night’s watching.

“There is no speech about the King’s going to Royston or Newmarket all this Lent ; but it is said he means to spend the time about Hampton, Oking, and such places hereabout most part of the week, and come back every Saturday.

“The Prince was minded to send Sir Thomas Howard his Deputy to the Christening at Heidelberg² ; but the Queen not being minded to send any for her part, it is thought more fit to appoint two Gentlemen Ushers, who are to make choice of deputies there for avoiding of further charge and trouble.”

On the 23d of February, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Henry Yelverton³ ; on the 25th and 26th, at Theobalds, Sir James Hales, of Kent ; and Sir Walter Scot.

Earl, who died in 1326, having been the most powerful Irish subject of his day. There were at least three Barons Brittas ; but both this title and that of Castle Connell were among those forfeited in 1641. Lodge’s *Irish Peerage*, vol. I. p. 121 ; vol. II. p. 222.

¹ See p. 41.

² The Princess Elizabeth’s second son (whose birth is noticed in p. 452) was named Charles after his Princely Uncle and Godfather. He died in 1680, having had issue by Charlotte of Hesse Cassel, Charles, Count Palatine, who died without issue, and Charlotte-Elizabeth, married to Philip the First, Duke of Orleans, from whom are descended the Houses of Orleans and Austria.

³ Perhaps the eldest son of Sir Henry Yelverton, at this time Attorney General, of whom in

On the 28th of February, Mr. Chamberlain again addressed his friend :

"Most of our young Court gallants are vanished like mushrooms, by reason that the day before the King's going to Theobalds, the Lord Chamberlain, by express order, told young Monson, that the King did not like of his forwardness and presenting himself continually about him¹. That his father [Sir William Monson] and uncle [Sir Thomas] were not long since called in question for matters of no small moment²; that his own education had been in such places, and with such persons as was not to be allowed of. Wherefore his Majesty willed him from henceforth to forbear his presence; and, if he would follow his [the Lord Chamberlain's] advice, he should likewise forbear the Court. This was a shrewd reprimand and cross blow to some who, they say, made account to raise and recover their fortunes by setting up this new idol; and took great pains in pricking and pranking him up, beside washing his face every day with posset curd."

On the 5th of March, Mr. Secretary Lake wrote as follows, from Whitehall, to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"My Lord Ambassador, I have acquainted his Majesty with your last dispatch, although in a time when his Majesty was disquieted with pain in his feet, and doth yet keep in; but I hear now feeleth ease, God be thanked, and purposeth this day to give audience to Sir Andrew Sinclair, and leave to Dr. Jonas, who came not a week before from the King of Denmark, about the fishings of Greenland, where there is some contention between our people and his³."

On the 7th, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The King hath not looked abroad since his last coming to Town, being detained by a defluxion, as we must call it, in his knees !

"The Queen sends a present to the young French King of six geldings, six grey-hounds, and twelve couple of beagles⁴."

On the 11th, Sir Richard Lucy, of Broxbourn, Hertfordshire, Knight⁵, was created a Baronet, being the 100th person so created.

vol. II. p. 703. If so, he died young, as Sir Henry's son Christopher (knighted May 6, 1623,) succeeded to his estates. Or this Sir Henry may have been a son of Sir Christopher, the Recorder's brother (who has occurred in vol. I. p. 210). See Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. pp. 624, 629.

¹ See p. 454.

² Their supposed connection with Overbury's murder; see pp. 122, 171.

³ Letters to and from Sir Dudley Carleton, p. 249.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁵ See p. 464. The title became extinct with his grandson Sir Berkeley the third Baronet in 1759.

On the 16th of March, Mr. Chamberlain again reports the Royal health :

"The King begins to look abroad, and makes account to go this day to Theobalds. The Queen lies still at Denmark House, whence she hath made two or three journies to Whitehall to visit the King, while he kept within doors ¹."

Mr. Chamberlain's information was correct. His Majesty, having knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Hugh Clotworthy, of Devonshire, on this day "took a journey to Okeham [Oking], after he had been laid up a fortnight of the gout ²."

On the 18th, our Monarch knighted, at Hampton Court, Sir — Broughton; on the 20th, at Oking, Sir Henry Manwaring, of Surrey; and on the 23d, at Whitehall, Sir Gabriell Lowe.

"The Russian Ambassadors having received an assignation of the two-and-twentieth of March for the next day's repaire to the Audience of the Councell, a request was made by some of the Muscovey merchants, as such that well understood their punctillious humours that way, that the Ambassadors might have (pretending it to be the custome of their Countrey, and an honour due to their Emperour,) a sight of his Majesty before their conference with his Councell; which yeelded to, I had order to fetch them with one of the King's coaches and the Lord Chamberlain's (which was for their more honour every Audience sent to them in company of the King's, under the title of his Majestie's coach), taking with me one Gentleman of his Majestie's Servants to accompany me, for avoidance of the like exceptions as had been formerly taken by the Chancellour ³. I brought them to the Court at two of the clock, and descended at the great Gate there; before I entered, I desired them as had in charge, not to take it in ill part if they found there never a Nobleman to receive them, since it was, I said, a ceremony not performed towards an Ambassador of any Prince whatsoever, except onely at his first and last Audience.

"This could not hold them from murmuring, and expressing with discontented countenances their ill satisfactions; yet onward they went following my guidance, as my Lord Chamberlain had given me directions, up the stone steps, through the Guard-chamber and Presence to the Privy-chamber, where, after some little time of stay neere the State, but not sittinge, nor having any stooles for it offered them, the Lord Chamberlain came forth and brought them into the Privy-gallery, where the King, seated about a third part distant from the doore

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² Camden's Annals.

³ See p. 456.

there, towards the Councill-chamber, with his chaire back to the wall on the left hand, his Majesty rose up to them; at which they made their profound reverences, repeated in brief the substance of their errand, had a gracious answer, and were dismissed to rest themselves in the Stone-table Chamber till the Councill should be assembled for them, who in a short time after passing by them, and onely saluting them, one of the Clerks of the Councill called to me to bring them in, when comming forwards they made a suddaine stand, because they saw none of the Lords to returne forth to me and introduce them; till at length that respect also was by three or foure of the principall Lords given them, and they being entred the Chamber, and seated in two chayres placed at the upper end of the table, propounded and dispatcht so much of their businesse as the ripenesse of it would give leave, and departed by the way of the Audience-chamber, through the Privy-garden and the Cloyster or Stone-walke, there to their coach, and were thence by me and the other Gentlemen conducted to their lodging.

"The next day, being the foure-and-twentieth of March, and the day of his Majestie's comming to the Crown, I was sent, with a Gentleman to accompany, and two coaches as before, to the same Ambassadors to conduct them to a Tylling, (whither the Merchants had made way for an invitation,) by the way of the Park to the Tyll-yard-gallery next it, where in the first window next that entrance were placed for them two stooles, and a carpet to lean on, the travers drawn between them and the King, whom after the Tylling they were admitted to see and salute. Their Followers of all conditions, excepting their Interpreter for their use, were bestowed on a scaffold ordained onely for them, next the entrance into the Tyll-yard on the King's left-hand, where three or four of the better sort of them had a leaning carpet laid before them, and seats to sit on, the rest had a seate or two, and so took as they could their best commodities¹."

In anticipation of this Tilt, Mr. Secretary Naunton wrote the following Letter²:

"To the right honourable my verie good Lords, my Lord the Earle of Suffolke, Lord Threasurer of England, and the rest of the Lords Commissioners for Causes Martiall.

"It maie please your Lordships, his Majestie hath directed me to send you this Catalogue of names inclosed, and to require your Lordships to give speciaall warn-

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, pp. 51—53.

² Here printed from a contemporary copy in the writing of William Penson, the Herald, pre-

ing by writeing or otherwise, as your oportunity shall best serve, to them therein crossed ¹, that they provide and put themselves in order to runne at Tilt against the 24th of March next, without faile. Soe, with my due respect and service recomended to your Lordships, I rest your Lordships' most assured to be com-
mended,

ROBT. NAUNTON.

"Newmarket, the 30th of January, at 9 before noone.

"Hast, post, hast, hast.

The Names of those Lords and others that have before this year runne at Tilt.

The Duke of Lenox.	Lord Hay.
The Lord Chamberlen [the Earl of Pembroke].	Lord Dingwell.
The Earle of Arondell.	Sir Thomas Somerset.
The Earle of Rutland.	Sir Thomas Howard.
The Earle of Dorset.	Sir Edward Sackvill.
The Earle of Montgomery.	Sir Robert Rich.
Lord Clifford.	Sir Henry Rich.
Lord Walden.	Sir Sigismond Zinzan.
Lord Gerrard.	Mr. Henry Zinzan.

The Names of those Lords and others that have not runne at Tilt.

† The Marquis of Buckingham. The Marquis Hamilton.

served in Harl. MSS. 1107. The following document from the same volume may be appropriately introduced in this place:

"Fees due and payable to the Officers of Armes by all degrees of men at their first entrance into the Tilt:

	£.	s.	d.		£.	s.	d.
A Kinge - - - - -	40	0	0	An Earle - - - - -	10	0	0
A Prince - - - - -	20	0	0	A Viscount - - - - -	6	13	4
A Duke - - - - -	15	0	0	A Knight - - - - -	2	0	0
A Marquis - - - - -	13	6	8	An Esquire - - - - -	1	0	0

besides hatts, and fethers, and their cullors in skarffes."

¹ Those which have a * against their names in the subsequent list. They were probably summoned, but excused themselves or fined, as we find by Camden's list and Mr. Chamberlain's letter which follow, that all those who appeared in the Tilt-yard on this occasion, had before done so.

† It may be observed that the Marquis of Buckingham (then Viscount Villiers), Lord Mordaunt, and Sir William Cavendish, though they had not essayed the regular Tilt, were engaged in the Running at the Ring on Prince Charles's Creation (see p. 215).

The Earle of Essex.
 * The Earle of Castelhaven.
 * Lord Ruthen.
 * Lord Fitzwater.
 * Lord Scroope.
 * Lord Windsore.
 Lord Wentworth.
 † Lord Mordant.
 Lord Eure.
 * Lord Hunsdon.
 * Lord Russell.
 * Sir Robert Sidney.
 * Sir Charles Howard.

* Sir [William] Stourton, Lord Stourton's sonne.
 * Sir Henry Parker.
 * Sir [William] Spencer, Lord Spencer's sonne.
 * Sir Charles Stanhope.
 † Sir William Cavendish, Lord Cavendish's sonne.
 * Sir William Seymor.
 * Sir William Cavendish, Sir Charles's sonne.
 * Sir Henry Portman.

The Combatants were, however, the following well-accustomed Cavaliers ¹:

"TYLT DECIMO-SEXTO REGIS JACOBI.

ERLE OF DORSETT.
 LORD WALDEN.
 LORD HAY.
 SIR THOMAS SOMERSETT.
 SIR THOMAS HOWARD.
 LORD DINGWELL.

ERLE OF MONTGOMERY.
 LORD GERARD.
 LORD DINGWELL.
 SIR SIGSMUND ZINZAN.
 SIR HENRY RICHE.
 MR. HENRY ZINZAN.

EARLE OF ARUNDELL, MARSHALL.

JUDGES.

VISCOUNT LISLE. LORD CAREW. SIR HENRY CARY, CONTROLLER ².

"This bill was often changed by reason that Beaucleare, a Frenche ryder³, appoynted by the Lord Hay to supply his roome, (against all presidents, he him-

¹ All of whom had appeared on the same occasion in 1615-16 (see the Appendix under that date), excepting Sir Thomas Somerset, and he had tilted on the three previous King's Days, and New-year's Day, 1613-14 (see vol. II. pp. 609, 729; this vol. pp. 76, 135). The Lord Gerard here mentioned had at the present date very recently succeeded his father in the Peerage. He had appeared in the lists as Sir Gilbert Gerard on the King's day 1615-16 (see in the Appendix), and at the Running at Ring at Prince Charles's Creation (see p. 215, where for 1618-19 read 1617-18). His father was engaged at the Barriers at the Earl of Essex's Marriage in 1605-6 (see vol. II. p. 25).

² i. e. of the Household,—his recently acquired place; see p. 466.

³ "John Boisclare" had been appointed in August 1610, one of the Esquires of Prince Henry's

self being present,) peremptorily refused to runne in the place and according to the degree of the Lord Hay¹."

A day or two afterwards, Mr. Chamberlain thus described to Sir Dudley Carleton the events of the King's Day:

"This being the King's day, passed without any extraordinary noise of bells or bonfires. The Bishop of London [Dr. John King] preached at Court, and they say spake home, and was very plain in many points, which as it seemed was nothing pleasing, the rather for that he was a full half hour too long. The running at the Tilt in the afternoon was mean and poor, whether you respect the number or cost. There were in all but eleven; the Earls of Dorset and Montgomery; the Lord Walden and Sir Thomas Howard; the Lords Gerrard and Dingwell; Sir Thomas Somerset and Sir Henry Rich; the two Alexanders, and a French Rider belonging to the Prince, who was furnished by the Lord Hay, and supplied his place. The Queen would not appear nor shew herself that day, whether it were that she was not well, or whatsoever else was the cause. The King sent divers, and some of his Bed-chamber, and lastly the Marquis of Buckingham, to persuade and intreat her coming; but all would not persuade. Yet the next day, being our Lady-day, the King went to Denmark House to visit her before his going to Theobalds²."

FREE GIFTS FROM THE EXCHEQUER, 1617-18³. £. s. d.

To the Lady Elizabeth Murray - - - - - 100 0 0

To Francis Earle of Cumberland⁴, in recompence of the losse by him sustained upon the graunt made unto George late Earle of Cumberland in the third yeare of the King, for the Licencing of all manner of Clothes to be transported beyond the seas,—for 19,858 clothes undressed, now restrayned to be transported, which commeth unto (after the rate of two shillings eight pence the cloth) the sum of - - - - - 2647 14

Stables, with a salary of £.50. He occurs in the list of his Highness's Servants as one of his three French Esquires.

¹ From the volume in Camden's autograph, Harl. MSS. 5176. ² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

³ This short list is the last furnished by "Truth brought to Light by Time;" and probably embraces only Free-gifts of the early part of 1617.

⁴ Of whom in p. 391.

FREE-GIFTS, 1617-18.

			475
		£.	s. d.
The Lady Raxboroughe, formerly Lady Dormond ¹	-	- 3000	0 0
To Richard Seimor	-	- 100	0 0
To the late Earl of Somersett to pay his debts	-	- 5083	0 0
To the Lady Walsingham ²	-	- 10	0 0
		<hr/>	<hr/>
		£.10,940	14 8

On the 25th of March, Sir Edward Conway³ was knighted at Whitehall; on the 28th, Sir Henry Palmer, of Kent⁴, at Theobalds; on the 31st, Sir Benjamin Rudyerd⁵, at Whitehall.

¹ See vol. II. p. 748.

² See vol. I. pp. 167, 489; vol. II. 174, 675.

³ Probably son of Sir Edward Conway, knighted by the Earl of Essex at Cadiz in 1596, and afterwards Secretary of State, and Viscount Conway. His son Edward was summoned to Parliament, *vidæ patris*, in 1628; succeeded to his father's titles in 1630; and died in 1655. He was succeeded by his son Edward, who was advanced to the Earldom of Conway in 1679, but with whom all his titles became extinct in 1683.—The "youth Conie," mentioned by Mr. Chamberlain in p. 334 as a person introduced to the Royal favour by the Earl of Buckingham in the summer of 1617, must have been a different person.

⁴ Sir Henry Palmer, son of Henry Palmer who died in 1611, was seated at Howlets in Kent; was Comptroller of the Navy, and Vice-admiral of the Narrow Seas; and died in 1644. Of his family see Hasted's Kent, vol. III. p. 715. His son Henry had his father's place of Comptroller.

⁵ Sir Benjamin Rudyerd, of West Woodhay, Berks, an accomplished Gentleman and an elegant scholar, was a noted Parliamentary speaker in the reign of Charles the First. He pleaded strenuously for the Bishops; one of his speeches in their favour is printed in the Gentleman's Magazine, vol. LX. p. 1011, and others have been published. In 1642 he was one of the leading Patriots, and it is recorded to his honour, that, thinking the King had then made sufficient concessions, he was urgent in persuading the House to an accommodation, and warned them of the miseries of a Civil War. Sir Benjamin also courted the Muses; in 1660 were published in 8vo, "Poems written by William [third] Earl of Pembroke, &c. many of which are answered by way of repartee, by Sir Benj. Rudyerd; with other Poems, written by them occasionally and apart." Ben Jonson, in his Book of Epigrams, has three addressed to Sir Benjamin, the CXX, CXXII, and CXXIII, complimenting him on his "learned muse," his wit in writing, and his candour in criticism. Sir Benjamin was the last Surveyor of the Court of Wards and Liveries, which was abolished in 1646. He was recompensed by Parliament for the loss of his place with £.6000, and a portion of the lands of the Marquis of Worcester. He died May 31, 1658, aged 86, leaving William Rudyerd, Esq. his only son and heir, and was buried at West Woodhay, under a monument erected by his servant John Grant, with an epitaph written by Sir Benjamin himself in his younger years (and printed in Ashmole's Berkshire). Of his portraits see Granger's Biographical History, and some particulars (unnoticed in the last edition) in Gent. Mag. vol. LXXVIII. p. 103; vol. LXXIX. p. 123.

"At the time of the Russian Ambassadors' last appearance in the Councill-chamber," says Sir John Finett, "they had an assignation to be there againe the Wednesday following, but, other businesse then intertaining the Lords beyond expectation, it was deferred for a seven-night longer, when [April 1] I fetcht and brought them, attended as before, through the Park and Galleries to the Chamber next that of ordinary Audiences, where they had not, nor affected, a sight of his Majesty before their Audience of the Councill, as they had done before. Thence I go to acquaint the Lords of their being present there, and returning with answer of their Lordships' readiness to receive them, they would not be persuaded to move thence till some of the Lords should, as at other times, come forth to introduce them, which at last they did, and brought them, giving them the hand of entrance into the Councill-chamber; whence, after they had obtained a promise of a faire end to their negociation, the Lords re-accompanied them to the Chamber where they first received them, and there left them to my conduction¹."

On the 3d and 6th of April, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir John Manwood; and Sir Ralph Burchinshaw², of Ireland. On the 5th, being Easter Sunday, Bishop Andrews preached before his Majesty at that Palace, on 1 Cor. xi. 17.³

On the 8th of April⁴, "the French Ambassador, Monsieur de Mareth, having been detained here by the indisposition of his wife, or rather for some other cause tending to his more faire loose⁵ at his departing, three weeks after he had taken leave of his Majesty⁶, demanded and had another Audience, whereof he had quick dispatch, with no ill countenance from his Majestie, or shew of insatisfaction from himself⁷."

On the 10th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"We were never at so low an ebb for matter of news, especially public; so that we are even faine to set ourselves at work with the poorest entertainment that you have lightly seen or heard of; as on Wednesday with a race of two footmen from St. Alban's to Clerkenwell; the one an Englishman, belonging lately to the Countess of Bedford, but now to the King; the other an Irish youth, who lost

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 53.

² See what Mr. Chamberlain says, p. 478.

³ Printed in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Thirteenth on the Resurrection.

⁴ Camden's Annals.

⁵ See p. 464.

⁶ He had an Audience of leave at Whitehall on the 16th of March. Finett, p. 49.

⁷ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 53.

the day, and I know not how much money laid on his head. The sums no doubt were very great, when the Lord of Buckingham for his part went away with £3000; and it is said for certain there was more than twice as much won and lost that day. The Irish youth serves Sir — Howard, a younger son of the Lord Treasurer; and the general opinion is, that if the race had been shorter, and the weather and ways not so extremely foul, our man had been put to the worse, though he had made good proof of himself heretofore, and is a very lusty able fellow, but carried it now by main strength, so that the other gave over betwixt this and Highgate, when he was not twice his length behind him. The story were not worth telling, but that you may see we have little to do when we are so far affected with these trifles, that all the Court in a manner, Lords and Ladies, and some further off, some nearer, went to see this race; and the King himself almost as far as Barnet; and though the weather was sour and foul, yet he was scant *fiis de bonne mere* that went not out to see, insomuch that it is verily thought there was as many people as at the King's first coming to London; and for the Courtiers on horseback they were so pitifully bewrayed and bedaubed all over, that they could scant be known one from another; besides divers of them came to have falls and other mishaps, by reason of the multitude of horses.

“The King went yesterday to Theobalds, and comes back to-morrow.

“The Queen was yesterday at the Exchange; and though she meant to go privately, yet being discovered, she was no sooner in the Pawn above, than the press grew so great, that they were fain to shut the doors¹.”

On the 12th of April, Sir Thomas Stepney² and Sir Thomas Garton were knighted at Theobalds.

“The Russian Ambassadors having received Letters from their Emperour hastening their return, demanded Audience of his Majesty, and had it the 13th of April, attended to it by me as before. They expected and desired at the same time as at other, when it was always refused or excused, to have a Nobleman to receive them at their coming to Court, but it was before-hand incharged to me to put them from that hope, in regard no other Princes' Ambassadors whatsoever were allowed that honour at private Audiences, but onely at the first and last

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² A younger brother of Sir John Stepney, Bart. (of whom in p. 484). Sir Thomas “was a great Courtier, and travelled into France and other Countries.” Wotton's Baronetage, 1741, vol. I. p. 463.

publicke, and sometimes when they were invited to dine with his Majesty, as they were¹."

On the 20th of April, Mr. Chamberlain again addressed his Correspondent:

"The King hath lately knighted one Barckinshaw; but whether that honour will repair his ears that he hath lost is a question. I hear also that the King hath knighted one Russel², a Muscovy Merchant, who is in speech with Sir Robert Mansfield [Mansel] to buy his place of Treasurer of the Navy; but how the bargain goes on is now doubtful, for that the Lord 'Treasurer [the Earl of Suffolk] is said to cross Sir Robert in his project of being made Vice-admiral.

"The King hath in purpose, presently after St. George's-day, to go to Thetford, from which Journey he hath been much dissuaded, as well in regard of the unseasonable weather as for other reasons³. But it seems he holds on, and means to take Chesterford and Audley End in his way, which by divers is diversely interpreted⁴."

On the 22d, Sir Thomas Bludder⁵ and Sir John Tracy were knighted at Whitehall.

"The 24th, when the Russian Ambassadors should have received an Assignment for their last Audience and finall dismission, but the signification of it having been incharged to no one particular of the Merchants, nor, as it ought to have been, to the Master or Assistant of the Ceremonies, it was forgotten or neglected till the very morning of the day assigned for it; whereof when I, and one Gentleman with me, with only two coaches, as formerly, came to fetch them, they complained as of a disrespect, being their last Audience. Yet they set forth at half an houre past two, that they might be at the Court by three, their hour appointed precisely, and by me observed as punctually, that neither they might stay (against which they ever murmured) for the King, nor the King (which had been most unfit) for them. At the Court-gate they were received by the Lord Gerrard, in the middle of the Court by the Lord Cromwell, an honour done them more than,

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 54.

² A Sir William Russel was, according to Philipot, knighted April 29, nine days after this letter was written.

³ Of those weighty reasons see p. 166. The Journey was given up; see p. 480.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁵ Eldest son of Sir Thomas Bludder, Victualler of the Navy (of whom in vol. I p. 440). History of Surrey, vol. I. p. 317.

for ought I ever heard, to any other Ambassador, and yielded to upon their own and the Merchants' importunity; and upon the top of the Stone Staires by the Earle of Ormond, who, with the two other Lords, conducting them through the Guard-chamber (a different way from what had been before ordered for their passage over the Terras to the Banquetting-house, but suddenly changed with regard to the then appearance of Courtiers, which in that larger roome would have lessened the majesty of that presence), they were received at the Presence-chamber door by the Lord Chamberlain, and brought by him to his Majesty there standing under the State, who, when he had received their thanks, and was passing to his last complement of farewell, they fell earnestly to press his Majesty that his Ambassador then nominate for Muscovy might be sent along in company with them, and with the money granted to be lent them, which was an hundred thousand marks. But the King excusing both, saying he was not yet fully resolved upon the choise of the person for that charge, who must have time he said to put himself to equipage, to this answer they objected their commission and instruction, which they affirmed to have from the Emperor for this purpose,—that, in case they should obtaine the sending back with them of an Ambassador, they should not come away without him; so as, in conclusion, the King upon their much and even unmannerly importunity, denied them not that request also, whereof they knew so well how to serve themselves, as going thence immediately to the Councell, demanding permission for it, but at that very instant they would not let go the hold they had gotten of the King's assent, till they were dismissed with the like from their Lordships of sending the Ambassador in their company, though this could not succeed without great charge and trouble to the Merchants in so long a stay as must be necessary for the preparatives of the till then but privately nominated Ambassador Sir Dudley Diggs. This concluded, they left the Lords, were re-conducted by the three Lords before mentioned to the place of their first reception, and by me to their lodging.

“ When the next moneth began, his Majestie's trouble, the Lords', and the Merchants', ended with the dispatch and departure of these two ceremonious Ambassadors, who content neither with the King's present then sent them, and by me delivered, (having been provided at the Merchants' charge, though presented in his Majestie's name,) and worth about £.600 between them, nor with the Merchants', worth well neere as much, murmured that they could have with them but a third part of 100,000 marks yeilded to be lent their Emperour, and

for which notwithstanding they knew not how to give one mark's worth of sufficient security, &c. They went within a few days after, accompanied with Sir Dudley Diggs, his Majestie's Ambassador to the Emperour of Russia, downe to Gravesend, and thence northward in such ships as the Merchants of the Muscovy Company had provided for their returne, and for the continuance of the re-established traffick of these parts ¹."

On the 25th of April, the King knighted at Whitehall, Sir William St. Leger; on the 28th, 29th, and 30th, at Theobalds, Sir James Reynolds, Sir William Russell ², and Sir Robert Jenkinson.

On the 29th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"On Monday was se'ennight the Queen went from Denmark House to Whitehall with somewhat more than usual state, being accompanied with most of the Nobility about the Court, and some seven or eight-and-twenty coaches. Yesterday she removed to Greenwich, and the King the day before to Theobalds, whence he comes back at the end of the week, and after some little stay here means to settle at Greenwich for some time; so that the Journey to Audley End and Norfolk seems to be quite dasht and out of date.

"St. George's-day passed with much solemnity, the Lords and their Followers being very gay and gallant, specially the Lord of Buckingham, who was very bountiful to forty of his Gentlemen in giving them £.50 a piece to provide themselves, and £.20 a man to ten Yeomen, (which number of fifty they may not exceed by a prescript order taken not long since,) besides a hundred pounds he gave to make a Supper and a Play the next night at the Mitre in Fleet-street ³."

On the 4th, 6th, and 9th of May, Sir Thomas Hawkins, of Kent, Sir William Andrews, and Sir Matthew Boynton ⁴, were knighted at Whitehall. On the latter day the King went to the Queen at Greenwich, where she then kept her Court ⁵.

"On the 13th, Sir John North, K. B. ⁶ brother to my Lord North, relates the sad news to the King about the unfortunate expedition of Sir Walter Raleigh to

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, pp. 54—56.

² See p. 478.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁴ Sir Matthew was knighted preparatory to being advanced to a Baronetcy, which he obtained the 25th of this month. He was the eldest son of Sir Francis Boynton, whom the King knighted at York on his first coming into England, April 17, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 82). Sir Matthew was M. P. for Heydon in the time of the Civil War, and was "one of those the rebels chiefly trusted in Yorkshire." He died in 1646, and was succeeded by his son Francis.

⁵ Camden's Annals.

⁶ See p. 222.

Guiana; his son being slain in the storming of the Spanish fort; Keimis cutting his own throat for grief died; and the fleet dispersed¹.”

On the 17th of May, Charles, second son² to Sir James Ramsay, Lord Viscount Hadington, was Christened in the Chapel at Whitehall, by Dr. Richard Neile, Bishop of Durham. The Gossips were, Prince Charles, the Marquis of Buckingham, and the Countess of Hertford³. There were paid fees for the same service to the Gentlemen of the Chapel, £.5; to the Officers of the Vestry, £.2⁴.

On the 18th, his Majesty knighted, at Whitehall, Sir John Eliot; on the 20th, at Theobalds, Sir Henry Bosville, of Kent; and on the 21st, at Whitehall, Sir Francis Beamont.

On the 24th, being Whitsunday, Bishop Andrews preached before the King at Greenwich, on Acts, ii. 16—21⁵. On the same day his Majesty “put forth an Order to permit every body (as he had before given leave in the county of Lancaster⁶) who should go to Evening Prayer on the Lord’s-day, to divertise themselves with lawful exercises, with leaping, dancing, playing at bowls, shooting with bows and arrows, as likewise to rear May-poles, and to use May-games and Morrice-dancing; but those who refused coming to Prayers, were forbidden to use those sports⁷.”

On the 25th, Sir Matthew Boynton, of Bramston, Yorkshire, Knight⁸, was created a Baronet, being the 101st so honoured.

His Majesty now made some stay at Greenwich; and there knighted, on the 26th of May, Sir Andrew Hume, *Scotus*; on the 31st, Sir George Bowles, the Lord Mayor of London; on the 8th of June, Sir Francis Waineman⁹.

¹ Camden’s Annals.

² Who, as his elder brother James, to whom the King was Godfather (see p. 254), died young.

³ The Earl of Hertford’s second wife, Frances, daughter of Thomas first Viscount Bindon, and widow of Henry Pranell, Esq. of London.

⁴ Malcolm’s *Londinium Redivivum*, vol. IV. p. 275. The sum of “two pounds” is there marked by italic types, in order to distinguish it from the sums of *forty* and *fifty* pounds said in the same place to have been paid on former Christenings and Marriages to the Officers of the Vestry. This is evidently an error for *forty* and *fifty shillings*, and has been unfortunately copied into the present Work, in vol. II. pp. 442, 602, 706; this Volume, pp. 136, 254, 438.

⁵ This Discourse is printed in the Bishop’s “XCVI Sermons,” the Eleventh on the Sending of the Holy Ghost.

⁶ See p. 397.

⁷ Camden’s Annals.

⁸ Of whom in p. 480. The title is now enjoyed by Sir Francis the eighth Baronet.

⁹ Of Caswell, M. P. for Oxfordshire in 1640; father of Francis, created a Baronet in 1662; and

On the 30th of May, "Sir Dudley Carleton, Ambassador to the States General, returned into England ¹."

"On the 9th of June, a Proclamation is published against Sir Walter Raleigh, wherby he is censured for that against all authority, and contrary to his Commission, he had in a hostile manner invaded the Spanish territories in America, and had violated, as much as in him lay, the peace established between the two Princes; that the King did not approve of, but detested such proceeding, and did therefore give full power to all, that they should produce what they knew of this action upon their certain knowledge, that he might be proceeded against according to law, and that those might undergo exemplary punishment who should be convicted of so great wickedness ²."

On the 16th, the King was at Theobalds, and there knighted Sir William Halton and Sir Roger North ³; but on the 22d he was again at Greenwich, where, on that day and the 23d, he dubbed Sir Francis Medcalfe and Sir William Ford.

On the 25th, his Majesty visited Halsted in Kent, where, says Camden, he was "very nobly entertained" by Sir Thomas Watson ⁴, whom he then knighted; and whose granddaughter ⁵ was then presented to his Majesty, holding in her hand, as Dr. Fuller says, "this paper of verses ⁶:"

grandfather to Sir Richard, the second Baronet, who succeeded, according to a special remainder, his kinsman Philip as fourth Viscount Wenman. See Archdall's *Irish Peerage*, vol. IV. p. 285.

¹ Camden's *Annals*. On account of this visit of Sir Dudley to England, we have no more letters addressed to him by Mr. Chamberlain till the 8th of August. ² Camden's *Annals*.

³ Most probably the younger brother of Dudley third Lord North, and of Sir John North, K. B. of whom in p. 222. Roger was a "sea-commander of note, and engaged in making new discoveries for the honour of his country." On the 20th of May 1620, Lord North was "thrown into the Fleet, for persuading his brother Roger to hasten his voyage to the river of the Amazons." Camden.

⁴ Sir Thomas purchased Halsted about 1580, and died Oct. 20, 1621, leaving an only child and heiress Elizabeth, the wife of Sir William Pope, eldest son of the first Earl of Downe, of whom in p. 188. Sir Thomas Watson was a great benefactor to the Church of Halsted, re-building the north chapel, the steeple, porch, and repairing the whole edifice. See Hasted's *Kent*, vol. I. p. 320. The present house at Halsted, now or lately the seat of Peter Cazalet, Esq. has a modern appearance. King James was again there July 21 this year; see p. 497.

⁵ Anne, apparently the eldest child of the couple mentioned in the last note, who are said to have been married in 1615. They had two daughters and three sons. Anne was born at Wroxton in 1617, and was married to Sir Samuel Danvers, of Culworth, Northamptonshire, Baronet. Warton's *Life of Sir Thomas Pope*, p. 444.

⁶ Here printed from a MS. copy in the Cottonian Collection, Titus, C. VII., where it is written on the back of a copy of Sir Walter Raleigh's well-known Apology. Fuller's copy was before introduced

*"Of the Ladye Pope's daughter, presented to the King att Halsteed,
25 Junii 1618.*

"Sir, this my litle Mistris here
Did nere ascend to Peter's chaire,
Nor anye triple Crowne did weare,
And yett she is a POPE.

Noe benefice she ever solde,
Nor pardon, nor dispenst for golde,
She scarcely is a quarter olde,
And yet she is a POPE.

Noe King her feete did ever kisse,
Nor had worse looke from her then this;
Nor doth she hope
To Saint men with a rope,
And yett she is a POPE.

A female POPE, you'll say, a second Joane,
But sure this is POPE INNOCENT, or none!"

On the 26th of June, the King knighted, at Greenwich, Sir William Campion; and was afterwards "entertained most splendidly by the Marquess of Buckingham at Wanstead House, which, as is reported, his Lordship then presented to the King¹."

in vol. I. p. 529, as having been presented to the King at Sir William Pope's at Wroxton in Oxfordshire, in August 1605. This, which was Mr. Warton's conjecture in his "Life of Sir Thomas Pope," I considered very plausible till I found the true date and place in the above-mentioned Cottonian manuscript. The probability of its being the production of Bishop Corbet is not diminished by the transfer of its date to 13 years later; but may be by its removal from the vicinity of Oxford.

¹ Camden's Annals. Neither this anecdote respecting Wanstead, nor that it was for a short time the residence of Sir Thomas Philips, Master of the Rolls (see vol. II. p. 450), is noticed by Morant or Lysons. Whether Camden's information that the Marquis of Buckingham presented the House to the King be correct or not, it is at least certain that the Marquis had it from his Majesty. It appears to have first become Crown property in the time of Henry the Eighth, to whom it was forfeited. Having been the seat of Lord Chancellor Rich and the great Earl of Leicester, (both of whom Queen Elizabeth visited at the place; see her "Progresses," vol. I. p. 93; vol. II. pp. 94, 222,) and some other Courtiers mentioned by Morant, it escheated to the Crown in 1606, on the death of Charles Blount, Earl of Devonshire; and the King visited it in July 1607 (see vol. II. p. 154). Sir Thomas Philips had it by a lease, as he is said to have "taken" it; it was then granted to Villiers; who in 1619 sold it to Sir Henry Mildmay, Master of the Jewel-house (of whom in vol. II. p. 134), who entertained the King there in June that year (see hereafter), but by whom, as one of the Regicides, Wanstead was again forfeited to the Crown. — Old Wanstead House is introduced in the back of a picture of Queen Elizabeth at Welbeck, and there is a very small print of it published by Stent in 1649.

On the 29th of June, Sir William Barnes was knighted at Greenwich.

On the 30th, the King left that place¹, and knighted, at Oatlands, on the same afternoon, Sir John Stepney²; and, on the 4th of July, Sir Edmond Scory.

On the former of those days Mr. Lorkin wrote to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"Upon Friday last at supper, and Saturday last at dinner, my Lord of Buckingham feasted the King and Prince; though the end whereunto it was designed, of reconciling his Highness³, gave it the name of the Prince's Feast. His Majesty then declared himself very highly in favour of the Marquis. In the same room where the King and Prince dined was another board for the Ladies and Lords. My Lady Compton, my Lady Hatton, Sir John Villiers's Lady, my Lady Fielding, and divers others of the same race were there present, all which the King honoured by drinking to them particularly one after another, and by secret messages afterwards, and at the end of dinner rose up, and came personally to the table, and drank a common health to all the Noble Family, which, he professed, he desired to advance above all others. And because of himself there was no doubt,—for, said he, 'I live to that end,'—he assured the like in his posterity's name, that they would so far regard their Father's commandments and instructions, as to advance that House above all others whatsoever⁴."

The following Letter from Prince Charles to the Marquis of Buckingham was written about this period⁵:

"Steenie; Ther is none that knowes me so well as yourselfe, what dewtiefull respect and love I have ever, and shall ever, carrie to the Kinge; and therfor ye may juge what greefe it is to me to have the ill-fortune as that anie of my actions should beare so ill an interpretation, as I fynd by your Letter this message I sent by my Lord Mongomerie has borne. I will no waies stand upon my justification, but desyre that my good meaning may be taken instead of the ill message.

"That which made me thinke that this message would not displease the King,

¹ Camden's Annals.

² Sir John, of Prendergast, was the eldest son of Alban Stepney, Esq. Registrar of the Diocese of St. David's. He was created a Baronet Nov. 24, 1621 (see under that date), and was succeeded by his son John. Of his family see Wotton's Baronetage, 1741, vol. I. p. 464.

³ This does not relate, as Mr. Birch hints in a MS. note, to any quarrel between the Prince and the Duke of Buckingham, but to an offence which the Prince had given his father,—the subject of the subsequent letter of his Highness.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

⁵ The original autograph is in Harl. MSS. 6986.

was the command ye know he gave a good whyle ago that I should use all the menes I coud to make the Queene make a will, wherby she should make over to me her jewels¹; therfor I sent to have the King's aprobaton of that which I thought he had desyred, and therfore I thought he would rather be glad then anie way displeased with the message. My meaning was never to clame anie thing as of right, but to submit my selfe as wel in this as in all other things to the King's pleasure. It doth greeve me much, that the King should be so much mouved with it as you say he is, for the least show of his displeasure would make me leave to medle or thinke of anie such thing anie more, without showing himselfe openlie so angrie with me.

"To conclude, I pray you to commend my most humble service to his Majestie, and tel him that I am verri sorri that I have done anie thing may offend him, and that I will be content to have anie pennance inflicted upon me, so he may forgive me, althought I had never a thought nor never shall have to displease him, yet I deserve to be punnished for my ill-fortune. So hoping never to have occasion to wryt to you of so ill a subject againe, but of manie better, I rest, your treu constant loving friend,

CHARLES P.

"I had written to the King before I receaved yours, but I hope you will mende anie thing that is amisse in the other with this, for I did not thinke the Kinge had beene so angrie before I receaved yours."

On the first of July, Dame Mary, wife of Sir Thomas Compton, Knight, widow of Sir George Villiers, Knight, and mother of the Marquis of Buckingham, was created, by patent, Countess of Buckingham for life².

On the 5th, James Baron Hay of Sawley was created, by patent, Viscount Doncaster, co. York³.

About the same time, says Camden, "Randal Mac Surly⁴ returned into Ireland to be created Viscount Dunluse."

¹ Of the disposition of the Queen's Jewels, the subject of the King's present displeasure, see more after her Majesty's death.

² The Countess of Buckingham, of whom in pp. 19, 175, died in 1632.

³ See vol. II. p. 103; and hereafter, under Sept. 13, 1622.

⁴ Randal Sorley Mac Donnell, descended from the Scottish Lords of the Isles. He was advanced to the Earldom of Antrim, Dec. 12, 1620. In 1643 the Marquisate of Antrim was conferred on his son, which became extinct in 1682; in 1789 it was conferred again on the sixth Earl, but all the titles became extinct on that Nobleman's death in 1791; except a new Earldom which had been con-

His Majesty next "diverted himself with hunting at Windsor¹," where he knighted, on the 5th of July, Sir Francis Ashley²; on the 6th, Sir James Kirtton and Sir Edward Morley; on the 7th, Sir Francis Wiat, of Kent; and on the 8th, Sir Charles North³. "He returned to Whitehall, and the next day went to Wanstead⁴."

By patent, dated Wanstead, July 11, Sir Francis Bacon, Lord Chancellor, was created Baron of Verulam⁵.

"On the 12th of July, the Treasurer [the Earl of Suffolk] is accused of mismanagement, or mal-administration in the business of the Exchequer⁶."

On the 14th, Mr. Lorkin again wrote to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"The next week the Prince removes to Richmond, and after some four or five days there, begins a little Progress by himself to Chertsey, Bagshot, Windsor, and then after meets the King⁷."

On the 15th, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir William Wendy and Sir John Price.

"On the 16th, Didacus Sarmiento, Count of Gondomare, the King of Spain's Ambassador, departs. In his journey he is entertained by the Lords Tenham and Wotton. He sets sail on the 20th, with the Popish Priests, whom, upon his earnest request, the King discharged out of prison⁸."

"On the 18th, Humfreys, Secretary to Viscount Wallingford, rifling his coffers, is committed to prison. He accuses the Treasurer and others of bribery.

"The Queen removes from Greenwich. The King comes from Theobalds to London.

ferred on him in 1785, with remainder to his female issue, and is now (1826) enjoyed by his daughter.

¹ Camden's Annals.

² Who had been Reader at the Middle Temple in 1610, and had been, without any others, called to be a Serjeant-at-law, Feb. 15, 1615. He was about this time appointed Steward of the Marshalsea of the King's Household; and in the 1st of Charles was made one of the King's Serjeants, and so continued till his death, at Serjeants' Inn, Nov. 28, 1635. He was buried at Dorchester, where he was Recorder. See Hutchins's History of Dorsetshire, vol. II. pp. 22, 41, 260.

³ Probably the second son of Dudley third Lord North, and nephew of Sir Roger, noticed in p. 482. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. IV. p. 465.

⁴ Camden's Annals.

⁵ Rymer's Fœdera, vol. XVII. p. 17.

⁶ Camden's Annals.

⁷ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

⁸ Camden's Annals.

"On the 19th of July, the Earl of Suffolk, Treasurer of England, is dismissed from his place by taking his staff from him; is accused of bribery, after having performed that office four years and ten days; and Sir John Bingley, his under officer¹, is committed to prison²."

On the 20th, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Thomas Wilson, Sir Edward Wardour, and Sir Henry Spiller, and then proceeded on his Western Progress.

On the 21st, the King was again at Sir Thomas Watson's at Halsted (see p. 482), and there knighted Sir Charles Pleydell³.

"On the 23d, the Earl of Suffolk, most of his servants being turned off, departed with his Countess from London⁴."

On the 25th, Thomas Lyttelton, of Frankley, Worcestershire, Esquire⁵, was created a Baronet, being the 102d so honoured.

¹ See p. 465.

² The event thus recorded in Camden's *Annals* may be briefly explained by an extract from Carte: "The King's necessities caused an enquiry into the management of the Treasury, and the Earl of Suffolk was accused of having embezzled a great part of the money received from the Dutch for the Cautionary Towns, which was destined to the payment of the army in Ireland, the Fleet, the Artillery, and other necessary services. He was, either for this reason, or because he was father-in-law to the late Favourite, deprived of his post of Treasurer. The Earl was, in the general opinion of the world, deemed guiltless of any considerable misdemeanour; but his Countess had rendered herself very odious by extorting money from all persons who had any matters to be dispatched at the Treasury; Sir John Bingley, the Treasurer's Remembrancer in the Exchequer, being the chief agent in making her bargains. After several hearings in the Court of Star-chamber, this last was fined £2,000 as the Earl and Countess were £30,000, and all committed, Bingley to the Fleet, and the other two to the Tower during pleasure. They were not long detained in prison; Bingley's resignation of his post (which was given to Robert Pye, one of Buckingham's retainers,) procuring his liberty, and Suffolk being in a few days enlarged by the King's favour. As he pleaded inability to pay his fine, a Commission was issued for the Archbishop and others to enquire into his estate; and it was probably to defeat this enquiry that he made a great part of it over to his son-in-law the Earl of Salisbury, and his brother Sir William Howard. Nothing could incense the King more than the shewing any distrust of his clemency; he resented this practice exceedingly; and yet reduced his fine to £7,000, which was given to Sir John Ramsay, Viscount Haddington. The Lord Walden, the Earl's eldest son, who was Captain of the Band of Pensioners, and his younger brother, who had a post in the Prince's Household, were forced to resign their employments, but were soon restored."

³ Sir Charles Pleydell was of Midgehill, Wilts, and died in 1642, leaving many children. See the pedigree of the family in Hutchins's *Dorset*, vol. II. p. 189.

⁴ Camden's *Annals*.

⁵ Of an ancient family whose ancestor married the heiress of Frankley, temp. Henry III. Sir Thomas was the eldest son of John Lyttelton, Esq. who, being engaged in the Earl of Essex's con-

The Churchwardens of St. Margaret, Westminster, "paid for ringing on the King's birth-day, the 29 of July, 3s."

On the first of August, the King knighted Sir Rawlyn Bussey, at "Bruncham¹."

"At Salisbury, on the 2d of August 1618, in the Bishop's Great Hall there, were created Robert Viscount Lisle, Erl of Lester², and William Lord Compton, Erle of Northampton³, as followeth:

"The Kinge not lying in the Bishop's Pallace, appointed the Great Hall within the said Bishop's Pallace to be prepared for the Creation aforesaid, which was hanged with arras, and a cloth of estate set up. The roome beinge furnished, the King's Majestie came privately from the howse of Mr. Sadler, where he lay, and about four of the clock in the afternoon placed himself in the said rome under the State. All things being thus in redines, the Vicount Lisle first was brought unto the King's presence, in his surcot and hood only, bare-headed, accompanied with theis States and Officers as followeth: First, the Officers of Armes in their roabes; then Garter caryed the patent in his hand; next to him followed the Erle of Montgomery, who bare the mantell; the Erle of Arundell bare the sword; th' Erle of Pembrok, Lord Chamberlein, bare the cap and coronet; the Vicount himself, supported on the right hand by the Marquis or Buckingham, and on the left hand by the Vicount Doncaster; and thus coming

spiry, forfeited his estate, and died in the King's Bench prison in 1601. On the accession of James his attainder was reversed, and his estates restored to his family; his son Sir Thomas was Sheriff of Staffordshire in 1613, and M. P. for Worcestershire in the Parliaments of 1614, 1621, 1624, 1625, and 1640. He was knighted at Whitehall Nov. 9 in the present year. During the Civil War he adhered to the King's party, and had the chief command in Worcestershire, being in 1642 first Commissioner of Array, and Colonel of all the horse and foot raised in the County. In 1645 he was taken at Bewdley and confined in the Tower, while his estate was put under heavy sequestration, and his seat at Frankley, having been garrisoned, was burnt to the ground by Prince Rupert, on his being obliged to evacuate it. Sir Thomas, having obtained his liberty after some years' confinement, died at Newcastle house in Clerkenwell, Feb. 22, 1649-50, aged 57, and was interred in Worcester Cathedral next to his ancestor Judge Lyttelton. He was succeeded by Sir Henry, the fifth but eldest surviving of his twelve sons.—Sir George, the fifth Baronet, was created Lord Lyttelton of Frankley in 1757, and the Baronetcy is now vested in George-Fulke, fourth Baron and eighth Baronet.

¹ So spelt in Philipot; the real or modern nome has not been ascertained.

² Of whom see p. 170, and a short memoir in vol. I. p. 510.—The title became extinct with Joceline the seventh Earl in 1743.

³ Of whom in p. 435, and a short memoir in vol. I. p. 477. — Charles the present and first Marquis of Northampton is the ninth Earl.

into the Presence¹ doing their obeysances, brought the Vicount to the King, who [the Vicount] kneeled downe. Garter delivered the patent to the Vice-chamberleyn, the Vice-chamberleyn to the King, who delivered it to Sir Robert Nanton, Principall Secretary, who on his knee read the said pattent with a loud voyce; and at the word ‘Creamus’ the King with the Lords put on his mantell, and at the words ‘cincturum gladii’ they girded the Sword about his neck, and at the words ‘cappe et circuli aurei’ they put on his cap and coronet; the Erles who attended being in the robes, and swords girt to them, put on their caps and coronets likewise. When the patent by Mr. Secretary was quite out, then the new-created Erle gave to the King great thanks upon his knee, and afterwards stood by on the right-hand of his Majestie in his robes and cap, untill theis Nobles who brought him went to fetch the other Lord, who was brought in and created in the same manner as before. After all, the trumpets at the lower end of the Hall sounded, and so proceeded sounding before the Harolds and Nobles, and brought the Erles to their Chamber, wher they were to rest till supper; who proceeded in this manner: The Vicount Dancaster formest [foremost]; then the two new Erles together; the Erle of Montgomery and the Erle of Arundell; and the Lord Chamberleyn and the Marquis of Buckingham.

“Supper being ready served up into the Great-chamber at the Bishop’s Pallace, the Lords sate down in their robes and coronets according to their estates, onely the two new Erles sate upmost.

“The second course coming up, the Heralds being ready in their roabes of armes, within the Great-chamber, proceeded before it, who caused the Gentlemen Ushers to make a large waye; Garter being formest, ascending to the end of the table, after their obeysance, cryed his larges, and then proclaimed the King’s state in Latten, French, and Englishe. Then he proclaimed the States of the two new Erles in French and English.

“Robert Lord Sidney, of Penshurst, Vicount Lisle, Erle of Lester, Lord

¹ “There was a question made whether the Erles shold go into the King’s presence with their cappes and coronets, whereof some doubt was made; but concluded that they ought not to put them on untill such tyme as the new created Erle was invested in his. There was likewise another question, whether the Erle of Lester, being a Knight of the Garter, should go in with his collar; it was concluded he should not, but [that it] should be caryed and put on after his mantell. One other question, whether he should put on his whood before he came into the King’s presence; which was resolved he shold, by reason of trouble before the King.”

Chamberlen to the Queen, and [late] Lord Governor of Vlushing, Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, and one of the Privy Counsell to his Majestie.

"William Lord Compton, Erle of Northampton, Lord President of Wales¹."

On the 6th of August, Robert third Lord Rich² was created, by patent, Earl of Warwick; and on the 7th, William first Lord Cavendish³ was created, also by patent, Earl of Devonshire.

On the 8th, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The two Earls of Leicester and Northampton were created with all the ceremonies and solemnity on Sunday last at Salisbury. The other two must receive their renewed honours by patent, which hath been hitherto delayed for that Clare⁴ was thought too honourable a title, being usually bestowed upon none but the King's sons, and those in rank before York and Lancaster⁵. Whereupon Sir Robert Rich hath been forced to make a journey to Court, where he hath prevailed so far as to procure his father to be made Earl of Warwick.

"The Lady Compton is made Countess of Buckingham, and hath got the start of these states, her patent bearing date the first of July. But it doth pose our Heralds how her husband⁶ should have no part in this preferment.

"Sir Walter Raleigh was at Salisbury, but he had no audience either of the King or Council, by reason he is so sick and weak, and withall so broken out all over, that it is verily thought to be a leprosy, or else that he hath taken a dram of

¹ From the Lansdown MSS. no. 255.—The accompanying Warrant appears to belong to the Narration, which was probably drawn up by one of the Heralds hereafter-mentioned: "We will and comand you forthwith, upon the sight hereof, to deliver, or cause to be delivered, unto our trusty and wel-beloved servants, Henry Chitting, Chester, one of our Heraulds of Armes, one roabe of the armes of our dominions, embrodered upon sattin, with cloth of gold, in the same fashion and of the like length and bredth, and lyned with like stuff as hath bene accustomed; and unto Phillip Holland, Portcullys, one of our Pursyvants of Armes, one roabe of our armes painted with fine gold in oyle upon damask, and to be furnished and made up as hath beene accustomed; and theis our l'es shalbe your sufficient warrant and dischargd in that behest. Given under our signet."

² Of whom in vol. II. p. 334.—The Earldom became extinct in 1759, on the death of Edward eighth Earl of Warwick and fifth Earl of Holland.

³ A short memoir of whom is given in vol. I. p. 511.—William Spencer, the present and sixth Duke of Devonshire is ninth Earl.

⁴ The title desired by Lord Rich.

⁵ Camden, in his Annals, adds a more important reason, — that the Honour of Clare had been before granted to the Queen. After her death Lord Holles obtained the Earldom, Nov. 2, 1624.

⁶ Sir Thomas Compton, knighted March 4, 1606-7, next brother of the Earl of Northampton.

something to do himself harm. He came to town, they say, yesternight, to his old habitation in the Tower, but not to his old lodging, which was taken up a good while since by the Count and Countess of Somerset.

"Mrs. Vavasor, old Sir Henry Lee's woman¹, is to be called in question, for having two husbands now alive. Young Sir Henry Lee, the Wild-oats of Ireland², hath obtained the confiscation of her, if he can prove it without touching her life³."

On the 10th of August, the King knighted, at Salisbury, Sir George Wroughton and Sir Anthony Bugg. On the 11th⁴, he went from that City to Cranborne⁵ in Dorsetshire, the seat of William Cecil, second Earl of Salisbury⁶; and on the 14th, Sir Hercules Pawlet⁷, there received the honour of knighthood.

On the 12th, Sir Walter Raleigh, being examined about his escape, confessed that, premeditating this flight, he had trespassed highly against the King. By his unadvised Counsel in invading Guiana, and the tumult in the Spanish Ambassador's house, some conceived the hopes of a match with the daughter of Spain to be mightily extenuated and lessened; for the King of Spain proposed nothing else to himself by matching and disposing of his children into England and France than by joining those Kingdoms to him in affinity to disjoin and separate them from the United Provinces, and consequently the more easily to reduce them to obedience. The Chancellor and other Commissioners often meet, and examine Sir Walter Raleigh⁸."

¹ Of whom in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. II. p. 46; and of whom Queen Anne took much notice on a visit to Sir Henry at his "Little Rest" in 1608; see this work, vol. II. p. 209. Her old paramour had died in 1611.

² The first Baronet; cousin and heir of the old Sir Henry; see vol. II. p. 429.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁴ Camden's Annals.

⁵ Cranborne Manor-house was built on the site and from the remains of a Priory, probably by the first and great Earl of Salisbury. "It is embattled, but not large; and appears to be much less extensive than the antient building. The principal or south front is approached by a square court, with two square towers at the gate. Both fronts have an arcade of three arches, and over the south arcades are two rounds, in one of which is carved a balance, in the other a figure of a woman holding an ear of corn, or a palm-branch, — emblems of Justice and Plenty. The hall is the only good room in the house. The bailiff of the manor is at present its only inhabitant." Hutchins's History of Dorsetshire, vol. III. p. 56, where is a folio view of the front of the mansion.

⁶ Of whom see vol. I. p. 478; vol. II. p. 602.

⁷ Natural son of William third Marquis of Winchester; see vol. I. p. 219.

⁸ Camden's Annals.

On the 20th of August, the King was at Beaulieu, the seat of Henry Wriothesley, third Earl of Southampton¹, as appears by a letter from the Marquis of Buckingham to the Lord Chancellor Bacon, written by command of his Majesty, and dated "from Bewly²."

On the 21st, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The King draws hitherward, and will be at Farnham³ the next week. We hear he was lately distempered for two or three days by some surfeit of fruit⁴."

On the 29th, the King was at Tichborne, the seat of Sir Benjamin Tichborne⁵, where his Majesty knighted Sir Thomas Timperley.

On the 2d of September, our Monarch knighted, at Aldershot⁶ near Farnham, Sir Benjamin Tichborne, third son of his late host⁷; Sir John Chapman; and Sir Richard Uvedale.

On returning from the Progress, the King went to Windsor, and from thence by the way of Westminster to Wansted. The Queen was indisposed at Oatlands⁸.

On the 22d, Sir John Smith was knighted at Whitehall.

On the 27th, the King was at Havering; then making a journey to Theobalds, hunted there⁹. On the 30th, he knighted Sir William Drewry, at Hampton Court; on the first of October, Sir George Fennor, at Hampton Court; and on the 3d, Sir Thomas Cleark, at Theobalds.

On the 13th, says Sir John Finett, "a Chiaus, or messenger from Turkey, being arrived at Gravesend, was received there by the Lord [late Sir Robert] Rich, accompanied with his brother Sir Henry Rich, the Master of the Ceremonies [Sir Lewis Lewkenor], my selfe, and halfe a score other Gentlemen. That Lord entertained noblie, at his own charge, all the Company; went the next morning from his own inn to the Chiauses, and thence conducting him to the King's barge, and two others come down for his service, and landing him at Tower Wharfe, we there entred the Lord's coach, and other of his friends and

¹ See vol. II. p. 669.

² Printed in Bacon's Works, vol. III. p. 552.

³ The Bishop of Winchester's; see p. 99.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁵ See p. 98.

⁶ We shall find the King again at Aldershot, August 17, 1622.

⁷ This Sir Benjamin was twice elected M. P. for Petersfield temp. Charles the First. He died without issue.

⁸ Camden's Annals.

⁹ Ibid.

of the City, (the King's coach not then serving,) and brought him to his lodgings, defrayed, as was also his diet during his stay here, by the Turkey Merchants¹."

On the 14th of October, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Earl of Arundel with Inigo Jones the Surveyor made a step from Theobalds to Ware Park, where they were so well pleased with the grapes and peaches, that ever since their being there the King hath sent duly twice a week for that kind of provision, which is sent with all readiness, and will ever be taken for a favour, unless perhaps some others hereafter may, under that title, make it a custom²."

"The Queen hath been much troubled with bleeding of late, insomuch that she was one night almost suffocated in her sleep, and physicians sent for in all haste³."

Again, on the 24th of the same month:

"The King continues at Royston. The Queen begins to recover, and means to be here this week, if her strength serve. Once there is hope, she cannot do amiss that has so many good wishes⁴."

On the same day, "Sir Walter Raleigh is given to understand by the Commissioners, that it was the King's intent that he should be put to death, and that therefore he should prepare himself for the same. On the 28th, he is brought to the King's Bench bar, that he might speak, if he had any thing to say, why the sentence of death pronounced against him in 1603 should not be put in execution. On the 29th, he was beheaded in the 66th year of his age⁵."

The time of Sir Walter Raleigh's execution, observes Aubrey, "was contrived to be on my Lord Mayor's-day (the day after St. Simon and St. Jude,) that the Pageants and fine Shows might avocate and draw away the people from beholding the Tragedie of the gallantest Worthie that England ever bred⁶." Sir Sebastian Harvey, Ironmonger⁷, was this year sworn Lord Mayor; but no printed account of his Pageants has been discovered.

On the 31st, the King returned to Whitehall towards the evening⁸.

¹ Philoxenis, p. 57.

² The King visited Ware in person in April 1619; see hereafter.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁴ Ibid.

⁵ Camden's Annals.

⁶ Aubrey's MSS. in Ashmolean Museum.

⁷ See p. 178.

⁸ Camden's Annals.

On the first of November, says Sir John Finett, "an Ambassador from Venice, Seignior Donati, being come to reside here in place of Seignior Contereni re-called by the Republique, was brought to his first Audience by the Lord Clifford, the Master of the Ceremonies [Sir Lewis Lewkenor], seven or eight other nominated Gentlemen, and myselfe as voluntary. The King's coach, the Lord Marquesse of Buckingham's, and three other serving, he was taken into them at the house of his predecessor mentioned, and their places taken up by themselves in the coach, both on one side, the antienter having the right hand next the horses¹, and other side left to the Lord Clifford and the Master of the Ceremonies. There came with us fifteen or sixteen coaches to the Court. The Ambassadors guided over the Terras to the Councell-chamber, and after halfe an hour's repose there, back to the Guard-chamber, were at the Presence-doore received, and introduced by the Lord Chamberlaine for their Audience, &c. This Ambassador Donati was not long after revoked by his Prince for misdemeanors in his charge whilst he was Ambassador in Savoy, and Seignior Geronimo Landi sent to reside here in his stead²."

On the third³ of November, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Edward Stafford; and the Turkish Ambassador had "his publique Audience of his Majesty in the Banquetting-house, purposely hung for him with rich hangings, when his Majesty touched one of his Followers, said to be his Son, for cure of the King's Evill, using at it the accustomed ceremony of signing the place infected with the crosse, but no prayers before or after⁴."

"On the 6th, the King went to visit the Queen lying sick of a dropsie, and returns to Westminster toward the evening⁵."

On the 7th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King came hither this day se'ennight, and the next day gave Audience to the Venetian Ambassador, who went through the Town, accompanied with thirty coaches, and puts on all the pomp and shew he can to uphold their declining reputation. He had Audience again the next day; and on the Tuesday the Turkish Chiaus went to the Court; but how he carried himself, or what his errand is, I know not; but we say you are likely to have him shortly in Holland.

¹ The seats being placed lengthways, as in the modern Sociable.

³ Camden's Annals.

² Finetti Philoxenis, p. 58.

⁴ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 58.

⁵ Camden's Annals.

"On Wednesday the King went to visit the Queen at Hampton Court; but came back at night; and the next day, being the 5th of November, the Bishop of Winchester [Dr. Andrews] made an excellent Sermon¹ at Court upon the 31st verse of the ninth Chapter of Esther²."

On the 9th of November, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Thomas Lyttelton, who had been recently created a Baronet³; on the 10th, his Majesty went from London to Theobalds⁴; and on the 11th and 12th, he knighted, at that place, Sir Edward Sulliard and Sir Shilston Calmady.

On the 13th, the King removed to Royston⁵; on the 18th, we find him at Newmarket⁶.

On the 22d, Sir Philip Mainwaring⁷ wrote as follows, from Newmarket, to the Earl of Arundel:

"The Prince his birth-day hathe beene solemnized heare by those few Marquises and Lords which found themselves heare, and, to supplie the want of the Lords, Knights and Squires were admitted to a consultation, wherein it was resolved that such a number should meete at Gamiges, and bring every man his dish of meate. It was left to their owne choyces what to bring; some strove to be substantiall, some curios, and some extravagant. Sir George Goring's invention bore away the bell; and that was foure huge brawny piggs, pipeinge hott, bitted and harnised with ropes of sarsiges, all tyde to a monstrous bag-pudding. The King takes no more notice of the blasinge starre⁸ then he hath alwayes done of the day-starre, nor will acknowledge it for any other.

"This morning the King knighted the new Governor of Virginia, Sir Edward [George] Yardley⁹, who, upon a longe discourse with the Kinge, doth prove very understandinge. Amongst many other things, he tould the King that the people of that country doe beleve the resurrection of the body; and that, when the

¹ Printed in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the 10th on the Gunpowder Treason.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

³ See p. 487.

⁴ Camden's Annals.

⁵ Letter from the Marquis of Buckingham, Bacon's Works, vol. III. p. 556.

⁶ Ibid.

⁷ Seventh son of Sir Randall Mainwaring the elder, of Over Peover in Cheshire. He was Secretary to the Earl of Strafford in Ireland, and died unmarried, Aug. 2, 1661.

⁸ A comet which appeared at this time, and of which a "Description" was published in 1619 by the celebrated astronomer Bainbridge. See Chalmers's Biog. Diet. It is also alluded to in p. 513; and was at first said to have predicted the Queen's death, and afterward, the troubles of Bohemia.

⁹ Philipot makes him knighted Nov. 30, which is undoubtedly wrong, as is confirmed by Mr. Chamberlain's letter, p. 496.

bodye dyes, the soule goes into certaine faire pleasant fields, there to solace it self untill the end of the world, and then the soule is to retourne to the body againe, and they shall live both together happily and perpetually. Hereupon the Kinge inferred that the Gosple must have been heretofore knowne in that countrie, though it be lost, and this fragment only remaynes ¹."

On the 23d of November, the King knighted, at Newmarket, Sir Richard Saltonstall ², Sir George Ellis, and Sir Robert Kemp; and, on the 24th, Sir Benjamin Thornborow.

On the 25th, Sir John Digby, Vice-chamberlain of the King's Household, (and afterwards Earl of Bristol,) ³ was created, by patent, Baron Digby of Sherborne, co. Dorset. A day or two after, he "made a great Supper and a Play at Whitehall, to the best part of the great Lords and Ladies about the Town ⁴."

On the 28th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"We hear nothing from Newmarket, but that they devise all the means they can to make themselves merry; as of late there was a feast appointed at a farmhouse not far off, whither every man should bring his dish. The King brought a great chine of beef, the Marquis of Hamilton four pigs incircled with sausages, the Earl of Southampton two turkies, another six partridges, and one a whole tray full of buttered eggs; and so all passed off very pleasantly.

"Here be two or three ships ready for Virginia, and one Captain Yardley, a mean fellow by way of provision, goes as Governor, and to grace him the more, the King knighted him this week at Newmarket; which hath set him up so high, that he flaunts it up and down the street in extraordinary bravery, with fourteen or fifteen fair liveries after him ⁵."

The King spent, at this time, several weeks at Newmarket. He knighted there, on the 30th of November, Sir Nathaniel Napper; on the first of December, Sir Thomas Deerham; on the 4th, Sir John Hare; on the 5th, Sir Philip Bedingfield; on the 11th, Sir Robert Willoughby; on the 12th, Sir Francis Leigh; and on the 15th, Sir John Brewes.

¹ Lodge's Illustrations of British History from the Howard Papers.

² See p. 449.

³ Of whom see a short memoir in vol. II. p. 56. See also this volume, pp. 135, 136, and of his acquisition of Sherborne in p. 192. — He had returned from his third Spanish embassy in the beginning of May this year.

⁴ Letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir D. Carleton, Dec. 3.

⁵ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 41^a4.

On the 19th of December, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The Commissioners of the States¹ returned this day se'nnight from the *voyage* to Newmarket, where they had reasonable entertainment, though nothing so much as was first bruited. They had otherwise a journey bad enough by reason of the foul weather and the overthrowing of two of their coaches. And withall the King, as I hear, forebore not to tell them their own. They were with the Council at Whitehall on Tuesday.

"The Lord Hay or Doncaster buried his young son² at St. Clement's this week, by night, yet with some solemnity. It is grown altogether in fashion to bury now by night; as on Sunday last the Lady Haddington³ had a solemn convey of 100 coaches in attendance, that accompanied her from Westminster to Whitechapel, in her way to [his father's at] New Hall in Essex, where she is to be buried. In this troop, besides the Countesses of Bedford, Exeter, and Devonshire, was the Lady Verulam, with a world of other Ladies.

"The Countess of Salisbury⁴ the Friday before made a great Feast and a Play, though her husband were absent at Court.

"The King comes this day to Theobalds, and on Monday or Tuesday to Whitehall.

"To-morrow is a Christening at Court of Sir Patrick Murray's son⁵, where the Prince, the Duke of Lenox, and the Countess of Montgomery, are to be Gossips⁶."

On the 21st, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Nathaniel Barnardiston and Sir Stephen Soame, and the same day returned to London⁷.

On the 22d, the Queen continuing sick at Hampton Court, the King paid her a visit, and returned to London in the evening⁸.

¹ "Nov. 26, Deputies from the States came to London to negotiate some affairs. Dec. 7, they go to Newmarket, where the Court now is." Camden's Annals.

² It might be supposed that this was the first offspring of his Lordship's new alliance (of which in p. 445); but it is said in the Peerage that he had no issue by his second wife; and that his only issue by his wife was James, who succeeded him, and a daughter who died young. See Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 46.

³ Of whom in vol. II. pp. 176, 348.

⁴ Of whom in vol. II. p. 245 (there called the Viscountess Cranborne).

⁵ Of the Christening of his elder brother James, so named after the King his Godfather, see p. 439. This child was doubtless named Charles after the Prince his Sponsor, and probably (as Lord Hay's son above-mentioned) died young, as he is not to be found in Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 601.

⁶ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁷ Camden's Annals.

⁸ Ibid.

On the 24th of December, Sir Francis Leigh, of Newnham, Warwickshire, Knight, (afterwards Earl of Chichester,) ¹ was created a Baronet, being the 103d advanced to that dignity.

On the 25th, Bishop Andrews resumed his post ², as preacher on Christmas-day before the King at Whitehall. His text was from Luke ii. 12, 13. ³

"On the 27th, Baron à Donaw, Ambassador from the Confederate Princes of Germany, is admitted to Audience, who informed the King of abundance of things relating to the affairs of Germany and the Bohemian troubles.

"On the 31st, the Deputies of the States have their Audience; they desire that nothing may be yet done as to the Herring-fishing, seeing it is the greatest support of their Commonwealth, and the only succour and relief of the common people, and that there were now great troubles among them ⁴."

On the first of January 1618-19, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Francis Kinaston ⁵; and on the 2d, Sir Walter Heveningham and Sir Robert Mordant.

On the latter day, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King came hither on Thomas's-day, and the Wednesday following went to visit the Queen at Hampton Court, whither he went again on Monday, the last of our Christmas holidays. We begin now to apprehend the Queen's danger, when the physicians begin to speak doubtfully; but I cannot think the case desperate as long as she was able to attend a whole Sermon on Christmas-day,

¹ See vol. II. p. 517. Of the two Sir Francis Lees there mentioned, the Sir Francis who was now advanced to a Baronetcy, (and subsequently to the Peerage,) was probably the son, he being styled Knight only, not Knight of the Bath, in the lists of Baronets created by James the First.

² He had either not preached on the Christmas-day preceding, or his Sermon then preached was omitted when his "XCVI Sermons" were printed. There is in that volume, a regular series of discourses delivered by him on that day, from 1605 to 1624 inclusive, excepting only the years 1608, 1617, and 1621.

³ This Discourse is the Twelfth on the Nativity in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons."

⁴ Camden's Annals.

⁵ An eminent poet and wit, descended from an antient family at Otely in Shropshire, and son of Sir Edward Kinaston, knighted in 1586. He entered as a Gentleman Commoner at Oriel College, Oxford, in 1601, being then fourteen, and was afterwards M. A. of both Oxford and Cambridge. He became an Esquire of the Body to King Charles, and was the first Regent of "the college or academy called the Museum Minervæ." He published the Constitutions of that literary society; a Latin version of Chaucer's *Troilus and Cressida*; and some English Poems; of which see Wood's *Athenæ*, by Bliss, vol. III. col. 38.

preached by the Bishop of London¹ in her inner chamber. Yet I hear the Courtiers lay about them already, and plot for leases of her land, for the keeping of Somerset-house and the rest, for implements and moveables, as if they were to divide a spoil. But I hope they may come as short as they that made account of the bear's skin; yet we cannot be out of fear till we see her past the top of May-hill²."

On the 6th of January, being Twelfth-night, was performed, for the first time, Ben Jonson's Masque of "Pleasure Reconciled to Virtue"³:"

¹ Dr. John King; see vol. II. pp. 587, 726.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

³ A passage in the Antimasque, p. 510, where one of the Welchmen is made to say that in this Masque the Prince of Wales "for the first time played dance," induces me to doubt whether it was not really produced in 1617-18, and not 1618-19. In that case the "Vision of Delight" must change place with it, and be transferred to the present year, in contradiction to the arrangement of the two Masques in Jonson's Works, and the date of 1617 be attached to "The Vision of Delight," and 1619 to "Pleasure Reconciled to Virtue." The matter stands thus. We have the testimony of Sir John Finett and Mr. Chamberlain, that the Prince was a Performer in the Christmas Masque of 1617-18, and the former specifically states that "it was his first exercise in that kinde." Now what Jenkin says (p. 510) certainly seems to point to the same circumstance; and, moreover, the list of Masquers given in p. 513 agrees (as respects the Marquess of Hamilton and Sir Gilbert Hoghton) better with Mr. Chamberlain's list of 1617-18 (p. 464) than with that Mr. C. gives in 1618-19 (p. 521). Two passages thus combine to make this transposition of the Masques appear plausible; and they are seconded by the high probability that Jonson should have produced the Antimasque "for the Honour of Wales" on occasion of the Prince of Wales's first appearance as a Masquer. This has occurred to me too late to make the proposed re-arrangement; which, if carried into effect, would, as before-mentioned, be in direct variance to the arrangement of the Masques in Jonson's Works, on which I have hitherto relied; but still the presumed error may be attributable to these Masques having been first printed in the edition of 1641, published after Jonson's death, the carelessness of which is frequently and very properly censured by the last editor Mr. Gifford. Unfortunately, Chamberlain and Finett, the authorities which generally supply the dates on which the Masques were performed, seldom afford any account of their plots or devices, by which they might be identified.—There is, however, it must be added, a second passage in p. 510, which seems to imply that the King's visit to Scotland in 1617 had taken place *two* summer before the performance of "Pleasure Reconciled to Virtue."



PLEASURE RECONCILED TO VIRTUE.

A MASQUE,

AS IT WAS [TWICE] PRESENTED AT COURT BEFORE

KING JAMES¹.

Written by BEN JONSON.

The Scene was the Mountain Atlas, who had his top ending in the figure of an old man, his head and beard all hoary, and frost, as if his shoulders were covered with snow; the rest wood and rock. A grove of ivy at his feet; out of which, to a wild music of cymbals, flutes, and tabors, is brought forth Comus, the God of Cheer, or the Belly, riding in triumph, his head crown'd with roses and other flowers, his hair curled; they that wait upon him crown'd with ivy, their javelins done about with it; one of them going with Hercules his bowl bare before him, while the rest present him with this Hymn:

Full Chorus. *Room! room! make room for the Bouncing Belly,
First father of sauce and deviser of jelly;
Prime master of arts, and the giver of wit,
That found out the excellent engine the spit;
The plough and the flail, the mill and the hopper,
The hutch and the boulder, the furnace and copper,
The oven, the baven, the mawkin, the peel,
The hearth and the range, the dog and the wheel;
He, he first invented the hogshead and tun,
And gimlet and vice too, and taught them to run;
And since with the funnel and hippocras bag,
He has made of himself, that he now cries swag!*

¹ "From the second folio. If the scenery answered the Poet's description, the opening of this Masque must have had a very striking effect. The entrance of Comus is picturesque and full of voluptuous gaiety. The commentators on Milton, after spending twenty or thirty pages in conjectures on the origin of Milton's Comus, without the slightest reference to Jonson, condescend, in the course of their subsequent annotations, to observe that 'Jonson's Masque of Pleasure might, perhaps, afford some hint to Milton!' Perhaps it might; and so, I suspect, might some others; but enough on this head." GIFFORD.

*Which shows, though the pleasure be but of four inches,
 Yet he is a weasel, the gullet that pinches
 Of any delight, and not spares from his back
 Whatever to make of the belly a sack!
 Hail, hail, plump paunch! O the founder of taste,
 For fresh meats, or powder'd, or pickle, or paste,
 Devourer of broil'd, bak'd, roasted, or sod;
 And emptier of cups, be they even or odd.
 All which have now made thee so wide in the waist,
 As scarce with no pudding thou art to be laced;
 But eating and drinking until thou dost nod,
 Thou break'st all thy girdles, and break'st forth a God.*

BOWL-BEARER. Do you hear, my friends? to whom do you sing all this now? Pardon me only that I ask you, for I do not look for an answer; I'll answer myself. I know it is now such a time as the Saturnals for all the world, that every man stands under the eves of his own hat, and sings what pleases him; that's the right and the liberty of it. Now you sing of God Comus, here, the belly-god; I say it is well, and I say it is not well; it is well as it is a ballad, and the Belly worthy of it, I must needs say, an'twere forty yards of ballad more, as much ballad as tripe. But when the Belly is not edified by it, it is not well; for where did you ever read or hear that the Belly had any ears? Come, never pump for an answer, for you are defeated; our fellow Hunger there, that was as ancient a retainer to the Belly as any of us, was turn'd away for being unseasonable; not unreasonable, but unseasonable; and now is he, poor thin-gut, fain to get his living with teaching of starlings, magpies¹, parrots, and jackdaws, those things he would have taught the Belly. Beware of dealing with the Belly, the Belly will not be talk'd to, especially when he is full; then there is no venturing upon Venter, he will blow you all up, he will thunder indeed, la! Some in derision call him the father of f—ts; but I say he was the first inventor of great ordnance, and taught us to discharge them on festival days. Would we had a fit feast for him, i' faith, to shew his activity! I would have something now fetched in to please his five senses, the throat; or the two senses, the eyes; pardon me for my two senses; for I that carry Hercules's bowl in the service, may

¹ An allusion to Persius, in the prologue to his Satires:

*“ Quis expedit psittaco suum χαιρς?
 Picasque docuit nostra verba conari?
 Magister artis, ingenique largitor
 Venter, negatas artifex sequi voces.”*

WHALLEY.

see double by my place; for I have drunk like a frog to-day; I would have a tun now brought in to dance, and so many bottles about him. Ha! you look as if you would make a problem of this; do you see, do you see? a problem. Why bottles, and why a tun? and why a tun, and why bottles to dance? I say, that men that drink hard, and serve the Belly in any place of quality, (as the jovial tinkers, or the lusty kindred,) are living measures of drink, and can transform themselves, and do every day, to bottles or tuns, when they please; and when they have done all they can, they are as I say again (for I think I said somewhat like it afore), but moving measures of drink, and there is a piece in the cellar can hold more than all they. This will I make good, if it please our new God but to give a nod, for the Belly does all by signs; and I am all for the Belly, the truest clock in the world to go by.

Here the FIRST ANTIMASQUE, danced by men in the shape of bottles, tuns, &c.
Enter HERCULES.

HERCULES. What rites are these, breeds earth more monsters yet?
 Antæus scarce is cold; what can beget
 This store? and, stay!—such contraries upon her!
 Is earth so fruitfull of her own dishonour?
 Or, 'cause his vice was inhumanity,
 Hopes she by vicious hospitality
 To work an expiation first? and, then,
 (Help virtue!) these are sponges and not men;
 Bottles; mere vessels; half a ton of paunch!
 How? and the other half thrust forth in haunch!
 Whose feast? the Belly's! Comus! and my cup
 Brought in to fill the drunken orgies up,
 And here abus'd; that was the crown'd reward
 Of thirsty heroes, after labour hard!¹

¹ We have had an allusion to this bowl of Hercules, the *scyphus Herculeus* of the ancients, in the account of the scenery. Hercules is said to have sailed over the sea in a large cup or goblet; and thence a bowl of a particular make and fashion became appropriated to him. Let us hear what Macrobius offers on this subject: "*Herculem vero fictores veteres non sine causa cum poculo fecerunt, et nonnunquam casabundum et ebrium; non solum quod is heros bibax fuisse perhibetur, sed etiam quod antiqua historia est Herculem poculo tanquam navigio ventis immensa maria transisse.*" He adds, afterwards, it was much more probable that he passed the Ocean, not in a bowl, or *scyphus*, but in a vessel which bore that name. "*Ego tamen arbitror non poculo Herculem maria transvectum, sed navigio cui Scypho nomen fuit.*" *Saturnal.* l. 5. c. 21. It became the custom for succeeding heroes to drink in honour of Hercules out of the same form which he himself was supposed

Burdens and shames of nature, perish, die!
 For yet you never liv'd, but in the sty
 Of vice have wallow'd, and, in that swine's strife,
 Been buried under the offence of life;
 Go reel and fall under the load you make,
 Till your swoln bowels burst with what you take.
 Can this be pleasure, to extinguish man,
 Or so quite change him in his figure? can
 The Belly love his pain, and be content
 With no delight but what's a punishment?
 These monsters plague themselves, and fitly too,
 For they do suffer what, and all they do.
 But here must be no shelter, nor no shrowd
 For such. Sink, grove, or vanish into cloud!

At this the whole Grove and Antimasque vanished, and the whole music was discovered, sitting at the foot of the mountain, with PLEASURE and VIRTUE seated above them.

Chorus.

*Great friend and servant of the good,
 Let cool a while thy heated blood,
 And from thy mighty labour cease.
 Lie down, lie down,
 And give thy troubled spirits peace;
 Whilst Virtue, for whose sake
 Thou dost this godlike travail take,
 May of the choicest herbage make,
 Here on this mountain bred,
 A crown, a crown
 For thy immortal head.*

Here HERCULES lay down at their feet, and the SECOND ANTIMASQUE, which was of PIGMIES, appeared.

FIRST PIGMY. Antæus dead, and Hercules yet live!
 Where is this Hercules? what would I give
 To meet him now? meet him! nay, three such other,
 If they had hand in murder of our brother?

to have used. Thus Curtius, relating the manner in which Alexander was seized at his physician's banquet, represents him with this bowl of Hercules in his hand: "Ibi, nondum Herculis scypho epoto, repente velut telo confixus ingemuit." Q. Curt. l. 10. c. 4. WHALLEY.

With three ! with four, with ten, nay, with as many
 As the name yields ¹? pray anger, there be any
 Whereon to feed my just revenge, and soon!
 How shall I kill him? hurl him 'gainst the moon,
 And break him in small portions! give to Greece
 His brain, and every tract of earth a piece!

SECOND PIGMY.

He's yonder.

FIRST PIGMY.

Where?

THIRD PIGMY.

At the hill-foot asleep.

FIRST PIGMY.

Let one go steal his club.

SECOND PIGMY.

My charge;—I'll creep.

FOURTH PIGMY.

He's ours!

FIRST PIGMY.

Yes, peace!

THIRD PIGMY.

Triumph! we have him, boy.

FOURTH PIGMY.

Sure, sure, he's sure.

FIRST PIGMY.

Come, let us dance for joy. [*Music.*

At the end of their Dance they thought to surprise him, when suddenly, being awaked by the music, he roused himself, and they all ran into holes.

SONG.

*Wake, Hercules, awake; but heave up thy black eye,
 'Tis only ask'd from thee to look, and these will die,
 Or fly;—
 Already they are fled,
 Whom scorn had else left dead.*

At which MERCURY descended from the hill, with a garland of poplar to crown him.

MERCURY. Rest still, thou active friend of Virtue; these
 Should not disturb the peace of Hercules;
 Earth's worms, and honour's dwarfs, at two great odds,
 Prove or provoke the issue of the gods.

¹ There were several heroes who had the name of Hercules; and the Pigmy here means, he would encounter all who bore that name. WHALLEY.—Philostratus tells us (Icon. 2. c. 22,) that Hercules, after his victory over Antæus, fell asleep in the deserts of Africa, and was attacked by the pigmies, who discharged their arrows at him. This is Jonson's authority; and it is possible that Swift derived from the same passage a hint of the first assault of the Lilliputians on the slumbering Gulliver.

See here a crown the aged Hill hath sent thee,
 My grandsire Atlas, he that did present thee
 With the best sheep that in his fold were found,
 Or the golden fruit in the Hesperian ground,
 For rescuing his fair daughters, then the prey
 Of a rude pirate as thou cam'st this way;
 And taught thee all the learning of the sphere,
 And how, like him, thou might'st the Heavens up-bear,
 As that thy labour's virtuous recompense.
 He, though a mountain now, hath yet the sense
 Of thanking thee for more, thou being still
 Constant to goodness, guardian of the hill;
 Antæus by thee suffocated here,
 And the voluptuous Comus, God of Cheer,
 Beat from his grove, and that defaced; but now
 The time's arriv'd that Atlas told thee of, how
 B' unalter'd law, and working of the stars,
 There should be a cessation of all jars,
 'Twixt Virtue and her noted opposite,
 Pleasure; that both should meet here in the sight
 Of Hesperus, the glory of the west¹,
 The brightest star that from his burning crest
 Lights all on this side the Atlantic seas,
 As far as to thy pillars, Hercules!
 See where he shines, Justice and Wisdom placed
 About his throne, and those with honour graced,
 Beauty and Love! it is not with his brother
 Bearing the world, but ruling such another
 In his renown; PLEASURE, for his delight,
 IS RECONCILED TO VIRTUE, and this night
 Virtue brings forth twelve Princes have been bred
 In this rough mountain, and near Atlas' head,
 The hill of knowledge; one, and chief of whom²,
 Of the bright race of Hesperus, is come,
 Who shall in time the same that he is be,
 And now is only a less light than he;
 These now she trusts with Pleasure, and to these
 She gives an entrance to the Hesperides,
 Fair beauty's garden; neither can she fear
 They should grow soft, or wax effeminate here;
 Since in her sight, and by her charge all's done
 Pleasure the servant, Virtue looking on.

¹ The King is meant. N.² Prince Charles.

Here the whole choir of music called the TWELVE MASQUERS forth from the top of the mountain, which then opened, with this Song :

*Ope, aged Atlas, open then thy lap,
And from thy beamy bosom strike a light,
That men may read in the mysterious map
All lines,
And signs
Of royal education, and the right.*

*See how they come and show,
That are but born to know.*

*Descend,
Descend !*

*Though pleasure lead,
Fear not to follow ;
Within the hill*

*Of skill,
May safely tread
What path they will,
No ground of good is hollow.*

In their descent from the hill, DÆDALUS came down before them, of whom HERCULES questioned MERCURY :

HERCULES. But, Hermes, stay, a little let me pause ;
Who's this that leads ?

MERCURY. A guide that gives them laws,
To all their motions, Dædalus the wise.

HERCULES. And doth in sacred harmony comprise
His precepts ?

MERCURY. Yes.

HERCULES. They may securely prove,
Then, any labyrinth, though it be of love.

Here, while they put themselves in form, DÆDALUS had his First Song :

DÆDALUS. Come on, come on ! and where you go,
So interweave the curious knot,
As e'en the observer scarce may know
Which lines are Pleasure's, and which not.
First figure out the doubtful way¹,
At which a while all youth should stay,
Where she and Virtue did contend,
Which should have Hercules to friend.

¹ This alludes to that beautiful apologue, the choice of Hercules, by Prodicus. GIFFORD.

*Then, as all actions of mankind
Are but a labyrinth or maze ;
So let our dances be entwin'd,
Yet not perplex men unto gaze ;
But measured, and so numerous too,
As men may read each act they do ;
And when they see the graces meet
Admire the wisdom of your feet.*

*For dancing is an exercise
Not only shows the mover's wit,
But maketh the beholder wise,
As he hath power to rise to it.*

Here the First Dance. After which the Second Song :

DÆDALUS. *O more and more ! this was so well,
As praise wants half his voice to tell,
Again yourselves compose ;
And now put all the aptness on,
Of figure, that proportion
Or colour can disclose.*

*That if those silent arts were lost,
Design and picture, they might boast
From you a newer ground ;
Instructed by the height'ning sense
Of dignity and reverence,
In their true motions found.*

*Begin, begin ; for look, the fair
Do longing listen to what air
You form your second touch ;
That they may vent their murmuring hymns
Just to the [time]¹ you move your limbs,
And wish their own were such.*

*Make haste, make haste ; for this
The labyrinth of beauty is.*

Here the Second Dance ; after which, the Third Song :

¹ Some word ('time' or 'tune' probably) was lost at the press, or dropt in the MS. I have already observed that all these Masques, from 'The Golden Age Restored,' were printed, or at least published, some years after the author's death. There is not a page of the folio of 1641 without some ridiculous blunder." GIFFORD.

DÆDALUS. *It follows now you are to prove
The subtlest maze of all,—that's love,
And if you stay too long,
The fair will think you do them wrong.*

*Go choose among—but with a mind
As gentle as the stroking wind
Runs o'er the gentler flowers ;
And so let all your actions smile
As if they meant not to beguile
The Ladies, but the hours.*

*Grace, laughter, and discourse may meet,
And yet the beauty not go less ;
For what is noble should be sweet,
But not dissolv'd in wantonness.*

*Will you that I give the law
To all your sport, and sum it ?
It should be such should envy draw,
But — overcome it.*

*Here they danced with the Ladies, and the whole Revels followed ; which ended,
MERCURY called to DÆDALUS in this Speech ; which was after repeated in
the Fourth Song by two trebles, two tenors, a base, and the whole Chorus :*

MERCURY. *An eye of looking back were well,
Or any murmur that would tell
Your thoughts, how you were sent,
And went
To walk with Pleasure, not to dwell.*

*These, these are hours by Virtue spared
Herself, she being her own reward.
But she will have you know,
That though
Her sports be soft, her life is hard.*

*You must return unto the Hill,
And there advance
With labour, and inhabit still
That height and crown,
From whence you ever may look down
Upon triumphed chance.*

*She, she it is in darkness shines,
 'Tis she that still herself refines,
 By her own light to every eye;
 More seen, more known, when Vice stands by;
 And though a stranger here on earth,
 In heaven she hath her right of birth.
 There, there is Virtue's seat;
 Strive to keep her your own;
 'Tis only she can make you great,
 Though place here make you known.*

After which, they danced their Last Dance, and returned into the scene, which closed, and was a mountain again, as before. And so it ended.

This pleased the King so well¹, as he would see it again; when² it was presented with these additions —

FOR THE HONOUR OF WALES³.

The Scene standing, as before, a Mountain; but now the name changed from Atlas to Craig-Eriri.

Enter GRIFFITH, JENKIN, and EVAN, a Welsh Attorney.

GRIFFITH. Cossin, I know what belongs to this place symwhat petter than you; and therefore give me leave to be pold to advise you. 'Is not a small matter to offer yourself into presence of a King, and aull his Court? Be not too byssie and forward, till you be caull'd; I tauke reason to you.

JENKIN. Cym, never tauke any taukes; if the King of Gread Prittaine keep it assizes here, I will cym into Court; loog yow, do you see now, and please Got.

GRIFFITH. *Taw, d yn ynbhyd, y, dhwyti-n abl i anabhy, pob peth oth folineb, ag y tyny gwatwar ar dy wlac*⁴.

¹ "Who can wonder at it? It must have been a very graceful and splendid entertainment; and with due respect be it spoken, nearly as worthy of the nobility as private masquerades, &c. which, with such advantage to good manners, have been substituted for it. It is with peculiar modesty that we, who cannot eke out an evening's entertainment without the introduction of gamblers, hired buffoons, and voluntary jack-puddings, declaim on the 'pedantry and wretched taste' of James and his Court." GIFFORD.

² On Shrove-tuesday 1617-18, or Shrove-tuesday 1618-19. N.

³ That is, this Welsh Antimasque took the place of the two Antimasques of Bacchanalians and of Pigmies. The dialogue will very much remind the reader of that in Jonson's "Irish Masque" in vol. II. pp. 719—723. N.

⁴ This ancient Briton is not very complimentary. He says, I believe, "Hold your tongue, block-head! your folly is enough to spoil every thing. You are a perfect marplot, a disgrace to your

JENKIN. *Gad vyn lonyth* [Let me alone]. I say, I will appear in Court.

EVAN. Appear as yow s'ud do then, Dab Jenkin, in good sort; do not discredit the nation, and pyt wrong upon us aull by your rassnes.

JENKIN. What do yow caull rassnes, Evan y Gynryn? is not all the cyntrie and aull Welse, and the Prince of Wales too, abused in him? By this hand, I will tell it the King's own ears every 'oord, do you see him now? Bless your ursip, pray Got is in Heaven bless every ince of your ursip; and Wales is commendit to your ursip, from top to toe, with aull his hearts aull over, by Got 'utch me, and would be glad as a silling to see yow in him. Come it down once a day, and try; I tell yow now, yow s' all be as welcomely there as where you were in your own cyntries last two symmers¹, and pershance we 'll made yow as good s'eere too; wee 'll promise yowr ursip as good a piece of seeze, as yow need pyt in your head, and pleas' yow s'all be toasted too. Go to, see him once upon a time yowr own sellive, is more good mean yow, than is aware of; by Got 'is very hard, but s'all make yow a Shestice of Peace the first days you come; and pershance (say nothing) Knight of the S'ire too; 'is not Worsters, nor Pembrokes, nor Montgomeryeries, s'all carry him from yow. But aull this while s'all I tell you a liddell now? 'Is a great huge deal of anger upon yow, from aull Wales and the nation, that your ursip's son and heir, and Prince of Wales, the first time he ever play dance², to be pit up in a mountain (Got knows where) by a palterly Poet, how do you say him, Evan?

EVAN. Libya.

JENKIN. *Vellhy!* [So, so!] Libya. And how do yow caull him the mountain? his name is—

EVAN. Adlas.

JENKIN. *Hynno, hynno*, Adlas! Ay, please your ursip, 's a Welse attorney, and a preddilie schollers, a wear him his long coat, lined with seepe's-skin, as yow see, every days o' the week. A very sufficient litigious fellows in the Terms, and a

country." The Welsh does not exactly follow the received authority; but this may be accounted for, probably from the circumstance of its being sent to the press after Jonson's death. He had certainly some acquaintance with the language, and appears from Howel's and other letters, to be extremely solicitous to procure such grammatical treatises on it as were extant in his time. G.

¹ That is, if the Masque was performed in 1617-18, in England in 1616, and in Scotland in 1617; or, if the Masque was produced in 1618-19, in Scotland (and the phrase "your own countries" certainly seems to apply peculiarly to Scotland) "last two-symmers," that is, two summers ago. N.

² This is the passage referred to in p. 499. N.

finely Poets out o' the Terms; he has a sprig of lawrel already towards his girlonds. He was get in here a Twelfe-night and see aull, what do you call it,—your matters, and says is naught, naught, stark naught.

EVAN. I do say, an't please his Madestee, I do not like him with all his heart; he is plug'd in by the ears, without aull piddies or mercies of proprieties or decorums. I will do injuries to no man before his Madestee; but 'is a very vile and absurd as a man would wiss, that I do say, to pyt the Prince of Wales in an outlandis mountain; when he is known, his Highness has as goodly mountains, and as tawll a hills of his own, (look yow, do yow see now,) and of as good standing, and as good discent as the proudest Adlas christned.

JENKIN. Ay, good Evan, I pray you reckon his Madestee some of the Welse hills, the mountains.

EVAN. Why there is Talgarth.

JENKIN. Well sayd.

EVAN. Elienneth.

JENKIN. Well sayd, Evan.

EVAN. Caider Arthur.

JENKIN. Toudge him, toudge him.

EVAN. Pen-maen-maur.

JENKIN. Is good boys, Evan.

EVAN. And Craig-Eriri.

JENKIN. *Aw, Vellhy!* Why law you now, 'is not Pen-maen-maur and Craig-Eriri as good sound as Adlas every whit of him?

EVAN. 'Is caull'd the British Aulpes, Craig-Eriri, a very sufficient hills.

JENKIN. By Got, we will play with him hills for hills, for sixteen and forty s'illings when he dares.

EVAN. I pray you let it alone your wachers a liddle while, cossin Davy ap Jenkin, and give it leave I may give his Madestee and the Court informations toudging now the reformatiouns.

JENKIN. Why, cannot yow and I tauke too, cossin? the Haull (God bless it) is big inough to hold both our taukes, an were we twice as much as we are.

EVAN. Why tauke it all then, if you think is reason in you.

JENKIN. No; I know is no reason, Evan, I confess him; but every man would shew himselve a good subject as he can to his means; I am a subject by my place, and two heads is better than one I imagine under correction.

EVAN. Got's ownes! here is no corrections, man; imagine what yow please,

do in Got's name, imagine, imagine, why do you not imagine? here is no pen-nyrths of corrections.

GRIFFITH. *Awgdwin, tawson*¹.

EVAN. 'Is so invincibles, so innercifullys ignorant, a man knows not upon what inces of ground to stand to him; does conceive it no more as I am a true Welse Christian, than (sirreverence o' the company²) the hilts of his dagger.

JENKIN. Go to, I will make the hilts conceive a knock upon your pate, and pershance a bump too, if you tauke.

EVAN. How! upon my pate?

JENKIN. Yes, upon your pate, your poetly pate, and your law pate too.

GRIFFITH. *Tawson, tawson!* For' Got, yow will go nere to hazard a thumb, and a fowre finger of your best hand, if you knock him here; you may knock him better s'eape at Ludlow a great deal; do you know the place where it is?

EVAN. Well, I can be patient, I trust, I trust, it is in a Presence, I presume, that loves no quarrels nor replies, nor the lies, nor the shallenge, nor the duels; but — I will do my byssiness now, and make this a byssiness for another days hereafter; pleas' your Madestee — By Got I am out of my tempers terribly; well, Got forgive me, and pyt me in my selve again. How does your Highness — I know not a 'oord or a syllable what I say; 'is do me that vexations.

GRIFFITH. O Evan, FOR THE HONOUR OF WALES!

EVAN. I remember him now, 'tis enough; — blessings upon me, is out o' my head again; lost, quite lost; this knock o' my pate has knock aull my wits out o' my brains, I think, and turn my reasons out of doors. Believe it, I will rub, and break your s'ins for this, I will not come so high as your head, but I will take your nose in my way, very sufficiently.

JENKIN. Hang your sufficiency.

EVAN. 'Tis well, very well, 'tis better, better; exceedingly well.

Enter HOWELL and RHEESE, with their Harps.

HOWELL. What! you mean ho! to make us so long tarry here, ha?

GRIFFITH. Marry, here is aull undone with distemper, methinks, and angers, and passions.

¹ I will make you hold your tongue, in spite of you.

² *Sir-reverence*, corrupted from *save-reverence* or *salvd reverentid*, was a usual apologetical apostrophe, when any thing was said that might be thought indecent or offensive. See examples in Nares's Glossary. N.

³ Griffith alludes to the penalty for striking in Court, which was the loss of the right-hand. G

RHEESE. Who is angry?

EVAN. Why it is I is angry, and hungry too, if you mark me; I could eat his Flintseer face now; offer to knock my pate in the hearing of all these, and more too! well, before his Madestee I do yet forgive him now with all my heart, and will be revenged another time.

HOWELL. Why that is good Evan, honest, brave Evan.

RHEESE. Ha' yow told the King's Madestee of the alterations?

EVAN. I am now once again about him; peace; please your Madestee, the Welse nation hearing that the Prince of Wales was to come into the hills again, afore your Madestee, have a desire of his Highness, for the Honour of Wales, to make him a Welse hills, which is done without any manner of sharshese to your Madestee, only shanging his name; he is caull now Craig-Eriri, a mountain in Carnarvonseere; has as grey beard, and as much snow upon his head aull the year long—

JENKIN. As Adlas for his guts.

EVAN. He tells your Madestee true, for aull he is a liddle out of season; but cym, every man tell as much as he can now; my quality is, I hope, sufficiently known to his Madestee, that I am Rector Chori is all my ambitions, and that I would have it all Welse, that is the short and the long of the requests. The Prince of Wales we know is all over Welse¹.

JENKIN. And then my Lord Marquis².

EVAN. Both my Lord Marquis³ is as good, noble, true Briton, as any ever is come out of Wales.

JENKIN. My Lord Mongymery⁴ is as sound Welse too as flese and blood can make him.

HOWELL. And the Howards⁵, by Got, is Welse as strait as any arrow.

EVAN. Houghton⁶, is a town bear his name there by Pipidiauke.

HOWELL. And Erwin⁷, his name is Wyn; but the Dutsmen come here in Wales, and caull him Heer-win.

¹ Here follow the names of the Masquers; of whom the Prince stands first. N. ² Buckingham.

³ *i. e.* both Buckingham and Hamilton, the singular being used for the plural, as throughout the Masque. N.

⁴ See pp. 464, 521.

⁵ In p. 505 Jonson calls the Masquers "twelve Princes;" there must therefore have been two Howards,—of whom one was probably Sir Thomas Howard (see p. 521). Of four of the Noble brothers as Masquers, see vol. II. p. 714. N.

⁶ Alluding to Sir Gilbert Hoghton; see p. 464.

⁷ Sir William Irwin, sworn in 1613 Gentleman Usher of the Prince's Privy-chamber. N.

RHEESE. Then Car¹ is plain Welse, Caerleon, Caermardin, Cardiffe.

JENKIN. And Palmer², his ancestors was call him Penmaure.

RHEESE. And Acmooty³, is Ap-mouth-wye of Llanimouthwye.

JENKIN. And Abercromy, is aull one as Abermarlys.

EVAN. Or Abertau.

HOWELL. Or Aberdugled haw.

RHEESE. Or Abeshondhy.

JENKIN. Or Abergeveny.

HOWELL. Or Aberconway.

EVAN. Aberconway is very like Abercromy; a lidle hard s'ift has pyt 'm aull into Wales; but our desires and petitions is, that the musiques be all Welse, and the dances, and no 'Ercules brought in now with a great staff, and a pudding upon him.

JENKIN. Aw! was his distaff, was not his club.

EVAN. What need of 'Ercules, when Cadwallader—

JENKIN. Or Lluellin, or Rheese ap Gryffyth, or Cradock, or Owen Glendower, with a Welse hook and a goat-skin on his back, had done very better, and twice as well?

EVAN. Nay, and to pyt apparel on a pottle of hay, and call him Lantæus.

GRIFFITH. The belly-gods too, was as proper a monster as the best of 'em.

EVAN. I stand to it, there was neither poetries nor architectures, nor designs in that belly-god; nor a note of a musics about him. Come, bring forth our musics, yow s'all hear the true Pritan strains now, the ancient Welse harp—yow tauke of their Pigmees too, here is a Pigmees of Wales now; set forth another Pigmees by him!

Enter two WOMEN, followed by the musicians.

FIRST WOMAN. *Aw diesus!* what a bravely company is here! This is a finely haull indeed.

¹ Probably Sir Robert Car, of Ancrum, at this period Gentleman of the Prince's Bed-chamber; and in 1633 created Earl of Ancrum. N.

² Roger Palmer, who was a Masquer both in 1617-18 and 1618-19 (see pp. 464, 521), was second son of Sir Thomas Palmer, created a Baronet, June 29, 1621. Roger had been Cup-bearer to Prince Henry (with a salary of £.20), and now held that office to Prince Charles, at whose Coronation he was created K. B. being then Master of the Royal Household. He was married, but died s. p. N.

³ Of Auchmouty and Abercromby see pp. 464, 521. N.

SECOND WOMAN. What a deal of fine candle it is!

JENKIN. Ay, peace; let his Madestee hear the music.

SECOND WOMAN. *Ble mae yr Brenin*¹?

JENKIN. *Docko ve.*

FIRST WOMAN. Diesus bless him! saint Davy bless him! I bring my boy o' my back ten mile here too loog upon him; loog Hullin, loog Hullin! *Spewch hummaven nayd Dumma braveris*²; you s'all hear him play too.

EVAN. Peace, no more pradling; begin set him down.

[*Music.*

FIRST SONG.

EVAN. *I is not come here to tauk of Brut,
From whence the Welse does take his root;
Nor tell long pedigree of Prince Camber,
Whose linage would fill aull this chamber;
Nor sing the deeds of old Saint Davy,
Th' ursip of which would fill a navy.
But hark yow me now, for a liddel tales
S'all make a great deal to the credit of Wales.*

Chorus. *In which we'll toudge your ears,
With the praise of her thirteen s'eeres,
And make yow as glad and merry
As fourteen pot of Perry.
Still, still, we'll toudge your ears,
With the praise, &c.*

SECOND SONG.

HOWELL. *'Tis true was wear him sherkin freize,
But what is that? we have store of seize,
And, Got! is plenty of goat's milk
That sell him well, will buy him silk
Enough to make him fine to quarrel
At Hereford'Sizes in new apparel;
And get him as much green velvet perhap,
S'all give it a face to his Monmouth cap.*

Chorus. *But then the ore of Lempster*³,
By Got! is never a sempster,

¹ Or, *Ble mae'r Brenin*? Where is the King? *Docko ve.* There he is. GIFFORD.

² This is woefully corrupt; but it seems to mean: "Hist! hold your peace! see how he capers!"

GIFFORD.

³ "As for the wool of Hereford," says Dr. Fuller, "it is best known to the honour thereof by the

*That, when he is spun, e'er did,
Yet match him with hir thrid.
Still, still, &c.*

THIRD SONG.

RHEESE. *Aull this's the back's ; now let us tell ye,
Of some provisions for the belly ;
As cid, and goat, and great goat's mother,
And runt, and cow, and good cow's uther ;
And once but taste o' the Welse mutton,
Your Englis seep's not worth a button.
And then for your fiss, s'all shoose it your diss ;
Look but about, and there is a trout ;*

Chorus. *A salmon, cor, or chevin,
Will feed you six or seven,
As taull man as ever swagger,
With Welse hook, or long dagger.
Still, still, &c.*

FOURTH SONG.

EVAN. *But aull this while was never think
A word in praise of our Welse drink,
Yet for all that is a cup of Bragat,
All England s'eere may cast his cab-at.
And what you say to ale of Webley,
Toudge him as well, you'll praise him trebly,
As well as Metheglin, or sider, or meath,
S'all s'ake it your dagger quite out o' the seath.*

Chorus. *And oat-cake of Guarthenion,
With a goodly leek or onion,
To give as sweet a rellis
As e'er did harper Ellis.
Still, still, &c.*

name of 'Lempster ore,' being absolutely the finest in all England." It is frequently noticed by our old Poets ; thus Herrick :

*" By many a turn and many a cross,
The fairies reach a bank of moss,
Spungy and swelling, and far more
Soft, than the finest Lempster ore."*

Oberon's Palace.

FIFTH SONG.

HOWELL. *And yet, is nothing now all this,
If of our musiques we do miss;
Both harps and pipes too, and the crowd¹,
Must aull come in and tauke alowd,
As loud as Bangu, Davie's bell,
Of which is no doubt yow have hear tell,
As well as our lowder Wrexham organ,
And rumbling rocks in s'eere Glamorgan²;*

Chorus. *Where look but in the ground there,
And you s'all see a sound there,
That put him altogedder,
Is sweet as measure pedder.
Still, still, &c.*

SIXTH SONG.

RHEESE. *Au, but what say yow should it shance too,
That we should leap it in a dance too,
And make it you as great a pleasure,
If but your eyes be now at leisure;
As in your ears shall leave a laughter,
To last upon you six days after?*

¹ The Welsh *crwth* or fiddle; see p. 293.

² In Barry island are said to be subterranean noises like the blowing of a smith's bellows, or the strokes of hammers, supposed to proceed from the repercussion of the sea waters in the clefts of the rocks; and these the author here alludes to. WHALLEY.

There is a noble passage on this subject in the "Fairie Queen." In the true spirit of romantic poetry, Spenser attributes the din to the agency of Merlin and the Lady of the Lake:

"And if thou ever happen that same way
To traveill, go to see that dreadfull place;
It is an hideous hollow cave (they say)
Under a rock that lyes a little space
From the swift Barry tomling downe apace,
Eamongst the woody hilles of Dynevowre;
But dare thou not, I charge, in any cace,
To enter into that same balefull bowre,
For feare the cruell Feends should thee unwares devowre.
But standing high aloft, low lay thine eare,
And there such ghastly noyse of yron chaines,
And brazen caudrons thou shalt rombling heare,
Which thousand sprights with long enduring paines
Doe tosse, that it will stonn thy feeble braines,
And oftentimes great grones, and grievous stownds,
When too huge toile and labour them constraines;
And oftentimes loud strokes, and ringing sowndes
From under that deepe rock most horribly rebowndes."

Book III. c. 3.

*Ha! well-a-go to, let us try to do,
As your old Britton, things to be writ on.*

Chorus. *Come put on other looks now,
And lay away your hooks too;
And though yet yow ha' no pump, sirs,
Let 'em hear that yow can jump, sirs,
Still, still, &c.*

JENKIN. Speak it your conscience now; did your ursip ever see such a song in your days? 'is not as finely a tunes as a man would wiss to put in his ears?

EVAN. Come, his Madesty s'all hear better to your dance.

Here a Dance of Men.

EVAN. Haw! well danced, very well danced!

JENKIN. Well plaid, Howell; well plaid, Rheese! *Da wharry! vellhee!* well danced, i' faith!

EVAN. Good boys, good boys! pold and Prittan, pold and Prittan.

JENKIN. Is not better this now than Pigmies? this is men, this is no monsters, and you mark him; well, caull forth you goats now, your ursip s'all see a properly natural devise come from the Welse mountains; is no tuns, nor no bottils; stand by there, s'ow his ursip the hills; was dronkenry in his eyes, that make that devise in my mind. But now marg, marg, your ursip, I pray yow now, and yow s'all see natures and propriedies; the very beasts of Wales s'all do more than your men pyt in bottils and barrils, there was a tale of a tub, i' faith. [*Music.*] Is the goat-herd and his dog, and his son, and his wife make musiques to the goats as they come from the hills; give 'em rooms, give 'em rooms, now they cym! the elderly goats is indifferently grave at first, because of his beard, and only tread it the measures; byt yow will see him put off his gravities by and by well enough, and frisk it as fine as e'er a kid on 'em aull. The Welse goat is an excellent dancer by birth,—that is written of him; and of as wisely carriage, and comely behaviours a beast (for his footing especially) as some one or two man, God bless him.

EVAN. A haull, a haull, come a haull! *Aw velhee.*

Here the Dance of Goats.

FIRST WOMAN. Nay, and your Madestee bid the Welse goats welcome; the Welse wen'ces s'all sing your praises, and dance your healths too.

SONG.

FIRST WOMAN. *Au, God bless it our good King S'ames,
His Wife and his Sildren, and aull his reams !*

SECOND WOMAN. *And aull his ursipful S'istice of Peace about him,*

FIRST WOMAN. *And send that his Court be never without him.*

SECOND WOMAN. *Ow, that her would come down into Wales,*

FIRST WOMAN. *Her s'ud be very welcome to Welse Ales.*

SECOND WOMAN. *I have a cow,*

FIRST WOMAN. *And I have a hen ;*

SECOND WOMAN. *S'all give it milk,*

FIRST WOMAN. *And eggs for aull his men.*

BOTH. *Itself s'all have venison and other seere,
And may it be starved, that steal him his deer,
There, there, and every where.*

JENKIN. Cym, dance now, let us hear your dance, dance.

EVAN. Ha ! well plaid Ales.

HOWELL. For the Honour of Wales.

Here the Men and Women dance together.

JENKIN. Digon ! enough, enough, digon ¹. — Well, now all the absurdities is removed and clear'd, the rest, and please your Grace, s'all tarry still, and go on as it was ; Virtue and Pleasure was well enough, indifferently well enough ; only we intreat Pleasure to cym out of Driffindore, that is the Golden Valley, or Gelthleedore, that is the Golden Grove, and is in Care Marden, the Welse Garden. Is a thousand place in Wales as finely places as the Esperides every crum of him ; Merlin was born there too, put we would not make rise now and wake him, because we have his prophecies already of your Madestee's name to as good purpose as if he were here in presence, *Pod hy geller* ², *Evan* ?

EVAN. You will still pyt your selve to these plunses, you mean his Madestee's anagrams of *Charles James Stuart*.

JENKIN. Ay, that is, *Claimes Arthur's Seat* ³, which is as much as to say,

¹ i. e. enough ! The words below should be *Dyffryn oyr*, and *Gelhy oyr*. GIFFORD.

² Let us do as well as we can.

³ To this Ben Jonson alludes in his " Speeches at Prince Henry's Barriers," (see vol. II. p. 271) :

" And that a Monarch equal good and great,
Wise, temperate, just, and stout, *claimes Arthur's seat*."

your Madestee s'ud be the first King of Gread Prittan, and sit in *Cadier Arthur*, which is Arthur's Chair, as by Got's blessing you do; and then your son, Master Charles his, how do you caull him? is *Charles Stuart, Cals true harts*, that is us, he calls us, the Welse nation, to be ever at your service, and love you, and honour you, which we pray you understand it his meaning. And that the musicians yonder are so many Brittis bards that sing o'pen the hills to let out the Prince of Wales, and his Welse friends to you, and all is done.

GRIFFITH. Very homely done it is I am well assured, if not very rudely; but it is hoped your Majesty will not interpret the honour, merits, love, and affection of so noble a portion of your people, by the poverty of these who have so imperfectly utter'd it; you will rather for their sakes, who are to come in the name of Wales, my Lord the Prince, and the others, pardon what is past, and remember the Country has always been fruitful of loyal hearts to your Majesty, a very garden and seed-plot of honest minds and men. What lights of learning hath Wales sent forth for your schools! what industrious students of your laws! what able ministers of your justice! whence hath the Crown in all times better servitors, more liberal of their lives and fortunes? where hath your Court or Council, for the present, more noble ornaments or better aids? I am glad to see it, and to speak it; and, though the nation be said to be unconquered, and most loving liberty, yet it was never mutinous, an't pleas your Majesty, but stout, valiant, courteous, hospitable, temperate, ingenious, capable of all good arts, most lovingly constant, charitable, great antiquaries, religious preservers of their gentry and genealogy, as they are zealous and knowing in religion.

In a word, it is a Nation bettered by prosperity so far, as, to the present happiness it enjoys under your most sacred Majesty, it wishes nothing to be added but to see it perpetual in you and your issue.

God of his great goodness grant it! and show he is an arrant knave, and no true Briton, does not say 'Amen' too with his heart.

PLEASURE RECONCILED TO VIRTUE followed; and so it ended.

"On the 8th of January, the King went from London to Theobalds¹, where, on the same day, he knighted Sir Robert Baynard, of Norfolk; and on the following, Sir Francis Vivyon and Sir John Lane.

On the 9th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King went yesterday to Theobalds; this day to Royston; and so on Monday to Newmarket.

"The Lady Hatton made a great Supper with a Play the last week, where were all the gallants and great ones about the Court, but specially the Howards, whom she would fain solder and link fast again with the Marquis Buckingham of and that side; and withall to see if he might be wrong to cast an eye toward Diana Cecil, the younger of the Lord Burghley's daughters², that for her more grace was made Mistress of the Feast. For it is like there will be much angling after him, now it is bruited that the King wishes him to take a wife, which of divers is diversly constructed.

"On the Twelfth-night was the Masque at Court performed by the Prince, Marquis Buckingham, Earl of Montgomery, Sir Thomas Howard, Sir Harry and Charles Rich; the rest I remember not, saving Palmer, Auchmuty, Abercromby, and young Maynard, that bears away the bell for dancing, and were otherwise a proper man, but that he is extremely purblind³. The Masque was well liked, and all things passed orderly. The Venetian Ambassador and the States were placed as it were in one box⁴."

¹ Camden's Annals.

² Diana, who is ranked in the Peerage to be the second of the three daughters of William second Earl of Exeter, was named after her maternal aunt Diana, daughter of Sir William Drury, and who was the wife of her paternal uncle Sir Edward Cecil, Viscount Wimbledon. She was married, first, to Henry eighteenth Earl of Oxford; and, secondly, to Thomas first Earl of Elgin.

³ Of the above Masquers six at least,—the Prince, the Marquis, the Earl, Palmer, Auchmouty, and Abercromby, had appeared in that character on the last Twelfth-night; see p. 464. Of Sir Thomas Howard as a Masquer, see vol. II. p. 714. Sir Henry Rich performed in the Masque before the Queen at Caversham House in 1613; *ibid.* p. 629. Charles Rich has not before appeared. He was the younger son of Robert first Earl of Warwick; was knighted at Theobalds, April 24 following the present date; and was slain in the voyage with the Duke of Buckingham to the Isle of Rhée in 1627.—"Young Maynard" was probably John, brother of Sir William the first Lord Maynard (see vol. I. p. 112; vol. II. p. 429), which John was created K. B. at the Coronation of Charles the First, and of whom see further in Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 234.—It must be added, that it is a doubtful point, (as has been shown in p. 499,) whether Mr. Chamberlain's above list belongs to "Pleasure Reconciled to Virtue," or to "The Vision of Delight."

⁴ Birch's MSS. 4174.

“ Upon Tuesday the 12th of January, the faire Banqueting-house at Whitehall¹ was upon the suddaine all flaming a fire from end to end and side to side, before it was discerned or descryde by any persons or passengers either by sent or smoke. At sight whereof the Court being sore amazed, sent speedy newes to the great Lords of the Councell, who were then but newly set in the Guildhall in London about excessive and disorderly buildings; but they all arose and returned to Whitehall, and gave directions to the multitude of people to suppress the flame, and by hookes to pull downe some other adjoyning buildings, to prevent the furious fire; and so, by their care and the people’s labour, the flame was quite extinct by twelve a clocke. Besides the Banquetting-house, there were divers lodgings burned, and the writings in the office of the Privy Signet, which was under the Banqueting-house; and for one whole yeare’s space there was great damage done by fire in most Shires and Cities of England. And the aforementioned Banqueting-house was againe new builded within three years after².” Other circumstances of this catastrophe may be gleaned from the following letters.

On the 16th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“ Since my last we have had a great mischance by fire at Whitehall, which beginning in the Banqueting-house hath quite consumed it, and put the rest to great danger, but that there was so much help at hand, besides that which was sent out of London on all sides, and so good order taken by the presence of the Lord Chancellor [Bacon], the Duke of Lennox, and the Earl of Arundel, that all passed with as much quiet as was possible in such a confusion; and the fire, that was exceeding furious, kept from spreading further than the limits of that building, saving only, that the vehemency of the heat burnt down one of the rotten terraces or galleries adjoining, and took hold of the pulpit-place, which was soon quenched. One of the greatest losses spoken of is the burning of all or most of the writings and papers belonging to the offices of the Signet, Privy Seal, and Council-chamber, which were under it. And in such a mishap it fell out happily to be in the day-time (about eleven o’clock on Tuesday), for if it had happened in the night, the whole house and all in it had been in great danger; for, though it were at high noon, yet there was much embezzling and much spoil, though there was as much provision made against it as the shortness of

¹ Camden’s Annals. This Banqueting-house was one which had been built in 1607, see vol. II. p. 155; but the notes in that page belong to the building erected after the fire here recorded, and which is still standing, the glory of Inigo Jones.

² Howes’ Chronicle.

time would permit, and divers taken with the manner and committed. There is much speech of divers miscarried; but we hear yet no certainty; only some are hurt and maimed, and the fire is not yet so thoroughly quenched that they can search every corner. You may guess at the fury of it, when it lasted not in any strength above an hour. Divers reports ran how it came, but the most current is that a mean fellow searching in the masquing or 'tiring-room with a candle, for certain things he had hid there, fired some oiled painted cloths and paste boards with such other stuff, and seeing he could not quench it, went out and locked the door after him. There is doubt that this will hinder the King's coming to town this Candlemas, when the Masque should have been repeated the second time¹."

On the 19th, Mr. Lorkin wrote his account to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"The unhappy accident that chanced at Whitehall last week by fire, you cannot but have heard of; but haply not the manner how,—which was this. A joiner was appointed to mend some things that were out of order in the device of the Masque, which the King meant to have repeated on Shrovetide, who, having kindled a fire upon a false hearth to heat his glue-pot, the force thereof pierced soon, it seems, the single brick, and, in a short time that he absented himself upon some occasion, fastened upon the basis, which was of dry deal board underneath, which suddenly conceiving flame, gave fire to the device of the Masque, all of oiled paper and dry fir, and so in a moment dispersed itself among the rest of that combustible matter, that it was past any man's approach almost before it was discovered. Two hours began and ended that woful sight. All the loss was bounded in the Banqueting-house, and the offices underneath. All the records of the Signet-office utterly perished, one chest of writings only excepted; so quick and furious was the fire that, though there were some present in the said office when the same first kindled, yet found they difficulty enough to save themselves. The City, they say, will repair part of the loss² by building up another Banqueting-house at proper cost and charge³."

About this time "Richard Wingfield, Marshal de Camp in Ireland, is made Viscount of Powerscourt under the Great Seal of Ireland⁴."

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² Probably an idle report.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁴ Camden's Annals. Sir Richard Wingfield had been made Marshal by Queen Elizabeth, and twice

During the latter part of January, the King was at Newmarket; where he knighted, on the 21st, Sir Robert Lacy and Sir John Miller; on the 22d, Sir Edward Dering, of Kent¹; and on the 24th, Sir Robert Filmer², of that county.

joined in the Government of Ireland by King James. He died in 1634, when the Viscounty became extinct. It was again conferred on his male heir in 1665, but also terminated on his death in 1717; but having been a third time bestowed on the family in 1743, is now enjoyed by Richard sixth Viscount of the last creation.

¹ Afterwards celebrated as a speaker in Parliament, and for his activity in the King's service. He was the son of Sir Anthony Dering, of Surenden-Dering, knighted at the Charter-house, May 11, 1603; see vol. I. p. 117. Sir Edward was Lieutenant of Dover Castle and the Cinque Ports, and, according to Weever, the third of his family that had held that office. He was created a Baronet Feb. 1, 1626-7; was elected M. P. for Hythe in 1625; and for the County of Kent in 1640. At the latter period, when he was induced to present a Bill (afterward laid aside) for the suppression of Bishops, Deans, and Chapters, his greatest motive in so doing was, says Clarendon, to apply prettily two lines of Ovid with which he introduced it:

*"Cuncta prius tentanda, sed immedicabile vulnus
Ense recidendum est, ne pars sincera trahatur."*

"He was a man very opposite to the Parliament designs, but a man of levity and vanity, easily flattered by being commended." His voice, it is recorded, was remarkably sonorous and agreeable; and he was called the Silver Trumpet of the House. Thus flattered, he ventured to publish a Collection of his Speeches; but this the House voted a Breach of Privilege, ordered the book to be burnt by the hangmen, and confined the author for ten days in the Tower. After a few months' retirement in the country, disgusted with the conduct of the Republicans, Sir Edward joined the King at Leicester, accompanied his Majesty to Coventry and Nottingham; raised a regiment of Cavalry at his own expense, and commanded it in person in the Royal Cause. He seems to have been really well-intentioned and loyal from principle; his whole estate was sequestered, and few suffered more for their loyalty. He died at one of his farm-houses, June 22, 1644, in his 46th year, leaving his title to his son Edward, from whom Sir Edward, the present and eighth Baronet, is seventh in descent. The first Baronet's portrait was prefixed to his Speeches, and there is a beautiful small oval one by Hollar, which has been more than once copied.—This summary of an interesting life has been made thus complete from various authorities, but some minor particulars of Sir Edward may be found in Wotton's Baronetage, 1741, and Granger's Biog. Hist.

² Sir Robert Filmer, of East Sutton, Kent, was a great sufferer in the Royal Cause, had his house plundered by the rebels ten times, and was imprisoned in Leeds Castle in Kent. He was the author of the Patriarchal Scheme of Monarchy, and some other political tracts. He died in 1653, leaving two sons: Sir Edward, Gentleman of the Privy-chamber to King Charles the First and Second; and Sir Robert, created a Baronet in 1674, from whom the Rev. Sir John Filmer, the present and seventh Baronet, is the fourth in descent.

On the 23d of January, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The King is looked for here on Saturday next; and for all this late accident of fire, yet must the Masque be represented again this Shrove-tide in the Hall.

"There is speech of setting up the Banqueting-house again very speedily, and some will undertake for seven or nine thousand (I know not which) to make it more fair and beautiful than it was before¹."

Again, on the 30th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows :

"The King comes not hither till Monday. He went lately from Newmarket to Sir Nicholas Bacon's² to dinner to see a young gentlewoman, his grandchild, daughter to one Sir Bassingbourne Gawdy, that is dead long since³. The gentlewoman is marvellously commended both by the King, Prince, and Lord of Buckingham, and much made of by them all. The Prince is said to be so far in liking that these Verses I send you are fathered upon him, wherein she is compared to the late blazing star⁴. But the chief grace and curiosity, they say, consists in *new and gay*, which is the anagram of her name :

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² Culford in Suffolk, the same house as that to which his Majesty went to hawk, Feb. 19, 1613-14; see vol. II. p. 755. It is situated about twelve miles from Newmarket and four from Bury. It was part of the possessions of the Abbey at Bury, and was granted to Sir Nicholas Bacon, afterwards Lord Keeper, in the 36th Henry VIII. His son Sir Nicholas, the first Baronet, built the mansion in 1591, and lived in it for some years. Afterwards his principal residence was Redgrave, from which he took his title of Baronet in 1611 (see vol. II. p. 422), and where he erected a monument to himself and Lady. He died Nov. 13, 1624, as it is recorded in the inquisition held on his death, not, as frequently stated, in 1616, which is the date of his Lady's death and of his erecting the monument. Culford was, it appears, always considered as one of Sir Nicholas's seats during his life; but it was here that he settled his youngest son Sir Nathaniel Bacon, K. B. (so created at the Coronation of Charles the First) who is well known as the most eminent amateur painter of his time; see the Gentleman's Magazine, vol. XCVI. i. 396. Sir Nathaniel's issue soon became extinct; and he left Culford to his wife's son by her first marriage, Sir Frederick, first Lord Cornwallis. In that noble family it remained till the death of the second Marquess in 1823. It was re-built by the first Marquess about the beginning of the present century; but a distant view of the original mansion is preserved at Brome, the other (and more ancient) seat of the Cornwallis family. There is a view of the present house at Culford in Neale's Views of Seats, First Series.

³ Dorothy, the second of Sir Nicholas Bacon's three daughters, was married, first, to Sir Bassingbourne Gawdey, of Harling, Norfolk, (knighted in 1597); and, secondly, to Philip Colby, Esq.

⁴ The comet; of which in p. 495.

"Heaven's wonder late, but now Earth's glorious ray,
 With wonder shines; that's gone, this *new and gaye* [Anne Gawdye]
 Still gazed on; in this is more than Heaven's light;—
 Day obscur'd that; this makes the day more bright¹."

On the 30th of January, the Earl of Nottingham resigned his office of Lord High Admiral to the Marquess of Buckingham; but the King, for preserving the dignity of the late Admiral, soon after granted him the place and precedence of John Mowbray, whom Richard the Second created Earl of Nottingham².

On the first of February, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Thomas Polhill, of Kent, and afterwards returned to Whitehall³; where, on the following day, he dubbed Sir Nicholas Fortescue, Sir John Osborne, Sir Francis Goston, Sir Richard Sutton, and Sir William Pitt, "five of those Commissioners that are employed about the matters of the Household and Navy⁴."

On the 2d, Mr. Lorkin informed Sir Thomas Puckering, that "the Prince this year becomes a Tilter, and forbears this next Newmarket Journey that he may have time to practise⁵."

On the 4th and 5th, says Camden, "the King was present in the Star-chamber at the Trial between Secretary Lake and the Countess of Exeter⁶; and on the 6th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote on that subject to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King sat in the Star-chamber on Wednesday from nine o'clock till twelve; and yesterday from before eight till almost one. He recommended brevity to the Lawyers, kept them as close to the point as he could, himself made a short Speech the first day, in which, among other things, he compared himself to Solomon, that was to judge between two women (for so, he said, he would parallel them as women), and to find out the true matter of the child, that is Verity. For which purpose he came furnished with all fit instructions whereby he might inform himself, but especially with equity and impartial affection. He sits there again on Monday; and, if it cannot thoroughly be ended then, on Wednesday⁷."

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² Camden's Annals. The Earl was at this time 83 years of age; he lived to be 87, dying Dec. 14, 1624.

³ Ibid.

⁴ Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, Feb. 6.

⁵ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

⁶ The origin of this Trial has been briefly stated in p. 193 of this volume. — It began on the 19th of January. Camden's Annals.

⁷ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

On the 6th of February, the King visited the Queen at Hampton Court, accompanied by the Marquess of Buckingham¹.

On the 9th, Mr. Lorkin wrote as follows to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"My Lady of Exeter and Sir Thomas Lake's cause hath already had three days of hearing, his Majesty personally assisting at them all. Two days more, to-morrow and Friday, are like to determine the controversy.

"The King in one of his Speeches, touched much upon a strict observation of Lent, restraining the liberty of giving license to any from all but Bishops; and those to dispense with none, save in case of necessity, witnessed under the physician's hand, and signifying his pleasure further, that all delinquents should be severely punished, not only they that sell flesh without license, but they that take liberty to eat it likewise²."

It was probably on Shrove Tuesday, the 9th of February, that the Christmas Masque was repeated³, and, if it was that of "Pleasure Reconciled to Virtue," with an additional Antimasque "for the Honour of Wales." The Masque, says Sir John Finett, "being prepared to be re-presented in the Hall at Whitehall, the Banquetting House having been burnt a little before gave occasion to his Majesty, who had been often troubled with the puntillious differences of Ambassadors about invitations, precedencies, and the like, to take advantage of this more quiet time then accustomed, while no French nor Spanish Ministers were here, and to begin a new course, (at least pretended, if not intended,) no more to admit of Ambassadors to sit with his Majesty under the State; and to this purpose gave order for a box or seate to be made apart, with stooles, cushions, and leaning carpets to be bestowed in it on his Majestie's right, but somewhat obliquely forward, and therein were placed without exceptions from any of them, the newly come Venetian Ambassador Donati, and foure Commissioners sent hither from the States of the United Provinces. The Prince Palatine's Ambassador, the Baron of Donowe, at that time likewise employed hither, was seated as a

¹ Camden's Annals.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

³ It appears strange at first view that such a point should have been made to repeat the Masque this year, when not only the Queen's death was daily expected, but the Banquetting-house had been burnt, and (according to Mr. Lorkin, p. 511) the scenery had been also consumed, or at least must have necessarily been much injured. But it had now for several years been the custom to repeat the Christmas Masque; and neither the Author nor the Court were content to be disappointed.

domestique, but not without consideration of avoyding question, uppermost above all the Lords on the fourme usually placed for them¹."

About this time the King published a volume of "Meditations on the Lord's Prayer," which he dedicated to the Marquess of Buckingham.

On the 14th of February, Mr. Chamberlain addressed Sir Dudley Carleton:

"These only serve to present my service, and the event of that great cause now determined between my Lady Exeter and Sir Thomas Lake, which continued five days, the King every day present. The first day Sir Thomas Lake's bill against Luke Hatton; the second day my Lady of Exeter's bill against Sir Thomas Lake's wife and daughters, and both his sons; the third day Sir Thomas Lake's answer; the fourth, a cross bill of young Sir Thomas Lake against my Lady of Exeter; and the fifth day the Censure, which was upon Saturday last. Sir Thomas Lake and his Lady were fined at £.5000 a piece; my Lady Roos at 10,000 marks; young Sir Thomas Lake at £.300, and £.1000 damages to my Lady of Exeter; £.500 to Luke Hatton; £.200 to one [George] Williams; and £.100 to another woman [Elizabeth Gresham, the Countess's chambermaid]; and imprisonment in the Tower during the King's pleasure upon their own charges, and to make satisfaction to my Lady of Exeter. Sarah Waite [Swarton], one that waited upon my Lady Lake, fined at £.500, and committed to the Fleet; and from thence one day to be whipped to Westminster; and another day from the Fleet to Cheapside, and there to be burnt in the face with an A and a F for False Accusation, and from thence to Bridewell, to remain all her life.

"There were some that would have extenuated the fault of old Sir Thomas Lake, as my Lord Digby and my Lord Chancellor [Bacon]. The Papists are much dejected at it; and it was told the King, that the good success of Sir Thomas Lake's cause was prayed for at Louvaine².

"Sir Julius Cæsar was sent yesterday to Sir Thomas Lake to take the Seals from him, and this night about eight o'clock the Lieutenant carried him away to the Tower.

"The King goeth to-morrow for Newmarket.

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 58.

² Where was an English nunnery, removed to England at the French Revolution, and now (1826) settled at Spettisbury in Dorsetshire.

"The King upon Saturday, after the Censuring of the cause, gave the Judges their charge, exhorting them to have a special care of the Papists, and likewise of their wives; for he said the women were the nourishers of Papistry in this Kingdom, and that a Papist woman and a whore were *voces convertibiles*, which our Catholic Ladies take very ill; and one pretty allegory the King had in his Censure upon Sir Thomas Lake's case, which I may not omit, comparing my Lady Lake to the serpent, my Lady Roos to Eve, and Sir Thomas Lake to Adam ¹.

"The King's house at Dublin in Ireland was burnt about the same time that Whitehall was; and Sir Thomas Smith's house at Deptford is burnt to the ground ²."

On the 16th of February, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir George Etherington, Sir George Horsey, Sir Robert Seymour, and Sir Richard Wiseman; and "appointed, in the place of Sir Thomas Lake, Sir George Calvert, Secretary, who was Clerk of the Crown, whose prudence and fidelity in State-matters Robert Cecil, Secretary, was thoroughly acquainted with, and of whose assistance also the King made use; yea, and he judged that he would be a great help to Robert Naunton the other Secretary ³."

On the 19th⁴, his Majesty knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Thomas Musgrave and Sir Henry Roswell.

On the 20th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King went to Theobalds on Tuesday; but before his going Sir George Calvert was sworn Secretary. The night before he was sworn, the Lord of Buckingham told him the King's resolution; but he disabled himself divers ways, but specially that he thought himself unworthy to sit in that place so lately possessed by his noble Lord and Master [the Earl of Salisbury]. The King was pleased with his answer and modesty, and sending for him, asked many questions, most about his wife. His answer was, that she was a good woman, and had brought him ten children: and would assure his Majesty, that she was not a wife with a witness. This and some other passages of this kind seem to shew that the King is in a great vein of taking down high-handed women ⁵."

¹ The reader who would investigate this "great cause" further, is referred to Mr. Lorkin's letters, Birch's MSS. 4176, that writer entering more minutely into it than Mr. Chamberlain.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

³ See the short memoir of Sir George Calvert in p. 437.

⁴ In Philipot's Catalogue of Knights this is, by a misprint, April 19.

⁵ Ibid.

The 25th of February, two Gentlemen were advanced to the rank of Baronets :

103. Thomas Burdett, of Bramcote, Warwickshire, Esquire ¹.

104. George Morton, of Milbourne St. Andrew, Dorset, Esquire ².

On the 26th, Sir Thomas Fleetwood was knighted at Newmarket.

On the first of March, Prince Charles visited his Royal Mother, and early in the following morning her Majesty died of dropsy, in her 45th year. Arthur Wilson gives her the following short character : " She was, in her great condition, a good woman, not tempted from that height she stood on to embroil her spirit much with things below her, as some busie-bodies do ; only giving herself content in her own House with such recreations as might not make time tedious to her. And, though great persons' actions are often pried into, and make envy's mark, yet nothing could be fixed upon her that left any great impression, but that she may have engraven upon her monument a character of virtue ³."

" On the 5th, the intrails of the Queen, enclosed in a sexangular coffin, were carried at eight o'clock by her Servants to Westminster. They were deposited in the lower part of the Chappel in which Queen Elizabeth is buried ⁴."

On the 6th, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

" This day se'nnight we heard of the Queen's dangerous sickness, and the Tuesday following of her decease, which was about four o'clock that morning, being the second of this month. The reports ran at first that she had made a will, according to the privilege of our Queens, who, as our lawyers say, have *potestatem testandi*, and may dispose of all they have, saving lands and jewels belonging to the Crown ; that she had written a letter, and set apart a casket of jewels for the Lady Elizabeth ; that she made a very Christian confession and excellent end. But, for ought I can learn yet, she made none other than a nuncupatory will, or by word of mouth, giving all she had to the Prince, with charge

¹ Sir Thomas Burdett, descended from Hugh who came to England with the Conqueror, was Sheriff of Derbyshire in 1610, " was a good housekeeper, charitable to the poor, and ever ready to do all friendly offices." He had a Learned lady, who gave an asylum at Bramcote to Archbishop Sheldon during the Rebellion. Her husband apparently died before that æra, leaving his title to his son Francis, from whom Sir Francis, the present and fifth Baronet, is the fifth in descent.

² Eldest son of Sir George Morton, said in Hutchins's Dorsetshire to have been knighted in 1603 before the Coronation, and who died in 1610. Sir George the first Baronet was Knight for Dorsetshire in 1625 ; he was loyal to his Sovereign, and compounded for his estates at £.600. Dying in 1661, he left his title to his son Sir John, with whom it became extinct in 1698. See Hutchins's Dorsetshire, II. 186, 188. ³ Kennett's Complete History of England, II. 719. ⁴ Camden.

to her debts, and reward to her servants; and having a Grant upon Cloths lately given her to the value of £.8000 a year, she was fain to have her hand led to the passing it over to the Prince, being otherwise of no binding or validity; as likewise the manner of her will was rather in answering and saying 'Yea' to any thing that was demanded of her, than in disposing of aught of herself. So that it is doubted by some already how far it will stand good and firm, specially if it fall out that her moveables amount to better than £.400,000 as is generally reported, and her debts not £.40,000¹.

"Upon Monday all the Lords and Ladies almost about this town [London] went to Hampton Court; but very few were admitted. She was earnestly moved by the Archbishop of Canterbury [Dr. Abbot], and the Lord Privy Seal [the Earl of Worcester], and the Bishop of London [Dr. King], to prepare herself and set all things in order; but she could not be persuaded that her end was so near, out of a superstition (as some think) because it was Candlemas, or, as they call it, a dismal day. About two o'clock the next morning, having nobody about her but Danish Anna, who by commandment had locked them all out, her sight failed her. Whereupon the Prince and the rest were called up to be present at her departure, and she had the speech to the last gasp. Upon her opening, she was found much wasted within, specially her liver, as it were quite consumed. Her corpse is to be brought this day to Denmark House by water, and so to be buried at Westminster after Easter, the week before the Term, with the same solemnity and as much pomp, if it may be, as Queen Elizabeth.

"The King continues still at Newmarket, and so, it is said, will do, till the Funeral be past. He had lately there a shrewd fit of the stone, which is the second alarm he has had from that enemy."

On the 9th of March, the body of the Queen was conveyed by her Servants to Somerset House at night².

On the 12th, Thomas, first Viscount Fenton³, was advanced, by patent, to the Earldom of Kellie in the Peerage of Scotland.

¹ Sir Edward Howard, in a letter to Sir Dudley Carleton, giving an account of the Queen's death, says, "she died worth £.800,000 in jewels, plate, hangings, &c. whereof £.500,000 in jewels, besides a Lease of Wines, &c. And the King saves £.80,000 a year by her death, or thereabouts. The King took her death seemly."—See also what Mr. Chamberlain says in p. 532. ² Camden.

³ Of whom in p. 79, and a short memoir in vol. I. p. 270.—His descendant Thomas, the present Earl of Kellie, is the ninth who has enjoyed the title.

By patent, dated Newmarket, March 16, Walter, second Lord Scott of Buccleuch, was advanced to the titles of Earl of Buccleuch, Lord Whitchester and Eskdale, in the Peerage of Scotland¹.

On the 19th, there was a horse-race at Newmarket, at which the King tarrying too long, in his return from Newmarket was forced to put in at an inn at Wichfordbridge by reason of his being indisposed, and came very late in the night to Royston²."

By patent, dated Newmarket, March 20, Thomas, first Lord Binning and Byres³, was advanced to the title of Earl of Melrose in the Peerage of Scotland.

"On the 22d, the Prince went to meet his Father; and shortly after most of the higher sort of Nobility went also, upon the report of the King's indisposition⁴."

On the 27th, Mr. Chamberlain gave his friend Sir Dudley Carleton some additional information respecting the disposition of the Queen's property:

"The Queen's jewels are valuably rated at £.400,000 sterling; her plate at £.90,000; her ready coin 80,000 Jacobus'-pieces; 124 whole pieces of cloth of gold and silver, besides other silks and linen for quantity and quality beyond any Prince in Europe, and so for all other kinds of hangings, bedding, and furniture answerable. Now for yearly income the King shall save £.60,000, that her household, her servants, and stable stood him in, besides £.24,000 that was her jointure and allowed for her own purse, and £.13,000 she had for certain years out of the Sugars, and a late Grant of Cloths which they say the King hath bestowed on the Prince. For, as to the speech of a will, it is like to prove nothing; and perhaps it fell out for the best, for it is verily thought she meant to have made the King of Denmark her executor, if she had had time or leisure.

"On Wednesday, being the day of the King's coming to the Crown, all the Council about this town were at a poor Sermon at Paul's Cross, and dined at the Lord Mayor's. Most of the Court Lords, as the Duke [of Lennox], Earls of Arundel, Pembroke, and Montgomery, the Viscount Doncaster, and others, were gone post to the King upon notice of a violent fit of the stone. Whereupon the Prince was sent for on Monday, and met the King betwixt Newmarket and

¹ He had succeeded his father in 1611, and dying in 1633, was succeeded by his son John.—The remainder of the Earldom was afterwards extended to heirs female, and has descended through two Countesses, to the present and fifth Duke, the sixth Earl.

² Camden's Annals.

³ Of whom see a short memoir in p. 133; as there stated, he afterwards obtained a suppression of the Earldom of Melrose, and that of Haddington in exchange.

⁴ Camden's Annals.

Royston, whither he came weak and faint. He keeps his Easter at Royston, and the Bishop of Winchester [Dr. Andrews] was sent for, and went yesterday to preach to-morrow ¹. I am glad to see the world so tenderly affected toward him; for, I assure you, all men apprehended what a loss we should have, if God should take him from us, and do earnestly inquire, and in general heartily wish and pray for his welfare ²."

The King, being recovered, says Camden, kept his Easter at Royston, waited on by all the Nobility.

On the 9th of April, Sir Isaac Wake ³ was knighted at Royston.

On the 10th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"My Lord of Winchester [Bishop Andrews] is still at Royston with the King, who hath continued weak, and had divers accidents that gave him a general apprehension of danger. And though he bore it with unusual patience, yet it seems he was not so confident of himself, but that he prepared to settle things, as if he were to leave all; and to that end made an excellent Speech to the Prince before all the Lords there present, recommending divers of them to him by name for divers good parts and services, as the Duke [of Lennox], the Lord Chamberlain [the Earl of Pembroke], the Earl of Arundel, the Lord Fenton, Lord Hadington, but specially the Marquisses of Buckingham and Hamilton. The Lord Digby he only excused, as having undergone a great deal of envy for doing that he expressly commanded him, saying he was an able man, and fit to do service. Further he gave him charge of religion, and of respecting the Bishops, as grave and wise men, and best companions for Princes ⁴."

Again, on the 17th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Bishop of London [Dr. King] preached on Sunday at Paul's Cross, to give thanks for the King's recovery, and made a very pleasing piece of work upon the 17th verse of the xxxviiiith chapter of Isaiah. I did not conceive, before I

¹ The Sermon preached by Bishop Andrews on this occasion, if he did do so, is not included in his "XCVI Sermons;" but is the only Easter-day for which there is none between 1611 and 1624.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

³ Of whom in vol. I. p. 546, on his delivering a Speech before the King at Oxford as Orator of that University.—In Mr. Chamberlain's letter to Sir Dudley Carleton of April 17 this year, he says: "The King knighted Sir Isaac Wake in his bed, and told him he was the first he had made in that manner. He is taking his journey this day, by the way of Antwerp and Brussels, then to Heidelberg, and to the rest of the Princes of the Union."

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

heard him, that the extremity of the danger had been such as he delivered it; that there was little or no hope left, and that the physicians themselves were of that opinion. The audience was the greatest that I remember to have seen there; for, besides the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, with all the rest of the City Companies in their best array, there were almost all the Council and great men about this town, as the Archbishops of Canterbury and Spalato, with divers other Bishops, the Lord Privy Seal [the Earl of Worcester], the Duke of Lennox, the Lord Chamberlain [the Earl of Pembroke], the Earl of Arundel, Leicester, Devonshire, with many others that come not now in mind. But I must not forget four of the Earl of Suffolk's sons, who were the more noted, because they came somewhat late and by themselves, but specially because it had been given out, and perhaps believed, that during the King's sickness they carried their heads high, with all manner of feasting and jollity more than needed. All the Council that were present dined with the Bishop [of London], who, they say, made a great feast¹."

On the 19th of April, Mr. Lorkin thus wrote to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"His Majesty sets forward to-morrow from Royston to Ware, and, for his better ease, is to be carried all the way by his Guard, *alternis vicibus*, in a chair. At Ware² he intends to rest two nights, and then to come to Theobalds, where he means to stay till he be perfectly recovered.

"The Queen's Funeral is like to be deferred for want of money to buy the

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² At Ware the King was probably entertained at the seat of Thomas Fanshawe, Esq. Remembrancer of the Exchequer, (afterwards Viscount Fanshawe,) where our Correspondent Mr. Chamberlain was a frequent visitor (see particularly p. 99), and whence his Majesty in the autumn preceding his present visit (see p. 493) had been supplied with "grapes and peaches." Lady Fanshawe (sister-in-law of the first Viscount) in her MS. Memoirs says: "Mr. Campden speaks much in the praise (as you may see) of Sir Henry Fanshawe's garden at Ware Park, none excelling it in flowers, physick-herbs, and fruit, in which things he did greatly delight;" and Sir Henry Wotton, in his Essay on the Elements of Architecture, terms this garden "a delicate and diligent curiosity, surely without parallel among foreign nations."—Sir Henry Fanshawe had now been dead three years, and was succeeded by his son Thomas, created K. B. at the Coronation of Charles the First, successively M. P. for Lancaster, Preston, Hertford, and Hertfordshire, and created an Irish Peer by the titles of Baron and Viscount Fanshawe, of Donamore, Sept. 5, 1661.—The ancient manor-house of Ware, with the chapel and long gallery, was pulled down by Thomas Hyde, Esq. who died in 1731-2, and who erected a modern mansion on a new site, now the seat of his grandson Thomas-Hope Hyde, Esq. See Clutterbuck's Hertfordshire, vol. III. p. 296.

blacks, (for Sir Lionel Cranfield¹ saith, he will not take them up upon credit,) till the latter end of May. But whilst he is thus provident in forecasting the best way for the King's profit in buying the cloaths at best hand, some think he casts up ill account of that expence his Majesty is like to be at, all the interim, in maintaining the Queen's Household, which wants nothing of its full allowance till the Funeral be celebrated²."

On the 19th of April, the King knighted, at Royston, Sir Henry Mervyn³ and Sir John Jackson; on the 20th, at the same place, Sir Henry Hungate.

"On the 21st, his Majesty returns to Ware in a horse-litter; and the next day is carried in a coach, attended by the Life-guard, to Theobalds⁴."

On the 24th, Mr. Chamberlain addressed Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King removed on Monday [April 21], from Royston to Ware, being carried some part of the way by the Guard in a kind of Neapolitan portative chair given him by the Lady Elizabeth Hatton, and the rest in a litter. In the same manner he came the next day to Theobalds; but as weak and weary as he was, yet he would not settle within doors till he had his deer brought to make a muster before him.

"Your States and other Commissioners here had a great feast made them for a farewell on Monday at Merchant-Taylors' Hall; and on Tuesday night made a great Supper there, with a warlike dance or Masque of twelve men in complete armour⁵."

Whilst at Theobalds, the King knighted, on the 24th of April, Sir Charles Rich, of London⁶; on the 26th, Sir Robert Knolles; and on the 27th, Sir Peter Wroth, of Kent.

"On the 30th, the Earl of Southampton is made of the Privy Council at the Star-chamber.

"On the first of May, the Marquis de Tremouille, of the family of the Ursins, Ambassador from the French King, is entertained at Gravesend, and

¹ Either as Master of the King's Wardrobe, or as a Joint Commissioner of the office of Treasurer, to which he was appointed—perhaps re-appointed—in Jan. 1619-20 with Sir George Calvert, the Master of the Rolls being then removed.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

³ "Jan. 30, 1618-19. Mervin, the son of a lawyer, bargained with Francis Howard for the place of Vice-admiral." Camden's Annals. Sir Henry Mervin, of Petersfield, Hampshire, one of the Admirals of the Fleet, married Christian, one of the daughters of George first Earl of Castlehaven. Brydges's Peerage, VI. 554.

⁴ Camden's Annals.

⁵ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁶ Of whom in p. 510.

conducted to London. On the 3d, he was conducted by the Marquess of Buckingham to the King at Theobalds, where he is splendidly entertained ¹."

On the 4th of May, Mr. Lorkin thus wrote to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"The last week there met the King at Theobalds-park a gentleman-like fellow, one that had been a soldier, and exercised some command in the wars, who saluted his Majesty with a 'Stand, O King! I have a message to deliver from God!' His pretended message was this in effect: 'Thus saith the Lord, Have not I brought thee out of a land of famine and hunger into a land of plenty and abundance? Oughtest thou not therefore to have judged my people with righteous judgment? But thou hast perverted justice, and not relieved the oppressed. Therefore, unless thou repent, God hath rent the Kingdom from thee, and thy posterity after thee.' The Knight Marshall was commanded to take charge of him, who committed him to the Porter's Lodge. Being there, the Bishop of Durham [Dr. Neile] came to expostulate with him the reason of his impudent boldness, who alleged in his defence that he was moved thereto by the Spirit of God. The Bishop demanding in what form the spirit appeared to him, he answered in the form and shape of the Bishop of Winchester [Dr. Andrews]. He then questioned him of his religion; whose answer was, he might be sure he was no Puritan, for then the Spirit would never have appeared to him in the habit of a Bishop. Being asked of what order of prophets he was, (for he styled himself the Prophet of the Most High,) he said he was of the Order of Melchisedeck. That speech first discovered a crazy brain, the former savouring rather of blind zeal or malice than distraction and weakness. He was from thence sent to the Lord Chief Justice [Montagu], who soon found out his prophetic spirit to be a spirit of phrenzy and madness, and also sent him to Bedlam, where he now is.

"Upon Saturday the Marquis de Tremouille, lately Ambassador at Rome, arrived here in quality of Ambassador Extraordinary, accompanied with four others of his own rank, two Counts, and seven Barons, which make a great noise here to them that understand not the quality of the French Nobility. The Earl of Essex was sent to meet him. On Sunday the Marquis of Buckingham came purposely to London to entertain him. Yesterday he had an Audience of the King at Theobalds, and was Royally feasted and banquetted.

"His Majesty is perfectly recovered, save in his legs, wherein he finds such a debility as he is always fain to be carried; and some fear he will from henceforth be inforced to a sedentary life. This week he removes to Greenwich, and there,

¹ Camden's Annals.

they say, means to celebrate St. George's Feast, but I think the Funeral shall first be dispatched, which holds for certain upon Thursday come se'nnight¹."

Again, on the following day, the 5th of May, Mr. Lorkin wrote as follows:

"His Majesty (upon the Prince's suit you must know) granted my Lord of Buckingham £.1200 a year of land that was the Queen's, raised out of two goodly manors, which he is to hold in fee-farm; and, to requite this largess, my Lord of Buckingham hath obtained of the King the addition of £.5000 a year to the Prince's former allowance;—a fair exchange!"²

On the 8th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King continues at Theobalds. They have been once or twice troubled with odd fellows that, watching the King's going abroad, have brought him messages and admonitions from God. One was a pretty young fellow that had been Secretary to Lord Willoughby³ in Denmark. His name is Weekes; but for his labour he was sent to Bedlam, and there remains, though divers that have been to see him can perceive no spice of madness in his ordinary speech and conversation. But Williams, that wrote the libel of Balaam's Ass⁴, and the Commentary upon it, would not scape so good cheap, for he was arraigned on Monday last [May 3], at the King's Bench, and on Wednesday hanged, drawn, and quartered over against the Mews at Charing Cross. He died a Roman Catholic, and otherwise boldly and confidently enough; yet he prayed for the King and Prince, and said he was sorry he had written so saucily and unreverently, but pretended he had an inward warrant and a particular illumination to understand certain hard passages in Daniel and the Revelations, which made him adventure so far.

"On Monday the Marquis of Tremouille, the French Ambassador, went to Theobalds, with almost three-score coaches of four horses, and had a dinner and banquet; and after went to his Audience, which was reasonably long. The King used him very graciously, and so he came home as he went, accompanied by

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

² Ibid.

³ Lord Willoughby of Eresby, afterwards Earl of Lindsey, was Commander of the English forces in that country.

⁴ The full title of this libel was: "A Vision of Balaam's Ass, wherein he did perfectly see the state of the Church of Rome. Lond. 1616," 4to. In Watts's *Bibliotheca Britannica* it is erroneously ascribed to Peter Hay, the author of "An Advertisement to the Subjects of Scotland, of the dangers threatened to Christian States, and particularly to Great Britain, from the Ambassador of Spain. Aberdeen, 1627."

both the Marquises Buckingham and Hamilton, that came to town overnight to fetch him, with much other Nobility and Courtiers ¹."

On the 10th of May, Sir John Wingfield was knighted at Theobalds.

FUNERAL OF QUEEN ANNE ²,

AT HENRY THE SEVENTH'S CHAPEL, WESTMINSTER ABBEY,

May 13, 1619.

Banner of Norway, borne by the Lord Effingham.

Queen's servants.

Carvers, Cupbearers.

Queene's Counsell att Law.

Master of the Wardes.

Sir Thomas Stafford, as Controler of the Queene's Houshold.

Sir Thomas Tracy, as Treasurer of the Queene's Household ³.

Banner of Denmarke, borne by the Lord Clifford.

BARONES.

Dingwell.	Clancleven.	Digby.	Haughton.
Knevelt.	Arundell of Wardour.	Denny.	Spenser.
Danvers.	Russell.	Norris.	St. John.
Chandos.	North.	Pagett.	Sheffield.
Cromwell.	Mordant.	Wentworth.	Windsor.
Scrope.	Stafford.	Dacres.	Barkeley.
Willoughby.	Zouch.	Abergeveny.	

BISHOPPS.

Bristow.	Chichester.	Coventry.	Rochester.
Ely.	Durham.	Winchester.	London.

Lord John Paulett, second sonne to the Marquis of Winchester.
 Earles' eldest sonnes; Lords Cavendish, Burghley, Walden, Beauchamp,
 Wriothesley, Fitzwater, Clifford, Ruthyn, Matravers.

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² From Camden's MS. volume, in Harl. MSS. 5176.

³ "They were her chief Gentlemen Huishiers."

VISCOUNTS.

Haddington. Wallingford.

Lord D'aubigny [eldest son of the Duke of Lennox.]

EARLES.

Kelly. Devon. Warwick. Northampton.

Bridgewater. Salisbury. Dorsett. Lincoln.

Essex. Southampton. Sussex.

Lord Chancellor [Bacon].

Lord Archbishop of Canterbury [Abbot].

Great Banner, borne by the Earles of Montgomery and Tullibarne.

Mr. Colborne. Clarenceux. Norroy. Mr. Steward.

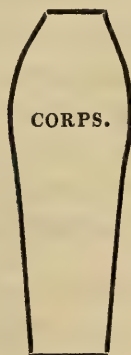
Lord Chamberlayne [Earl of Leicester],
and Lord Steward of the Queene's house [Earl of Hertford].

THE PRINCE'S HIGHNES.

Earl of Nottingham.

Earl of Pembroke,
Lord Chamberlayne.

Marquis Hamilton.



Earl of Arundell.

Earl of Oxford.

Marquis of Buckingham,
his room supplied by the
Earl of Rutland¹.

Mr. Tunshall.

Garter.

Mr. Bethell.

The Canopy was borne by the following :

Sir Theobald Gorge.

Sir Robert Maxwell.

Sir James Atrelony.

Sir William Herbert.

Sir William Amstruder.

Sir Walter Achton [Aston].

Sir John Leedes.

Sir George Ker.

Sir Robert Maunsell.

Sir Oliver Cromwell.

Sir William Twisden.

Mr. Walter Steward.

¹ The Marquis was doubtless attendant on the King at Theobalds.

The Bannerolles borne by these following :

Sir Cary Renell, England & Denmarke.	Sir Ro. Osborne, Denm. & Meckleburg.
Sir John Trevor, Denmarke and Saxon.	Sir Tho. Penrudock, Saxon & Brunsw'k.
Sir Ro. Amstruder, Denm. & Pomerland.	Sir Jo. Keyes, Pomerland and Poleland.
Sir Jas. Spense, Ouldenb. and Brandenb.	Sir Fran. Henderson, Brandenb. & Sax.
Sir Will. Zouch, Ouldenb. and Sleswick.	Sir Benj. Rudiard, Sleswick & Brunsw.
Sir Rich. Young, Oldenb. and Holstein.	Geo. Digby, Oldenburg and Deipholt.

The Body caryed by these following :

Sir Hugh Carmichell.	Sir James Croft.
Sir George Renell.	Sir John Ratcliff.
Sir William Slingsby.	Sir Ambrose Turvill.
Sir Edward Douce.	Sir Thomas Bartlett.
Sir Edward Bushill.	Sir John Hungerford.

Supporter, the Duke of Lennox.	THE PRINCIPALL MOURNER, the Countess of Arundell, her traine borne by the Countesses of Derby and Sussex, assisted by Lord Carew, Vice-chamber- layne to the Queene.	Supporter, the Earl of Worcester, Lord Privy Seale.
---	---	---

THE COUNTESES ASSISTANTES.

Southampton.	Bedford.	Pembroke, dowager.	Hertford.
Lincoln.	Dorsett.	Excester.	Bridgwater.
Buckingham.	Leicester.	Warwicke.	Devonshire.
	Kildare.	Lady D'aubigny.	

Sir Thomas Somersett, Master of the Queen's Horse, with the horse of honour.

Viscountes Doncaster.	Lady Ruthin.	Lady Fitzwalter.
Lady Beauchamp, dowager.	Lady Beauchamp.	Lady Effingham.
Lady Walden.	Lady Burleigh.	Lady Lisle.
Lady Grace Cavendish.	Lady Susan Longvill.	Lady Penelope Spenser.
Lady Elizabeth Gorge.	Lady Kencleven.	Lady Elizabeth Hatton.

Lady Frances Egerton.	Lady Mary Wroth.	Lady Ann Compton.
Lady Isabell Smith.	Lady Anne Wriothesley.	Lady Phillipp Hubbard.

BARONESES.

Zouch.	Willoughby de Eresby.	Delaware.	Barkley.
Scrope.	Wentworth.	Burrough.	Sheffield.
Pagett.	North.	Chandos.	Hunsdon.
St. John.	Russell.	Gerard.	Denny.
Carew.	Knevelt.	Houghton.	Verulam.
Digby.	Kinlosse.	Ophally [Offaley].	

LADIES OF THE PRIVY-CHAMBER.

Lady Goring. ¹	Mrs. West.	Mrs. Burrough.
Mrs. Eliz. Howard.	Lady Giffard.	Lady Lovell.
Lady Cary.	Lady Felding ¹ .	Lady Walsingham ² .
Lady Varney ³ .	Lady Rodney ⁴ .	Lady Monson.
Lady Molleneux.	Lady Turwhitt.	Lady Griffin.
Lady Harvey.	Lady Osberne.	Lady Hart.
Lady Cane.	Lady Lowre.	Lady German.
Lady Carew.	Lady Trevor.	Mrs. Thin.
Lady Maunsell.	Lady Vdall.	Lady Killegrew.
Mrs. Eliz. Murray.	Lady Zouch.	Lady Lundy.
Lady Bennett.	Mrs. Maherne.	Mrs. Poe.
Mrs. Jane Murray.	Mrs. Anslow.	Mrs. De Vic.
Mrs. Ann Rumbellow.		Mrs. Speckard.

Countesses' Women,
and after them :

Mrs. Levin.	Mrs. Anna Maria ⁵ .	Mrs. Rider.
Mrs. Tomson.	Mrs. Duppa.	Mrs. Merill.
Mrs. Tillier.	Mrs. Swansted.	Mrs. Guillian.

Earles' Daughters' Weomen.

Captayne of the Gard, and Clerk of the Check.

The Garde.

¹ "The four Ladyes marked with ¹, ², ³, ⁴, had these places assigned to them by especial partialitie for this daye, above Baronets' wiffes, not without repining."

⁵ Doubtless the Danish maid, mentioned in pp. 531, 549.

THE OFFERING AT THE FUNERALL.

The Cheife Mourner offered first for the defunct, supported by the Lord Privy Seale and Duke of Lenox, and the Ladyes' Assistants followed; her trayne borne; her Officers, the Steward, Chamberlayne, Treasurer, Countroller, Gentlemen-huishers, attending; going round about the hearse, Garter preceeding, and so returned to hir place.

The Prince, brought from the Deane's pue, offered, his trayne caried; Garter preceeding.

He then stayed and received the Banners in this order:

Clarenceux and Norroy brought up the Great Banner, caried by the Earles of Montgomery and Tullibarne, who were placed at the west end of the hearse, neare the Cheife Mourner.

Yorke the Banner of Denmarke, borne by the Lord Clifford.

Somerset the Banner of Norway, borne by the Lord Effingham.

Windsor the Banner of Sweaden, borne by the Lord Hunsdon.

Lancaster the Banner of Gothland, borne by Sir Andrew Keith.

Richmond the Banner of the Vandalles, borne by Sir Ferdinando Dudley.

Chester the Banner of Sleswick and Holsteine, borne by Sir Rowland St. John.

The Banner of Oldenburgh and Delmenhurst, borne by Sir Thomas Gerard.

The Banner of the Union, borne by Sir George Chaworth.

These Banners were all placed upon formes, at the east end of the hearse.

The six first Bannerolles stode without the rale of the hearse, on the south side; the six others on the north side of the hearse.

Garter brought the Prince downe to his place.

The Principall Mourner offered alone, Garter preceeding.

Clarenceux and Norroy brought up her two supporters, Lord Privy Seale and Duke of Lennox, who made reverence to the Prince.

Garter the six Assistants to the Body, of whom the Marquis of Hamilton, Earles of Oxford, Pembroke, and Arundell, were present; Nottingham withdrew himselfe¹, and Rutland supplied his place.

Norroy the two Countesses that bare the trayne, Derby and Sussex; for Northumberland and Salop refused it².

¹ Doubtless on account of his age and infirmities.

² Perhaps from motives of pride, the Chief Mourner being but one of their own rank.

[Then the other mourners were brought up, successively, by the Heralds, and their names need not be here repeated. It may be noticed that, "the Lord Chancellour was placed with the Earles in the Schollers' pue;" the Captain of the Guard, Lord Walden, offered according to his birth, among the Earles' eldest sons; Lord Carew among the Barons, "albeit he caried the trayne;" several Knights of the King's Privy Counsell offered, *viz.* the Treasurer and Controler of his Majestie's Household; the two Secretaries of State, Naunton and Calvert; the Chancellor of the Exchequer, Sir Julius Cæsar; the Master of the Rolls, Sir Thomas Philipps; and Sir Edward Coke. The Officers of the Queen's Household "brake their staffes of office on their bare heades at the head of the defunct."]

Garter then proclaimed the Queene's stile and parentage; the Trumpetts sounded; and the Deane of Westminster [Dr. Robert Tounson] dismissed the company with the Peace of God.

The hearse of Queene Anne was not taken downe before the 12th of July, and then, after good prooffe that it belonged to them [the Heralds], was devided att the Office of Armes amongst us.

A BIBLIOGRAPHICAL LIST OF TRACTS ON THE DEATH OF QUEEN ANNE.

JAMES ANNESON (see MAXWELL).

CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY.

1. "Lachrymæ Cantabrigienses in Obitum serenissimæ Reginæ Annæ, conjugis dilectissimæ Jacobi, Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Regis. *Ex officinâ Cantrelli Legge, almæ Matris Cantabrigiæ Typographi*, 1619." 4to, pp. 92.

Copies are in the British Museum and Sion College libraries. One was sold in the Library of James West, Esq. Pres. R. S. March 29, 1773, and with the Oxford Poems on this occasion and twelve other curious tracts, obtained only 4s. 6d. and one was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Jan. 11, 1819, for 6s. 6d. to Mr. Wellesley.

- PATRICK HANNAY, author of "A Happy Husband; or Directions for a Maid to choose her Mate. Together with a Wife's behaviour after Marriage," 8vo, 1619; and "The Nightingale, Sheretine, and Mariana," 1622.

2. "Two Elegies on the death of our Sovereigne Queene Anne. With Epitaphs. Written by Patrick Hannay, Mr of Arts. *London: Printed by Nicholas Okes*, 1619," 4to, pp. 32.

This was entered at Stationers' Hall, May 15, 1619. A copy is in the British Museum, bound with the Oxford Poems. One was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 8, 1820, and obtained £.2 from Mr.

Evans.—The title page is cut in white on black, and all the vacant pages are wholly black. These Elegies were re-published with in 1622, the Poems named above, and other Songs and Sonnetts.

JAMES MAXWELL.

3. "Carolanna; that is to say, a Poeme in Honour of our King, Charles-James, Queene Anne, and Prince Charles; but principally in honour of the immortall memory of our late noble and good Queene of Albion and Union, herein celebrated under the names of Dianna and Cambrina, by allusion unto her Princely name and Nation; begun to be penned on her fatall day of Mars the second of March last; ended on the Octave the next Mars day; and now published to summon all rankes and degrees in Christendome, espécially in the Northerne Kingdomes of Brittannie, Denmark, and Germanie, to celebrate her Anniversarie on the next second of March, and applaud her third Coronation in Heaven, at the next S. Anne's day every yeere for ever. By James Anneson, Antiquarie and Maister of Arts. *Imprinted at London by Edward All-de,*" 4to, pp. 48. (No date).

There is a copy of this in the British Museum; one was sold to Mr. Evans for £4. 14s. 6d. at the sale of Mr. Bindley's Library, Aug. 8, 1820; and one was valued at £5 in the *Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica*.—Anneson proves to be an assumed name. The real author of this very eccentric production was "James Maxwell, Antiquarie, sonnes son to William, son to the Laird of Kirkconnell, and once man-at-arms to the most Christian King, and Servant to two most noble and renowned Queene Maries, the Mother and Daughter." He gives, at the end of "Carolanna," a list of no less than twenty-one poetico-genealogical productions, of which he appears to have published only two or three; but other publications by him are enumerated in Watts's *Bibliotheca Britannica*. Two, on Prince Henry's death and the Princess Elizabeth's Marriage, have been noticed in vol. II. pp. 507, 625. It is clear, however, that he must not be identified with either of the two James Maxwells particularized in the former of those pages.

OXFORD UNIVERSITY.

4. "Academiæ Oxoniensis Funebria Sacra, æternæ memoriæ serenissimæ Reginæ Annæ, potentissimi Monarchæ Jacobi Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Regis, &c. desideratissimæ Sponsæ, dicata. *Oxonix, excudebant Johannes Lichfield et Jacobus Short, Academiæ Typographi, anno Dom. 1619,*" 4to, pp. 142.

Copies are in the British Museum (presented by George the Third), and in the Bodleian Library.

WILLIAM SLATYER, D. D. of whom and his works see fully in Wood's *Athenæ Oxonienses*, by Bliss, vol. III. col. 227—230. — His portrait, prefixed to his edition of the Psalms, was re-published by Richardson.

5. "ΟΦΗΝΩΔΙΑ, sive Pandionium Melos, in perpetuam serenissimæ simul ac beatissimæ Principis Annæ nuper Angliæ Reginæ memoriam. Elegies and Epitaphs, by W. S. late Servant and Chaplaine to her Majestie. *London: Imprinted by John Beale, 1619,*" 4to, pp. 24.

This Tract consists of acrosticks, pyramids, pillars, compasses, and other similar devices. The copy now in the Museum (given by George III.) is that which the Author presented to Prince Charles, and under seven lines of poetry, in which he requests the Prince to

“ Dayne then for her sake, that the like long since
Dayn'de, to protect me and my lines, faire Prince,”

is the following *in manuscript*:

“ My so longe since entended, lately moved, and still continued humble Petition beinge that, whereas I was your Royall Mother's Chaplaine, I might seeke to none other then your gracious selfe for such honorable favor and countenance, whereby in the meanest admitted your servant, I might more peculiarly mencion your Princely name. And I shall as a Devine continually offer up my prayer to the Allmighty for your happie preservacion, though as a Poett tendring my orizons for your Highnesse att the shrine of Pallas and the Muses.

“ So to your gracious excellence in all humility devoted, W. SLATYER¹.

WILLIAM SWADDON, D. D. Archdeacon of Worcester, of whom in Wood's *Fasti Oxonienses*, by Bliss, vol. III. col. 297.

6. “ Upon the death of Queen Anne, wife of our Sovereigne Lord King James. Funeral Verses written by William Swadon, of New College in Oxford, Doctor of Divinity, and Chaplayne to her Majesty.”

These are some Latin verses, printed on a broadside, and inserted between pp. 344—345 of Camden's *Remains*, third edition.

The day of the Queen's Funeral was “ with very great solemnity celebrated at Oxford in St. Mary's Church, Dr. Goodwin, the Vice-chancellor², then preaching before the Academians³.”

On the 14th of May, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“ It were to no purpose to make any long description of the Queen's Funeral, which was but a drawling tedious sight, more remarkable for number than for any other singularity, there being 280 poor women besides an army of mean fellows that were servants to the Lords and others of the Train. And though the number of Lords and Ladies was very great, yet methought all together they made but a poor shew, which perhaps was because they were apparelled all alike or that they came laggering all along even tired with the length of the way⁴ and

¹ It is a remarkable instance how careless men then were even in the spelling of their own names that in the opposite page, for the sake of an acrostick, this worthy Divine makes his Slatyar. On his portrait it is Slater.

² And Dean of Christ Church, who had in 1612 performed the same duty at Oxford on the day of Prince Henry's Funeral (see vol. II. p. 504), and of whom see a short memoir in this vol. p. 23, on occasion of his preaching before the King at Woodstock, Aug. 28, 1614.

³ Wood's *Annals of Oxford*, by Gutch, II. 332. ⁴ From Somerset House to Westminster Abbey.

weight of their cloaths, every Lady having twelve yards of broad-cloath about her, and the Countesses sixteen. The Countess of Arundel was Chief Mourner (but whether in her own right, or supplying the place of the Lady Elizabeth, I know not), being supported by the Duke of Lennox and the Marquis of Hamilton; as likewise the rest had some to lean on, or else I see not how they had been able to hold out. The Prince came after the Archbishop of Canterbury, who was to make the Sermon, and went before the corps, that was drawn by six horses. It was full six o'clock at night before all the solemnity was done at Church, where the herse is to continue till the next Term, the fairest and stateliest that I think was ever seen there.

"The King came to Greenwich on Tuesday, and the next morning the Queen's trunks and cabinets with jewels were brought thither from Denmark House in four carts, and delivered by inventory by Sir Edward Coke and Auditor Goston. The King perused them all, and bestowed some reasonable portion on the Lord of Buckingham. Besides, he hath the keeping of Denmark House, and another gift beyond all this of £.1200 land of the King's, for his good service and tender care of the King in his last sickness; and it is said that, excepting castles and honours, he may make his choice of this sum where he thinks fit¹."

On the 16th of May, being Whitsunday, Bishop Andrews preached before the King at Greenwich on Acts, x. 34, 35².

On the 18th, Mr. Lorkin wrote as follows to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"Upon Thursday last the Funeral was solemnized; which was fatal to a young gentleman and a scholer, one Appleyard of Lynne, who placing himself on a scaffold under Northampton House, one of the letters of the battlements³, by the weight of some that standing upon the leads leaned over to see, fell upon his head and struck him. He was presently removed to St. Martin's Church-yard, where divers flocking to see him, amongst the rest a scrivener's wife beheld the sad spectacle, and was so deeply affected therewith, that returning to her house she immediately died⁴."

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² The Discourse is printed in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Twelfth on the Sending of the Holy Ghost.

³ It appears from this that there was formerly an inscription round the battlements of Northumberland House, consisting of a motto, or the date of the building, or something of the kind, similar to that remaining at Castle Ashby in Northamptonshire, and elsewhere. ⁴ Birch's MSS. 4176.

Whilst the King was at Greenwich, he knighted, on the 18th of May, Sir Charles Chibborne, of Essex; Sir John Walter; and Sir Thomas Trevor, of London¹; on the 21st, Sir Charles Harfleet, of Kent; and on the 24th, Sir Alexander Muncryfe, *Scotus*.

"On the 20th, the French Ambassador was nobly treated at a banquet at Whitehall by the Duke of Lennox; and the next day left London²."

On the 24th, Mr. Lorkin again addressed Sir Thomas Puckering:

"This day se'nnight the States' Commissioners and our East Indian Company met before the King in the Gallery at Greenwich; the one standing at one end of the Gallery, and the other at the other; his Majesty interposing himself between them for the accommodating the difference, not without probability of accord, his Majesty being inclined to over-rule his own people, to cause them to accept of such conditions as otherwise they would refuse, and the States yielding in some particulars likewise.

"His Majesty intends to declare my Lord Digby Extraordinary Ambassador [to Spain] very shortly. The King is pleased to put him into means for that employment by granting him the making of some Baron or other suit that he shall find out.

"My Lord of Oxford³ bears now his white staff, and shall have a talk at Court, as have had his ancestors, exercising his office of Lord High Chamberlain of England. There is a speech of marriage, but the voice is divided,—some say with my Lady Wroth, others say with Mrs. Diana Cecil⁴.

"On Wednesday is St. George's Feast, when there is like to be a great Creation,—I mean not of Knights of the Order, but hereditary titles. The

¹ "These last holidays," says Mr. Chamberlain, May 31, "the Prince got three of his Learned Council knighted,—Sir Charles Chibborne his Serjeant, Sir John Walter his Attorney, and Sir Thomas Trevor his Solicitor." The first was Autumn Reader at Lincoln's Inn in 1613, and made a Serjeant-at-law in 1614.—Sir John Walter was admitted of Gray's Inn in 1582, called to the Bar in 1593, and appointed Serjeant-at-law in 1625.—Sir Thomas Trevor was great-uncle of the first Lord Trevor. He was Autumn Reader at the Inner Temple in 1620; called to be Serjeant-at-law, with Sir John Walter, in 1625, and King's Serjeant the same year; afterwards Chief Baron of the Exchequer; and died Dec. 4, 1656, aged 84, leaving a son Sir Thomas, who had been made K. B. at the Coronation of Charles I. and had been honoured with a Baronetcy in 1641, but in which he left no heir to succeed him. See further of Sir Thomas's history in Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 294; where, however, he is erroneously stated to have been Judge of the Common Pleas, perhaps by confounding him with the first Lord Trevor.

² Camden's Annals.

³ The Earl, of whom see vol. II. p. 341, had been for some years abroad.

⁴ The latter was the Lady of his choice; see p. 521.

Marquis of Hamilton shall be made Earl of Cambridge; my Lord Aubigny Earl of Gloucester¹; Sir John Villiers Viscount of Purbeck (an island in Dorsetshire, where the best part of his wife's land lies, the whole island being hers), and shall have assured upon him by my Lady Hatton and my Lady Coke seven-thousand pound land a year; to induce the said Lady Hatton whereunto she shall be honoured with a title likewise,—Countess of Westmoreland². And to let you see how good fortune runs in a blood, Sir Christopher Villiers shall be married to Alderman Harvey's only daughter, the Match being concluded, though so much against the old man's stomach, as the conceit thereof hath brought him very near his grave already, if at least the world mistake not the true cause of his sickness.

"The 29th of August the King appoints to be at Warwick, which makes my Lady Cary somewhat doubtfull of her journey to Killingworth.

"Herrick the Jeweller hath taken his oath, that he delivered to the Queen six-and-thirty-thousand pounds' worth of Jewels, whereof he keeps the models; which yet appear not. She was supposed likewise [to have] a great treasure of ready money; but not a penny found. Upon these two [circumstances] a great suspicion is grounded of Pierro, who you know was her creature and favourite. His carriage in some particulars since the Queen's death augments the jealousy. He hath gone under guard a long time. Now he is committed to Justice Doubledie's house by express commandment of the King³."

"On Tuesday the 25th of May, the Kinge helde the Feast of Saint George at Greenwich⁴."

On the 27th, his Majesty went to Theobalds⁵.

On the 31st, Sir William Hervey, of Kidbrook, in the county of Kent, Knight, (afterward Lord Hervey of that place,)⁶ was advanced to a Baronetcy, being the 106th so honoured.

¹ The title of Gloucester, which had been enjoyed by King Richard the Third, was not bestowed on the present occasion, but reserved for Henry youngest son of Charles the First. That of March, which was really bestowed on Lord D'Aubigny, was, however, equally high from the lustre of its former possessors;—it had been last enjoyed by King Edward the Fifth.

² This conjecture, which was probably grounded upon the recent elevation of the other great Lady of this party to be Countess of Buckingham, is totally unsupported by events, as no peerage was ever conferred on Lady Hatton. The Earldom of Westmoreland was in 1624 bestowed on Francis Fane, maternally descended from Ralph Nevill the first Earl.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

⁴ Howes' Chronicle.

⁵ Camden's Annals.

⁶ This Nobleman was an eminent soldier. He first distinguished himself in 1588 in the action

On the same day Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"On Wednesday St. George's Feast was kept at Greenwich; and yesterday the King removed to Theobalds.

"The King comes to Whitehall to-morrow, and our Aldermen and Citizens must go to meet him in their best array to welcome him to town after his dangerous sickness. But this Triumph suits not so well with the Condolings that are to come after by divers Ambassadors that are said to be on the way.

"The Marquis of Tremouille [the French Ambassador] went hence in Whitsun week, after he had been feasted by the Earl of Dorset, and the Duke of Lennox, that made him a Supper at Whitehall of £.400, which would cost another the double, but that he is Lord Steward.

"Pierro, the Queen's Frenchman, and her Dutch maid Anna, are clapt up for embezzling of jewels (as is thought) to the value of £.30,000.

"On Trinity Sunday St. Paul's Cross mourned, being hanged with black cloth and scutcheons of the Queen's arms, and all our Aldermen and Officers of this town came thither in black, as it were *post liminio*. Because they were forgotten or neglected at the Funeral, the King, to please them, would needs have it done now. Only the Lord Mayor [Sir Sebastian Harvey] was not there, being very sick and surfeited upon messages sent him by the King about his only daughter, whom the Countess of Buckingham will needs have for her son Christopher; and the Mayor, a wilful and dogged man, will not yeeld by any means fair nor foul as yet, and wishes himself and his daughter both dead rather than be compelled. The truth is, she is not past fourteen, and very little of growth, so that he protests he will not marry her these four or five years by his will. But yet he hath taken the King's messages so to heart, that he hath been at death's door, and is yet not so recovered, but that he says it lies there still, though the Duke of

with the Spanish Armada, when he was principally concerned in boarding one of the enemy's galleons, killing the Captain, Hugh Moncada, with his own hand. He was knighted at Cadiz, June 27, 1596; and afterwards greatly distinguished himself in Ireland. He did not remain in the rank of Baronet for much more than a year, being created an Irish Peer by the title of Lord Hervey of Ross, co. Wexford, Aug. 5, 1620. He acquired his English Barony, Feb. 7, 1627-8; and died in June 1642, leaving an only surviving child, Elizabeth, married to her third cousin once removed, John Hervey, Esq. of Ickworth, uncle of the first Earl of Bristol. Lord Hervey was buried with great solemnity in St. Edward's Chapel in Westminster Abbey, but has no monument. See more fully of his history in Brydges's Peerage, vol. IV. pp. 145—147.

Lennox and Marquis of Buckingham have been severally with him, besides divers others from the King, to comfort him¹."

On the following day, June 1, Mr. Lorkin again wrote to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"This day his Majesty makes a solemn Entry in London, coming in by Gray's Inn, where my Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and ten of every Company meet him on horseback, and so bring him along down Chancery-lane, and through all the Strand to Whitehall; which is done by way of congratulation for his recovery. The Lords and Gallants of the Court come mounted upon great horses in the best equipage they may.

"The new Honours my last letter mentioned are not yet divided. My Lady Hatton seems to be the only cause or occasion of delay; who refuses to make the assurance of land she formerly pretended to consent to. But very shortly we look for the accomplishment, with this addition, that Sir Thomas Wentworth³, my Lord Clifford's brother-in-law, is like to be made Baron by my Lord Digby's procurement, who thereby shall put himself into means for his Ambassage²."

In preparation for the King's Triumphant Return to London, as noticed in the two preceding letters, "the Court of Aldermen resolved, that the Recorder and Aldermen (the Lord Mayor being ill), with the Town Clerk, Common Serjeant, four Esquires of the Lord Mayor's Household, and divers of the chief persons of the Twelve principal Companies, being well horsed, with velvet coats and chains of gold, should go to Gray's Inn-fields, and from thence attend his Majesty to his Palace of Whitehall; and the following Precept was sent to the said Companies⁴:

"By the Maior.

"To the Master and Wardens of the Company of [Ironmongers.]

"Whereas his Majestie, by God's greate mercy, hath lately recovered a greate and dangerous sicknes, and I have lately received advertisement that his Majestie will to-morrowe repaire to his Pallace of Whitehall, which is the first time of his Highnes' accesse to or neere this City of London since his recovery, I have, therefore, with the advice of my Brethren the Aldermen, thought it fitt for the

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² Sir Thomas Wentworth (afterwards Earl of Strafford, see vol. II. p. 435) was not created a Baron till 1628.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

⁴ Here first printed from the Records of the City of London.

expressing of our bounden duetie to our gracious Sovereigne, and of our thankfulness and joy for so greate blessing, that wee shold attend upon his Majestie in such number and order as with most conveyencie wee may on the sodaine, to expresse this our service to his Majestie. Theis shalbe therefore to will and require you, in his Majestie's name, to provyde and have in a readynes the full number of [ten] persons of the most grave, tall, and comely personages of your said Company, every of them to be well horsed and apparrelled in velvet coats and chaines of gold; and that not only your selves, but also every of the said persons, being well and sufficiencyently horsed, apparrelled, and appointed as afore-said, do meet at the Guildhall to-morrowe at twelve of the clocke in the fore-noone, from thence to attend upon mee and my Brethren the Aldermen to Gray's Inn-fields, from thence to waite and attend upon his most excellent Majestie to his said Highnes' Pallace. And hereof faile not, as you will answeare the contrary at your perills, if through your negligence or defalt any parte of this service shall not be fully performed. Ffrom my house, this last of May 1619.

Ironmongers	- - 10	Goldsmymes	- - 10	Vinteners	- - - 10
Mercers	- - - 10	Skynners	- - - 10	Cloth-workers	- - 10
Grocers	- - - 15	Merchantaylors	- 15		
Drapers	- - - 15	Haberdashers	- - 15		140
Ffishemongers	- - 10	Salters	- - - 10		

After arriving at Whitehall, on the first of June, his Majesty knighted Sir Nicholas Lower.

On the 4th, Thomas Mackworth, of Normanton, Rutlandshire, Esquire¹, was created a Baronet, being the 107th raised to that dignity.

On the 5th, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King came from Theobalds on Tuesday to Whitehall all along the fields; and on the back side of Gray's Inn was met by a fair troop of our Citizens on horseback, with their chains of gold, or pearl, or diamonds, and the Aldermen in scarlet. The Recorder made a short Speech in gratulation of his recovery, and excuse of the Lord Mayor's absence; whereto the King gave no

¹ This family is derived from Mackworth in Derbyshire. The first Baronet served Sheriff of Rutlandshire in 1599 and 1609; and at the Rebellion compounded for his estate at £879. He was succeeded by his son Sir Henry; from whom Sir Henry, the present and seventh Baronet, is fourth in descent.

great heed, making little shew of being pleased, as being given to understand he is more sullen than sick, which in very truth is otherwise, for he continues still in weak estate. The King was attended by the Prince and all the Nobility in very good equipage, himself being fresh in suit of watchet satin laid with a blue and white feather; as also his horse was furnished with the like both before and behind; insomuch that all the Company was glad to see him so gallant, and *more like a Wooer than a Mourner*. But what decorum it will be, when Ambassadors come to condole (as here is from the Duke of Loraine with two or three-and-twenty followers all in black,) let them consider whom it more concerns.

"The Lord Chancellor [Bacon] waited his coming in the Presence at Whitehall, accompanied with the whole Choir, as he termed it, of Judges and Lawyers. The King was gone early the next morning on hunting, and that night to Greenwich, so that it seems his only coming hither was to receive these applauses and gratulations.

"He makes account to continue at Greenwich, Theobalds, Wansted, Havering, and hereabouts, till the 18th of July, that he begins his Progress Northward as far as Royston, Nottingham, Derby, and so, by Warwick and Sir William Pope's, to Woodstock, Rycot, Bisham, and Windsor¹."

On the 7th of June, Esme Stuart, Lord D'Aubigny, (afterwards third Duke of Lennox²;) was created, by patent, Baron Stuart of Leighton Bromswold in Huntingdonshire, and Earl of March.

On the 8th, the King knighted, at Greenwich, Sir Miles Sandys³; and feasted there an Ambassador from the Duke of Lorraine, who had arrived on the 3d⁴. On the 9th, 10th, 11th, and 13th, Sir John White, Sir Joseph Hayes, Sir

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² See vol. II. pp. 186, 247, 442; and this vol. p. 136.—His title of Baron was taken from the estate of his father-in-law Lord Clifton of Leighton Bromswold, of whom see vol. II. p. 335, and who had, as Camden says, "laid violent hands on himself" in October preceding the present date, leaving Lady D'Aubigny his sole heir.—The Barony of Stuart of Leighton Bromswold and Earldom of March became extinct with Charles sixth Duke of Richmond in 1672; but King Charles the Second conferred the Earldom with the Dukedom in 1675 on his natural son Charles Lennox, and they have jointly descended to his present Grace, the fifth of his family.

³ Eldest son of Sir Miles Sandys, Bart. of whom in vol. I. p. 116. He succeeded his father in that title in 1644, but it became extinct with him. See Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. I. p. 363.

⁴ Camden's Annals.

Robert Bennet, and Sir Sampson Darrell, were knighted at Greenwich ; as, about the same time, was Sir Robert Gorges, at a place unrecorded.

“On Sunday the 13th of June, all the Privy Counsellors, by the King’s special command, partake of the Sacrament of the Lord’s Supper at Greenwich, in order to shew mutual charity one to another¹.”

On the 15th, William Grey, Esquire, son and heir of Sir Ralph Grey, of Chillingham, Northumberland, Knight², (and afterwards Lord Grey of Warke,) was advanced to a Baronetcy, being the 108th in rank of Creation.

On the 16th, James Hamilton, second Marquis of Hamilton³, was advanced, by patent, to be Baron of Ennerdale in Cumberland, and Earl of Cambridge.

On the 19th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“The King came unlooked for from Theobalds to Whitehall on Thursday. He went hence yesterday morning very early to Theobalds, and at night was entertained by young Sir Henry Mildmay at Wanstead, which he hath lately purchased⁴ of the Marquis of Buckingham, who, they say, is in speech to marry the Earl of Rutland’s daughter, and that by the King’s procurement.

[His Majesty knighted, at Wanstead, on the 18th, Sir John Honynwood of Kent⁵ ; and on the 22d, Sir Nicholas Fuller.]

“This day the King is gone to Greenwich ; where on Sunday he received the Communion very solemnly in company of the Lords and Counsellors, and gave a great largess of venison, bestowing seven bucks to be spent there that day.”

On the 19th, his Majesty kept this birth-day ; and on that day also, Sir John

¹ Camden’s Annals.

² From Sir William being so styled in the lists of Baronets created by King James, it is evident that his father Sir Ralph was still living, and of course was Lord of Chillingham when the King was entertained there in 1617 (see p. 297). Sir William was created Baron Grey of Warke, Feb. 11, 1623. It appears from the Life of the Lord Keeper Guilford, that, on the Union of the Crowns of England and Scotland, the Warke estates rose from £1000 to 7 or £8000 a year, the devastation attendant on Border warfare being then nearly terminated. Titles follow wealth in the natural course of things. The subject of the present note died July 29, 1674, and was succeeded by his son Ralph, whose son Ford was created Earl of Tankerville in 1695. That title died with him in 1701, as did the Barony and Baronetcy in 1706 with his brother Ralph ; but the Earldom was revived in the Earl’s son-in-law Lord Ossulton, whose great-great-grandson now enjoys it.

³ Of whom see a short memoir in p. 385 : and see pp. 390, 413, 464.—His English titles now conferred became extinct with his son William the second Duke of Hamilton, the third who enjoyed them, in 1651.

⁴ See pp. 483, 486, 555.

⁵ Eldest son of Sir Thomas Honynwood, noticed in vol. I. p. 439, and father of the first Baronet.

Villiers, elder brother of the Marquess of Buckingham, was created Baron Villiers of Stoke, co. Bucks, and Viscount of Purbeck, co. Dorset¹.

On June 24, Sir Thomas Ridley was knighted at Greenwich; and on the 25th, the King was again entertained by Sir Thomas Watson at Halsted², together with the Prince, the Earl of Montgomery, and the Lord Sheffield³.

On the 25th, a person unknown thus wrote to Mr. William Trumbull:

"The King on Monday next is to be feasted at Wimbledon, where the States are entertained this day by the Earl of Exeter and General [Sir Edward] Cecil⁴."

On the 26th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"Our new Noblemen had their patents delivered them on Sunday last; the Marquess of Hamilton to be Earl of Cambridge and Baron of I know not what place in Yorkshire; the Lord Aubigny to be Earl of March and Baron of I now not where; Sir John Villiers made Baron of Stoke and Viscount Purbeck; and yet, as far as I can learn, the Lady Hatton will not be drawn to put him into possession of either; but only holds him in expectation, or rather in doubtful hope.

"The Lady of Salisbury is lately brought to bed of a son, who is to be Christened this week by the Prince and Marquis of Buckingham⁵.

"The King the next week makes a petty Progress to Otelands, Oking, and Windsor, and so means to pass over the time hereabout till the 19th of the next month, that he removes from Theobalds to Royston on his Journey Northward. His legs and feet are come pretty well to him, having found out a very good expedient of ease, to bathe them in every buck's and stag's belly in the place where he kills them; which is counted an excellent remedy to strengthen and restore the sinews. *Al resto*, he has fallen to his old diet, and will not be persuaded to forbear fruit nor sweet wines.

"We are driven to hardships for money, and all too little, so that we are fain to make sale of Jewels for £.20,000 to furnish out this Progress⁶."

On the 28th, the King knighted, in the morning, at Greenwich, Sir Charles Smith; and, in the afternoon, at Wimbledon⁷, Sir Samuel Rolls.

¹ See pp. 176, 438. As before stated, his titles died with him.

² See pp. 482, 487.

³ Camden's Annals.

⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176.

⁵ This was Charles, the Earl's second son. He was made K. B. at the Coronation of Charles the First; but died in his father's life-time, in 1659, having had seven sons (the eldest of whom James succeeded his Grandfather as third Earl,) and five daughters. Of the Christening and death of his elder brother James to whom the King stood Godfather, see p. 175.

⁷ See p. 174.

⁶ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

On June 29, his Majesty knighted, at Greenwich, Sir James Wolveridge, Sir Richard Moor, Sir Eauball Thelwald, and Sir Robert Rich; on the 30th, he departed from Greenwich to Oatlands¹; where he dubbed, on the first of July, Sir Thomas Hinton and Sir Baptista Jones.

On the 7th of July, having conferred knighthood, at Windsor, on Sir John Trevor², Sir Alexander Hume, and Sir John Howell, his Majesty returned to Whitehall³; where, on the 8th, Sir Robert Vaughan received that honour.

On the 9th, our Monarch was again at Wanstead⁴, and knighted there Sir Edward Widnall, of Surrey.

On the 13th, his Majesty, having knighted, at Theobalds, Sir John Cochre, Sir Edmund Vanderduffin, and Sir Joachim Lynes, Commissioners from the United Provinces; and Sir John Tunstall, of Surrey⁵; “came to Somerset-house, and is said to have visited my Lord Mayor [Sir Sebastian Harvey], in order to recommend the Match of my Lord’s daughter with Christopher Villiers⁶.”

On the 15th, Sir John Clarke, and Sir Edward Engham⁷ of Kent, were knighted at Theobalds; and on the same day Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“The King is to continue at Theobalds till the 19th of this month, that he begins his Progress.

“Divers of our great Lords, as the Marquess of Buckingham, the Lord Chamberlain [the Earl of Pembroke], the Earl of Arundel, and others, are minded, they say, to make a posting journey into Scotland, when the King is at Rufford, to accompany the Duke [of Lennox] and Marquess of Hamilton; and this *bon voyage* is upon a gaiety and kind of promise some of them made when they were there⁸.

¹ Camden’s Annals.

² Erroneously printed Thomas in Philipot’s List of Knights, and erroneously June 7 in the Peerages. Sir John was grandfather of the first Lord Trevor, and elder brother of Sir Thomas, of whom in p. 547. He was seated at Trevallin, co. Flint, and died in 1673, having had issue three daughters and four sons, the eldest of whom, Sir John, Secretary of State to King Charles the Second, was father of the first Baron. See Brydges’s Peerage, vol. VI. p. 295.

³ Camden’s Annals.

⁴ See p. 553.

⁵ Sir John Tunstall, of Carshalton, was in this year 1619 one of the Justices of the Peace witnesses to the foundation of Dulwich College.

⁶ Camden’s Annals.

⁷ Sir Edward Engham, of Goodnestone, was Sheriff of Kent in 1637.

⁸ In his letter of Aug. 10, Mr. Chamberlain says: “The Lord Chamberlain [the Earl of Pem-

"That portion of the Queen's Jewels that was rated at £20,000 Peter Van Lore hath for £18,000; which, together with some other helps, doth serve to defray the Progress. But the choice of pearl and other rare jewels are not touched; among which there is a carquet of round and long pearl, rated at £40,000, in the judgment of the Lord Digby and others the fairest that are to be found in Christendom.

"Your States are upon their departure, being solemnly feasted this day at Merchant-taylors' Hall, and yesterday they took their leave of the King at Theobalds, where they were likewise feasted, and, as I hear, three of them knighted, besides a present to four of them of 500 ounces of plate a piece.

"The King was in Town on Tuesday in the afternoon at the Lord Mayor's; and sent for him, his Lady, and daughter, from dinner at the Merchant-taylors' Hall, to recommend Christopher Villiers for a suitor to his daughter. It is odds but he must speed, when the King pleads and works so openly for him¹."

On the 19th of July, William Villiers, of Brookesby, Leicestershire, Esquire, (eldest half-brother of the Duke of Buckingham,)² was created a Baronet, being the 109th so distinguished.

On the same day, after knighting Sir Nicholas Trot, Sir James Chisseline, Sir George Crafford, Sir William Parkhurst of Kent, and Sir James St. Low, his Majesty left Theobalds for a Midland Progress. He went that day to Royston, where, on the 21st, he knighted Sir Thomas Read.

On the 21st, two others were advanced to the rank of Baronets:

110. Sir James Ley, of Westbury, Wiltshire, Knight (afterward Earl of Marlborough)³.

broke] only is gone into Scotland, with the Duke [of Lennox] and Marquis of Hamilton; and, by reason of his absence, Lord Digby is called to Court to supply and furnish that place.

¹ See also before, pp. 548, 549. We find, however, that the match did not take place. Mary, who (says Mr. Chamberlain, p. 548,) was Sir Sebastian Harvey's only daughter, was married at Stoke Newington, June 21, 1621, to John, eldest son of Sir Francis Popham. They had no issue. Sir Sebastian either died of the illness he now suffered under (see p. 552), or did not long survive, as Mary his widow was re-married at Stratford Bow, Oct. 1, 1622, to Sir Thomas Hinton, of Chilton Foliot, Knt. Lysons's *Environs*, vol. III. pp. 298, 501.

² Sir William Villiers served Sheriff of Leicestershire in 1608. His disposition was the very reverse of that of a Courtier, and he was with great reluctance at all brought forward into the world (see Mr. Chamberlain's letter in p. 564). He married thrice, but left one son only, George his successor, with whose son Sir William, the third Baronet, the title became extinct, Feb. 27, 1711.

³ This eminent Lawyer was born about 1552, the sixth and youngest son of Henry Ley, Esq. of

111. William Hicks¹, of Beverston, Gloucestershire, Esquire.

We next find his Majesty at Bletsoe², the seat of Oliver fourth Lord St. John (afterwards Earl of Bolinbroke),³ where he was "very nobly entertained⁴," and knighted, on the 24th, his Lordship's two brothers, Sir Henry and Sir Beauchamp St. John⁵.

On the 25th, the King knighted, at Castle Ashby⁶, the seat of William Compton, first Earl of Northampton⁷, Sir Cornelius Vanchelin; and, on the 27th, Sir Francis Brown.

Teffont Evias in Wiltshire. He was educated at Brazenose College, Oxford, and Lincoln's Inn, where he was Lent Reader in 1601. He was made Serjeant-at-law in 1603; Chief Justice of the King's Bench in Ireland soon after; was knighted at Wilton, Oct. 8 that year (see vol. I. p. 281); and in 1609 appointed Attorney of the Court of Wards. In 1621 he became Chief Justice of the King's Bench in England; and Dec. 10, 1624, Lord High Treasurer, being created Baron Ley, of Ley, co. Devon, on the 21st of that month. He retired on account of his great age, to make room for Sir Richard Weston, but was appointed President of the Council, and was advanced to the dignity of Earl of Marlborough, Feb. 1, 1626-7. He died at Lincoln's Inn, March 14, 1628-9, and was buried at Westbury, where he has a sumptuous monument. See further of his character and works in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. His portrait, whilst a Baronet and Chief Justice of the English King's Bench, was engraved by Payne, and has been copied by Richardson and Harding.—His titles became extinct with his younger son William, the fourth who enjoyed them, in 1679.

¹ Eldest son and heir of Sir Michael Hicks, of whom in vol. I. pp. 294, 439, 454. He was named William after his father's old master the great Lord Burghley, who with Lord Cobham and Lady Lumley were his Sponsors. He was educated, like his father, at Trinity College, Cambridge; was M. P. for Great Marlow in 1625 and 1640; and was always true to the Royal Cause, for which he suffered six weeks imprisonment. He died Oct. 9, 1680, aged 84, and was succeeded by his eldest son Sir William.—Sir William the present and seventh Baronet is descended from Sir Michael the first Baronet's second son.

* See vol. II. pp. 203, 453.—There is a good representation of the remains of Bletsoe, now a farmhouse, in Fisher's Bedfordshire Views.

³ Of whom in vol. II. p. 423, on his being made K. B. He had succeeded to his father's Barony, in 1618, since the last Royal visit to Bletsoe.

⁴ See Mr. Chamberlain's letter of September 11, p. 565.

⁵ Sir Beauchamp was M. P. for Bedfordshire in 1620; and for Bedford town in the four last Parliaments of Charles I. Of Sir Henry nothing is recorded. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 745.—It is remarkable that two of their elder brothers had also been knighted under their paternal roof, on the King's visit to Bletsoe in 1608; see vol. II. p. 203.

⁶ See vol. II. p. 453.

⁷ Recently advanced to that title; see p. 488.—The Earl's entertainment of the King on the present occasion is in Mr. Chamberlain's letter of Sept. 11 (p. 565) charged with penury, in con-

During the Royal stay at Castle Ashby, his Majesty and all the Court dined one day at the neighbouring house of Easton Mauduit¹, where they were "very bountifully entertained"² by Sir Henry Yelverton, then Attorney General³.

On the 28th of July, our Monarch was at Rockingham Castle⁴, the seat of Sir Lewis Watson (afterward Lord Rockingham),⁵ whose son Sir Edward⁶ he then knighted.

On the 29th, the Royal Traveller knighted at Kirby⁷, the seat of Sir Christopher Hatton, K. B.⁸, Sir William Beecher, and Sir Robert Charnock.

On the 31st, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"The day the King began his Progress, our young Lord Admiral [the Marquis of Buckingham] went to Chatham, to see the ships ; and that was all he could do in the space of four or five hours, to make a short survey, to have a number of pieces of ordnance shot off, and bestow a largess of three or four hundred Jacobus pieces among the Mariners and other main Officers of the Navy. He sent for Sir Horace Vere to accompany him, and not many more, beside my Lord Digby, who made choice of the Antelope for his journey into Spain. The Lord Marquis went that night to the Countess his mother at Erith, who lies much of late at Denmark House, by reason the Viscountess Purbeck [her daugh-

trast to the liberality of Lord St. John and Sir Henry Yelverton. If there was any foundation for this censure, the heavy fees consequent on his recently acquired title may be pleaded in justification of his prudence.

¹ This mansion, which was the chief residence of the Yelvertons Earls of Sussex, has been some time destroyed. It contained, when Bridges wrote, a large collection of portraits, a well-furnished library, and about 300 volumes of MSS. See his *History of Northamptonshire*, vol. II. p. 163.

² Mr. Chamberlain's letter of Sept. 11, see p. 565.

³ Of whom a memoir has been given in vol. II. p. 703.

⁴ See vol. I. p. 524.—An excellent view of Rockingham Castle, which is standing apparently unaltered from the time of James the First, is contained in Neale's *Seats*.

⁵ Of whom *ibid.* ; and vol. II. p. 207.

⁶ Who succeeded his father as second Lord in 1652, and was succeeded by his son Lewis in 1691.

⁷ See vol. II. p. 453.

⁸ Of whom in vol. I. p. 525. He died Sept. 10 this year, and was buried in Westminster Abbey ; where, in Islip's Chapel, he has a handsome monument with reclining effigies of himself and Lady. See the pedigree of the Hatton family in Baker's *Northamptonshire*, vol. I. p. 197.

ter-in-law] hath the keeping of it by the King's special appointment, when he granted that House to the Prince¹."

From Kirby his Majesty probably went to Apthorp², the seat of Sir Francis Fane, K. B. (afterward Earl of Westmoreland)³; and from Apthorp almost certainly to Burley-on-the-Hill⁴.

On the 3d of August, we find the King at Belvoir Castle⁵, where he was entertained by Francis sixth Earl of Rutland⁶, and where, on that day, he knighted Sir William Roberts, the High Sheriff of Leicestershire⁷; and, on the 6th, Sir James Buchanan, *Scotus*.

On the 10th of August, the King was at Welbeck in Nottinghamshire⁸, the

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² See vol. I. p. 97; vol. II. p. 457; and this vol. pp. 18, 185, 258.

³ Of whom in vol. I. p. 224. He had succeeded to the estates of his father-in-law Sir Anthony Mildmay since the King's visit to Apthorp on his road to Scotland, March 21, 1616-17.

⁴ Of the King's visits to Burley-on-the-Hill see pp. 20, 185, 259.—The date of the Marquis of Buckingham's purchasing of it does not appear; but when, on the King's next visit in 1621, Ben Jonson's "Masque of the Metamorphosed Gipsies" was here produced for the King's entertainment, it had decidedly become his property.

⁵ See vol. II. p. 458.

⁶ Ibid.

⁷ Of Sutton-Cheynell and Barwell. He died without issue, but his brother Richard and nephew William, who successively inherited his estates, were both honoured with knighthood, the former at Theobalds, Nov. 11, this year. See the pedigree in Nichols's Leicestershire, vol. IV. p. 547.

⁸ Welbeck Abbey, which had been a convent of Premonstratensian Canons, was converted into a residence by Sir Charles Cavendish, father of the King's present host, in 1604. "Some remains of the ancient Abbey are still to be traced in the arches of the cellar, and it is said the sepulchral monuments were not destroyed, but only hid by panels and hangings." Such remains, however, are now, it is presumed, removed, as, "all the apartments having been arranged by the late Duke, the interior displays a great degree of elegance and convenience." The front (of which there is a view in Neale's Seats, whence the above extracts are taken,) consists of a plain battlemented wall, with two ranges of oblong square windows, and is evidently of a later date than even the reign of James the First. The King's host, "the loyal Duke of Newcastle," has been handed down to posterity as chiefly memorable for his skill in horsemanship; and the riding-house in which he was accustomed to amuse himself in Thoroton's time, when upwards of 80, (and which is supposed to have been never exceeded in magnificence till the erection of the Royal stables at Brighton by his present Majesty,) was commenced in 1623 and completed in 1625.—We shall find King James again at Welbeck, August 10, 1624. In 1633 King Charles the First dined there, when sojourning at Worksop, on his journey to Scotland. The Duke (then Lord Cavendish of Bolsover,) was on this occasion, as his Duchess has recorded, at the expence of between four and five thousand pounds. He welcomed

seat of Sir William Cavendish (afterwards Duke of Newcastle)¹, and there knighted Sir Sutton Coney, of Lincolnshire²; Sir Charles Cornwallis³, brother to his host; Sir Edward Richardson⁴, and Sir William Carnaby.

On his way to or from Welbeck, the King would probably, as in former years, visit Rufford⁵, the seat of Sir George Saville⁶. In the words of the Ballad intitled, "King Henry and the Miller of Mansfield⁷," we may say:

James our Royall King would ride a-hunting
To the greene forest so pleasant and faire;
To see the hart skipping and dainty does tripping,
Unto merry Sherwood his Nobles repaire:
Hawke and hound were unbound and all things prepar'd
For the game, in the same, with good regard.
All a long summer's day rode the King pleasantly,
With all his Princes and Nobles eche one,
Chasing the hart and hinde, and the bucke gallantlye,
Till the darke evening forc'd all to turn home.

the King with a poetical Entertainment by Ben Jonson, with which his Majesty was so pleased, that he required a second in the following summer; which, on the 10th of July 1634, was accordingly given to both their Majesties at Bolsover, his Lordship's other mansion about five miles from Welbeck, Welbeck itself being resigned to their Majesties' lodging. This second entertainment cost in all, says the Duchess, "between fourteen and fifteen thousand pounds." Ben Jonson was again employed; and his two Entertainments have similar titles, the former being "Love's Welcome at Welbeck;" the latter "Love's Welcome at Bolsover."—King William the Third was at Welbeck, Nov. 3, 1695. London Gazette, Nov. 7 that year.

¹ Of whom in vol. II. p. 344.

² Sir Sutton was son and heir of Sir Thomas Coney, of North Stoke near Grantham, knighted July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 215), who was son and heir of Thomas Coney, of Basingthorp, a Merchant of the Staple at Calais and Merchant-adventurer of England. Sir Sutton was connected with the Cavendish family, by having married Sarah, daughter of Sir Richard Wortley, Knt. and Elizabeth, who was married secondly to the first Earl of Devonshire, uncle of the King's present host. This kinship, doubtless, drew him to Welbeck, though he could not be otherwise defined than as Sir William's half-cousin by marriage!

³ Of Wallington; who died Feb. 4, 1653, unmarried, and was buried at Bolsover; "a man," says Lord Clarendon, "of the noblest and largest mind, though the least and most inconvenient body that lived." Brydges's Peerage, vol. I. p. 317.

⁴ Of whom see what Mr. Chamberlain says in p. 564.

⁵ This conjecture is seconded by Mr. Chamberlain's letter of July 15, p. 555.

⁶ See vol. II. p. 460; and this vol. p. 185.—The note in the former page, which states that Sir George inherited Rufford from his father-in-law the Earl of Shrewsbury, should, perhaps, be corrected to: "Rufford was settled on Sir George by his father-in-law George sixth Earl of Shrewsbury, who died in 1590, son of George fifth Earl, to whom the monastery had been granted by Henry VIII." See Hunter's History of Hallamshire, p. 98.

⁷ Printed in "The Elegant Extracts."

On the 12th and 13th of August, the King was at Nottingham¹, where he knighted, on the former day, Sir Ralph Hansby, of Lincolnshire, and Sir John Ramsden, of Derbyshire; and on the latter day, Sir William Balfour, *Scotus*, and Sir Thomas Barton.

His Majesty probably next went to Derby², and from thence to his Castle of Tutbury³ in Staffordshire, where he knighted, on the 17th, Sir Francis Cook and Sir Thomas Powell; as he did soon after, "in the fields in Staffordshire," Sir Thomas Skrimshire. At Tutbury and at Tamworth (the place next visited) we find Prince Charles a companion of his Royal Father. Whilst his Highness was at the former place, the Corporation of Coventry sent Henry Sewall and John Barker thither "to know the Prince's pleasure whether he would come to Coventry in his Progress⁴," for which the City Treasurer paid them their charges, £.2. 1s. 9d.⁵

¹ The Year-book of the Corporation of Nottingham for the year 1618-19 is unfortunately lost; so that I am not enabled to give so good an account of this, as of the King's other visits to that Town,—of which in vol. II. p. 461.

² See Mr. Chamberlain's letter of June 5, p. 552. His Majesty was again at Derby August 16, 1624. No visit of King James the First is recorded by the local historians; but when Charles the First was in the Town in 1635, he slept at the great house in the market-place.

³ Tutbury Castle, now in ruins, is supposed to have been the residence of the Saxon Kings of Mercia. It was afterwards the Castle of the Ferrers Earls of Derby; and was for several months in 1569 and 1570 the residence of Mary Queen of Scots, under the *surveillance* of the Earl of Shrewsbury, to whose house at Sheffield she was afterward removed. Mr. Hunter, in his History of Hallamshire, in dividing the period of the Queen's residence in England (which was eighteen years, eight months, and twenty-two days) into 100 parts, gives twelve to Tutbury. The Castle was habitable till the Civil War, when after a long and stout resistance it was taken and destroyed by the Parliament forces. "Their demolition, and the mouldering hand of Time," says Mr. Shaw, "have reduced this once noble edifice to a picturesque ruin. The ancient gateway in part remains, and, with the round tower in imitation of ruins (erected by Lord Vernon, the present possessor of the Castle by lease from the Crown,) on a high mound the site of the ancient keep, are pleasing objects to all the circumjacent country. Near this is a building, with a large room, partly of brick and of later date than the Castle, inhabited by a family. Here the steward entertains the tenants occasionally, and at wakes, &c. it is used for assemblies." There is a view of the ruins in Plot's Staffordshire, a second by Buck, two others in Shaw's Staffordshire, and a fifth in the Beauties of England and Wales.—We shall find the King again at Tutbury in August 1621 and August 1624; and Heylin, in his Life of Laud, says that in 1634 Charles the First spent a fortnight here,—but probably the time is exaggerated.

⁴ As Prince Henry had done in 1612, when he accompanied the King on the Progress of that summer; see vol. II. p. *459.

⁵ Treasurer's Accounts. From the Wardens' Accounts of the same date we find that there was

The Royal Visit to Tamworth is thus recorded, between two baptisms, in the Parish Register: "1619, the 18th day of Auguste, James oure noble Kinge and that worthy Prince Charles came to Tamworth. The Kinge lodged at the Castell, [the seat of Sir Humphrey Ferrers,]¹ and the Prince at the Mot-hall²; and Mr. Thomas Ashley and Mr. John Sharp, then Belieffes, gave Royal entertainment."

On the 20th of August, the King knighted, at Tamworth, Sir Philip Eaton; and he probably proceeded the same day on his second visit to Warwick³, where he dubbed, on the 21st, Sir Bartholomew Hales, of Warwickshire⁴; and Sir Richard Brown.

"Paid for vinegar to putt in sammon against the Prince's coming 2s. 8d." It does not appear that the Prince paid the anticipated visit; but it may be remarked that the above record of the invitation forms a striking contrast to the conduct of the inhabitants in 1642, when they shut their gates against the same Charles, when demanding entrance as their King.

¹ Of Sir Humphrey see p. 435.—Tamworth Castle is still standing much in the same state as when King James visited it. Its architecture, says Mr. Shaw, appears to be of various periods. The hall, which and some other parts are of very antient date, is exceedingly rude and comfortless. The rooms and staircases are most of them wonderfully irregular and uncouth. There are two noble rooms, comparatively modern, fitted up with oak wainscot, and round the cornice of the largest the arms of the family, impaling every match from the earliest period. From the windows of this room are pleasing and rich views over the river (which runs at the foot of the Castle-mount) to the meadows and woodlands where formerly was the Park. "Lord Leicester, it is said, once had thoughts of making this Castle his residence, and for that purpose had Wyatt down to survey it; but finding, from the antiquity of the greater part of the building and the neglect of inhabitation here for nearly a century, the scheme not very practicable, he gave it up." So says Shaw, who gives two views of the building. Since he wrote, it has been fitted up as a cotton-factory. — The King was again at Tutbury in August 1621 and 1624.

² "This curious old mansion," of which also Mr. Shaw gives a front view, "was probably built about 1572 by the Comberfords, heretofore of Comberford, as a sort of town-residence, or secondary seat to their antient one, about two miles distant from this place. After the Comberfords, it was possessed by a family of the name of Fox;" and it must accordingly have belonged to a person of one of these names on Prince Charles's visit. It is situated on the north bank of the river Tame, at the extremity of Lichfield-street. From hence, through an avenue of trees, it exhibits a handsome brick front, with five zig-zagged gables, of the time of Queen Elizabeth, but modernized. The back front, which retains more of the transome windows and original state, is inclosed by a wall and moat. A curious old room upstairs, now divided, was about 50 feet by 18; and the ceiling, which is divided into compartments of various sizes, displays twenty-two coats of the several achievements of the Comberford family. History of Staffordshire, vol. I. p. 422.

³ See before, p. 431. We shall find his Majesty again there in his Progresses of 1621 and 1624.

⁴ Of Snitfield, and Sheriff of Warwickshire in 1603. See Dugdale's History of the County, by Thomas, p. 662.

On the 23d of August, his Majesty was probably at Wroxton¹, the seat of Sir William Pope, Baronet, and afterward Earl of Downe.

¹ This appears to have been the King's first, if not only, Visit to Wroxton, though I was misled by Warton's Life of Sir Thomas Pope to think otherwise when describing the Progress of 1605; see vol. I. p. 528. That this was an error has been already mentioned in this volume, p. 483, and a little poetical document has been there adduced, the date of which sets one part of the matter at rest. It still, however, remains to be ascertained whether Mr. Warton had any authority for saying that Sir William Pope entertained the King at Wroxton "with the fashionable and courtly diversions of hawking and bear-baiting."—My reasons for supposing his Majesty to have visited Wroxton in his present Progress, are in the first place, Mr. Chamberlain's letter of June 5 (p. 552); and, secondly, the following corroborative circumstance. In a small mansion, called the Chicken-house, at Hampstead in Middlesex, was formerly some well-executed stained glass, representing, in one window, our Saviour in the arms of Simeon, and in another (engraved as the frontispiece to this Volume,) small portraits of King James the First and the Marquis of Buckingham, the former encircled with this inscription: *POTENTISS. IACOBVS MAG. BRITANIE GAL. ET HIBER. REX FIDEI DEFENSOR*, and the latter with the following: *NOBILISS. ET HONORAT. D. GEORGIVS VILLIERS MAR. BVCK. VICE. VIL. BAR. WAD. AVR. PER. EQVES.* There is also a label or tablet under each portrait; that under the Marquis seems to have lost its inscription, but that under the King bears the following: "*Icy dans cette chambre coucha nostre Roy Jacques, premier de nom, le 23me Aoust, 1619.*" Now, it is very clear that the King was not at Hampstead on the 23d of August 1619, as he made a Knight at Woodstock on the 25th; and was undoubtedly not prevented from concluding his Progress in his usual manner, being (as we are sure,) at Rycot on the 27th, and at Windsor on the 5th of September. The glass must therefore have been originally made for some other place; but certainly not for his own Palace of Woodstock, as the King was there every year, and such a memorial of his sleeping in a particular chamber there would never have been thought of. But his Majesty is very likely to have been at Wroxton, not only because the place is mentioned by Mr. Chamberlain, but because it is directly in the road, and about half way between Warwick where we find his Majesty on the 21st, and Woodstock where we find him on the 25th. To this may be added that Wroxton was at this time but just rebuilt, and therefore any alteration in the windows or elsewhere was more likely to be made while workmen were about the place; and, above all, what nearly decides the question,—that Sir William Pope employed (as has been noticed in vol. I. p. 528) a very eminent Dutch artist in glass, named Van Ling; who furnished several windows at Wroxton; and that, moreover, the Wroxton glass has been dispersed, part now embellishing the Duke of Buckingham's Gothic Temple at Stowe.—I cannot conclude this note without pointing out the extravagant "local tradition" which has sometimes, on account of this stained glass, designated the Chicken-house at Hampstead (according to Mr. Park, the local historian,) "an appendage to Royalty," and (according to Mr. Lysons,) "a *hunting-seat* of King James (not the First, but) the Second!" It would, however, be an interesting circumstance if the origin of its name of "Chicken-house" could be clearly elucidated. — From the Chicken-house the glass was removed to Branch-hill Lodge in Hampstead, where Mr. (now Sir Thomas) Neave had assembled a very large and most valuable collection of similar curiosities, in great measure from the Continental convents.

On the same day, the 23d of August, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

" A blunt brother of Sir Ralph Winwood, one Sir Edward Richardson, was knighted this Progress at Sir William Cavendish's ¹. These and such like Knights make Baronets begin to come in request again, as of late we have had three or four, whereof the first was Sir [William] Villiers, eldest brother to the Lord of Buckingham, a man so careless of honour or courting, as the King said he would scarce give him thanks for it, and doubted whether he would accept of it. Another was Sir James Lee, Attorney of the Court of Wards; besides Sir William Hervey, that married the old Countess of Southampton ²; and young Hickes, son to Sir Michael Hickes, that comes to it I know not by what title. Sir Francis Crane ³ hath three Baronets given him in consideration of a project he hath of setting up the making of tapestry and arras.

" Sir Harry Wotton is gone to meet the King at Woodstock, where I hear he will find but cold welcome. The Progress ends on Saturday next at Windsor. We have great noise here of a new spa or spring that was found lately about Wanstead; and much running there is to it daily by Lords and Ladies, and other great company, so that they have almost drawn it dry already. And if it should hold on, it would put down the waters at Tunbridge, which for these three or four years have been much frequented, specially in summer, by many great persons, insomuch that they who have seen both, say, it is not inferior to the Spa for good company, numbers of people, and other appearances ⁴."

On the 25th, the King was at his Palace of Woodstock, and there knighted Sir Hector Pawlet ⁵.

From Woodstock his Majesty went to Rycot, the seat of Francis second Lord Norris (afterward Earl of Berkshire), ⁶ where he dubbed, on the 27th, " in the fields," Sir William Guise, of Gloucestershire ⁷; Sir Edmond Fenner, the Sheriff of Oxfordshire; Sir Francis Duncombe, of Northamptonshire; and Sir John Catcher, of London.

¹ At Welbeck; see p. 560.

² Mary, relict of Henry Earl of Southampton, and daughter of Anthony Brown, Viscount Montacute. ³ Prince Charles's Secretary; see p. 435. ⁴ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁵ Youngest of the four natural sons of William third Marquis of Winchester; see p. 491; and vol. I. p. 219. ⁶ See vol. II. p. *462; and hereafter, p. 649.

⁷ Of Elmore in that County, for which he had served High Sheriff in 1608. His grandson Christopher was created a Baronet July 10, 1661. That title became extinct in 1782 with Sir William the

From Rycot, as on former occasions, the King went to Bisham, the seat of the Hoby family¹; and thence to his Castle of Windsor, where, on the 5th of September, he knighted Sir Anthony Thomas, of London.

About this time "the King's new gold came out, with his head surrounded with a lawrel, (wherefore it soon got the name of 'lawrels' amongst the vulgar,) of different value, *viz.* of Twenty-shillings with xx, Ten-shillings with x, and of Five-shillings with v²."

On the 9th of September, "the King dined at Greenwich, being in haste to go to Wanstead³."

On the 11th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King is now at Wanstead, where this day he feasts the new French Ambassador, and so from thence to Theobalds this next week, where he ends his hunting Progress, which hath brought forth little news or none at all, more than that he was very nobly entertained at the Lord St. John's [at Bletsoe], which he took in so good part that he will not forget so honorable usage. Mr. Attorney [Sir Henry Yelverton] likewise for one dinner entertained him and all the Court very bountifully [at Easton Mauduit], which made the Earl of Northampton's penury [at Castle Ashby] the more misliked; and gat Archie⁴ the better audience, who upon an old grudge told the King, that, now the Earl had obtained what he sought for [his Earldom], he might see what account he made of him with the mechanical [mean] usage at Sir Noel Caron's⁵, so that he could not forbear to tell him openly what favours he had done him, and how ill he was requited.

"There is a brick wall making round about Greenwich Park that will prove a matter of no small charge⁶.

"We hear the Palgrave is crowned King of Bohemia⁷, so there is now no fifth Baronet, whose sister and sole heir was the Lady of the late Dr. Barrington, Bishop of Durham; but another Baronetcy was conferred on the following year on Sir John Guise, of Highnam Park, Gloucestershire, descended from a younger brother of the first Baronet, whose son, Sir Berkéley-William, at present enjoys it, and is M. P. for the County.

¹ See p. 436; and vol. II. p. *462.

² Camden's Annals.—On the arrangements of this coinage see Ruding, vol. II. pp. 218—221.

³ Camden's Annals.

⁴ The Royal Jester; see pp. 50, 330, 431.

⁵ Sir Noel's house was at South Lambeth; where he entertained Queen Elizabeth at dinner in 1599; see her "Progresses," vol. III. p. 440.

⁶ See vol. I. p. 512.

⁷ Soon after this date was published: "A short Relation of the Departure of the High and Mightie Prince Frederick, King Elect of Bohemia, with his royall and virtuous Ladie Elizabeth; and the thryse hopefull yong Prince Henrie, from Heidelberg towards Prague, to receive the Crowne of that Kingdome. Whereunto is annexed the Solemnitie or manner of the Coronation. Translated

place left for deliberation, nor for mediation of peace, till one side be utterly ruined. God send him good success! but surely it was a venturous part, and like to set all Christendom by the ears. The world thinks it a plot of the Prince of Orange and the Duke of Bouillon to draw in our King *nolens volens*; but how he is every way provided for such a business you know or may easily guess¹."

On September 15, says Sir John Finett, "the Count de Tilliers, sent to reside here Ambassador Ordinary from the French King, in succession of Monsieur de Maretz (though after almost an yeare and an halfe's intermission of that charge), came towards his first Audience of his Majesty then at Windsor, and was met at Staines by the Earl of Kelley, Groome of the Stoole to his Majesty, sent thither to receive and conduct him (the Lord North having been the evening before appointed by the Lord Chamberlaine for that service, but countermanded the next morning upon maturer consideration of the fitnessse to send to meete him a Person of a more eminent place and title than a Baron). With the Lord Kelley went, in his Majestie's coache, myselfe and five Gentlemen of the Privy-chamber. He had Audience given him in the Presence or Privy-chamber (one room there serving both turns), where having in a graceful fashion made his approach with three reverences, and passed a briefe compliment, called to his Secretary for his Letters of Credence, and presented them. Which whilst the King was reading,

out of Dutch; and now both together published, with other reasons and justifications, to give satisfaction to the world as touching the ground and truth of his Majestie's proceedings and undertaking of that Kingdom of Bohemia, lawfully and freely elected by the generall consent of the States, not ambitiously aspiring thearunto. As also to encourage all other noble and heroical spirits, (especiallie our owne nation, whom in honour it first and chieffie concerneth,) by prerogative of that high and soveraigne title, hæreditarie to our Kings and Princes, Defenders of the Faith, to the lyke Christian resolution against Antichrist and his adherents. At Dort, printed by George Waters, 1619," 4to, pp. 16.—The author of this Relation, and translator of the Solemnities annexed, in his Epistle to the Reader signs himself John Harrison. He has added to his Relation some Latin anagrams on Prince Frederick by a friend; and in his Appendix he informs us, "There is yet a more particular Relation, in Dutch; containing divers other circumstances not here expressed; with a representation of the whole maner of the Solempnitie and Coronation, both of the King and Queen, in pictures;" which he doubts not will be hereafter translated and published for the better satisfaction of the world. Oldys's Catalogue.—There were several other tracts produced on the same occasion; and one of them, a copy of which is in the British Museum, is entitled, "*Triumphus Bohemicus; sive Panegyricus Votivus pro felicissimâ Coronatione Bohemicâ, 1619,*" 4to. But to particularize them all would lead to the enumeration of several controversial publications respecting the continental politics, which the limits of this Work will not permit

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

he turned towards the Prince then present, and passed with him a short complement, which some judicious standers-by censured for unseasonable, having not yet finished the purpose he had in hand with the King, affirming his carriage had better onely to have bowed to the Prince, after he had presented his first respects to his Majesty, and not to have spoken to the Prince till he had fully ended what he had to say to the King. After his Majesty had invited him to cover, he obeyed, but uncovered immediately, holding his hat all the time after (except one little instant) in his hand. That night he returned to Staines, with the Lord Kellie's conduct, who went immediately back to Windsor, and the Ambassador the next morning to London.

"The day of the French Ambassador's Audience at Windsor came thither one of the young Dukes of Holstein, cozen-germaine to the deceased Queen Anne, who, sending for me to his lodging, desired my assistance for his private accesse to the King, he having been here at another time before with his Majesty, and that he might have the honour to hunt with him the next morning without further noise or trouble of ceremony. For this I repaired to the Lord Chamberlain, and, craving his advice and directions, had for answer that, in regard the Duke came privately and desired but a private accesse, he wished me to address myselfe to one of the Gentlemen of the Bedd-chamber, and particularly to the Marquesse of Buckingham, that the King might be acquainted with his desires. So, speaking that night late, both with his Lordship and his Majesty, I had for answer, that the next morning at seven of the clock his Majesty would be glad of his sight and of his company in hunting. At the hour assigned, he, and I with him, entring the King's Withdrawing-room while his Majesty was booting himselfe, he there received his wellcome; and, waiting on his Majesty to his coach, he was admitted to sit by him. After taking horse with his Majesty in the Parke, he rode, and I with him, the death of a leash of bucks, returning after in coach with his Majestie to Windsore. He went the next day to London. A seavennight after his Excellency had my company to his Majesty at Wansted, and that night back to London¹."

On the 16th, Sir Thomas Beaumont, of Cole-orton, Leicestershire, Knight, (afterward Viscount Beaumont,)² was created a Baronet, being the 112th advanced to that dignity.

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, pp. 59—61.

² This Nobleman was son of Sir Henry Beaumont, who laid claim to the English Viscounty of

"The Count Guido, son of the Marquesse de Villa, or, as some others styled him, de Sillana, (who had been here Extraordinary about six years before,) was sent hither Extraordinary from the Duke of Savoy to condole the death of Queen Ann, dead half a year before, when our blacks had been already laid by, by which those that he and his followers wore were made the more unsuitable. He had his Audience in the Presence at Whitehall, *more solito*, brought to it by the Earle of

"On the Sunday following he was accompanied to his second and last Audience, and to dine with his Majesty at Theobalds. He sate with the King in the Privy-chamber there, at the lower end of the table, the Ordinary Ambassador Gabellione sitting at the side opposite to the King neer the end. About the midst of dinner his Majesty drank the Duke's health bare-headed, and standing till they both had pledged it. After this the Count Guido drank the King's health to his Colleague, having first demanded leave for it of his Majesty. Three or four men of Tille, as Count Tisputi and (which to do him honour had accompanied him hither), dined in the Councill-chamber, accompanied by the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Leicester, Sir Thomas Edmonds, Treasurer of his Majestie's Household, and other Gentlemen¹."

On the 19th of September, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Francis Nethersole of Kent²; as he did on the 23d, at the same place, Sir John Fowle and Sir Thomas Culpepper, both of the same county.

Apparently on the latter day, the King was at Alderman Jaye's house³, and there knighted Sir Thomas Hoord, of Shropshire; for a fourth Knight, Sir Samuel Twaytes, is also recorded by Philipot to have been knighted on the 23d of September at Whitehall.

On the 2d of October, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King was here yesterday at Whitehall, but is now gone to Theobalds. He came from Hampton Court, where Sir Thomas Rowe⁴ presented him with two

Eaumont; see vol. I. p. 88. He seems to have been that Sir Thomas Beaumont knighted at the Charter-house, May 11, 1603 (*ibid.* p. 118). He was M. P. for Leicestershire in that year, and Sheriff of the County in 1605, both in his father's life-time; he obtained his Irish Viscounty, May 22, 1622; and dying in 1624-5, was succeeded by his son Sapcote, with whose son Thomas, the third Viscount and Baronet, the titles became extinct, June 11, 1702. See the pedigree in the History of Leicestershire, vol. III. p. 744. ¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 61. ² Of whom in p. 58.

³ Henry Jaye was Sheriff of London and Middlesex in 1613, but never Lord Mayor. ⁴ See I. 211.

antilopes, a strange and beautiful kind of red deer; a rich tent, rare carpets, certain umbrellas, and such like trinkets, from the Great Mogul.

"We talk as if the King had given but cold comfort to the Baron of Dhona, [Ambassador from the King of Bohemia], when he dismissed him at Wanstead as that he did not allow of the Palatine Election, but esteemed it rather a faction, which he would in no wise favour or further; and that his subjects were as dear to him as his children, and therefore he would not embroil them in an unjust or needless quarrel!"¹

Early in October were knighted at Royston, Sir Edward Skerne, of Lincolnshire, and Sir William Steward; as was on the 14th Sir William Lewis.

On the latter day Sir Dominick Sarsfield, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas in Ireland, was created a Baronet of that Kingdom², being the first advanced to that dignity. The Order was instituted with the same privileges as that of England³, and was in like manner to assist in the reduction of Ulster. They had the arms of that Province assigned them, to be borne either in a canton, inescutcheon, or the most convenient part of the shield; and paid the same fees as the English Baronets.

On the 19th, we find the King at Sir Oliver Cromwell's at Hinchinbrook⁴, where he knighted Sir Henry Grimston, of Kent, and Sir John Pickering⁵; and about the same time, Dr. George Mountaigne⁶, Bishop of Lincoln, "entertained the King nobly at his house at Bugden⁷."

¹ With what contemptible sophistry did James deceive himself, and fancy to deceive the world!

² He was advanced in 1625 to be Baron of Barrett's County, and Viscount Kilmallock, co. Limerick. These titles are extinct.

³ English and Irish Baronets, in like manner as English and Irish Peers, take precedence among each other according to the dates of their respective patents.

⁴ See pp. 191, 258, 441. Since the note on Hinchinbrook in vol. I. p. 98, was printed, an excellent description of the house has appeared, with two views, in Neale's Seats. The most curious part of the mansion is a very large circular bow-window in the dining-room, which was built in 1602, and the gilded roof of which is supposed to have been from the chapel of Barnwell Priory. The King's State-bed stood in the chamber called the Velvet-room. The ancient Kitchen is still in use.

⁵ Son of Sir Gilbert, of whom in vol. II. p. 432; and father of Sir Gilbert, the first Nova Scotia Baronet. Sir John died in 1627.

⁶ See vol. II. pp. 706, 725; this vol. pp. 16, 105, 609, 658.

⁷ Camden's Annals. — Buckden Palace is an extensive structure; but, since Bishop Mountaigne's time, it has received various additions. It is principally of brick, and consists of two quadrangular courts, with a square tower and entrance gateway, over which is the Library. The apartments are large. A view by Buck gives a good idea of its state a century ago; and it is still partly surrounded by a moat.—His present Majesty, when Prince Regent, dined and slept at Buckden Palace during the episcopacy of Bp. Tomline, Jan. 10, 1814, on his way from Belvoir Castle to London.

THE TRIUMPHS OF LOVE AND ANTIQUITY.

AN HONOURABLE SOLEMNITIE PERFORMED THROUGH THE CITIE,

AT THE CONFIRMATION AND ESTABLISHMENT OF

THE RIGHT HONORABLE SIR WILLIAM COCKAYN, KNT.¹

IN THE OFFICE OF HIS MAJESTIE'S LIEUTENANT,

THE LORD MAYOR OF THE FAMOUS CITIE OF LONDON.

TAKING BEGINNING IN THE MORNING AT HIS LORDSHIP'S GOING, AND PERFECTING ITSELFE
AFTER HIS RETURNE FROM RECEIVING THE OATH OF MAIORALTY AT WESTMINSTER,
ON THE MORROW AFTER SYMON AND JUDE'S DAY, OCT. 29, 1619.

By THO. MIDDLETON, Gent.²

To the honour of him to whom the noble Fraternity of Skinners, his brothers, have dedicated their loves in costly Triumphs, the Right Honorable Sir William Cockayn, Knight, Lord Mayor of this renowned Citie, and Lord Generall of his Military Forces,

Love, triumph, honor, all the glorious graces,
This day has in her gift; fixt eyes and faces
Apply themselves in joy all to your looke,—
In duety then my service, and the booke.

At your Lordship's command, THO. MIDDLETON.

THE TRIUMPHS OF LOVE AND ANTIQUITY.

If forreine Nations have beene struck with admiration at the forme, state, and splendour of some yearly Triumphs, wherein art hath beene but weakly imitated and most beggarly worded, there is fair hope that things where Invention flou-

¹ Of whom in pp. 174, 167. N.

² "London: Printed by Nicholas Okes, 1619," 4to, pp. 24. A copy is in the British Museum, Garrick Collection of Plays, I. xxii; another in the Bodleian Library, formerly Mr. Gough's. Mr. Bindley's was sold Aug. 2, 1820, to W. B. Rhodes, Esq. for £.1, and April 23, 1825, at Mr. Rhodes's sale at the much advanced price of £.4. 6s. to Messrs. Harding and Co. A fragment of the first part is in the possession of the Rev. Joseph Hunter, the Historian of Hallamshire and Doncaster. N.

ishes, cleare Art and her gracefull proprieties¹ should receive favour and encouragement from the content of the Spectator, which (next to the service of his Honour and Honourable Society) is the principall reward it looks for; and not despairing of that common favour (which is often cast upon the undeserver through the distresses and miserie of judgment,) this takes delight to present itself. And first to beginne early with the love of the Citie to his Lordship, let me draw your attentions to his Honour's entertainment upon the water, where EXPECTATION, big with the joy of the day, but beholding to free LOVE for language and expression, thus salutes the Great Maister of Day and Triumph:

THE SPEECH TO ENTERTAIN HIS LORDSHIP UPON THE WATER.

Honor and joy double their blessings on thee!
 I, the day's Love, the Citie's genrall Love,
 Salute thee in the sweetnesse of content;
 All that behold me worthily, may see
 How full mine eye stands of the joy of thee;
 The more, because I may with confidence say,
 Desert and love will be well matcht to day.
 And herein the great'st pittie will appeare,
 This match can last no longer than a year;
 Yet let that not discourage thy good ways,
 Men's loves will last to crowne thy end of dayes;
 If those should faile, which cannot easily dye,
 Thy good works wed thee to eternity.
 Let not the shortnesse, then, of time dismay
 The largenesse of thy worth, gain every day;
 So many yeares thou gain'st that some have lost,
 For they that thinke their care is at great cost
 If they do any good, in time so small,
 They make their year but a poor day in all.
 For, as a learned man will comprehend
 In compasse of his houre, doctrine so sound,
 Which give another a whole yeare to mend,
 He shall not equall upon any ground.
 So the judicious, when he comes to beare
 This powerfull Office, struck with divine feare,
 Collects his spirits, redeemes his howres with care,
 Thinkes of his Charge and Oath, what ties they are;

¹ This Author had before shewn his own self-conceit, and his jealousy of his rival Anthony Monday, in the preface to his Pageant of 1613; see vol. II. p. 681. N.

And, with a virtuous resolution then,
 Workes more good in one yeare then some in ten.
 Nor is this spoken any to detract,
 But all t' encourage to put truth in act.
 Methinks I see Oppression hang the head,
 Falshood and Injury with their guilte stricke dead
 At this tryumphant houre, Ill Causes hide
 Their leprous faces, daring not t' abide
 The brightnesse of this day; and in mine eare
 Methinkes the Graces' silver chimes I heare.
 Good wishes are at worke now in each heart,
 Throughout this sphere of Brotherhood play their part;
 Chiefly thy noble owne Fraternity,
 As neere in heart as they're in place to thee.
 The ensignes of whose love bounty displayes,
 Yet esteemes all the cost short of thy praise!
 There will appeare elected Sons of Warre,
 Which this faire City boasts of for their care,
 Strength, and experience, set in truth of heart,
 All great and glorious maisters in that art,
 Which gives to man his dignity, name, and seale,
 Prepared to speake love in a noble peale.
 Knowing two Triumphs must on this day dwell,
 For Magistrate one, and one for Coronell;
 Returne, Lord Generall, that's the name of state
 The soulder gives thee,—peace the Magistrate.
 On then, Great Hope, here that good care begins,
 Which now Earth's love, and Heaven's hereafter wins.

At his Lordship's returne from Westminster, those worthy Gentlemen whose loves and worths were prepared before in the conclusion of the former Speech by water, are now all ready to salute their Lord Generall with a noble volley at his Lordship's landing; and in the best and most commendable forme, answerable to the noblenesse of their free love and service, take their march before his Lordship, who, being so honourably conducted, meetes the first Triumph by land, waiting his Lordship's most wished-for arrivall in Paule's Church-yard, neere Paule's-chaine, which is a Wildernesse most gracefully and artfully furnisht with diverse kind of Beastes bearing Furre, proper to the Fraternity, the Presenter the musical ORPHEUS, great maister both in poesy and harmony, who by his excellent musicke drew after him wilde beasts, woods, and mountaines; over his head an artificiall Cocke, often made to crow and flutter with his wings. This ORPHEUS, at the approach of his Lordship, gives life to these words:

THE SPEECH DELIVERED BY ORPHEUS.

Great Lord, example is the chrystal glasse,
 By which wise Magistracy sets his face,
 Fits all his actions to their courtliest dresse,
 For there he sees honour and seemlinesse;
 'Tis not like flatt'ring glasses, those false books
 Made to set age back in great Courtiers' looks,
 Like clocks on revelling nights, that nere go right
 Because the sports may yeeld more full delight;
 But when they breake off, then they find it late,
 The time and truth appeares; such is their state,
 Whose death by flatterers is set back awhile,
 But meetes 'em in the midst of their safe smile;
 Such horrors those forgetfull things attend,
 That onely minde their ends but not their end.
 Leave them to their false trust, list thou to me,
 Thy power is great, so let thy vertues be,
 Thy care, thy watchfulnesse, which are but things
 Remembred to thy praise, from thence it springs;
 And not from feare of any want in thee,
 For in this truth I may be comely free.
 Never was man advanc'd, yet waited on
 With a more noble expectation;
 That's a great worke to perfect; and, as those
 That have in art a mastery, can oppose
 All comers, and come off with learned fame,
 Yet thinke not skorne t' have still a scholler's name
 (A title which they had in ignorant youth),
 So he that deals in such a weight of truth
 As th' execution of a Magistrate's place,
 Tho' never so exact in forme and grace,
 Both from his own worth and man's free applause,
 Yet may be called a labourer in the cause;
 And be thought good to be so, in true care
 The labour being so glorious, just, and faire.

Behold then, in rough example here,
 The rude and thorny wayes thy care must cleare;
 Such are the vices in a City sprung,
 As are yon thickets that grow close and strong.
 Such is oppression, cos'nage, bribes, false hires,
 As are yon catching and entangling briers;
 Such is Gout-justice, that delays in right,
 Demurs in suites that are as cleare as light.

Just such a wilderness is a Commonwealth
 That is undrest, unpruin'd, wild in her health;
 And the rude multitude, the beasts o' the wood,
 That know no laws, but onely will and blood;
 And yet by faire example, musicall grace,
 Harmonious gouernment of the Man in Place,
 (Of faire integrity and wisdom framde,)
 They stand as mine do, ravish'd, charmed, and tamde;
 Every wise Magistrate that governs thus,
 May well be cal'd a powerfull Orpheus.

Behold yon bird of state, the vigilant Cocke,
 The morning herald and the plowman's clocke;
 At whose shrill crow the very lion trembles,
 The sturdiest prey-taker that here assembles.
 How fitly does it match your name and power,
 Fixt in that name now by this glorious howre;
 At your just voice to shak the bold'st offence
 And sturdiest sinne, that ere had residence
 In secure man, yet with an equal eie,
 Matching grave justice with fair clemency;
 It being the property hee chiefly shoves,
 To give wing-warning still before he crows;
 To crow before he strike by his clapt wing,
 To stir himselfe up first (which needful thing
 Is every man's first duty,) by his crow,
 A gentle call or warning, which should flow
 From every Magistrate,—before he extend
 The stroake of justice he should reprehend,
 And trie the vertue of a powerfull word,—
 If that prevaile not, then the spurre, the sword.
 See, herein honors to his Majestie
 Are not forgotten, when I turne and see
 The sev'rall Countries, in those faces plaine
 All owing fealty to one Soveraigne,—
 The noble English, the faire thriving Scot,
 Plaine-hearted Welch, the Frenchman bold and hot,
 The civilly instructed Irishman,
 And that kind savage, the Virginian,
 All lovingly assembled e'en by fate,
 This thy daie's honour to congratulate.
 On then, and, as your service fills this place,
 So through the Citie do his Lordship grace.

At which words this part of the Triumph moves onward, and meetes the full

body of the Shew in the other Paule's Church-yard; then dispersing itself, according to the ordering of the Speeches following, one part, which is the Sanctuary of Fame, plants itselfe near the Little Conduit in Cheape; another, which hath the title of the Parliament of Honor, at St. Laurence-lane end. Upon the battlements of that beautiful Sanctuary, adorned with six-and-twenty bright burning lamps, having allusions to the six-and-twenty Aldermen, (they being, for their justice, government, and example, the lights of the Citty,) a grave personage, crowned with the title and inscription of
EXAMPLE, *breathes forth these sounds :*

EXAMPLE. From that rough wilderness, which did late present
 The perplex'd state and cares of Gouvernment,
 Which every painfull Magistrate must meete,
 Here the reward stands for thee,—a cheife seate
 In Fame's faire Sanctuary, where some of old,
 Crownde with their troubles now, are here enrolde
 In Memorie's sacred sweetnesse to all ages,
 And so much the world's voice of thee presages.
 And these that sit, for many (with their graces
 Fresh as the buds of roses though they sleepe,) *In thy Society had once high places,*
Which in their good workes they for ever keepe.
 Life cal'd 'em in their time Honor's faire starres,
 Large Benefactors, and sweet Gouvernors ;
 If here were not sufficient grace for merit,
 Next object, I presume, will raise thy spirit.

In this maister-piece of art, Fame's illustrious Sanctuary, the memory of those Worthies shine gloriously that have been both Lord Maiors of this Citie and noble Benefactors and Brothers of this worthy Fraternity, to wit, Sir Henry Barton, Sir William Gregory, Sir Stephen Jennings, Sir Thomas Mirfen, Sir Andrew Judd, Sir Wolstone Dixie, Sir Stephen Slayne, Sir Richard Saltonstall, and now the Right Honourable Sir William Cockayn.

That Sir Henry Barton, an honour to memory, was the first that, for the safety of travellers and strangers by night through the Citie, caused lights to be hung out from Alhollontid to Candlemas, therefore in this Sanctuary of Fame, where the beauty of good actions shine, he is most properly and worthily recorded.

His Lordship by this time gracefully conducted toward that Parliament of Honour neere St. Lawrence-lane end, ANTIQUITY from its eminence thus gloriously salutes him :

ANTIQUITY, IN THE PARLIAMENT OF HONOR.

Grave Citie Governor! so much honour doe me,
 Vouchsafe thy presence and thy patience to me;
 And I'll reward that vertue with a story,
 That shall to thy Fraternity add glory;
 Then to thy worth no meane part will arise,
 That art ordayne chiefe for that glorious prize.
 'Tis I that keepe all the records of fame,
 Mother of Truths, Antiquity my name;
 No yeare, moneth, day, or houre, that brings in place,
 Good workes, and noble, for the Citie's grace,
 But I record, that after times may see
 What former were, and how they ought to be,
 Fruitfull and thankfull, in faire actions flowing,
 To meete Heaven's blessings, to which much is owing;
 For instance, let all gratefull eyes be plac'd
 Upon this Mount of Royalty, by Kings grac'd,
 Queenes, Prince, Dukes, Nobles, more by numbring gain'd
 Then can be in this narrow sphere contain'd.
 Seven Kings, five Queenes, onely one Prince alone,
 Eight Dukes, two Earls, Plantagenets twenty-one;
 All these of this Fraternity made free,
 Brothers and Sisters of this Company;
 And see with what propriety the Fates
 Have to this noble Brotherhood knit such States;
 For what Society the whole Citie brings,
 Can with such ornaments adorne their Kings;
 Their onely robes of state, when they consent
 To ride most glorious to high Parliament;
 And marke in this their Royall intent still,
 For when it please the goodness of their will
 To put the richest robes of their loves on
 To the whole Citie, the most ever came
 To this Society, which records here prove,
 Adorning their adorners with their love;
 Which was a Kingly æquity;
 Be carefull then, Great Lord, to bring forth deedes,
 To match that honor that from hence proceedes.

At the close of which Speech the whole Triumph takes leave of his Lordship for that time, and till after the Feast at Guildhall rests from service. His Lordship, accompanied with many noble personages, the Honorable Fellowship of Ancient Magistrates and Aldermen of this Citty, the two new

Sheriffes, the one of his owne Fraternity (the complete Brotherhood of Skinners), the right worshipful Mr. Sheriffe Deane, a very bountifull and worthy Citizen, not forgetting the noble paines and loves of the heroyick Captaines of the Citty, and Gentlemen of the Artillery-garden, making with two glorious rankes a manly and majestick passage for their Lord General, his Lordship, thorough Guildhall-yard; and afterward their loves to his Lordship resounding in a second noble volley.

Now that all the honors before mentioned in that Parliament, or Mount of Royalty, may arive at a cleere and perfect manifestation, to prevent the overcurious and inquisitive spirit; the names and times of those Kings, Queenes, Prince, Dukes, and Nobles, free of the Honorable Fraternity of Skinners in London, shall here receive their proper illustrations.

Anno 1329. King Edward the Third, Plantagenet, by whom, in the first of his reigne this worthy Society of Skinners was incorporate, hee, their first Royall Founder and Brother; Queen Philip his wife, younger daughter of William Earle of Henalt, the first Royall sister, so gloriously vertuous that she is a rich ornament to memory; shee both founded and endowed Queene's Colledge in Oxford, to the continuing estate of which I my selfe wish all happinesse. This Queene at her death desired three curtesies, some of which are rare in these dayes. First, that her debts might be payd to the Merchants; secondly, that her gifts to the Church might be performed; thirdly, that the King, when he died, would at Westminster be interred with her.

Anno 1357. Edward Plantagenet, surnamed the Black Prince, sonne to Edward the Third, Prince of Wales, Duke of Guien, Aquitaine, and Cornwall, Earle Palatine of Chester. In the Battell of Poitiers in France, hee, with 8000 English against 60,000 French, got the victory, tooke the King, Philip his sonne, seventene Earles, with divers other noble personages, prisoners.

King Richard the Second, Plantagenet, this King being the third Royall brother of this honorably Company, and at that time the Society consisting of two Brotherhoods of Corpus Christi, the one at St. Mary Spittle, the other at St. Mary Bethlem without Bishops Gate, in the eighteenth of his reigne, graunted them to make their two Brotherhoods one, by the name of the Fraternity of Corpus Christi of Skinners; which worthy title shines at this day gloriously amongst 'em; and toward the end of this King's reigne, 1396, a great feast was celebrated in Westminster Hall, where the Lord Maior of this City sate as guest.

Anno 1381. Queene Anne, his wife, daughter to the Emperour Charles the Fourth, and sister to Emperor Wenzlaus, whose modesty then may make this age blush now; she being the first that taught women to ride sideling on horse-backe; but who it was that taught them to ride stradling there is no records so immodest that can shew me, onely the impudent time and the open profession; this faire president of womanhood dyed at Sheine, now Richmond, for grieve whereof King Richard her Lord abandoned and defaced that goodly house.

Anno 1399. King Henry the Fourth, Plantagenet, surnamed Bullingbrooke, a fourth Royall brother; in his time the famous Guildhall in London was erected, where the honorable Courts of the Citie are kept, and this bounteous feast yearly celebrated. In the twelfth yeare of his reigne, the river of Thames flowed thrice in one day.

Queen Joane, or Jane, Duchesse of Britten, late wife to John Duke of Britten, and daughter to the King of Navarre, another Princely sister.

Anno 1412. King Henry the Fifth, Plantagenet, Prince of Wales, proclaimed Maior and Regent of France; he won that famous victory on the French at the battaile of Agincourt.

Queen Catharine his wife, daughter to Charles the Sixth, King of France.

King Henry the Sixth, Plantagenet, of the House of Lancaster.

King Edward the Fourth, Plantagenet, of the House of Yorke. This King feasted the Lord Maior, Richard Chawrye, and the Aldermen his Brethren, with certaine Commoners, in Waltham Forrest; after dinner rode a hunting with the King, who gave him plenty of venison, and sent to the Lady Maiorresse, and her sisters the Aldermen's wives, two harts, six bucks, and a tun of wine, to make merry; and this noble feast was kept at Drapers' Hall.

Anno 1463. Queen Elizabeth Grey, his wife, daughter to Richard Woodvile, Earle Rivers, and to the Dutchesse of Bedford; she was mother to the Lord Grey of Ruthen, that in his time was Marquesse Dorsett.

King Richard the Third, brother to Edward the Fourth, Duke of Gloucester, and of the House of Yorke.

Lionel Plantagenet, third sonne to the Third Edward, Duke of Clarence and Earle of Ulster; Philip, his daughter and heire, married Edward Mortimer, Earle of March, from whom the House of Yorke descends.

Henry Plantagenet, grandchild to Edmond Crouchbacke, second sonne to Henry the Third.

Richard Plantagenet, father of Edward the Fourth, Duke of Yorke and Albe-marle, Earle of Cambridge, Rutland, March, Clare, and Ulster.

Thomas Plantagenet, second sonne of Henry the Fourth.

John Plantagenet, third sonne of Henry the Fourth, so noble a souldier and so great a terror to the French, that when Charles the Eighth was mooved to deface his monument (being buried in Roane), the King thus answered: "Pray let him rest in peace being dead, of whom we were all afraid when he lived."

Humfrey Plantagenet, fourth sonne of Henry the Fourth.

John Holland, Duke of Exeter.

George Plantagenet, brother to Edward the Fourth.

Edmond Plantagenet, brother to Edward the Fourth.

Richard Nevill, Earl of Salisbury and Warwick, cald the Great Earle of Warwick.

John Cornwell, Knight, Baron Fanhope.

The Royall Somme.

Seven Kings, five Queenes, one Prince, seven Dukes, one Earle,—twenty-one Plantagenets; seven Kings, five Queenes, one Prince, eight Dukes, two Earles, one Lord,—twenty-four Skinners.

The Feast ended at Guildhall, his Lordship (as yearely custome invites it) goes accompanied with the Triumph before him towards St. Paule's, to performe the noble and reverend ceremonies which divine Antiquity religiously ordained, and is no lesse then faithfully observed. Holy service and ceremonies accom-plisht, his Lordship returnes by torch-light to his owne house, the whole Triumph plac'd in comely and decent order before him, the Wilderness, the Sanctuary of Fame, adorned with lights, the Parliament of Honor, and the Triumphant Chariot of Love, with his gracefull concomitants; the Chariot drawne with two Luzarns. Neere to the entrance of his Lordship's gate, LOVE, prepared with his welcome, thus salutes him:

LOVE. I was the first, grave Lord, that welcomde thee
 In this daye's honor, and I spake it free,
 Just as in every heart I found it plac't,
 And 'tis my turne againe now to speake last;
 For Love is circular, like the bright sunne,
 And takes delight to end where it begun,
 Though indeed never ending in true will,
 But rather may be sayd beginning still;
 As all great workes are of cœlestiall birth,
 Of which love is the chiefe in Heaven and Earth.

To what blest state then are thy fortunes come,
 Since, that both brought thee forth and brings thee home?
 Now, as in common course which cleeres things best,
 There's no free gift but lookes for thankes at least;
 A love so bountifull, so free, so good,
 From the whole City, from thy Brotherhood;
 That name I ought a while to dwell upon,
 Expect some faire requitall from the man
 They've all so largely honord. What's desirde?
 That which in conscience ought to be requirde.
 Oh thanke'em in thy justice, in thy care,
 Zeale to right wrongs, workes that are cleere and faire,
 And will become thy soule (whence vertue springs),
 As those rich ornaments thy brother Kings.
 And since we cannot separate love and care,
 For where care is a love must needes be there,
 And care where love is; 'tis the man and wife,
 Through every estate that's fixt in life;
 You are by this the Citie's Bridegroom proof'd,
 And she stands wedded to her best belov'd;
 Then be, according to your morning voves,
 A carefull husband to a loving spouse;
 And Heaven give you great joy (both it and thee),
 And to all those that shall match after yee.

The names of those beasts bearing furr, and now in use with the bountifull Society of Skinners, the most of which presented in the wildernesses, where ORPHEUS prædominates:

Ermine, foyne, sables, martin, badger, beare,
 Luzerne, budge, otter, hipponesse, and hare,
 Lamb, wolf, fox, leopard, minck, stote, miniver,
 Racoon, moashye, wolverine, caliber,
 Squirrell, moale, cat-musk, civet wild and tame,
 Cony white, yellow, black must have a name;
 The ounce, rows-gray, ginnet, pampilion,
 Of birds, the vulture, bitter, estridge, swan;
 Some worne for ornament, and some for health,
 All to the Skinners' art bring fame and wealth.

The Service being thus faithfully performed, both to his Lordship's honour, and to the credit and content of his most generously bountifull Society, the season commends all to silence; yet not without a little leave taken to reward art

with the comely dues that belong unto it, which hath beene so richly exprest in the body of the Triumph, with all the proper beauties of workemanship, that the Citie may (without injury to judgement) call it the maisterpiece of her Triumphs; the credit of which workemanship I must justly lay upon the deserts of Master Garret Crismas and Maister Robert Norman, joyned partners in the performance.

On the 30th of October, Mr. Chamberlain thus wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King comes to town this night from Theobalds, where he hath taken order and given commission to enlarge that Park with I know not how many hundred acres that must be added to it¹.

"Yesterday was our Lord Mayor's Feast and Solemnity, which most of the Council and great Lords did honour with their presence; but from an ill hand-sell two men were slain with his peal of ordnance²."

On the 3d and 4th of November, Sir George Hastings³ and Sir Thomas Hughes were knighted at Whitehall; as about the same time were Sir John Bruen and Sir Edward Lawrence.

On the 7th, Andrew Stewart, formerly third Lord Ochiltree in Scotland, was created, by patent, Lord Castle-Stewart in the peerage of Ireland⁴; and on the same day, or soon after, Sir James Balfour, younger brother of Michael first Lord

¹ See vol. II. p. 101.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

³ Second son of Francis Lord Hastings, and younger brother of Henry fifth Earl of Huntingdon. He died July 1, 1641, and had a curious atchievement in the Church of St. Bartholomew the Great, Smithfield, of which, and of his family, see Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 658.

⁴ This Lord Ochiltree was tenth in descent from Robert the Second, King of Scotland, through (beside intermediate generations) two Dukes of Albany, two Lords Avandale, and two Lords Ochiltree. In Scotland he had been the King's first Lord of the Bed-chamber, General of the Ordnance, and Governor of the Castle of Edinburgh; but, having by expensive habits reduced his fortune, he had sold his Lordship of Ochiltree to his cousin Sir James Stewart (eldest son of Captain James Stewart, at one time the great Earl of Arran). The Irish Barony appears, therefore, to have been bestowed on him in compensation for the Scottish one he had thus been constrained to resign. He died in 1632, and was succeeded by his son Andrew. See Douglas's Scottish Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 327; and Lodge's Irish Peerage, by Archdall, vol. VI. p. 243; but both those authorities err in stating that Andrew the second Lord was created a Nova Scotia Baronet, whereas it was Andrew the third Lord who was so honoured, during his father's life-time, in 1637; as does the latter authority in calling the subject of the present note fourth, instead of third, Lord Ochiltree.—The present and second Earl of Castle-stewart, who is descended from Robert the youngest son of the first Lord, is seventh Baron Castle-stewart. The Barony was dormant from soon after 1678 to 1774.

Balfour of Burleigh in Scotland, was also advanced to an Irish Peerage by the title of Lord Balfour of Clonawley, co. Fermanagh¹."

About the same time "his Majesty dined at Greenwich, and gave names to [at Deptford] some ships that were to be launched²." Sir John Carnshaw, of Lincolnshire, and Sir Edward Vowell, were knighted at Greenwich on the 8th of November.

On the 9th of November, his Majesty knighted at Whitehall, Sir John Amie, LL. D.; Sir James Hussey, LL. D.³; Sir John Heywood⁴, of Shropshire; Sir John Michell, of Surrey; and Sir Edward Lawley, of Hertfordshire.

On the 10th, Henry Salusbury, of Lleweny, Denbighshire, Esquire⁵, recieved a patent of Baronetcy, the 113th conferred.

On the 10th, Sir John Thornhill of Kent, and Sir William Reeves were knighted at Theobalds, as on the following morning (Sunday) were Sir John Bouchier and Sir Richard Roberts⁶. His Majesty then "set out from Theobalds after Sermon, designing for Newmarket⁷."

On the 14th and 27th, the King was at Royston⁸.

On the 16th and the 28th of November, the first and third of December, respectively, the following were added to the rank of Baronets:

113. Erasmus Dryden, of Canons Ashby, Northamptonshire, Esquire⁹.

¹ The title appears to have become extinct at his death in 1634; he was buried at St. Anne's Blackfriars, Oct. 24 that year. Douglas's Peerage, by Wood, vol. II. p. 178.

² Camden's Annals.—"About this time," says Phineas Pette in his Diary, "the Commissioners of the Navy finished two new Ships built by Mr. Burrell at Deptford in his Majestie's Dock-yard, and procured the King's Majestie to come thither to see them; and named the one the Happy Entrance, and the other the Reformation." Harl. MSS. 6279.

³ Of whom in vol. I. p. 535.

⁴ The well-known historian; of whom a memoir is to be found in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. He also was LL. D. having taken that degree at Cambridge. He had been appointed in 1610 one of the historiographers of the Royal College of Chelsea.

⁵ Sir Henry Salusbury died in 1632, leaving a son Sir Thomas, with whose son Sir John, the third Baronet, M. P. for the Town of Denbigh throughout the reign of Charles the Second, the title became extinct; but from Roger, a second cousin of the first Baronet, was descended the late Sir Robert Salusbury, who was created a Baronet May 4, 1795, and whose son and successor, Sir Thomas-Robert, now enjoys that title.

⁶ Brother of Sir William, noticed in p. 559. Sir Richard died Oct. 30, 1644, aged 80.

⁷ Camden's Annals, under Nov. 9; but Sunday Nov. 11 must be meant, both on account of the mention of the Sermon, and the King's leaving Theobalds.

⁸ Bacon's Works.

⁹ Who took a degree of B.A. at Oxford in 1577; served Sheriff of Northamptonshire in 1598

114. William Armine, Esquire, son and heir to Sir William Armine, of Osgodby, Lincolnshire, Knight ¹.

115. Sir William Bamburgh, of Howton, Yorkshire, Knight ².

116. Edward Hartopp, of Freathby, Leicestershire, Esquire ³.

"On the 9th of December, Sir Albert Morton ⁴ came to London, with the news of Frederick Elector Palatine and his Consort being crowned King and Queen of Bohemia, and some medals as presents. On the 21st, a son is born to Frederick King of Bohemia, who was named Rupert ⁵, in memory of Rupert the First, Emperor of the Family of the Palatines ⁶."

Christmas was kept by the King at Whitehall, as had ever been his practice; and Bishop Andrews preached then before him ⁷, on Saturday the 25th.

and the present year 1619; and, dying May 22, 1632, was succeeded by his son Sir John.—The Baronetcy became extinct with Sir John the seventh who enjoyed it, March 21, 1770, but was revived in 1795, in the person of Sir John Turner, who assumed the name of Dryden, having married the last Baronet's niece and sole heiress, and whose second son the Rev. Sir Henry Dryden, of Canons Ashby, is the present and third Baronet of the new creation.

¹ Who was knighted at Belvoir Castle, on the King's first Progress into England, April 23, 1603; see vol. I. p. 93. His son the first Baronet was M. P. for Boston in 1622; for Lincolnshire in 1625 and 1628; and served Sheriff for that County in 1630. His two sons Sir Michael and Sir William successively enjoyed the Baronetcy, and on the death of the latter without issue male it became extinct. Of his two daughters, the youngest was successively the wife of Sir Thomas Woodhouse, Bart. Thomas Lord Crewe, and Arthur Earl of Torrington; and the eldest, who was married to Sir John Belasyse, K. B. eldest son of John Lord Belasyse, by whom she was mother of the second and last Lord, was, after her husband's death, created for life, in 1674, Baroness Belasyse, of Osgodby. She died in 1712-13.

² Sir William Bamburgh was knighted at Grimston, on the King's first entry into England, April 18, 1603; see vol. I. p. 83. The Baronetcy is supposed to have died with him, being extinct before 1667. Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. II. p. 106.

³ Sir Edward Hartopp served in his youth in the Low Countries under the Earl of Leicester; he was Sheriff of Leicestershire in 1617; and M. P. for the County in 1628. He died in 1652, and was succeeded by his son Sir Edward, who had been knighted at Belvoir Castle, July 25, 1634. — This Baronetcy became extinct with Sir John the fourth who enjoyed it, Jan. 15, 1762; but another was conferred, May 12, 1796, on Edmond Bunney, Esq. who assumed the name of Hartopp, having married Sir John's grand-daughter and eventually sole heiress, and is now living. ⁴ See p. 438.

⁵ The too well known Commander in the Civil War of England, more celebrated for his rashness than his success.

⁶ Camden's Annals.

⁷ The Sermon is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the 13th he had preached before King James on the Nativity. It is a continuation of that of the preceding Christmas-day, the text being the next verse, Luke, ii. 14.

On the 31st of December, John Mill, of Camois-court, Sussex, Esquire¹, was created a Baronet, being the 117th.

On the first of January 1619-20, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“The King came to town the day before Christmas Eve, and there hath little past at Court, besides Plays and Revels, but only that on Christmas-day the Lord Walden was willed to forbear waiting in his place², and the same night, Sir Thomas Howard pressing near the King at supper, it was thought somewhat audacious, and the Prince had commandment to discharge him his service³.

“The Venetian Ambassador had Audience on Christmas-eve, and was at Court again the Sunday following with great pomp and show of coaches, which is almost out of fashion here, and the French familiarity grows more in request ; so that the French Ambassador [the Count de Tilliers] made a great Feast on Thursday last at noon to the Duke of Lennox, the Marquis of Buckingham, the Marquis of Hamilton, and some few other Courtiers, who have a meaning on Monday next to requite his courtesy with a Masque. But the world says the loadstone of all this *domestichezza* is a kinswoman of the Ambassador or his wife, a dainty young *damoiselle*, and, in the judgement of our choice dames, a fine piece for a Frenchwoman.

“The Lady Elizabeth Hatton, upon whose ground I know not, hath undertaken a task ever since before Christmas, to make a Feast with dancing every Thursday night till Lent, wherein her standing guests, besides others, are the Earl of Warwick and his Lady, the Viscount Purbeck and his Lady, Mr. Treasurer [Sir Thomas Edmonds] with his son and daughters, who is commonly very jovial at such meetings, though he had but a cross-encounter there not long since⁴.”

“On the first of January, Viscount Doncaster returned from his Embassy in Germany, goes to wait upon the King, and acquaint him with the state of the Elected King of Bohemia’s and the Emperor’s affairs⁵.”

“On the 4th⁶, Sir Lionel Cranfield, Master of the Wardrobe, and Master of the Wards and Liveries, was sworn a Privy-councillor⁷.”

¹ Sir John Mill served Sheriff of Hampshire in 1628 ; and was M. P. for Southampton in 1623, and several succeeding Parliaments. He was succeeded by his grandson Sir John, from whom Sir Charles the present and tenth Baronet is fourth in descent. Dallaway’s History of the Rape of Chichester, p. 233. ² The Captaincy of the Gentlemen Pensioners. ³ See, however, p. 586.

⁴ Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁵ Camden’s Annals.

⁶ Camden says the 5th.

⁷ Howes’ Chronicle.

"On the 6th of January, the Baron de Danaw, Ambassador from the King of Bohemia Elect, had a private Audience of his Majesty.

"On the 11th, the King departed from London, just when the Nuptials were contracted (as is reported) between the Marquess of Buckingham and the daughter of the Earl of Rutland¹."

On the 22d, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"On Monday the Prince went hence early, to be ready to remove with the King from Theobalds to Royston, in the coldest day that has come this winter. They are all now at Newmarket.

"I know not what we shall say to the business of Bohemia, but that we are like to be idle spectators; for, whereas heretofore upon the birth of any of their children we used to have public thanksgiving, ringing of bells, and such other signs of joy, it seems we are not willing to take notice of this last²; and so nothing hath been done nor said; which makes a speech fathered on the Prince of Orange, and so told the King, to be much talked much of, that he is a strange fellow that will neither fight for his children nor pray for them!³"

On the 24th, Sir James Dillon (afterward Earl of Roscommon)⁴, was, by patent dated Dublin, created Baron of Kilkenny West, and the ceremony was performed by the Lord Deputy St. John in the Presence-chamber⁵.

"The Baron of Denow," says Sir John Finett, "employed to his Majesty from the Prince Palatine, soon after the crown and title of King of Bohemia was conferred on him by the election of those States, had after his arrivall here two or three private Audiences without publique notice, or stile of King given him by his Majesty. He was afterwards appointed to follow the King to Newmarket, whither he came the 27th of January, with no other company or attendance but Master Williams (Agent here for the affairs of that King, or rather for the Queene), and his own few followers, Sir Lewes [Lewkenor, the Master of the Ceremonies,] then remaining at London, and expecting the arrivall of a Spanish Ambassador Don Diego Sarmiento, new made Conde de Gondemar. Some occasions at the same time having drawn me to Newmarket, I received there the Lord Chamberlaine's command to do the Ambassador the service of my place;

¹ Camden's Annals.—The Marriage was consummated on the 16th of May.

² Prince Rupert; see p. 583.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁴ See p. 39.

⁵ Lodge's Irish Peerage, by Archdall, vol. IV. p. 158.

so I waited on him to his first Audience there the thirtieth of January, when my Lord Marquess of Buckingham, the Earle of Montgomery, the Lords Viscounts of Purbeck and Doncaster, the Lord Gray, and divers others of his Majestie's better sort of servants, did him the honour on foot to come to his inn, his Majestie's coache walking by, and accompany him thence on foot to the Court, where his Majesty, receiving him in the Withdrawing-chamber, took him instantly with him into his inner lodgings; whence, after an hour and an halfe's conference, he was re-conducted by all the Lords mentioned on foot as before to his lodging. From that time he had his accesses to Court, and to his Majestie's Presence as a domestique without ceremony, and this by the King's own signification of his pleasure to me to that purpose. From Newmarket he went along with his Majesty to Royston, Theobalds, London, and with my continual attendance¹."

On the 31st of January, Francis Ratcliffe, of Derwentwater, Cumberland, Esquire², received a patent of Baronetcy, the 119th conferred³.

On the 2d of February, the King commanded that enquiry should be made into the goods and chattels, possessions and debts, of the Earl of Suffolk, that he might see whether he was capable to pay his fine⁴. At the same time the Earl and his Sons were "received again into some favour by the King;" and on the 15th, the Earl and Countess returned to London⁵.

On the 10th, being Ash Wednesday, the King attended Divine Service at Whitehall, and Bishop Andrews preached there before him on Joel, ii. 12, 13⁶.

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 61.

² Father of the first Earl of Derwentwater (so created in 1688), by whose grandson, the third Earl and fourth Baronet, all the family honours were forfeited in 1716.

³ "The 20th of November," says Phineas Pette, the Shipwright, in his Diary, "attending at Theobalds to deliver his Majesty a petition, his Majesty, in his Princely care of me, by means of the honourable Lord Admiral had, before my coming, bestowed on me, for the supply of my present relief, the making of a Knight Baronet; which I afterwards passed under the Broad Seal of England for one Francis Ratcliff, of Northumberland, a great Recusant, for which I was to have £700; but by reason Sir Arnold Herbert (who brought him to me) played not fair play with me, I lost some £30 of my bargain." Harl. MSS. no. 6279.

⁴ Two curious letters of the Earl to the King, written a short time previously to this, are introduced (from the originals in the Harleian Collection) in Mr. Lodge's memoir of Suffolk in his *Illustrious Portraits*. In the first the Earl pleads his inability to pay his fine. "I do owe," says he, "at thys present, I dare avow upon my fydelity to you, lytle less then *forty thousand pounds*!" The second letter was written praying his Majesty to retract his Royal commands that the Earl should oblige his sons to resign their places.

⁵ Camden's Annals.

⁶ This Sermon is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Fourth "of repentance and fasting."

On the 12th of February, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“ We hear the King will be here within this fortnight, and spend all the Lent hereabout. They pass the time merrily at Newmarket, and the running Masque ranges all over the Country where there be fit subjects to entertain it, as lately they have been at Sir John Crofts’ near Bury¹, and in requital those Ladies have invited them to a Masque of their own invention, all those fair sisters² being summoned for the purpose, so that on Thursday next the King, Prince, and all the Court go thither a Shroving³.

“ Some ten or twelve days since there fell out an unlucky accident by reason of a quarrel and challenge betwixt two Scotsmen, Sir Robert Ker⁴, near about the Prince, and [Charles] Maxwell, brother to him of the Bed-chamber, who was left dead in the field, though he held himself the braver man upon the success of having killed one before in Scotland and another in France. But the King says, though he pardoned him then, and the French King after, yet it seems that God would not pardon him now. Upon the Prince’s humble and earnest entreaty, assisted by the Duke of Lennox and Marquis of Hamilton, together with the Coroner’s Inquest finding it ‘Manslaughter,’ the King is pleased to remit the offence; and that Ker be restored to former favour⁵, the rather for that he was earnestly urged, and could not by any reasonable means avoid it. The quarrel grew at Sir Thomas Murray’s table, upon some speech Ker used touching the deportment of Mons. Lugnes, the French King’s Favourite; which the other

¹ Sir John Crofts was knighted in Ireland in 1599. His son William was created Lord Crofts of Saxham in 1658, but that title died with him in 1677.—His mansion near Bury was Little Saxham, probably built in the reign of Henry the Seventh. Lord Crofts added a grand apartment for the reception of Charles the Second; but the whole was pulled down in 1771, though it is said to have appeared as sound then as at its first erection. Some stained-glass was removed to the Church. The estate is still vested in the family, now seated at Herling in Norfolk.

² Of “those fair sisters” Anne was the Lady of Lord Wentworth, (afterward Earl of Cleveland, of whom in vol. II. p. 342); and Dorothy was the wife of Sir John Bennett (of whom in this volume, p. 173), and mother of John first Lord Ossulston, and Henry first Earl of Arlington.

³ Shrove-tuesday fell on Feb. 28 this year, but the Shroving mentioned above, if Mr. Chamberlain was correct in saying “Thursday next,” was fixed for twelve days before,—that is, the 16th.

⁴ Afterwards Earl of Ancrum, who has before occurred in p. 514.

⁵ In his letter of March 2 Mr. Chamberlain says: “Sir Robert Ker, in lieu of burning in the hand, is banished the King’s dominions during pleasure.” He retired to Holland, but returned in the following year, and was restored to the Prince’s service.

would needs interpret to be meant by somebody¹ here at home, and threatened he would force him to confess it; which *outracuidance* it seems proceeded to the success aforesaid.

"We hear the Lord Walden's son² was Christened on Thursday last at Audley-end by the Duke of Lennox, as Deputy to the King, and the Marquis of Buckingham.

"The King speaks of a second Journey into Scotland the next year.

"Our Pulpits ring continually of the insolence and impudence of Women; and to help forward, the Players have likewise taken them to task, and so to the Ballads and Ballad-singers; so that they can come no where but their ears tingle. And if all this will not serve, the King threatens to fall upon their husbands, parents, or friends, that have or should have power over them, and make them pay for it.

"We flatter ourselves that the Bohemian Ambassador hath better audience and acceptance, and that he rests reasonably satisfied; but till I see more certain and real fruit, I shall not greatly regard such fading flowers³."

On the 6th and 16th of February, two more Baronets were created:

119. Sir David Foulis, of Ingleby, Yorkshire, Knight⁴.

120. Sir Thomas Philips, of Barrington, Somersetshire, Knight⁵.

¹ The Marquis of Buckingham is alluded to.

² This was doubtless Lord Walden's eldest son James, so named after his Royal Godfather. When only six years of age, he was made K. B. at the Coronation of King Charles the First; and he succeeded his father as third Earl of Suffolk in 1640. He died in 1688. See Brydges's Peerage, III. 156.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

⁴ Sir David Foulis was knighted at the Tower, May 13, 1603; see vol. I. p. 120; and was with the King at Oxford in 1605, and then created M. A. (ibid. p. 556.) He had been Cofferer to Prince Henry with a salary of £.66, and "bordwages or diett;" and he now held that office to Prince Charles. Having purchased Ingleby Manor of Lord Eure, he was appointed one of the Council of the North, Custos Rotulorum, Deputy-Lieutenant, and Justice of the Peace for the North Riding of Yorkshire. Afterwards, however, having offended Viscount Wentworth the Lord President of the North, he fell into disgrace, and was fined £.8000 and his son £.500, both being committed to the Fleet. He died in 1642, and was succeeded by his son Sir Henry, from whom the Baronetcy has descended, with singular regularity, from father to son, being now enjoyed by Sir William, his descendant in the sixth degree, and the eighth Baronet.

⁵ Of Sir Thomas Philips little is known except that he was nephew (not brother as in vol. I. p. 214) of Sir Edward Philips, Master of the Rolls, and that he was knighted July 23, 1603. The Baronetcy appears to have expired with him.

On the 22d, Dr. John Williams, the Dean of Salisbury (and afterward Lord Keeper)¹ preached before the King and Prince at Theobalds a "Sermon of Apparell," on Matthew, ii. 8. "What went yee out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that beare soft clothing are in Kings' houses²."

"Towards the end of February, Monsieur Bevinchhausen, Ambassador from the Princes of the Union of Germany, came to the King at Theobalds, conducted thither by Sir Lewes Lewkner only at his own particular request, for avoidance of noyse, and perhaps of note of his small Train. He was introduced to his Audience by a private way over the leads into the Privy-gallery, where the King, with two or three of his Councell and exclusion of others, gave him Audience³."

¹ This great man has before appeared in this Work, as a disputant before Prince Charles and the Count Palatine at Cambridge in 1612-13; see vol. II. p. 607, and Appendix. A few months after the present date he became Dean of Westminster. This preferment was bestowed on him by the Marquis of Buckingham, who, as "Steward of the City and College of Westminster," was Patron of the Deanery. Bishop Hackett, in his Life of Williams, affirms that he for some time neglected to court the Favourite, till, strange as it may appear, he was forced to it by the King, who at that time forged for himself such fetters as he was afterwards unable either to shake off or loosen. Williams, says his Biographer, "for some time neglected to court the Marquis for two reasons: first, because he mightily suspected his continuance in favour at Court; secondly, because he saw that the Marquis was very apt suddenly to look cloudy upon his creatures, as if he had raised them up on purpose to cast them down. However, once, when the Doctor was attending the King in the absence of the Marquis, his Majesty asked him abruptly, and without any relation to the discourse then in hand, 'When he was at Buckingham?' 'Sir,' said the Doctor, 'I have had no business to resort to his Lordship.' 'But,' replied the King, 'wheresover he is, you must go to him about my business;' which he accordingly did, and the Marquis received him courteously." He took this a hint from the King to visit the Marquis, to whom he was afterwards serviceable in furthering his marriage with the great heiress the Earl of Rutland's daughter, which was consummated very shortly before his promotion to the Deanery of Westminster. He reclaimed her Ladyship from the errors of the Church of Rome, preparing for the occasion a "Manual of the Elements of the Orthodox Religion, by an old Prebend of Westminster," of which twenty copies only were printed, and all presented by the author to the Marquis.

² This discourse, which, after the fashion of the time, is very learned, consisting principally of a string of quotations from the Classics and the Fathers, was published soon after its delivery, with the following title: "A Sermon of Apparell, preached before the King's Majestie and the Prince his Hignesse at Theobalds, the 22d of February 1619. By John Williams, Dr. in Divinitie, Deane of Salisbury, and one of his Majestie's Chaplaines then in attendance. Published by his Majestie's especiall Commandement. London: Printed by John Bill, Printer to the King's most excellent Majestie, MDCXX," 4to, pp. 34. There are copies in the British Museum and Bodleian Libraries.

³ Finetti Philoxenis.

On the 26th of February, Mr. Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Ambassador of the Union went on Thursday to Theobalds, where the King hath been ever since Monday. His Majesty comes to town this day, and hath given the Lord of Doncaster £.20,000 towards his pains in his last journey [to Germany] ¹."

On the 29th, the King returned to Whitehall ².

By patent dated Westminster, March 1, Sir Henry Power was created Viscount Valentia in the County of Kerry ³.

On the same day, Sir Claud Forster of Bamburgh, Northumberland, Knight ⁴, was created a Baronet, being the 122d raised to that dignity.

On the 2d, Sir George Sherley, Chief Justice of Ireland, was knighted at Whitehall.

During the beginning of March, Prince Charles, in preparation for the King's-day, exercised himself in Running at the Ring; and on the 4th, he invited the Peers to a Banquet at Somerset-house, and to a Play. About the same time the Marquess of Hamilton was admitted Gentleman of the King's Bed-chamber ⁵.

On the 10th, the King returned to Westminster ⁶.

"The Conde de Gondemar, sent Extraordinary Ambassador from the King of Spaine, arriving at Dover about the beginning of March, was met there with coaches by the Masters of the Ceremonies, at Gravesend by the Earle of Dorset, and by him, with many of the King's servants and near thirty coaches, brought from his landing out of the King's barge, &c. at Tower-wharfe to the Bishop of Elye's house ⁷ in Holborne, taken up for him with an example not unmurmured at ⁸. The 12th

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

² Camden's Annals.

³ A year afterward, the remainder of this Viscounty was enlarged to the first Viscount's kinsman Sir Francis Annesley, Bart. The first Viscount's death, however, did not occur till 1642. See under March 11, 1620-1.

⁴ It does not clearly appear when Sir Claud Forster was knighted; but he was perhaps one of the two persons of the name, so honoured July 23, 1603, and both called George by Philipot (see vol. I. pp. 216, 219). Sir Claud died without issue male, and the title became extinct with him. Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. II. p. 122.

⁵ Camden's Annals.

⁶ Ibid.

⁷ The mansion known by the name of Ely-house, but no longer the Bishop's, since Queen Elizabeth robbed the See of it for her Favourite Hatton. It was now the town-residence of that family; see the subsequent letter of Mr. Chamberlain, p. 592.

⁸ Gundemar arrived, according to Camden, on the 4th; was received by the Mayor of Canterbury,

of March he had his first publique Audience at Whitehall, conducted to it by the Earle of Arundell, where, after some small time of repose in the Councill-chamber, passing over the then ruinous wood terras, at the instant that he was entring the first great door next that of the Guard-chamber, the weight of the overthronging multitude next about him pressing downe part of the planks and joyces under him, it suddenly fell, and withall the Earle of Arundell, the Lord Gray, [Lord Gerard,] and others, with great danger, and some hurt, particularly to one youth who under the ruins had his arme and shoulder broken. The Ambassador having received but halfe a fall of the nether parts of his body onely, his servants next him staving and holding him by the upper, as he was at the instant of entring under the doore. The danger and fear of it past, he was received at the Presence-doore by the Lord Chamberlaine, and brought to the presence of his Majesty without discomposition of countenance or otherwise for his fall, rather merrily excusing it as an effect of his hast and longing to see his Majesty¹."

On the 20th of March, Mr. Chamberlain again addressed Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King of Bohemia wrote a letter to the Lord Mayor and his Brethren, for the loan of £.100,000, who imparting it to the King, he said he would neither command them nor intreat them, but if they did any thing for his son-in-law, he would take it kindly. Whereupon the Lord Mayor conferring with the Court of Aldermen, they referred the matter to the Common-council, who, putting it over to the Wardens of several Companies, received answer that, when it should please the King to declare himself, so that things might be lawfully and orderly done, and when they should see what the Clergy, Nobility, and rest of the Realm would do, they would look into their purses and see what they could do.

"The Marquis of Hamilton was made a Gentleman of the Bed-chamber about a fortnight since, without the privy, as we say, of the Lord of Buckingham²."

"The 21st of March," says Sir John Finett, "I had command with his Majestie's coach to conduct the Ambassador of the Union from his lodging in the

and then by the Earl of Dorset, on the 6th; and came ashore at the Tower, and was conducted through the City to Ely-house, on the 8th.

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 63. "The King," says Mr. Chamberlain March 20, "cannot indure to have this accident mentioned or interpreted as ominous. The Ambassador went after the King on Wednesday to Hampton Court, to a private Audience. He seems discontented that he cannot have the key of his back door into the fields; which the Lady Hatton will not part with, no not upon message from the King, more than to have one of her people wait upon him with it for his private egress or regress."

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4174.

Strand to Whitehall, by the way of the Park and Galleries to the ordinary chamber of Ambassadors' attendance, and thence, after some two hours' presence of stay there, to the presence of his Majesty in the Private-gallery ¹."

On the 23d of March, Anthony Chester, of Chichley in Buckinghamshire ², Esquire, was honoured with the 123d patent of Baronetcy.

"On Friday the 24th, Prince Charles, Marquesse Hamelton, Marquesse Buckingham, with divers Earles and others, performed great Justing at Whitehall in honour of the Anniversary of King James; and Prince Charles, running twelve courses at the Ring, got all the praise ³." On this occasion the King ventured, not without hesitation, to invite all the Foreign Ambassadors together; and great disputes respecting precedency were the natural consequence. The Frenchman was to be placed "in the first window of the Duke of Lenox his lodging over the Great Gate, next without the Tilt-yard eastward; and the Spanish in a standing dressed up of purpose over the porter's lodge within the Tilt-yard, both in equall distance from his Majesty." The Frenchman, however, not content with parity, but "making no question of his right of priority," at last forbore to come. The Bohemian, Venetian, Savoyan, and States' Ambassadors all promised to be contented with places "at the lower end of the Tilt-yard in the house of the Lady Walsingham;" but of these also the two latter, after much consideration, chose to absent themselves ⁴.

¹ Finetti Philoxenis, p. 62.

² Sir Anthony was grandson of Sir William Chester, Lord Mayor of London in 1560, and M. P. for the City in 1563; and nephew of Dr. Thomas Chester, Bishop of Elphin. Sir Anthony was, like his grandfather, a zealous Protestant, and commanded a troop of horse in Tilbury Camp, in the memorable year 1588. He served Sheriff for Buckinghamshire in 1602, and for Bedfordshire in 1629, and dying Dec. 2, 1635, aged 70, was succeeded by his son Anthony.—The title appears to have become extinct with Sir Charles-Bagot Chester, the seventh Baronet, May 25, 1755.

³ Howes' Chronicle and Camden's Annals.

⁴ Finetti's account of these disputes, occupying pp. 63—67 of his Philoxenis, is much longer than ordinary, and too tiresome to be extracted in full.

THE END OF THE FIRST PART OF VOLUME III.

